BOSTON PUBLIC LIBRARY
3 9999 06377 153 7

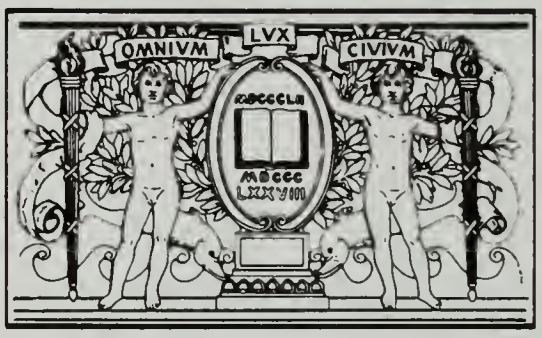
THE DUGWELL AND DUNCIL FAMILIES OF TENNESSEE AND ALLIED FAMILIES OF VIRGINIA AND NORTH CAROLINA

1685 - 1926

DUGWELL, DOCKADAY, LANG, MONTGOMERY AND POWELL

BY

SARAH DUNCIL DOCKADAY



BOSTON
PUBLIC
LIBRARY

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2013

http://archive.org/details/tugwellfinchfami00roll

THE TUGWELL AND FINCH FAMILIES OF TENNESSEE AND ALLIED FAMILIES OF VIRGINIA AND NORTH CAROLINA

1635 - 1993

BOBBITT, HOCKADAY, LANG,
MONTGOMERY AND POWELL

BY

SARAH FINCH MAIDEN ROLLINS

In ordering this book, contact the author
12715 Cobblestone
Houston, Texas 77024

© 1993 by Sarah Finch Maiden Rollins. All rights reserved

Printed in the United States of America
Henington Publishing Company
Wolfe City, Texas 75496

Library of Congress Catalog Card Number: 93-86252

CS71
.T92
1993x

This book is dedicated to the memory of my mother
EDNA TUGWELL MAIDEN
whose delightful personality, cheerful view of life,
and devotion to her family and Christian principles
have been an inspiration to my brother and me.

No other words which go into this volume
give me so much pleasure as these.

EDNA TUGWELL MAIDEN
1885–1953

CONTENTS

Preface xi
Introduction 1
Pedigree Diagram 2–3
"Road Map" 5
Migration Maps 7–9

Part One: Tugwell and Lang

Thomas Tugwell (ca. 1630–1684) 13–17
Henry Tugwell (1670–1743) 18–25
Joseph Tuggle (ca. 1711–1745) 26–28
Joseph Tugwell, Jr. (1739–1779) 29–34
James Tugwell (1762–ca. 1807) 35–61
John L. Tugwell (1803–1855) 62–78
Robert Rufus Tugwell (1847–1907) 79–88
Luella Tugwell (1868–1945) 89–90
John Tugwell (b/d 1869) 91
William L. Tugwell (1870–1904) 92–93
Robert Bruce Tugwell (1873–1936) 94–101
Albert Sidney Tugwell (1875-1945) 102–106
Stella May Tugwell (1879–1955) 107–109
Benanna Alice ("Ana") Tugwell (1881–1962) 110–115
Edna Gertrude Tugwell (1885–1953) 116–133

Diagram of Descent from Thomas Tugwell to the Present 134–135

Langs: Introduction 136–137
John Lang (1673/75–ca. 1750) 138–141
John Lang, Jr. (ca. 1710–1750/51) 142–145
James Lang (1735–1791) 146–150
Mary Lang (ca. 1764–post-1850) 151–153

Part Two: Finch, Hockaday, and Powell

The Finch Family 157
Finches in the Virginia Colony in the 1600s 158–160
Thomas Finch (ca. 1639–ca. 1700?) 161–162
Edward Finch (ca. 1660?–post-1704) 163–164
Henry Finch (1698–1754) 165–166

John Finch (Sr.) (1725–1793) 167–172
John Finch, Jr. (1750–1822) 173–183
John Wesley Finch (1793–1846) 184–195
James Monroe Finch (1824–1899) 196–210
Benanna Alice Finch (1851–1900) 211–214
Barbara Finch (1795–1859) 215–217

Hockaday Background 218–219
Warwick Hockaday (ca. 1699?–1758) 220–224
James Hockaday (ca. 1735?–ca. 1815) 225–230
William Hockaday (1763–1829) 231–241
Judith Hockaday (1796–1846) 242–243

Powell *Excursus* 244–253
Thomas Powell (ca. 1614–1687/88) 244–248
William Powell (ca. 1642/43–ca. 1696) 249
William Powell (ca. 1675/78–1735) 249–250
William Powell (ca. 1708/11–1793) 251
William Powell (ca. 1733–1791/92) 252
Ann Powell (1768–1851) 252–253

Part Three: Bobbitt and Montgomery

William Bobbitt, Emigrant from Wales (1649–1703) 257–263
John Bobbitt "of Chowan" (1678–1736) 264–270
William Bobbitt (Sr.) (1704–1768) 271–275
John Richard Bobbitt (1725–1791) 276–282
Drury Bobbitt (1744–1826) 283–288
John Bobbitt (1762–1828/29) 289–291
Green Bobbitt (1791–1838) 292–299
Matilda Carolyn Bobbitt (1814–1881/85) 300–302

George W. Montgomery *Excursus* 303–306
William B. Montgomery (1805–ca. 1873) 307–320
Melissa Jane Montgomery (1831–1900) 321–323

Appendix: Genealogical Trivia 325–326
Acknowledgments for Illustrations 327
Addendum 328–329
Index 331–350

PREFACE

All those who have lived in the past live with us now.
Surely none of us would be an ungracious host.

— Gibran

To pay tribute and honor to my mother and father, I have had the pleasure of researching and publishing histories of their families (which, of course, are my brother's and mine also). The first book, concerning my father's family, *The Maiden Family of Virginia and Allied Families, 1623–1991*, was published in 1991. The research was pure pleasure and did not exhaust my zeal for genealogy, but merely made me more eager to finish this Tugwell–Finch book about my mother's family. The more I researched, the more I realized that it would be a never ending task, and although I would have enjoyed continuing for years and years, I realized that at some time I must cease searching and begin writing; that one must finally commit it to paper. It is sincerely hoped that those who come after me will not only correct any misinformation I have unwittingly given, but will also extend the scope of the family story.

The history of my mother's family lines prior to 1800 has been well chronicled by such works as *The Tuggle Family of Virginia* by Vivian S. Tuggle (1970), the *Finch Families of Dixie, 300 Years in the South* by Ruby Finch Thompson (1972), *The Bobbitt Family in America* by John W. Bobbitt (1985), *The Powell Families of Virginia and the South, Being an Encyclopedia of the Eight Major Powell Families of Virginia and the South in General* by Silas Emmett Lucas (1969). As shown in certain footnotes, I have relied on them heavily. However, after 1800 the story of my mother's particular family lines has remained untold, and to me it seemed time to do it. Hence, this book, in which I have made a continuous story from the 1600s to the present.

As explained in the *Maiden* book, I did not want to make it a rather tiresome list of biblical begats, and neither do I propose to do that here. To quote Mrs. Raymond Ulmer, the acknowledged "Dean" of Houston genealogical circles, "Genealogy is the study of individuals against the location, the time period, and the circumstances of each individual life." Therefore, I have included some references to the political and social history of the times in which these ancestors lived.

Many family histories contain "family stories" (e.g. the "three brothers" story, et al.), which often after even casual analysis are more fanciful than true. As much as possible, and to be veridical, the information included herein is documented; however, it is obvious that in covering three centuries, all facts cannot be taken directly from then-contemporary documents.

Contrary to what so many people think, the study of genealogy or family history is not an exercise in snobbery, but merely shows an interest in finding out who we are and where we came from. One of the lagniappes of my research has been discovering that my mother's family lines lived in the same or adjoining counties of tidewater Virginia and northeastern North Carolina. Indeed, the chronicle of my mother's ancestors, as they moved from Virginia to North

Carolina to West Tennessee and eventually to Texas, is typical of the westward trek of so many Southern families.

Unlike many American families today, my mother's was of pure Anglo-Saxon stock, all having arrived from the British Isles prior to 1700. They were farmers, millers, merchants, civil servants, and teachers. Some were slaveholders, but others were yeoman farmers who cleared the land themselves. With few exceptions, all were literate, even the women, and each generation strove to give their children a better education than they themselves had received. Our early ancestors lived in a world in which mere survival was a serious business. None achieved national or regional fame or fortune, but none ever bore shameful notoriety either. The story of the Tugwells and Finches of Tennessee and allied families of Virginia and North Carolina (Bobbitt, Hockaday, Lang, Montgomery, and Powell) is a story of human endurance, sturdy courage, honest living, responsible citizenship, and Christian faith.

I am indebted to several relatives in gathering some of the information on their families and have given credit to them in the book. My husband, Joe, has not only been patient, he has been my biggest booster and encourager. He is tops. I especially want to express my deepest gratitude to my daughter Sally for her painstaking work in typing and retyping (many times) this book and cheerfully lifting from my shoulders all the many details and drudgery entailed in preparing a book for the press. In this she has been helped by her talented husband, my dear son-in-law, Ingvar Sodal.

INTRODUCTION

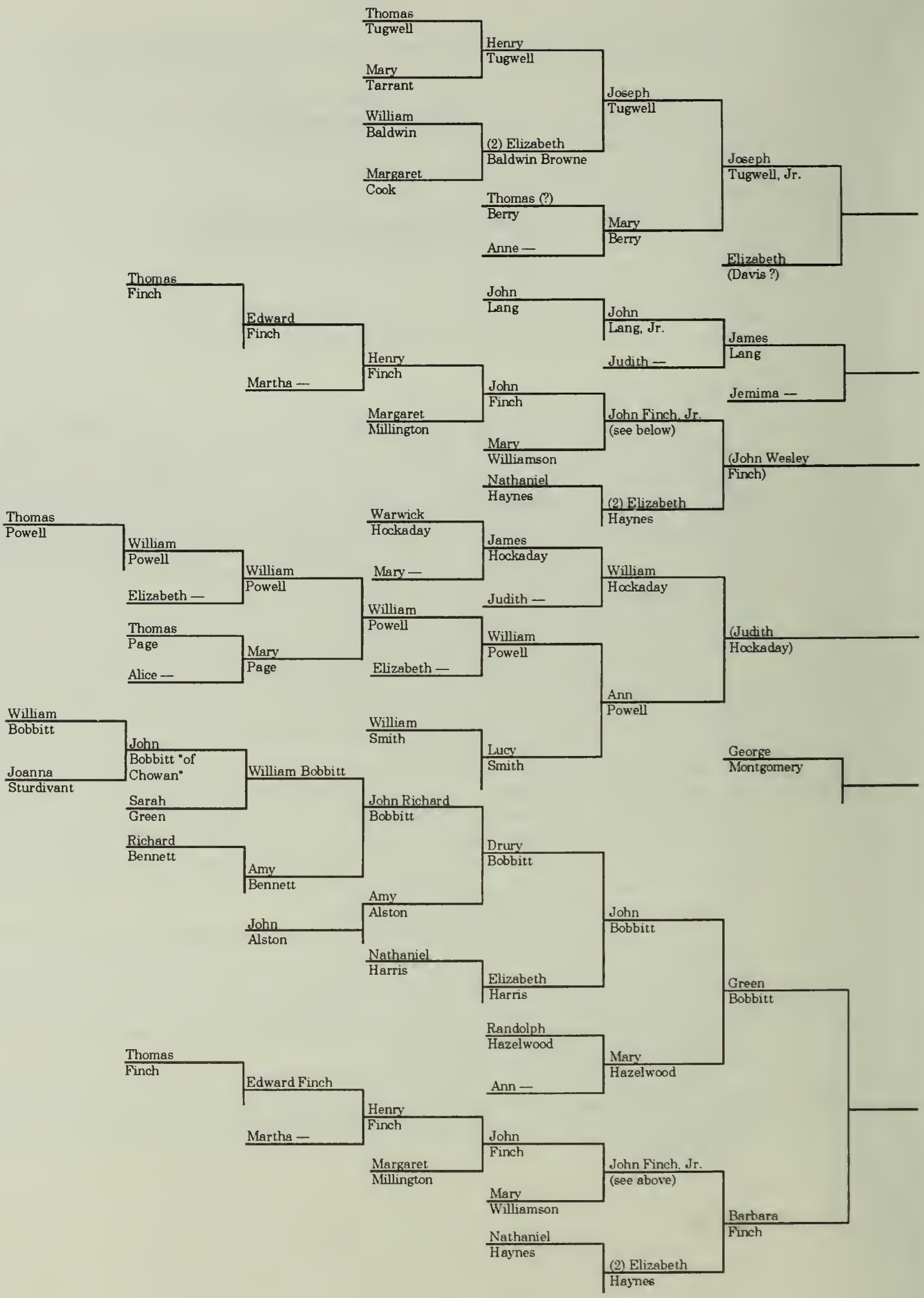
> Nothing is really ended until it is forgotten. Whatever is kept in memory still endures and is real.
>
> — U.S. Daughters of 1812
> *Newsletter*, 1992, vol. 69, no. 2

The families, in the order they are discussed, are Tugwells and Langs; Finches, Hockadays, Powells; Bobbitts and Montgomerys. Arriving in tidewater Virginia between 1635 and the end of the century, all of the various family lines we are concerned with stayed between forty-five and one hundred twenty-seven years in Virginia, and then moved to northeastern North Carolina. In 1826 and 1830 my male lines of Tugwell, Finch and Montgomery migrated to Haywood and Weakley counties in west Tennessee, and in 1867 these lines merged when Robert Rufus Tugwell married Benanna Alice Finch. Their youngest child was my mother, who in 1902 came with her widowered father and some of her siblings to Dallas, Texas. She was a proud Texan but never forgot her Tennessee heritage.

In order to give an overall picture of the plan and scope of the book, two devices are used. Following this Introduction is a specific and detailed master "pedigree diagram" or "family tree" that reveals the book's scope. The diagram was intentionally put in small print so the overall view could be referred to and read on just two pages. Following the pedigree diagram is a generalized outline in the form of a self-explanatory "road map." It shows in an abbreviated way the various family lines, where they originated, how and when they merged into one another, and then into the Tugwells (ending with my mother). In addition, smaller diagrams, usually for three generations, appear at the beginning of nearly every chapter so as to clarify the position of the particular person who is discussed in that chapter in relation to his parents, siblings, and children.

I tried to make a connected story from 1635 to the present so that descendants would get a feeling for the life their ancestors lived. Some siblings of various generations are treated more thoroughly than others, as sometimes the information just was not made available to me, or I could not find it myself, and other times I knew the families had already comprehensively recorded data on their own lines and there was no need to repeat it here.

Just preceding the first chapter are three pages of maps that briefly show the western migration of the families and how relatively close together they lived in each state. That will set the stage for the reader to visualize the path to be followed. Let us begin.


Thomas Tugwell
Mary Tarrant
Henry Tugwell
William Baldwin
Margaret Cook
(2) Elizabeth Baldwin Browne
Joseph Tugwell
Thomas (?) Berry
Anne —
Mary Berry
Joseph Tugwell, Jr.
Elizabeth (Davis ?)
Thomas Finch
Martha —
Edward Finch
John Lang
Judith —
John Lang, Jr.
James Lang
Jemima —
Henry Finch
Margaret Millington
John Finch
Mary Williamson
John Finch, Jr. (see below)
Nathaniel Haynes
(2) Elizabeth Haynes
(John Wesley Finch)
Thomas Powell
Elizabeth —
William Powell
Thomas Page
Alice —
Mary Page
William Powell
Warwick Hockaday
Mary —
James Hockaday
Judith —
William Hockaday
(Judith Hockaday)
William Powell
Elizabeth —
William Powell
Ann Powell
William Bobbitt
Joanna Sturdivant
John Bobbitt "of Chowan"
Sarah Green
William Bobbitt
Richard Bennett
Amy Bennett
William Smith
Lucy Smith
George Montgomery
John Richard Bobbitt
Amy Alston
John Alston
Nathaniel Harris
Drury Bobbitt
Elizabeth Harris
John Bobbitt
Randolph Hazelwood
Ann —
Mary Hazelwood
Green Bobbitt
Thomas Finch
Martha —
Edward Finch
Henry Finch
Margaret Millington
John Finch
Mary Williamson
John Finch, Jr. (see above)
Nathaniel Haynes
(2) Elizabeth Haynes
Barbara Finch

	6	5	4	3	2	1	GENERATIONS

James Tugwell

(2) Mary Lang

John L. Tugwell

(2) Lucinda Ball

Robert Rufus Tugwell

John Wesley Finch

Judith Hockaday

James Monroe Finch

William B. Montgomery

Matilda Caroline Bobbitt

Melissa Jane Montgomery

Benanna Alice Finch

Edna Gertrude Tugwell

Hicks Carr Maiden

Hicks Carr Maiden, Jr.

Natalie Mildred Dorsey

Hicks Carr, III
James Dorsey
Marilyn Gale
Bonnie Lee
Nancy Louise
Dean Dorsey

Joseph Guy Rollins, Jr.

Sarah Finch Maiden

Joseph Guy III
Sarah Finch
Edna Ethel

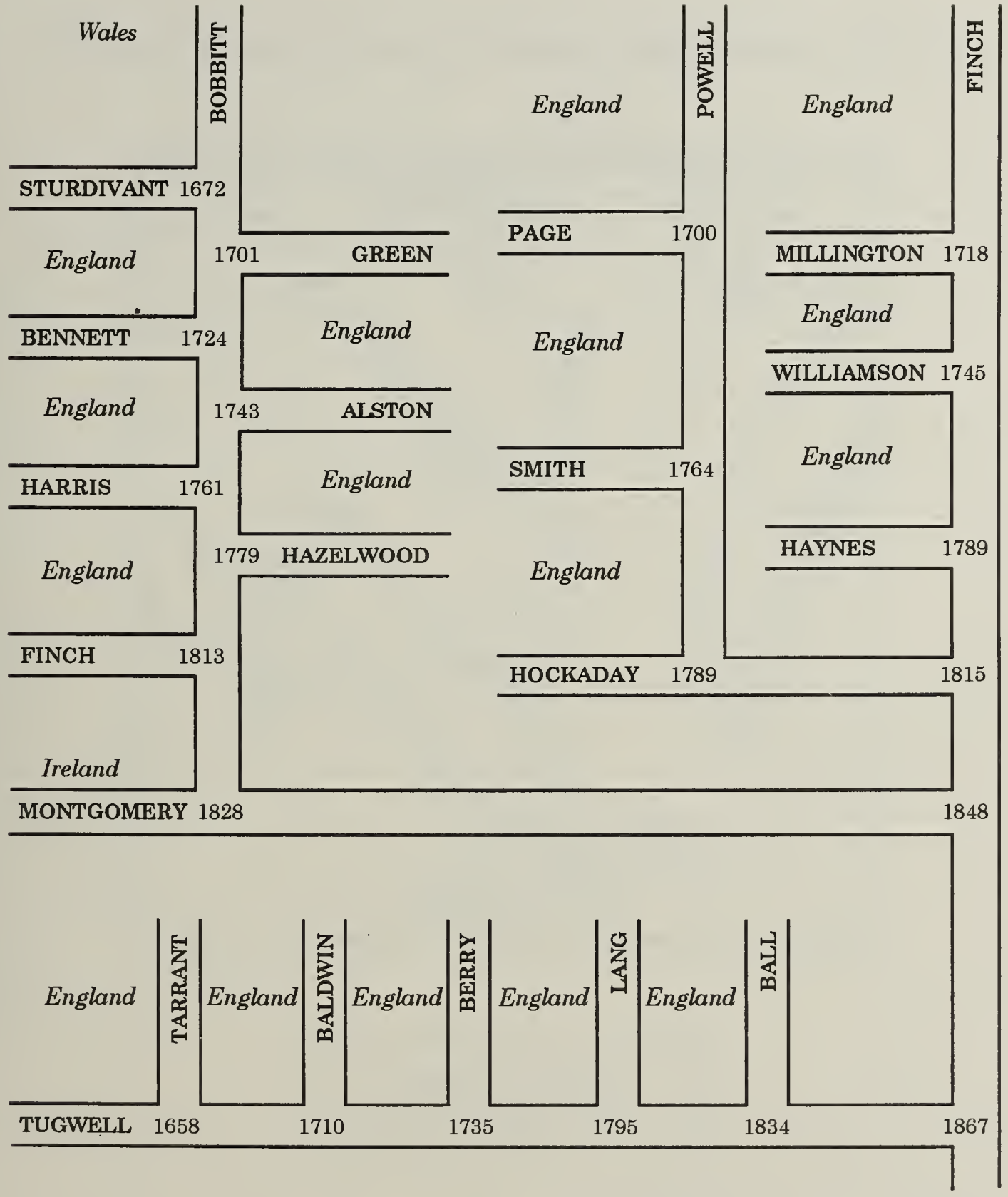
PEDIGREE DIAGRAM

FOR

THE TUGWELL - FINCH FAMILIES

1635–1993

SARAH FINCH MAIDEN ROLLINS 1993



EDNA GERTRUDE TUGWELL (1885–1953)

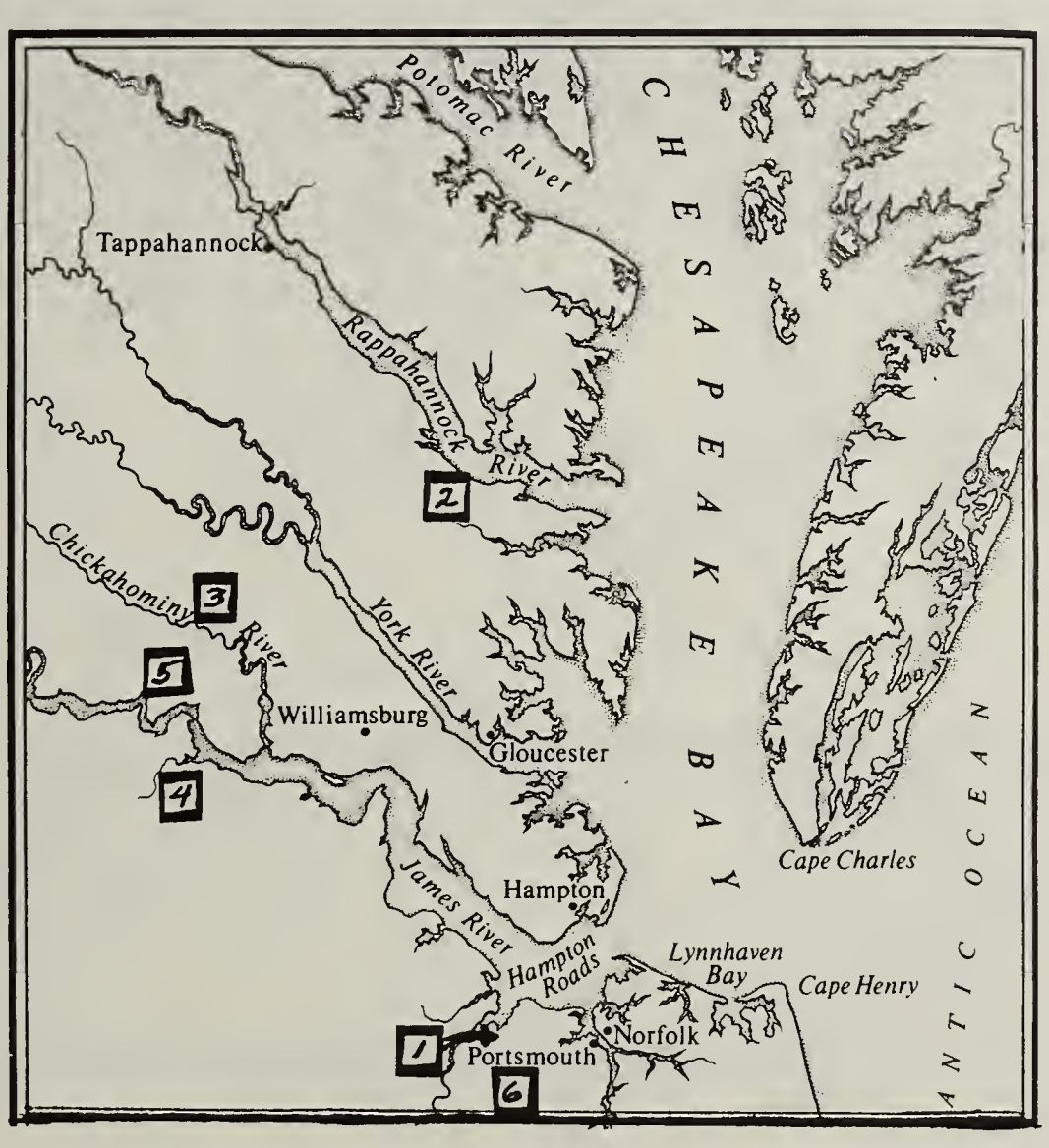
m. Hicks Carr Maiden, 1916

ROAD MAP FOR THE TUGWELL - FINCH FAMILIES AND ALLIED FAMILIES

SARAH FINCH MAIDEN ROLLINS

1993

OUR ANCESTORS CAME TO VIRGINIA FROM GREAT BRITAIN ...



TIDEWATER VIRGINIA

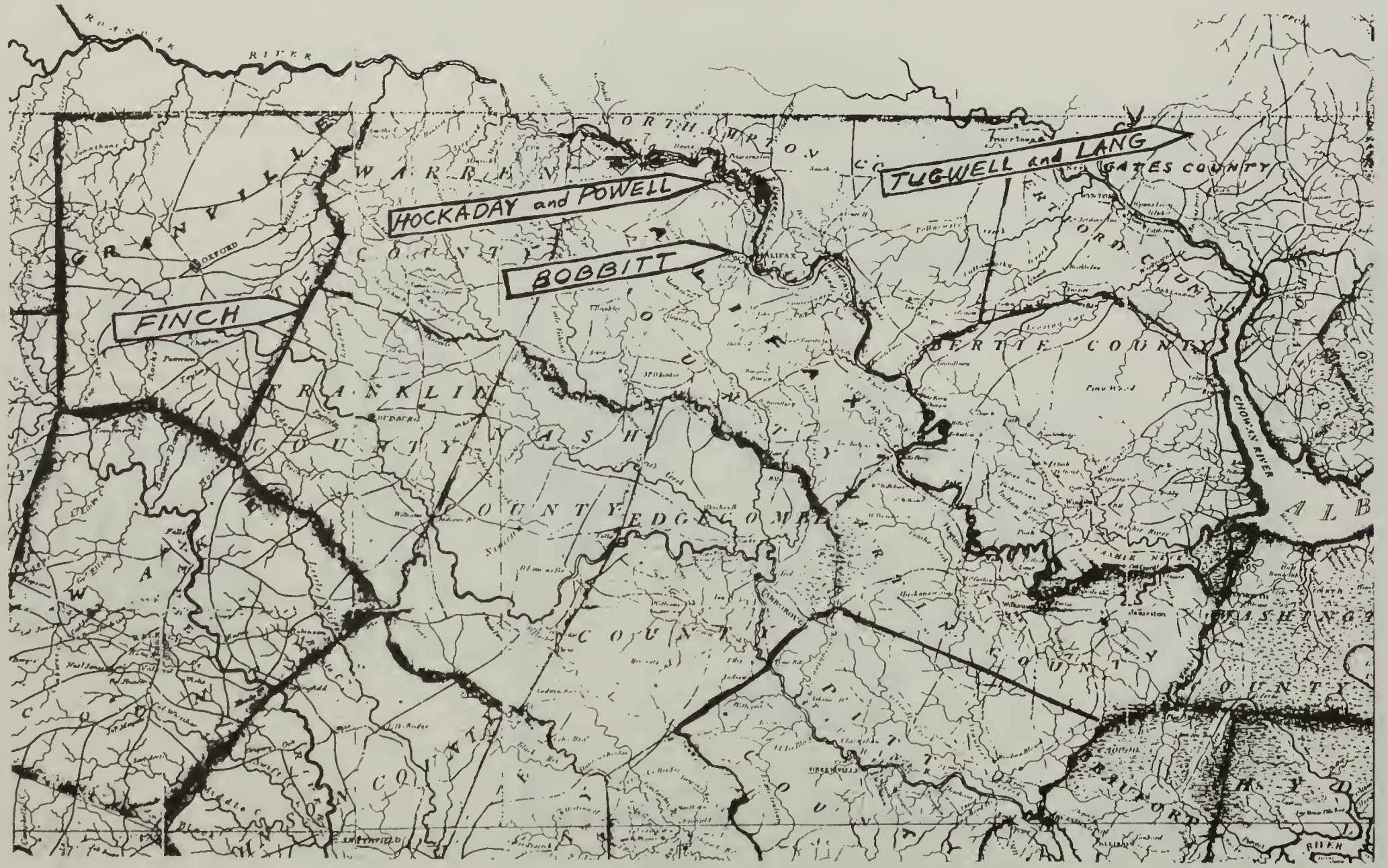
0 5 10 20 30

MILES

1. Thomas Powell	in 1635
2. Thomas Tugwell	in 1654
3. Thomas Finch	by 1663
4. William Bobbitt	in 1673
5. Warwick Hockaday	by 1700
6. John Lang	by 1705

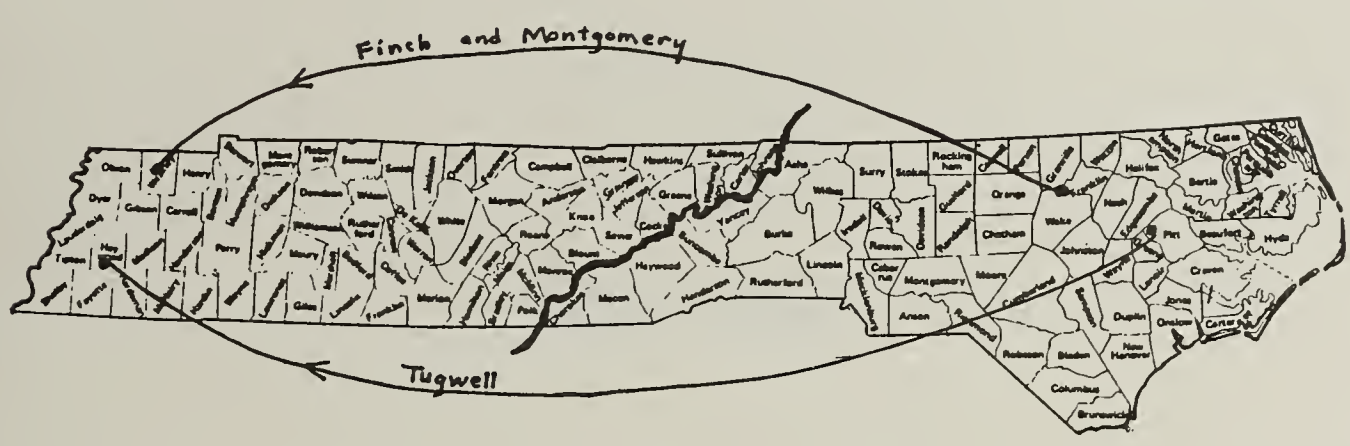
(Montgomery line is omitted here because of insufficient evidence.)

... and THEN THESE WENT TO NORTHEASTERN NORTH CAROLINA

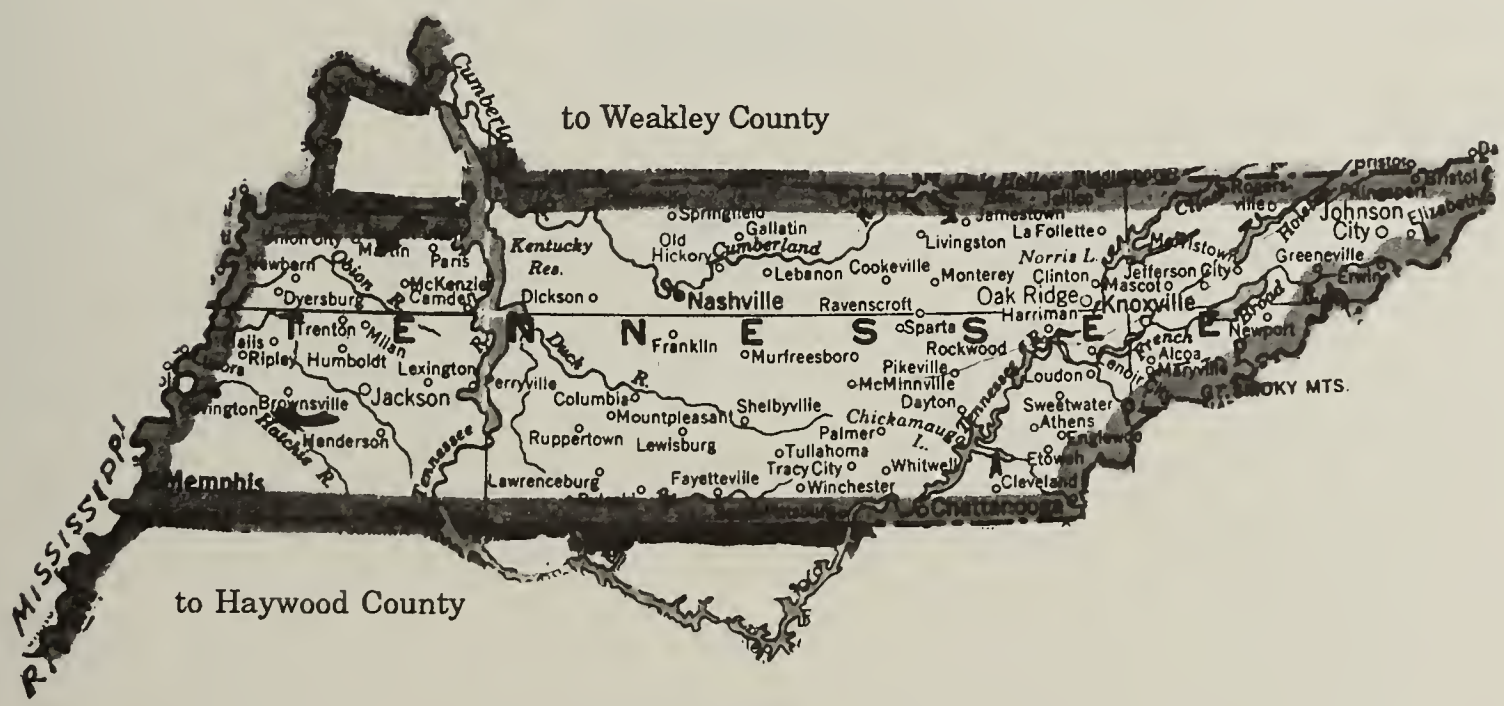


Bobbitt	(2d generation)	by 1718
Lang	(2d generation)	ca. 1747
Powell	(4th generation)	in 1749
Finch	(4th generation)	ca. 1767
Tugwell	(4th generation)	in 1772
Hockaday	(2d generation)	by 1776

... OUR LINES THEN MOVED TO WEST TENNESSEE

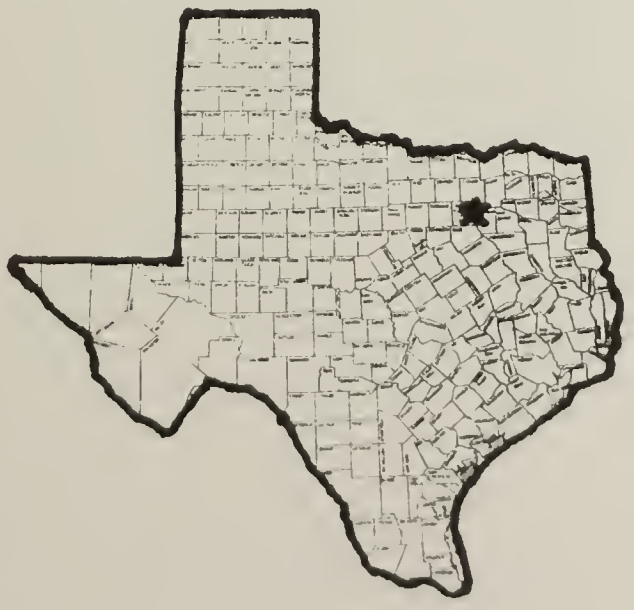


John Wesley Finch and Judith Hockaday — in 1826
William B. Montgomery and Matilda C. Bobbitt — in 1830
John L. Tugwell and Lucinda Ball — in 1830



... AND TO FINISH OUR STORY:

R. Rufus Tugwell and children moved to Dallas, Texas, in 1902 (preceded by son Albert in 1897)

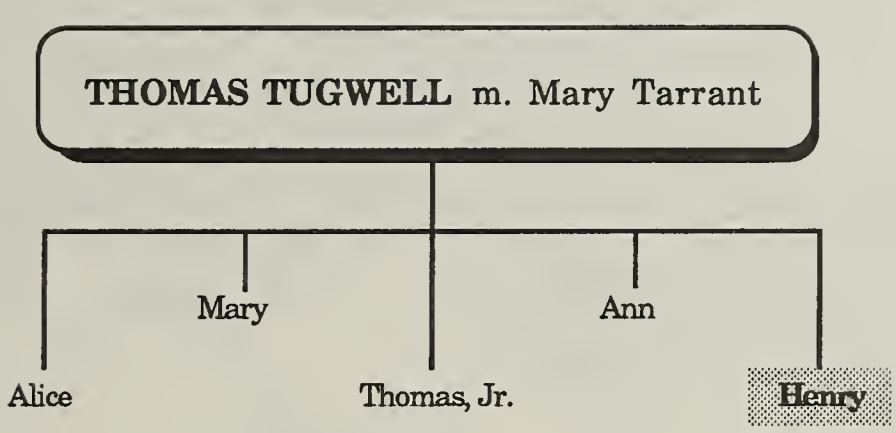


PART ONE

TUGWELL

LANG

THOMAS TUGWELL
(ca. 1630–1684)



THOMAS TUGWELL was the first of this surname in the Colony of Virginia. He was born in England, probably in Somersetshire[1] ca. 1630, and died in Middlesex County, Virginia, in the month of December 1684.

Thomas Tugwell is recorded as having arrived in Virginia on 6 May 1654 in York County in company with Obediah Williams, Robert Lilly, Thomas Williams, Benjamin Johnson, Nehemiah Cotton, John Pye, Elizabeth Dausell, and William Waterhouse.[2] Although Thomas' place of arrival is shown as York County, he actually settled in Lancaster County, which had been created two years earlier (in 1652) from York and Northumberland counties. Thomas was one of those pioneers who came there when the woods were unbroken forests, who first cleared the fields, established his home in the wilderness, and subdued the native wilds to his use.

On 4 January 1657 Thomas Tugwell acquired 100 acres of land in Lancaster County from John Curtis in a transaction witnessed by Robert Osborne and William Morgan.[3] On 20 August 1662 Richard and Frances Lewis conveyed to Thomas another 100 acres which was described as adjoining Thomas' lands and the lands of Cuthbert Potter and Thomas Willis.[4] By this time, probably ca. 1658, Thomas had married Mary Tarrant. No marriage record, however, has been found. Her family probably lived in that section of Old Rappahannock that later was in Essex County.[5]

---

1. Vivian S. Tuggle, *The Tuggle Family of Virginia*, 1970, pp. iii-vi, advances Somersetshire, but with no theory as to Thomas Tugwell's parentage. She agrees with the authoritative English work, *The Norman People*, and Henry Barber's 1903 *British Family Names* that the family surname was derived from the Norman place name Touqueville. After the Norman conquest of England the name was Anglicized to Tugwell, Tuggel, and Togwell.
2. Nell Marion Nugent, *Cavaliers and Pioneers*, 1934, vol. 1, p. 314.
3. Lancaster County, Virginia, Order Book 1654–1666, p. 147.
4. Ibid., p. 248.
5. Op.cit., footnote 1, Tuggle, p. 4, could not offer proof but stated Mary Tarrant was accepted as Thomas' wife by various correspondents—one of whom was Indiana Tuggle Davies (1860–1952) who was a skilled genealogist interested in family history for over fifty years—and had examined many

THOMAS TUGWELL EMIGRATED FROM SOMERSETSHIRE, ENGLAND, IN 1654

Lancaster County originally embraced land on both sides of the Rappahannock River. Sometime between 1666 and 1669 the area south of the River was removed from Lancaster County and became the new county of Middlesex. There were also changes in the parish names of the Established Church, but a few years after 1666 they assumed (and retained through the Colonial period) the designations "Christ Church, Lancaster," and "Christ Church, Middlesex." The one we are concerned with here is the latter. This is where Thomas Tugwell lived—south of the Rappahannock River in that half of Lancaster County that was new Middlesex County, and here he was a member of Christ Church Parish.

A distinctive fact is that the very first mention of Middlesex by name as a county is contained in a grant of land made by Gov. William Berkeley in 1669 to our Thomas Tugwell. The grant, dated 30 October 1669, was for two hundred and ten acres of land in Middlesex County "upon the branches of the Dragon Swamp," which amounts to ten more acres than Thomas was thought to have. In Thomas' grant his two tracts are described as 100 acres purchased from Richard Lewis, and

---

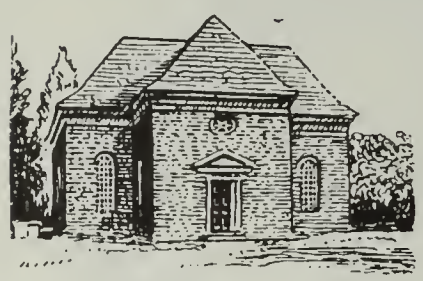
ancient family papers and records. She had a wealth of information that was later verified. Her husband was for many years a law professor at the University of Richmond and she had the benefit of his critical appraisal of her data and sources.

the remainder being an adjoining parcel of land by the boundary lines of Mr. Cuthbert Potter and Richard Lewis. The Dragon Swamp is the upper part of the Piankatank River. As is often the case in North Carolina and Virginia, *swamp* means *stream*, and you can see on the map below that the southern border of Middlesex County is the Piankatank and its upper extension, the Dragon Swamp.

THOMAS TUGWELL'S LAND IN MIDDLESEX COUNTY, VIRGINIA,
WAS LOCATED "UPON THE BRANCHES OF THE DRAGON SWAMP"

The original Vestry Book and original Parish Register of Christ Church in Middlesex are now in the Episcopal Theological Seminary in Alexandria, Virginia. In 1897 the Parish Register was published by the National Society of

Colonial Dames of America in the State of Virginia.[6] The Parish Register shows many entries anent residents of the original parishes south of the Rappahannock River, beginning in 1653 before the creation of Middlesex, and ending in 1812.



Christ Church
Middlesex County, Virginia

The earliest record of a death entered in the Christ Church Parish Register (p. 9) states that "Alice daughter of Thos. and Mary Tugwell dyed and was buried 22 November 1660." The Register also proves they were the parents of at least four other children: Mary, Thomas, Ann, and Henry.

A record dated 30 April 1670 shows that Thomas Tugwell was one of twelve men appointed by the Middlesex County Court to inquire into whether a certain 300-acre tract of William Ludford, deceased, should be escheated to the Crown.[7] "Mr. Perrott's Creek" was mentioned in connection with the 300-acre tract.

Thomas Tugwell the Immigrant was in his fifties when he died in December 1684. His will, dated 30 June 1681, was admitted to probate in Middlesex County 4 January 1685 and is recorded in the Clerk's Office at Saluda.[8] His older son, Thomas, Jr., was appointed executor, and witnesses were neighbors Edmund and Tobias Mickelburrough. The Court appointed John Stamper, Henry Thacker, John Gordon, and John Williams as appraisers of the estate and ordered that they bring an inventory to Court.

Written over three hundred years ago, the time-faded will is penned in quaint spelling and archaic script and much of it is now undecipherable. The first two paragraphs were not unique for a God-fearing man of Thomas' time:

> I, THOMAS TUGWELL, of ye county of Middlesex in Viga being in health of body and of perfect mind and memorie, thanks be to God, considering the frayltye of mans nature and how subject unto death this Mortall lodge of mine is, Knowing it is appointed for all men once to dye and being desirous to settle things in Order, do ordayne and confirme my last Will and Testament in manner and forme following.
>
> That is to say First and Principle I Will my Soule to God that gave it me Believing that I shall receive full Pardon for all my sins and be saved through the Merritt of my Blessed Savior and Dear Redeemer the Lord Jesus Christ, and my bodie to the earth from whence it was taken, to be Buried in desent manner, not doubting but in the general Resurrection I shall Arise and be ornitted [united] Soule and Bodie together again by ye Mighty Power of God. As touching such Worldly Estate as the Lord hath lent me in this life I bequeath & dispose of in manner and forme following.

Mary (Tarrant) Tugwell had preceded her husband in death. Thomas' 1681 will revealed his desire for his children to bury him "on the left or north side of my deceased wife." He mentioned by name his four surviving children. To Thomas he devised 100 acres "adjoining Cuthbert Potter," together with his sword and a small gun. To his son Henry, my ancestor, he left "the seate of land I now live upon containing 100 acres adjoining John Stamper and Thomas Wilton," and also his pistols. Henry was directed to allow John Burke/Bourke, his brother-in-law, to build a small house on the lower end of the homeplace if he desired. Reference was made to Thomas' daughters' godfather, William — (surname now illegible).

---

6. The author became a member of this national organization through Thomas Carter, Jr., and Edward Dale of Lancaster County, ancestors on the Maiden side of the family.
7. This is recorded in Virginia Miscellany Manuscripts Division, Library of Congress, p. 128.
8. Middlesex County, Virginia, Loose Wills, part 1, p. 27.

No record prior to 1700 has been discovered that mentions any Tugwell/Tuggle except Thomas and his children in Middlesex County, Virginia, and Thomas and Mary (Tarrant) Tugwell are the ancestors of all the Tugwells/Tuggles mentioned hereinafter. When Thomas Tugwell who came from England to Virginia in 1654 died in December 1684, all his children were underage except Mary, who was the wife of John Burke (Bourk). Thomas was nineteen, Ann was seventeen, and our Henry was fourteen. We wish we knew more about our immigrant Tugwell ancestor, the first of eight generations of Tugwells in our particular line.

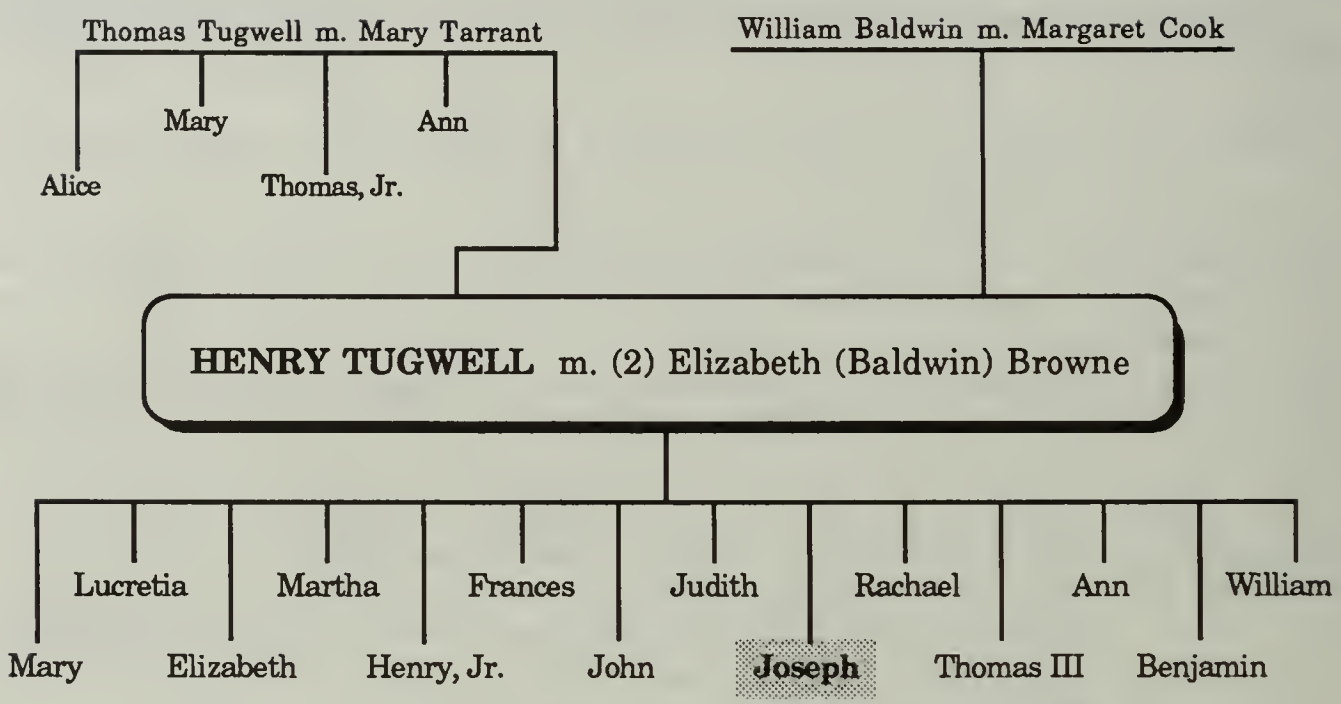
Children of Thomas Tugwell and Mary (Tarrant), (dates from Christ Church Parish Register):

1. Alice Tugwell: b. ca. 1659; d. November 1660, Middlesex (then Lancaster) County, Virginia
2. Mary Tugwell: b. "last of October" 1661, Middlesex (then Lancaster) County, Virginia; m. ca. 1682, John Bourk (Burke); d. 18 January 1686 (date of burial, Christ Church Parish Register) at age 24. John died in 1699.
   Children:
   (1) John Burke, Jr.: b. 28 February 1683. He was bound out to his uncle Henry Tugwell (#5 infra) for five years at age 16 upon his father's death.
   (2) Ann Burke: b. ca. 1685; m. (1) 23 February 1704, James Jordan; m. (2) 14 November 1710, Valentine Mayo; d. 1743
   There were 14 children of Ann's second marriage, of whom 8 sons are said to have served in the American Revolution. The eldest, James (1711–1776) married Martha, daughter of Robert Williamson of Middlesex County.
3. Thomas Tugwell, Jr.: b. 16 June 1664, Middlesex (then Lancaster) County, Virginia; d. 25 March 1687, age 22 years. His brother Henry inherited the 110 (100?) acres devised to Thomas, Jr., by their father.
4. Ann Tugwell: b. 15 March 1666, Middlesex (then Lancaster) County, Virginia; m. 6 February 1686, Nicholas Rice
   Children:
   (1) William Rice: b. ca. 1690; m. Catherine —
   (2) Ann Rice: baptized 27 November 1692
   (3) Jacob Rice: b. ca. 1693; m. Elizabeth —
   (4) Mary Rice: b. ca. 1694; m. 24 October 1717, John Carter

5. HENRY TUGWELL MY DIRECT LINE
   Born: 7 October 1670, Middlesex County, Virginia
   Married: (1) 26 August 1692, Mary Baskett, daughter of John and Elizabeth Baskett
   (2) 31 October 1710, Mrs. Elizabeth (Baldwin) Browne, daughter of William and Margaret (Cook) Baldwin
   Died: 3 January 1743, Middlesex County, Virginia
   Children of 1st marriage: Mary, Lucretia, Elizabeth, Martha, Henry, Jr., Frances, John, Judith
   Children of 2d marriage: Joseph (my line), Rachel, Thomas, Ann, Benjamin, William

[See "Henry Tugwell"—son]

HENRY TUGWELL
(1670–1743)



Note: The eight children before Joseph were of Henry Tugwell's first marriage to Mary Baskett, daughter of Elizabeth and John Baskett.

HENRY TUGWELL, the youngest child of Mary (Tarrant) and Thomas Tugwell, was born 7 October 1670[1] in Middlesex County, Virginia, and grew up upon the branches of a stream called Dragon Swamp. Henry was fourteen years old when his father died in 1684, his mother having died earlier. His sister Mary (Tugwell) Burke died in January 1686, his sister Ann married Nicholas Rice the next month, and his brother Thomas died in March of the following year. Henry was more or less on his own at the age of seventeen and a half, and probably lived with his sister Ann and her husband. In addition to his own inherited land, Henry inherited Thomas, Jr.,'s share of the family land upon his brother's death, and now owned the total 210 acres on the Dragon Swamp, which is the upper part of the Piankatank River toward the lower King and Queen County line [see map in previous chapter].

Even a cursory analysis of the colony's rent roll is sufficient to dispel the old belief early Virginia was the land of the large proprietor. The rolls reveal the existence of thousands of little proprietors, whose holdings of 50 to 500 acres embraced the larger part of the cultivated soil of the colony. For example, in Middlesex County out of 122 holdings eleven were of 50 acres or less, thirty-three between 50

1. Exact birth, marriage, and death dates in this chapter are from *Register of Christ Church Parish, Middlesex.*

and 100 acres, thirty-two between 100 and 200 acres, *twenty-five between 200 and 500 acres*, nineteen between 500 and 2,500 acres, and two between 4,000 and 5,200 acres.[2]

Later, Henry Tugwell added to his land and owned some 400 acres.[3] He became a man of substance and was active in affairs of Christ Church Parish and of Middlesex County. By the time he was thirty, and continuing for over twenty-five years, there is a steady stream of references to him in Middlesex Court Order Books and the Parish Vestry Book. The scope of his activities and names of his associates indicate that he was a planter of respectable standing in the county.

The first order in the Middlesex Court that mentions Henry Tugwell was entered 2 January 1698 when he and his widower brother-in-law, John Bourk/Burke, qualified as executors of the will of Thomas Obrisell.[4] A year later, after John Bourk's death, sixteen year old John, Jr., was bound over to his Uncle Henry until he was twenty-one.[5] Henry, twenty-eight, had a wife, four little daughters, and no sons at that time. Both Henry and his nephew benefited by the arrangement.

Henry Tugwell married twice and had fourteen children. His first wife was Mary Baskett, a daughter of John and Elizabeth Baskett, whom he married on 26 August 1692. The Basketts were living in Christ Church Parish before 1679. John Baskett came from England and is said to have been a member of the Baskett family who were printers to the King and to Oxford University for several generations. Records of the Parish Register show that Henry and Mary (Baskett) Tugwell had these children (and there may have been one or two unrecorded): Mary, Lucretia, Elizabeth, Martha, Henry, Jr., Frances, John, and Judith. Mary (Baskett) Tugwell died ca. 1710, but there is no record of the exact date of her death.

Henry's second wife, whom he married on 31 October 1710, was Elizabeth (Baldwin) Browne, daughter of William and Margaret (Cook) Baldwin, and she was the mother of our ancestor Joseph Tugwell. Elizabeth, at the age of twenty-five, was about fifteen years younger than Henry when they married, and was a widow with two young children. Her first husband, whom she married 5 December 1705, was James Browne. The Parish Register establishes that the following children were born to Henry and Elizabeth (Baldwin) Tugwell: Joseph, Rachel, Thomas III, Ann, Benjamin, and William, the last child, born in 1725.

In records beginning ca. 1700 the spelling of Tugwell started to change to Tuggle and variations such as Tugle, Tugel, Tugil, and Tugell. That is, the way that the name was and is still pronounced in England (with the *w* silent) became the way it was being *spelled* in the Colonies. We know because of record evidence that Thomas, the immigrant Tugwell, spelled his name Tugwell. My particular line still spells the name as he did (more about that in the "John L. Tugwell" chapter), and pronounces it not the English way, but Tug'wl.

On 1 April 1700 Henry Tugwell was appointed Constable in the place of Thomas Kidd.[6] The office of constable in colonial times under English law was of more importance than now. One was appointed in every Hundred or Franchise, whose proper duty it was to see that the King's peace was kept within his bounds. In December Court 1708 Henry was appointed Surveyor of Highways.[7] In English law a man was elected to this position by the inhabitants of a parish to survey the highways and roads therein. These were the only civil offices Henry ever held so far as is known. Under the heading "County Levy Laid—Claymes Allowed" he

---

2. Information in this paragraph is from Thomas Jefferson Wertenbaker, *The Planters of Colonial Virginia*, 1922, pp. 52, 53, re 1704 rent roll, a copy of which is in the Public Records Office, London.
3. Not documented by me, but stated in Vivian S. Tuggle, *The Tuggle Family in Virginia*, 1970, p. 7.
4. Middlesex County, Virginia, Orders 1694–1705, p. 265.
5. Ibid., p. 317.
6. Ibid., p. 337.
7. Middlesex County, Virginia, Order Book 4, 1705–1710, p. 206.

was at various times paid in tobacco for "Services," and so far as it is possible to tell from the brevity of the records, such services were for surveying.[8]

Middlesex County Court Orders give evidence of Henry's performing other civic duties. On 7 April 1701 he was on a jury with John Vivien, Richard Allen, Marvill Moseley, Thomas Hopkins, John Hadley, Thomas Crank, David George, Edward Clarke, George Wortham, Joseph Goare, and Henry Nicholls. He served as a juryman 6 March 1703, was on the Grand Jury May 1704, and 6 January 1706 heard the cases of *John Grimes v. Harry Beverley* and *William Churchill v. Beverley.* He served on the Grand Jury December 1707 and May 1709. He was a juryman in 1709 for *Ralph Wormeley v. Gowen Corbin; Corbin v. John Alden; Henry Thacker, Chichley, et al Ex'ors. v. James Devolve;* and *Gowen Corbin v. George Bowritch,* Commander of the frigate *Carter,* but "by consent" others were appointed to the panel. In 1710 Henry was a juror for *Francis Weekes v. Thomas Montague* and *William Churchill v. Thomas Lantor;* in 1711 in *Alexander Graves v. John Smith* and *James Weekes v. John Clarke;* and 1712 in *John Southern v. William Gardner.* During the four years 1715–1718 he was a member of the Grand Jury each year and served on petit juries that heard the cases of *Seger v. Alwood, Graves v. Perrott, Curtis v. Daniel, Clarke v. Keeling,* and others.

In 1709 Henry was arbitrator with Edmund Mickelburrough and Patrick Manion (Mainwell) in *Thomas Kidd v. Henry Barnes.* Many times he was appointed by the Court as appraiser of the estate of someone who had recently died, and some who appraised with him were: Matthew Hunt, James Meacham, John Smith, Jr. and Sr., John Robinson, George Wortham, George Chowning, John Lewis, James Curtis, Jr., John Batchelder, John Alden, William Wood, Lawrence Orrill, and Stokely Towles. Henry helped appraise estates of John Hay in 1707, James Jordan (his niece Ann Bourk's first husband) in 1711, John Davis in 1716, Valentine Mayo (niece Ann Bourk's second husband) in 1716, Abraham Trigg in 1719, Henry Baskett (his first wife's uncle) in 1721, Sarah Batchelder in 1721, Joseph Jacobs in 1722, John Alden in 1727, Powell Stamper in 1727, Dr. Mark Bannerman in 1728, Matthew Hunt in 1728, Richard Moulson in 1730[9] and William Wood in 1734.[10]

Various orders in which Henry Tugwell (now Henry Tuggle) is mentioned appear in the Vestry Book of Christ Church Parish. The following is typical:

> In pursuance of an Order of Middlesex County Court dated 2d day of August 1715— this Vestry have divided this precinct into severall Precincts, And have appointed two Intelligent honest Freeholders of every severall Precincts to see the lands within sd. severall Precincts processioned as Followeth (viz) Ordered that *Mr. Henry Tuggle* and Mr. John Smith, Jun. Sometime between the 2d Tuesday of October and the last day of March procession every particular man's land between Prittyman's Rolling Roade[11] and Robt. Williamson's land, Running from the main Roade to the Dragon [stream] on the South side of the maine Roade. (emphasis added)

---

8. An example is in Middlesex County, Virginia, Order Book 1721–1726, p. 175.
9. 1713–1734 Middlesex County, Virginia, Wills, pp. 327, 328, 345, 356, 367.
10. 1710–1721 Middlesex County, Virginia, Order Book, p. 507.
11. A Rolling Roade was one over which hogsheads of tobacco could be rolled. An Act of Assembly required tobacco warehouses to be within half a mile of a wharf or other loading place and connected by a "rolling road." The determination every three or four years of boundaries of land was one of many administrative functions of county government that were assigned to Virginia vestries. Each vestry ordinarily divided the area under its jurisdiction into precincts and appointed two master processioners to view the lands in each precinct. The processioners were chosen for their fairness and character and usually were men in whom their neighbors had confidence. The owners were expected to be present and permit the peaceful procedure of the survey, and any complaints by the landowner were entered in the processioners' reports. Henry Tuggle processioned in 1715, 1719, 1722, and 1727.

Tobacco was the principal commodity exported by the Virginia Colony and was the main medium of exchange. Of necessity its cultivation was quite strictly regulated in a manner suggestive of modern agricultural quotas. Henry Tuggle was an "inspector" in 1725, 1726, 1727, and 1728. This order, mentioning Henry, gives an idea of the extent of the regulation:

> At a Vestry held for Christ Church Parish in Middlesex County 8th day of June 1727—Pursuant to an Act of the Last Session of Assembly Entitled an Act for the Better and More Effectual Improving the Staple of Tobacco. Ordered that *Mr. Henry Tuggle* and Mr. John Smith, Jun. in the Beginning of the next month do Examine and inquire of the Names and number of the persons allowed by law to tend Tobacco and the crops of the Severall Planters and numbers of Plants growing on any and every Plantation from the Upper side of the Roade leading from Prittyman's Landing to the Dragon Bridge up the Parish to Thacker's Mill, thence north across the parish to the new Dragon Bridge, including the Widdow Cheedles Plantation, And they cause to be cut up and destroyed all Stalks Slips and Suckers within sd. Precinct and Perform and Execute the Severall Duties and Powers given and enjoined them by the Act of Assembly for the Better and More Effectual Improving the Staple of Tobacco. (emphasis added)

By mentioning the Old and the New Bridges over the Dragon, the above order seems to place the Tugwell land between the two. Since the names of Prittiman's Rolling Road and several creek names on deeds have long since fallen into disuse, this is about as close as the author can locate the Tugwell land in Middlesex County. [See map on p. 15] During his lifetime close neighbors were John Bourk, Thomas Obrisell, John Stamper, and Valentine Mayo. All of them lived near Mickelburrough's Swamp.

Henry's father had died in his fifties. When Henry died in 1743 at the age of seventy-two, Elizabeth (Baldwin) Tugwell was in her late fifties, and their youngest child, William, was seventeen. We do not know what their home looked like, but if it resembled the dwellings of other planters of the time, *The Tuggle Family* book suggests it was a barnlike, unpainted wooden structure a story and a half high, with gabled roof and huge outside chimneys at each end almost as wide as the house. Close by was the kitchen in a separate building and a few cabins used as servants' quarters—at first by whites whose passage money had been paid to obtain their labor for a time, and later by Negro slaves. Native flowers grew around, and likely some plants that had been imported from England. There was also an orchard with peach, apple, and pear trees, and probably some distance from the dwelling, a stockade in which swine, sheep, and cattle could be confined. Somewhere on the premises Henry kept and operated the still with which he made peach and apple brandy.

Henry Tugwell/Tuggle wrote his will 2 January 1742, and he died 3 January 1743. His will[12] was witnessed by John Lewis, Jr., John Stamper, and John Baldwin, a relative of his wife. He appointed his wife Elizabeth and their son Thomas to be executors of his will.

Of Henry Tugwell's six daughters and two sons of his marriage to Mary Baskett, at least two daughters and one son preceded him in death—Lucretia in 1730, Frances in 1731, and Henry, Jr., in 1733. There may have been others, but death dates are not known for all his children. Henry and his second wife, Elizabeth, had four sons and two daughters. The youngest three children of that marriage, Ann, Benjamin, and William, apparently did not marry. Henry's two

---

12. Middlesex County, Virginia, Will Book C, pp. 117–120.

older sons, John and Henry, Jr. (deceased), had previously received their share of the estate. To my ancestor Joseph, oldest son of his second marriage, Henry bequeathed the 100 acres whereon Joseph was already living, being the land Henry's father had purchased from Richard Lewis in 1662. To son Thomas he bequeathed the 110-acre plantation whereon he (Henry) was living when he wrote his will, and also "my Brandy Still with its Cap and Worm [a spiral condensing tube]." His other children received slaves, with the youngest son receiving "my Pistols and Holsters" also. The rest of his estate was given to his wife Elizabeth (Baldwin) for her lifetime or as long as she was a widow. But even if she married, she was to receive a child's share of his real and personal estate (aforesaid legacies excepted). His children, as well as his stepchildren James Browne and Elizabeth (Browne) Wood, were to receive equal shares of his personal estate, which he wished to be divided by Capt. Henry Thacker and Capt. Thomas Price. The will was signed Henrey Tugle, and many descendants (with exceptions which included my mother's line) stopped using Tugwell and used Tuggle instead.

All Henry Tugwell/Tuggle's children and grandchildren were born in Middlesex County, Virginia, and all his children died there. It is not known exactly when Henry's widow, Elizabeth (Baldwin) Tugwell/Tuggle died. She was in her late fifties when her son Joseph, my ancestor, wrote his will in March 1744 requesting she bring up his son (Joseph, Jr.) if Anne Berry could not. Elizabeth's husband, Henry Tugwell, had died 3 January 1743, fifteen months earlier.

Children of Henry Tugwell and 1st wife Mary (Baskett)—all born and died in Middlesex County, Virginia:

1. Mary Tuggle: b. 22 September 1693
   m. 27 January 1708, Jonathan Brooks (d. 1744)
   Children:
   (1) Henry Brooks: b. 1 May 1712
   (2) Susanna Brooks: b. 6 March 1716
   (3) Mary Brooks: b. 3 April 1719
   (4) Jonathan Brooks, Jr.: b. 6 April 1722
   (5) William Brooks: b. 9 September 1723
   (6) Frances Brooks: b. 19 April 1727
   (7) Mayo Brooks: b. 17 September 1733
   (8) — Brooks
2. Lucretia Tuggle: b. 1694
   m. (1) 16 February 1708, Joseph Goare
   m. (2) 22 November 1728, John Crockford
   d. 16 December 1730, Middlesex County, Virginia
   Children:
   (1) Ann Goare: b. 4 February 1710
   (2) William Goare: b. 3 April 1715
   (3) Joseph Goare, Jr.: b. 3 November 1717
   (4) Henry Goare: b. 7 June 1719
   (5) Lucretia Goare: b. 12 February 1721
   (6) Josee Goare (male): b. 2 June 1724
3. Elizabeth Tuggle: b. ca. 1696?
   m. 12 September 1722, Henry Ball (d. 21 November 1735)
   Children included:
   (1) Anna Ball: b. 11 June 1723
   (2) Elizabeth Ball: b. 28 December 1726

4. Martha Tuggle: b. ca. 1698?
   m. 19 October 1721, becoming the second wife of George Chowning (1688–1744), son of Robert and Ann Chowning
   Children:
   (1) Anne Chowning: b. 22 December 1722
   (2) George Chowning, Jr.: b. 1725; d. 1726
   (3) George Chowning, Jr.: b. 22 November 1727. On 23 May 1764, purchased Farrar's Ordinary in Goochland County.
   (4) Elizabeth Chowning: b. 20 March 1729
   (5) Francis Chowning: b. 6 November 1733
   (6) Martha Chowning: b. 1735, died young
5. Henry Tuggle, Jr.: b. ca. 1699
   m. 30 March 1722, Mary Godbey (b. 1701, d. post-1749 in Goochland County), daughter of Edward and Frances Godbey. In April 1726 this Henry Tugel (*sic*) witnessed wills of two brothers, Robert and Benjamin Williamson;[13] d. 14 March 1733 in Middlesex County, and his will was probated by his father.[14] Henry, Jr.,'s widow married his first cousin Daniel Baskett ca. 1735 and in 1738 they moved to Goochland County and later to Amherst County.
   Children:
   (1) John Tuggle: b. 12 February 1724; m. ca. 1745, Mary Houchens, Goochland County, Virginia; d. 1793, having returned to Goochland County
      Children: William, Mollie, John, Jr., Charles, Henry, James, Joshua, Joseph, Jane, Seela
   (2) Henry Tuggle III: b. 24 February 1728; m. 1751, Ellender Conoly, daughter of Bryant Conoly, Jr.; d. post-1804, Goochland County, Virginia. After his mother's second marriage, Henry moved with the rest of the family to Goochland County, and there are many records for him there.
      Children: Mary, John, Henry, William, Elizabeth, Frances, Thomas, Jane, James, Martha
   (3) James Tuggle: b. 20 August 1732; m. Ann?; d. ca. 1785, Goochland County, Virginia. Apparently litigious, he was frequently involved in civil and minor criminal cases.
6. Frances Tuggle: b. 17 August 1702; m. 21 January 1724, William Mansfield; d. 21 February 1731
   Children:
   (1) Mary Mansfield: b. 12 December 1726
   (2) William Mansfield, Jr.: b. 11 February 1728
7. John Tuggle: b. 5 November 1705; m. 8 October 1725, Catherine Kelly (d. Jan. 1782); d. November 1759
   Children:
   (1) Melger Tuggle: b. ca. 1726. He moved to Frederick County by 1755.
   (2) Tibitha Tuggle: b. 27 October 1728; m. John Fox; d. 1789
      Children included: James, Margaret
   (3) Henry Tuggle (IV): b. 27 November 1731; m. Elizabeth — (d. post 1783); d. 1770. Records of Christ Church Vestry Book (pp. 209, 300, 311) show that he, like his grandfather Henry, "processioned," 1759, 1763, and 1767.

---

13. Middlesex County, Virginia, Will Book, pp. 287–291.
14. 1732–1737 Middlesex County, Virginia, Order Book, p. 27.

Children included: John, Frances, Mary
(4) Nicholas Tuggle: b. and d. 1736
(5) Griffin Tuggle: b. 5 August 1737; m. (1) unknown;
m. (2) Mrs. Frances Berry; d. 1807, Caswell County, North Carolina
Children: Nicholas (of 1st marriage), Anne (of 2d marriage)
(6) Catherine Tuggle: b. 22 February 1741
(7) Benjamin Tuggle: b. 10 July 1745

8. Judith Tuggle: b. ca. 1709?; m. 8 April 1729, William Baldwin (d. 26 July 1736)
Children:
(1) Elizabeth Baldwin: b. 28 October 1730
(2) William Baldwin, Jr.: b. 27 August 1732
(3) Sarah Baldwin: b. 31 March 1734
(4) Joseph Baldwin: b. 21 December 1735

Children of Henry Tugwell and 2d wife Elizabeth (Baldwin):

9. JOSEPH TUGGLE MY DIRECT LINE
Born: ca. 1711, Middlesex County, Virginia
Married: ca. 1735?, Mary Berry, daughter of Anne and Thomas? Berry
Died: 1745 (will probated 2 April 1745), Middlesex County, Virginia
Children: Henry, Joseph, Jr. (my line), Thomas
[See "Joseph Tuggle" chapter]

10. Rachel Tuggle: b. 8 August 1715; m. 3 October 1732, John Chowning (b. 27 August 1707), son of Thomas and Sarah Chowning; d. 27 March 1747
Children included:
(1) Thomas Chowning: b. 13 July 1734
(2) Anne Chowning: b. 26 October 1736; m. 24 October 1772, Churchill Blakey, Jr.

11. Thomas Tuggle III: b. 26 January 1717; m. ca. 1740, Sarah Kelly; d. October 1754. His will, probated 3 November 1754, was witnessed by John Taylor, Thomas Berry, and Thomas Tuggle's sister Ann. His widow married Richard Daniel.
Children:
(1) Lodowick Tuggle: b. 14 September 1741, Middlesex County, Virginia; m. 1 October 1765 (date of bond), Dorothy Lee, daughter of George and Mary (Buford) Lee. The marriage bond stated "Lodowick Tuggle, gent...." Lodowick and Dorothy moved to Prince Edward County, Virginia, in 1769, then to Pittsylvania County, Virginia, in 1776. He was a lieutenant in the militia in 1777, a captain in 1787. In 1791 he sold his 1100-acre plantation, and the family moved to (now) Oglethorpe County, Georgia.
d. September/October 1798 in Oglethorpe, Georgia
Children:
1. George Tuggle: m. Polly Swanson
2. Robert Tuggle: m. Elizabeth Jeffries
3. Thomas Tuggle: m. ante-1797
4. William Tuggle: m. Anna Dunn
5. Sally Tuggle
6. Eunice Tuggle
7. Savannah Tuggle
8. Catherine Tuggle: m. 1798, George Jeffries

9. Elizabeth Tuggle: m. 1799, John Johns
10. Nancy Tuggle: m. William Jeffries

(2) Caty Tuggle: b. 28 August 1743; m. Robert Powell (d. ca. 1811). They were in Prince Edward County, Virginia, in 1773, and by 1786 were living in Franklin County, Virginia.

(3) Sarah Tuggle: b. (twin) 13 November 1745; m. 5 November 1771, Asher Bray, son of James and Frances (Thacker) Bray

(4) Jane Tuggle: b. (twin) 13 November 1745

(5) Benjamin Tuggle: b. 11 June 1750; d. May 1779 (will probated). Benjamin enlisted February 1776 in the Revolutionary Army from Prince Edward County in Capt. John Morton's famous company in the 4th Virginia Regiment. It is said he was killed in battle in 1779.

(6) Thomas Tuggle IV: b. 29 March 1752; m. 13 March 1781, Nancy Penick (who d. 1840), daughter of William and Judith (Walker) Penick, in Prince Edward County, Virginia. He enlisted in Captain Morton's company in February 1776 in the American Revolutionary Army with his brother Benjamin. He was a man of substantial estate.
d. 24 July 1831, Prince Edward County
Children:

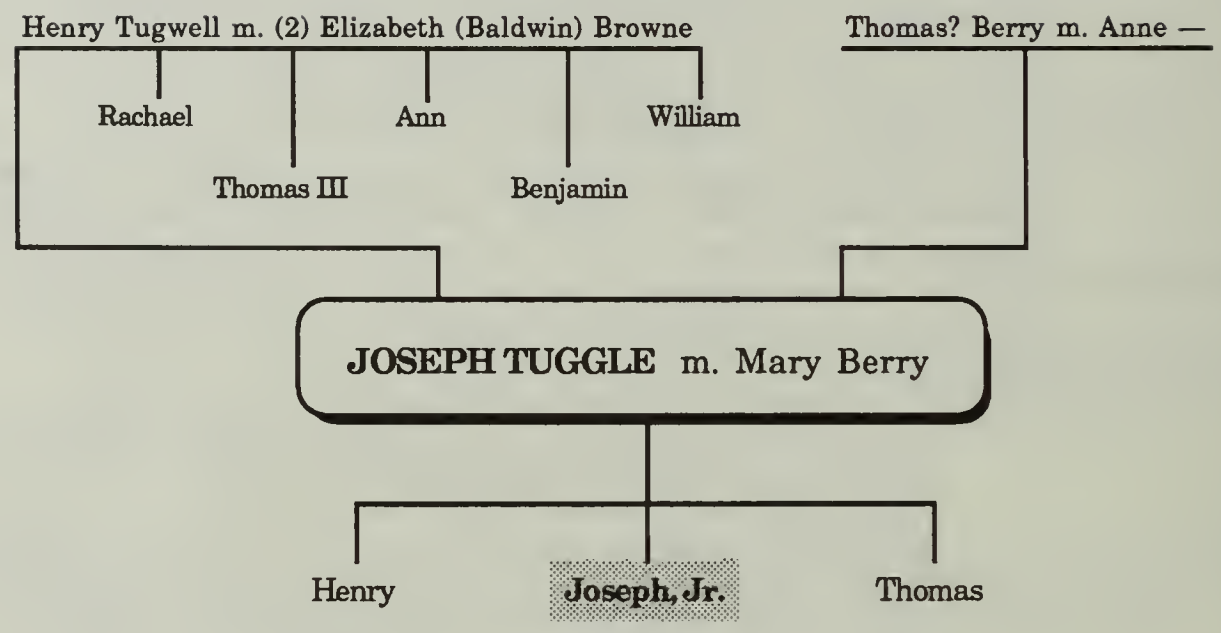
1. Thomas Thornton Tuggle: b. 1786 in Prince Edwards County, Virginia; m. 29 September 1804, Betsey Maxey, daughter of Elisha Maxey, in Powhatan County, Virginia. They and their children (they eventually had 5 sons and 7 daughters) moved to Haywood County, Tennessee, near Brownsville about 1836. [My ancestor John L. Tugwell, descendant of Joseph #9 supra, had moved to Haywood County in 1830.] d. 1853 in Haywood County, Tennessee
2. Nancy T. Tuggle: m. 1805, James Saunders
3. John Tuggle: m. 1812, Susan L. Thornton
4. Sally Tuggle: m. 1814, Zenis Maxey
5. Ebenezer Tuggle: m. 1814, Elizabeth Penick in Kentucky; d. in Missouri
6. Frances Tuggle: m. 1818, Thomas Anderson
7. Amplias Tuggle: m. 1830, Susan Ritchie. He was very prosperous, and the town of Tuggle, Virginia, in north Prince Edward County is named for him.

12. Ann Tuggle: b. 8 June 1720, probably named for her father's sister; d. April 1760. In her will, probated 6 May 1760, Ann directed that her slaves be sold and the proceeds be divided among her brother Thomas' 6 children.
13. Benjamin Tuggle: b. 20 August 1721; d. 3 October 1749 (will probated). By his will he left his possessions to certain of his brothers and to Ann, who took care of him in his sickness. The old will[15] still has attached to it a wax seal with coat of arms impressed. It is a pelican vulning (wounding) itself (depicted as picking its breast so that blood drips).
14. William Tuggle: b. 28 May 1725; d. 1 November 1751. There is no record of his having married. Certain court orders[16] show he left a will, but no record of its content or probation has been found.

[See "Joseph Tuggle"—son]

15. Middlesex County, Virginia, Loose Wills B, p. 89.
16. Middlesex County Orders 1752–1758, pp. 261, 289.

JOSEPH TUGGLE
(ca. 1711–1745)



Note: Children of Henry's first marriage are not on this chart, but are listed in previous chapter.

JOSEPH TUGGLE was the first child of Henry Tugwell and his second wife Elizabeth (Baldwin) Browne. His mother was a young widow with two children under five years of age when she married Henry Tugwell, and Henry was a widower forty years old who had two young married daughters as well as six children at home ranging from approximately fourteen years down to an infant. Joseph's parents were married 31 October 1710, and he is thought to have been born the next year, 1711. Like his parents and all his siblings, Joseph Tugwell was born in Christ Church Parish in Middlesex County, Virginia, on the waters of the Dragon Swamp (upper run of the Piankatank River), which is familiarly referred to in numerous records as "the Dragon." [See map on p. 15]

Joseph Tugwell's life was in sharp contrast to his father's. Joseph died in his thirties; his father had died in his seventies. Joseph had three children, only one of whom lived to adulthood; his father had fourteen children and over fifty grandchildren.

By the time Joseph was fourteen, all the rest of his paternal half-siblings except the youngest had married. The household was never empty, as during those same years Joseph's two younger sisters and three younger brothers were born, adding to Mary and James Browne, who were Joseph's maternal half-siblings. Joseph's father, Henry, apparently was in very comfortable financial circumstances and was active in civic and parish affairs.

Joseph Tuggle married Mary Berry, probably ca. 1735, and according to the Parish Register they had only three children, Henry, Joseph, Jr., and Thomas. Mary's mother was Anne Berry, evidenced by the fact that in his will Joseph desired his only son, my ancestor Joseph, Jr., to be brought up by Anne Berry. (Mary Berry Tuggle had died, and their other two sons had died young.) If his mother-in-law declined to rear Joseph, Jr., Joseph desired his widowed mother to do so. Joseph Tuggle died between 24 March 1744 (date of will) and 2 April 1745 (will probated). Thomas Berry was executor of Joseph's will and was probably Mary's father.

Joseph's father, Henry Tugwell/Tuggle had died on 3 January 1743. One of Joseph's half-brothers, Henry, Jr., had died in 1733, and the other half-brother John had long since inherited some land from his father, so in his father's will land was given only to Joseph (this chapter) and his brother Thomas, the oldest two sons of Henry's second marriage. Joseph received clear title to the 100 acres he and Mary (Berry) were already living on, and Thomas was left his parents' 100 (110?)-acre home plantation.[1]

Regretfully, practically nothing is known about our ancestor Joseph Tuggle. To summarize, he lived all thirty-four years of his life on the family land "on the branches of the Dragon Swamp (stream)" in Middlesex County, Virginia. He and his wife Mary (Berry) had three sons: Henry was born in 1736 and died before he was fifteen months old, Joseph, Jr., (my ancestor) was born in the summer of 1739, and Thomas was born at the end of 1741 and died when he was three years one month old. Sometime between 1742 and March 1744, when Joseph wrote his will, his wife died. He was thirty-three years old, a widower, had one young son, and probably was in poor health or he would not have written a will at that young age.

Joseph Tuggle's will, dated 24 March 1744, was witnessed by his next younger brother Thomas Tuggle III (who would die at the age of thirty-seven), by his maternal half-brother James Browne, Jr., and by James Chowning, a relative of the husbands of his paternal half-sisters Martha and Rachel. The will[2] was probated 2 April 1745, and the executor was Thomas Berry, assumed (with no proof) to be the father of Mary (Berry) Tugwell, deceased.

Joseph left his land and plantation to his only child, Joseph, Jr., with the stipulation that it should go to brother Benjamin if the child died before he was twenty-one. (This did not happen, and Benjamin himself died only five years after Joseph, Sr.,'s death.) Joseph requested that his brother Thomas III should take care of his plantation until Joseph, Jr., came of age. (This could not be fulfilled as Thomas III died when Joseph, Jr., was only fifteen.) Joseph requested that his estate be sold to maintain Joseph, Jr., "and to give him learning," but if he should die underage, Joseph wanted his share of the estate of his father (Henry, who had died fifteen months before Joseph wrote his will) to be equally divided between his sister Ann and brother William. (William died when his nephew Joseph, Jr., was twelve, and Ann when Joseph, Jr., was twenty-one.)

Although Joseph's parents lived long, full lives—his father dying in his seventies and his mother no younger than her sixties—none of their children lived past their thirties. This fact arouses our curiosity about the causes of that generation's deaths, but we have no records to give us that information. Joseph (Sr.) was thirty-four when he died, Rachel thirty-one, Thomas III thirty-seven, Ann thirty-nine, Benjamin twenty-eight, and William twenty-six.

---

1. The land of Thomas Tugwell, Joseph's grandfather, is sometimes referred to in records as 200 acres, sometimes 210.
2. Middlesex County, Virginia, Loose Wills B, pp. 57, 58.

The next chapter concerns Joseph's only surviving child, Joseph, Jr. He would be the first in our direct line to leave Middlesex County, Virginia, and move to North Carolina.

Children of Joseph Tuggle and Mary (Berry), all born in Middlesex County, Virginia:

1. Henry Tuggle: b. 29 September 1736, named for his paternal grandfather; d. 12 December 1737

2. JOSEPH TUGWELL, JR. MY DIRECT LINE
   Born: 2 July 1739
   Married: 6 August 1761, Elizabeth —, in Middlesex County, Virginia, or an adjoining county
   Died: 16 June 1779, Gates (was Hertford) County, North Carolina
   Children: James (my line), Mary, Len, William
   [See "Joseph Tugwell, Jr." chapter]

3. Thomas Tuggle: b. 15 December 1741, possibly named for Thomas Berry who is assumed to be his maternal grandfather; d. 26 January 1745

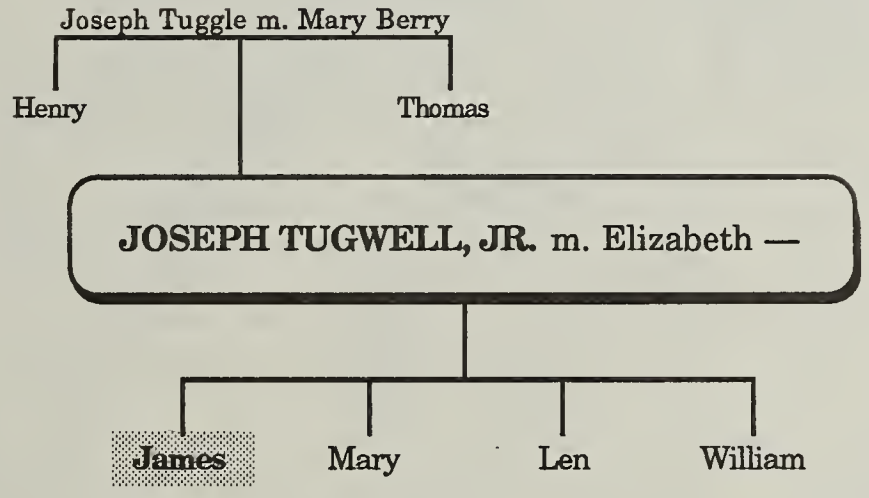
[See "Joseph Tugwell, Jr."—son]

IT IS WITH Joseph Tugwell that we leave Vivian S. Tuggle's *The Tuggle Family of Virginia*[3] and move to the old Devotional Book that came down in the family of Benjamin Tuggle, a grandson of Joseph Tuggle, Jr. My first cousin Frances (Tugwell) Fowler of Memphis, Tennessee, and Helen (Sturgeon) Tugwell of Raleigh, North Carolina, both of whom had done research on different Tugwell lines, made contact in the 1960s and realized the lines they were interested in had a common ancestor, the oldest son of Joseph Tugwell, Jr. Helen Tugwell knew about the *Tuggle Family* book, and she had made copies of the family information in the old Bible of Benjamin Tugwell (Joseph, Jr.,'s grandson). Both Frances and Helen sent me copies. To these two women, Frances Fowler (Mrs. Ed) and Helen Tugwell, I am greatly indebted. I engaged one of the best qualified certified genealogists in the United States, Helen F. M. Leary of Raleigh, North Carolina, and gave her all the information sent to me by Frances and Helen, plus information I had worked on, and she was able to add enough from her research to verify our information on the line as it descended from Joseph Tugwell, Jr.

---

3. Gateway Press, Baltimore, 1970.

JOSEPH TUGWELL, JR.
(1739–1779)



JOSEPH TUGWELL, JR., was born 2 July 1739 in Christ Church Parish, Middlesex County, Virginia. He was the middle child of Joseph Tugwell and Mary Berry, and was their only child who lived to adulthood, his two brothers having died in very early childhood. Joseph, Jr., was six when his father died in 1745, and his mother had died before he was five.

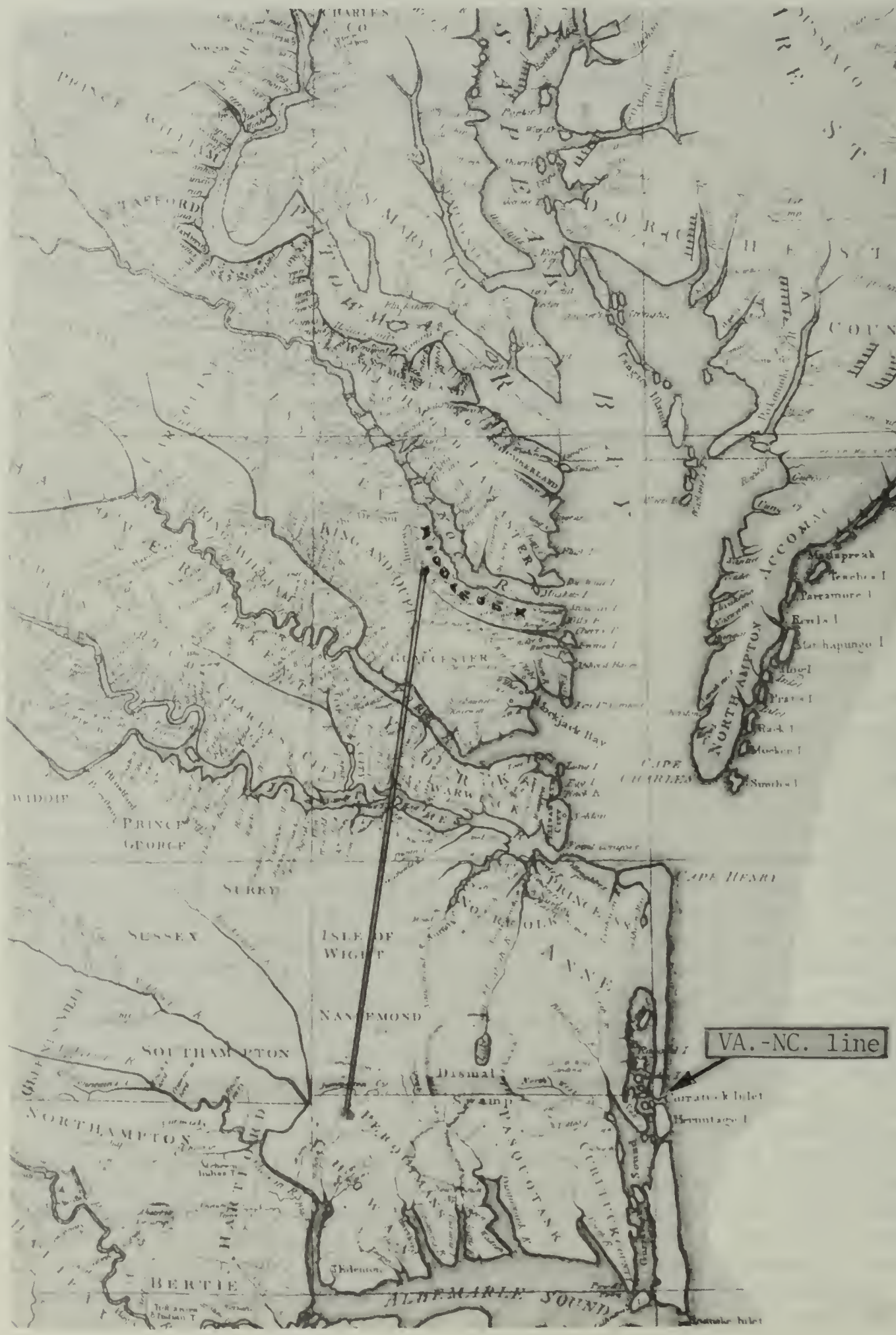
It is not known who reared Joseph, Jr., as we only know his father requested in his will that it be the child's Grandmother Berry or, if not she, then his Grandmother Tugwell. The day before his sixteenth birthday Joseph petitioned the Middlesex County Court, the order reciting: "On petition of Joseph Tuggle, orphan of Joseph Tuggle, deceased, Henry Batchelder is appointed his Guardian, and together with John Taylor his security, entered into bond for same in open court."

Joseph (Jr.)'s prayer book shows that "Joseph Tuggle and Elizabeth his wife was married Aug't 6th day 1761." This was written by his oldest son James after he acquired his father's devotional book, and although he neglected to include his mother's maiden name, James at least affirmed her given name was Elizabeth and gave their marriage date. If Elizabeth was not from Middlesex, it was doubtless an adjoining county.

There are a few Middlesex County records for Joseph. On the 25 April 1763 marriage bond for "James Brown of James City County," whose intention was to marry Catherine Chaney, Joseph was a surety and witness.[1] On 6 June 1767 Griffin Tuggle qualified as executor of the will of John Fox, and Joseph, Jr., was surety on his bond. Griffin was two years older than Joseph and was his half-first cousin. In December 1767 Joseph was a witness to the will of Elizabeth Lewis.

The records of Christ Church are valuable but incomplete: although Joseph and Elizabeth had three sons and one daughter born in Middlesex County, Virginia,

1. Middlesex Marriage Records 1740–1784, p. 15. It is possible this is James Browne, Jr., grandson of Joseph's mother and Joseph's half-first cousin.



JOSEPH TUGWELL, JR., MOVED FROM MIDDLESEX COUNTY, VIRGINIA,
TO HERTFORD COUNTY, NORTH CAROLINA, CA. 1771

there is only one entry about the family in the Register of Christ Church Parish (p. 197), and it reads " — [torn], son of Joseph and Elizabeth Tuggle, was born Dec. 6, 1769 and baptized December 29th." Luckily, because it was written in the family Bible, we know this was the youngest child, William, who was born 6 December 1769. Sometime in the next year and a half Joseph and his family moved to Hertford County, North Carolina, and our Tugwell line would never again live in Virginia.

Joseph's great-grandfather Thomas had settled south of the Rappahannock River in 1654, and by 1770 some of his descendants were leaving the home place in Middlesex County. One of these was our Joseph Tugwell, Jr., and the last record for him in Middlesex County shows his destination. [See map on opposite page]

On 4 September 1772 "Joseph Tuggle of Hartford (*sic*) County in the Province of North Carolina and Elizabeth his wife..."[2] sold John Abbott of Middlesex the plantation devised him by his father's will in 1745. He sold the 100-acre tract for "50 pounds Current Money of Virginia," and it was described as bounded by the lines of John Stamper, James Kidd, Alden, Patterson, and by Mickelborrough's Swamp. Witnesses to the deed were John Yarrington, William Daniel, Jr., John Daniel, Richard Bristow, and Josiah Bristow.[3] Hertford was spelled Hartford,[4] definitely not spelled "Stafford" as stated in the *Tuggle Family* book, p. 32. This accounts for why that author could find no further records for our Joseph Tugwell, Jr.[5]

Joseph was about thirty-three years old when he and Elizabeth and their three children moved to Hertford County, North Carolina. Their children's approximate ages at that time were James ten, Mary seven, and William three. Len, their son born between Mary and William, had died a few days after his second birthday. It is not known precisely where the Joseph Tugwell family lived in (then) Hertford County, but we know it was east of the upper reaches of the Chowan River.

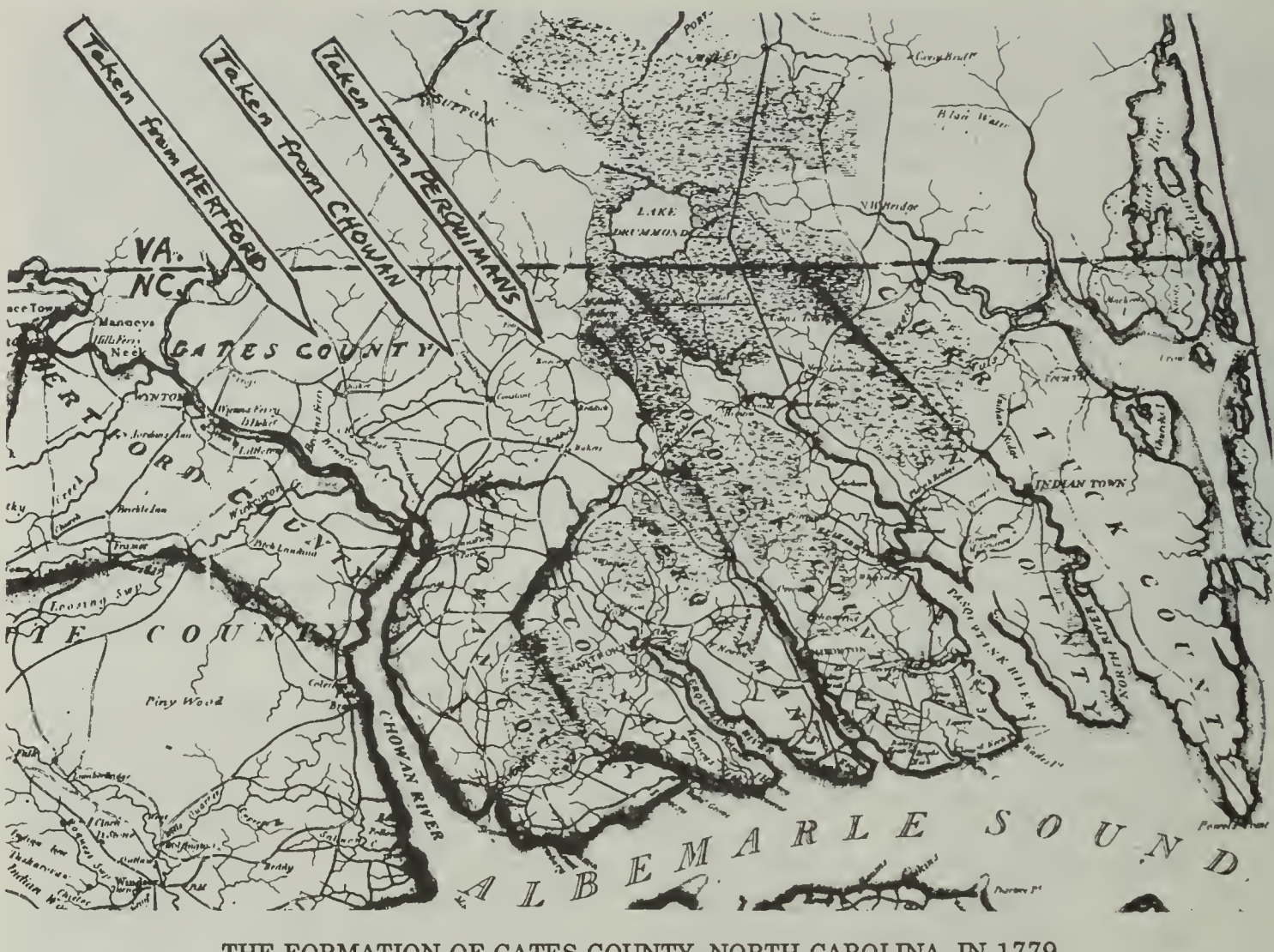
On the present-day map of North Carolina on the next page, one can locate Gates County—a small county no more than twenty-five miles wide. It was formed in 1779 from parts of Hertford, Chowan, and Perquimans counties. The Tugwells lived in the upper central quadrant of Gates County in that part that was Hertford before 1779, about three miles below the Virginia–North Carolina line.

A 1779 Hertford County Tax List[6] shows the surnames of Lang and Parker, families later closely associated with the Tugwells. Joseph Tugwell's name did not appear on the list because he died 16 June 1779. Joseph Tugwell had lived in Hertford County less than a decade when, during the last year of his life, the area he lived in became Gates County. Joseph's will and inventory therefore were recorded in new Gates County.

Joseph Tugwell wrote his will 11 June 1779, "being Sick and Weak though of Sound mind and Memory," and signed it spelling his name "Tugwell," not "Tuggle." He appointed his wife Elizabeth the executrix of his will and his "trusty friend" William Baker executor. Witnesses were James Brady (Braddy?), Sr., Demsey Parker, and George Brooks.[7]

---

2. Middlesex County, Virginia, Deed Book 9, pp. 216, 217.
3. An interesting coincidence, although there is no early connection between our Tugwells and Hockadays, is that Mary Hockaday, daughter of Warwick (p. 223 of this book), married a Thompson (Thomson) Bristow who was born in Middlesex County in 1741.
4. Some maps in the 1700s spelled the county Hartford with an *a*. Examples are Captain Collett's 1770 map and Thomas Jefferson's 1787 map.
5. I am tolerant of her mistake because I made one concerning our Joseph too. Somewhere I saw that the surname of Joseph's wife, Elizabeth, was Davis. I can hardly believe I did not record the source and check it out. The Christ Church Parish Register of Middlesex County shows that at least five Davis families in the parish were having children ca. 1738–1745 when Joseph's wife Elizabeth would have been born, but there is no record of this Elizabeth. I have no proof our Elizabeth's surname was Davis.
6. *North Carolina Genealogy,* vol. 13, no. 2, 1979.
7. Gates County, North Carolina, Will Book 1, pp. 3, 4.



THE FORMATION OF GATES COUNTY, NORTH CAROLINA, IN 1779

Joseph died 16 June 1779, four days after he wrote his will, and lacking sixteen days being forty years old. (His father had died at the age of thirty-four.) The previous year Joseph and Elizabeth's youngest child, William, had died two months before his ninth birthday. No land was mentioned in Joseph's will. By his will Joseph left his wife Elizabeth a sorrell mare, sidesaddle and bridle, and first choice of his feather beds and furniture. He left his son James a sorrell horse, saddle and bridle, and a feather bed and furniture. He left his daughter Mary two feather beds and furniture. Elizabeth was given a life estate in the remainder of Joseph's estate during her widowhood, and after her marriage or death it was to be equally divided between his children James and Mary.

Considering the fact that Joseph seemingly owned no land, his estate inventory that was entered in the August 1779 Gates County Court Session was more than basic.[8] We may recall from the previous chapter that Joseph (Sr.) had left this only son his Virginia "land and plantation," and asked that his estate be sold to maintain Joseph, Jr., "and to give him learning." This must have been done, because Joseph was literate and his will listed a pewter inkstand, 5 histories, 1 spelling book, 1 Bible and testament, 5 prayer books, and 2 slates. Besides the usual kitchen equipment and utensils there were listed 2 decanters and wine glasses, 14 Delft plates, a nice assortment of Queen's China (which is soft-paste porcelain), 6 plates, teapot, bowl and milk pot (i.e., sugar and creamer), mustard pot, 5 teacups and saucers, also 6 case knives and forks, 4 vinegar cruets, 6 stoneware plates, 1 stoneware teapot, 4 coffee cups, and 3 pewter dishes.

8. Book A, folio 276.

There were the usual cattle (6) and hogs (15), fowl, "crops now growing," a horse cart, farm implements, 1 woolen and 2 linen (spinning) wheels, mortar and pestle; also, 95 pounds money, and a Negro woman. Joseph had a gun and an old sword, doubtless the very same "sword and small gun" devised in the 1681 will of his great-grandfather Thomas Tugwell. I wish I knew if a descendant still has the old gun and sword. Joseph may have been a tailor, because there was more sewing equipment than in most inventories: 3 pr. tailors shears, 1 tailors goose, 1 bodkin, 2 thimbles, 1 pr. scissors, 2 sleeve boards, 2 notch boards, 1 parcel buttons. Here, Joseph's will and inventory said "Tugwell," and he signed his will "Tugwell."

One other thing about Joseph's 1779 estate inventory is that it was the first one recorded after new Gates County was formed. The first Gates County Will Book has 550 pages, and inventories for 1779–1791 are on pages 267–353. Joseph Tugwell's inventory begins on p. 267. (It is unusual to find any inventory or account of sales in Gates County before 1806.) Joseph's recorded will is on pp. 3, 4.

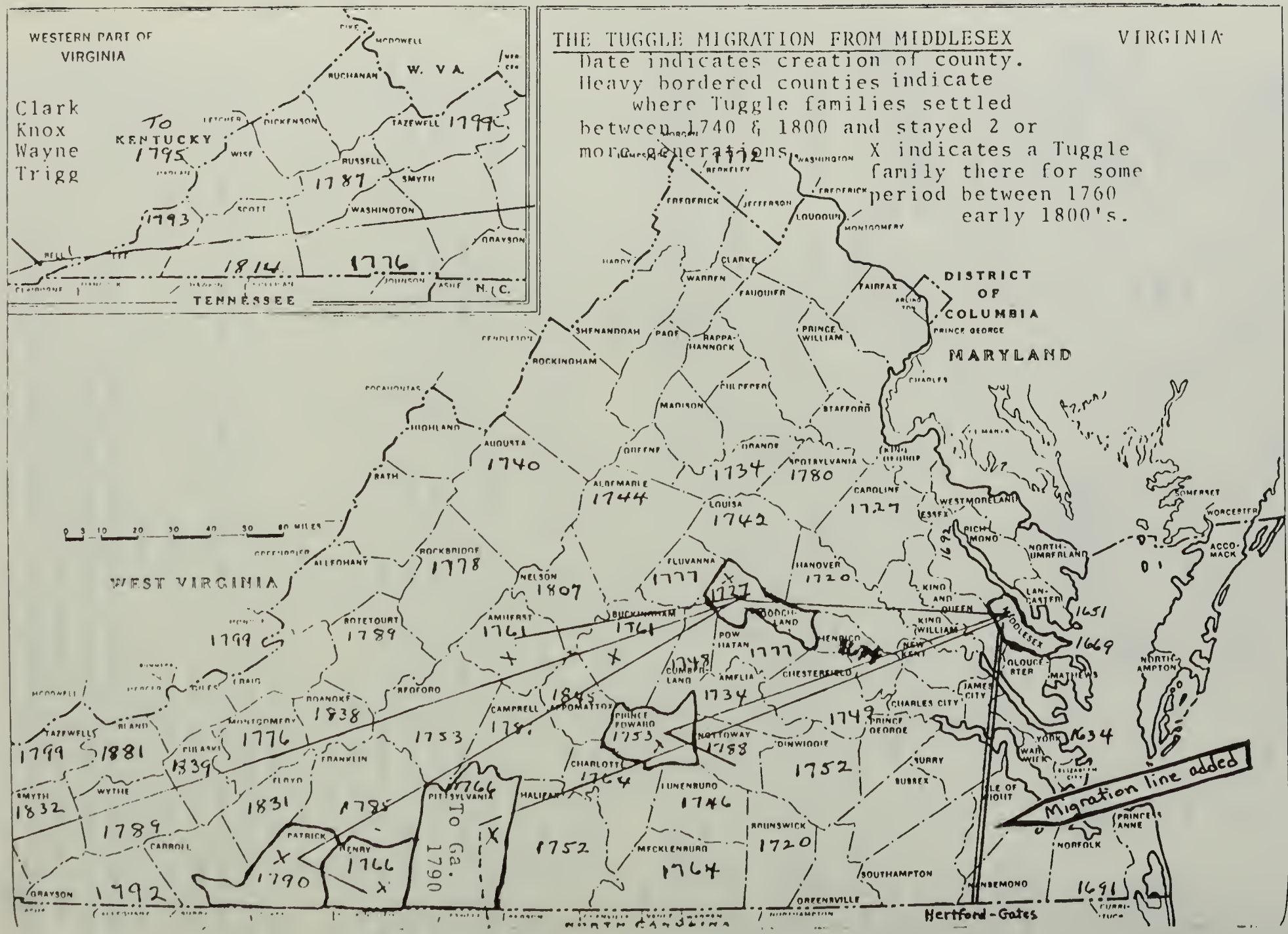
Elizabeth, Joseph Tugwell, Jr.,'s widow, was left with two children: my ancestor James, who was seventeen, and fourteen year old Mary. Both children married into the Parker family. Elizabeth never remarried, and spent the last years of her life in the home of her daughter Mary Tugwell Parker.

Children of Joseph Tugwell, Jr., and Elizabeth (—), some births and deaths taken from Devotional Book:

1. JAMES TUGWELL MY DIRECT LINE
   Born: 3 May 1762, Middlesex County, Virginia
   Married: (1) 3 April 1792 (date of bond), Mary Parker, Gates County, North Carolina; m. (2) 15 January 1795 (date of bond), Mary Lang, Gates County, North Carolina
   Died: ca. 1807, Pitt County, North Carolina
   Children: William, Benjamin, James, Jr., John L. (my line)
   [See "James Tugwell" chapter]

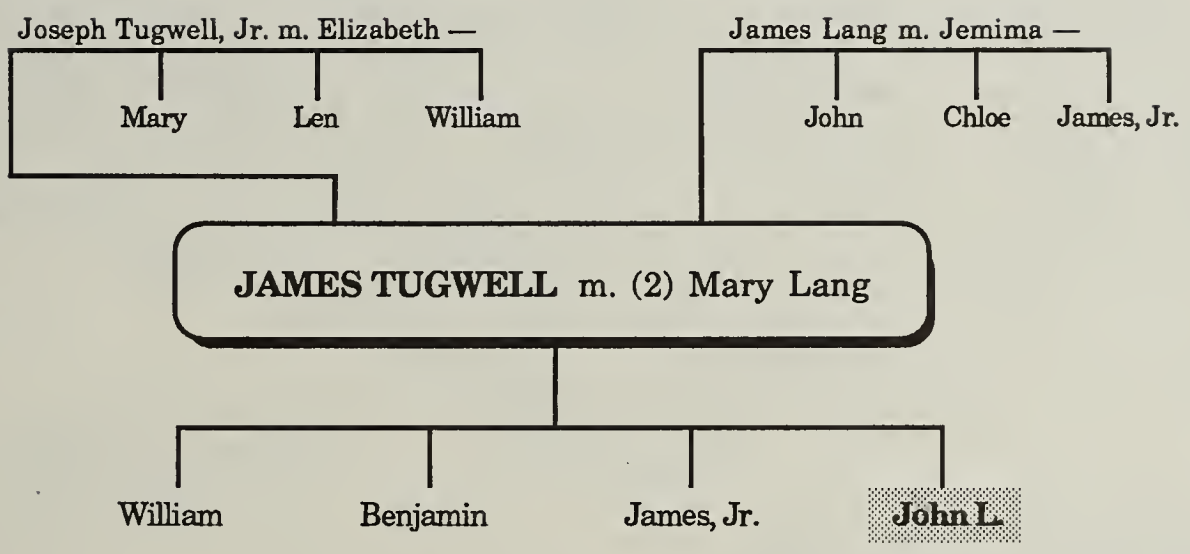
2. Mary Tugwell: b. 17 January 1765, Middlesex County, Virginia, and possibly named for her paternal grandmother, Mary (Berry) Tugwell;
   m. 13 May 1784 (date of bond), Miles Parker in Gates County, North Carolina. Miles d. ante–February 1822. Mary d. post-1822, Gates County.
   Children (named in land division):
   (1) Robert Parker
   (2) Nancy Parker
   (3) Dempsey Parker
   (4) William Parker
   (5) James Parker
   (6) Catherine Parker: m. ante-1822, Harrison Vann, son of John Vann
   (7) Mary Parker
   (8) Penny Parker
   (9) Miles Parker, Jr.
3. Len Tugwell: b. 16 September 1767, Middlesex County, Virginia
   d. 27 September 1769, Middlesex County, Virginia
4. William Tugwell: b. 6 December 1769, Middlesex County, Virginia;
   d. 3 October 1778, Hertford (now Gates) County, North Carolina

[See "James Tugwell"—son]



FROM VIVIAN S. TUGGLE, *THE TUGGLE FAMILY OF VIRGINIA* (1970)—MIGRATION LINE OF JOSEPH TUGWELL, JR., ADDED

JAMES TUGWELL
(1762–ca. 1807)



JAMES TUGWELL was the son of Joseph Tugwell, Jr., and his wife Elizabeth (surname possibly Davis, but no proof). James was born in Middlesex County, Virginia, on the branches of the Dragon Swamp. This stream was the upper part of Piankatank River, which is the southern border of Middlesex County, and it was where James' great-great grandfather Thomas Tugwell had settled when he came to the Virginia Colony from England. James was born on 3 May 1762. This and many other family dates are recorded in the Devotional Book that had belonged to his father, or in his son Benjamin's old family Bible.

The family left Middlesex County, Virginia, and moved to Hertford County, North Carolina. A 4 September 1772 deed shows James' father sold the land he had inherited from his father. James was about ten years old when he became a North Carolinean. One little brother, Len, had died when James was seven. When James was sixteen, his brother William died at the age of eight. So the family unit was composed of Joseph and Elizabeth and their two oldest children, James (of this chapter) and Mary. James had just turned seventeen when his father died, and he was the man of the house from then on. That very same year the area of Hertford County they lived in became part of newly created Gates County.

Opposite the first page of the 1755 Devotional Book James wrote, "James Tuggell his Grate Prayer Book Bought at my fathers Sale...Price 1 pound 2 shillings." On another page, seven years after his father's death, James wrote "James Tuggell his Book February 5th Day 1786 Grate Prayer Book." At different times during the years in which James wrote family dates in his book, he apparently was trying to decide just how to spell his surname. His father was literate, as was he, and the carelessness and unimportance of orthography before the 1800s allowed him to more or less choose how his name would be spelled. His father wrote his name "Tugwell," and one page has James' marriage date and

births of his children spelled that way. On another page in the same handwriting the same information is given as "Tuggle." Opposite the page where the book of Genesis begins is a page James has filled with scribbles and doodles, "James Tugwell" beautifully written two or three times, and written below one is "Mary Braddy Mary Tug...." Did James ever dream of marrying Mary Braddy? (When the will of James' father was exhibited in August Court 1779 by William Baker, executor, it was proven by the oath of James Braddy.)

James Tugwell was the sole support of his mother and sister for five years after his father's death in June 1779. Gates County Court Minutes show that on 22 May 1781 William Baker, executor of the will of Joseph Tugwell, deceased, was allowed to sell "such part of the estate most to the advantage of the orphans." James was nineteen that year. Mary Tugwell was nineteen when she married Miles Parker three years later. The date of their marriage bond was 13 May 1784 and the bondsman was Lodowick Brooks, who probably was related to George Brooks, one of the witnesses five years earlier to the will of Mary's father James. Whereas Mary, her brother James, and her mother Elizabeth were the only Tugwells in Gates County, there were over twenty families of Parkers and they had been in that area many years. In the state census taken in Gates County in 1786 and returned to the Court in May of that year, James was enumerated alone in his household and his mother was in the household of Miles and Mary (Tugwell) Parker.[1]

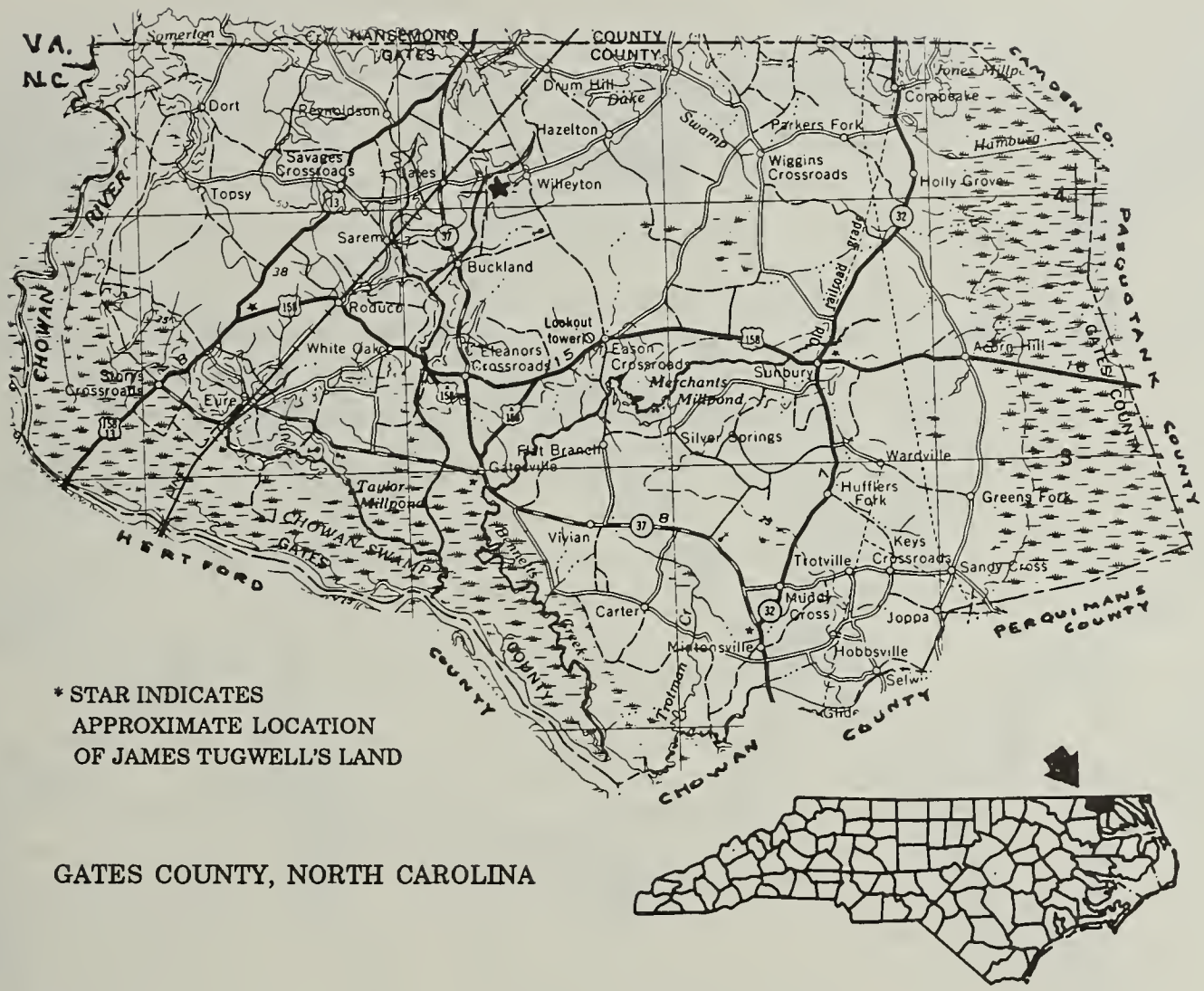
In the 1790 North Carolina State Census, James was again enumerated alone in his household. He was twenty-eight and still single. In that same census there were three females in Miles Parker's household, and again, one of them was Elizabeth Tugwell, Miles' mother-in-law. From 1785 to 1791 James, who owned no land, was on the county tax list in Capt. William Harris' district. In 1791 James was enumerated by Capt. Jesse Benton, who had replaced Captain Harris. James was assessed on that tax list through the year 1800.

Finally James was able to buy Gates County land, and on 8 December 1791 purchased 50 acres from James Bristow for "fifty pounds current money of Virginia."[2] The land bordered the east side of the Knotty Pine Swamp (stream) and also the land of William Vann.[3] Demsey Parker and William H. Boyce were witnesses. Knotty Pine Swamp, which is in upper central Gates County, is now known as Buckland Mill Branch. It flows slightly southwest, where it is joined by Hacklan Branch to form Cole (formerly Sarum) Creek in lower Gates County. James Tugwell's North Carolina land was probably in the area between the present-day towns of Gates and Willeyton.

On 3 April 1792, four months after he bought land and one month before he was thirty, James Tugwell signed a marriage bond showing his intention to marry Mary Parker, the sister (or first cousin?) of Miles Parker.[4] Miles had married James' sister Mary nearly eight years earlier, and it was Miles who went on the marriage bond with James. James and Mary Parker Tugwell were not married long, as Mary died sometime within the next two years, date and cause of death now unknown.

---

1. Alvaretta Kenan Register, *State Census of North Carolina 1784–1787,* 2nd ed., revised, pp. 38–40.
2. The Bristow and Tugwell families were not strangers to one another, having been associated in Middlesex County, Virginia. In 1769 Lodowick Tuggle, a first cousin of James' father, had sold his inherited land to Richard Bristow when he moved to Prince Edward County. In 1772 this same Richard Bristow was a witness when James' father sold his inherited land in preparation for moving to North Carolina.
3. Gates County, North Carolina, Deed Book 2, pp. 293, 294.
4. The author cannot determine whether James' first wife, Mary Parker, was the daughter of Isaac Parker or Demsey Parker. These seem the most likely of four main possibilities. After comparing will abstracts, I am inclined to think James' wife was Isaac Parker's daughter, and Miles Parker (who married James Tugwell's sister Mary) was Demsey Parker's son.

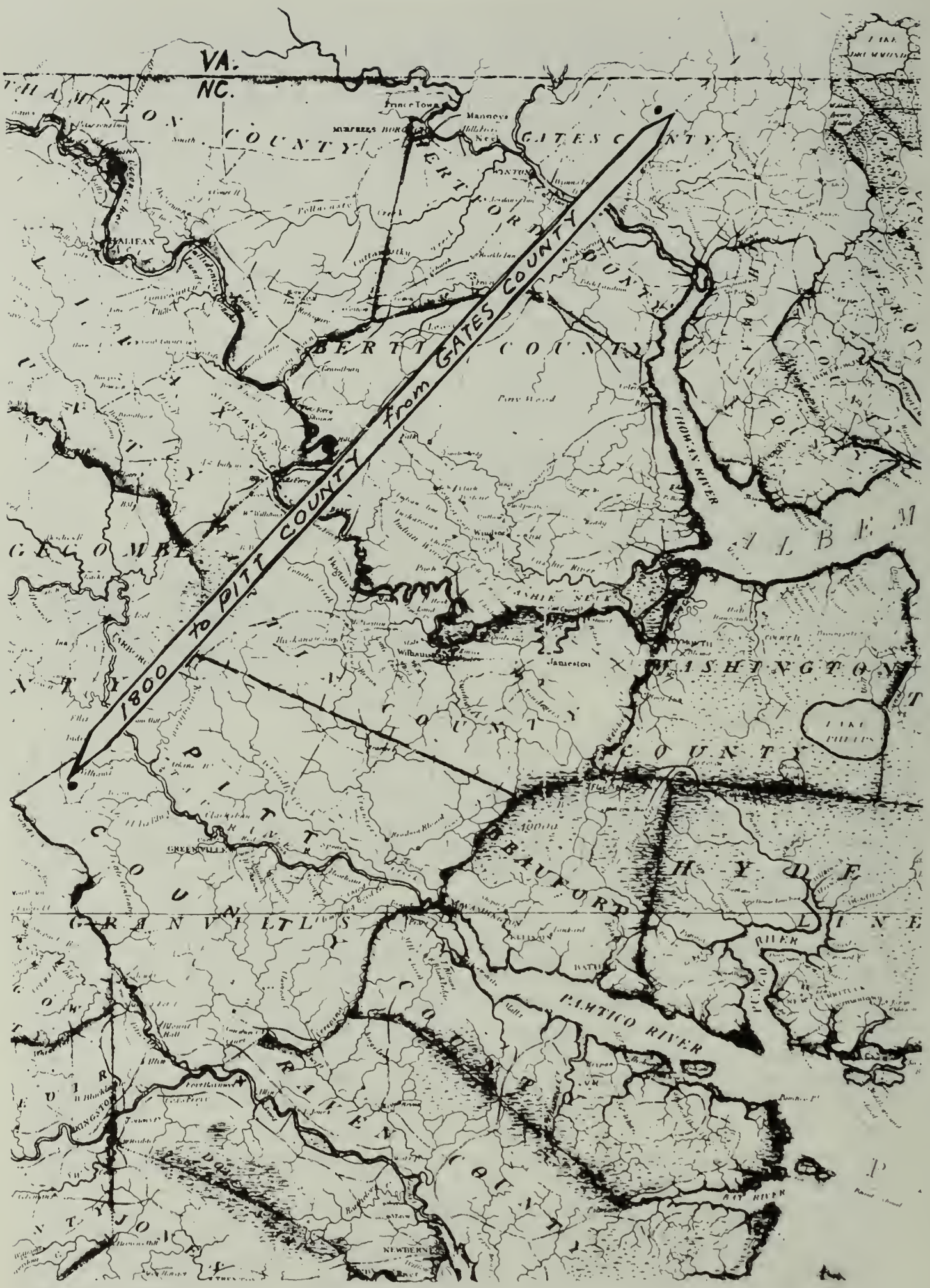


GATES COUNTY, NORTH CAROLINA

James Tugwell married a second time, and his bride was Mary Lang, the oldest child of James (deceased) and Jemima Lang [see Lang chapters]. Mary was about thirty years old when on 15 January 1795 James Tugwell applied for and signed the marriage bond. Isaac Parker, who was related to James' first wife (probably her father), co-signed.

James' father, Joseph Tugwell (Jr.), had come from Middlesex County, Virginia, to Hertford (now Gates) County, North Carolina, ca. 1771, and Mary's father, James Lang, had come from Nansemond County, Virginia, to Chowan (now Gates) County about twenty-five years earlier. Remember that Gates County was formed in 1779 from part of northeastern Hertford and the upper parts of Chowan and Perquimans counties. Many county boundaries, unless a river was a boundary, were not "set in concrete" (so to speak), and even disputes over the exact boundary line between Virginia and North Carolina were not finally settled until 1813. All the years from ca. 1740 on, North Carolina counties along the Virginia line continued to receive large numbers every year of sturdy middle class English-Americans from Virginia.

James Tugwell and Mary Lang married in 1795, probably in January. In November of that year her brothers, John and James Lang, sold their shares of the 275 acres of land they had inherited from their father, and by March 1796 John Lang had moved to and settled in Pitt County, North Carolina. Mary (Lang)'s mother and sister (who may or may not have become the wife of Jesse Langston) remained in Gates County a few more years, as did Mary's brother James Lang.



JAMES TUGWELL'S MOVE IN 1800
FROM GATES COUNTY TO PITT COUNTY, NORTH CAROLINA

James and Mary (Lang) Tugwell were both in their thirties when their first two children were born. William's birth was not recorded in the Devotional Book (although his marriage was), and Benjamin's birth was recorded later in his own Bible as 5 April 1798. Since William married three and a half years before Benjamin, it is thought that William was born first. William would outlive all his siblings.

There are two Gates County records for James Tugwell in addition to the two deeds showing he bought and sold his land. On 20 January 1796 he was bondsman on the marriage bond of John Vann and Edith Parker. And on 13 February 1799[5] James Tuggle (*sic*) was a witness when Henry Griffin sold land to Jonathan Parker, joining Edwin Sumner, deceased, and the Main Road.

We are indirectly able to identify neighbors of James and his family in Gates County by reading abstracts of deeds, some of which (not all) mention Knotty Pine Swamp, the stream on which James' land was situated. These surnames appear most frequently: Rogers, Williams, Parker, Vann, Willeys, Lewis, Gatling, Cross, Braddy, Dilday, Pipkin, and Allen. Locations mentioned were "the main road from Knotty Pine Chapel to Suffolk" (in Virginia) and "the main road to Maney's Ferry" (on the Chowan River).

By 1800 James and Mary (Lang) Tugwell decided to move from Gates County to Pitt County, which had the reputation of being a hub of prosperous activity. It was an older North Carolina county than Gates, having been created from Beaufort County in 1760. Mary's brother John had moved to Pitt County in late 1795 or early 1796. Mary's mother, Jemima Lang, in September 1800 sold her dower share of land she had inherited from her husband's estate and prepared to move too. However, James' sister, Mary (Tugwell) Parker, and her husband Miles did not move to Pitt County. They stayed in Gates County and had many descendants.

In September (day not recorded) 1800 James Tugwell sold the 50 acres of land he had bought in December 1791 to James Vann.[6] The land, which sold for $300, was described as adjoining the Knotty Pine Swamp and land of William Vann. In the deed James' surname was spelled Tugwell three times, Tuggel once, and Tuggle once. Witnesses were Jonathan and James Parker and Thomas Fryer.

By the year 1800 there were no international complications on the horizon, and internal affairs were of the uppermost importance. Events had given assurance that the young Republic, an experiment at first, would last. Best of all, Thomas Jefferson would soon be President.

Pitt County, North Carolina, had increased in population ten percent in the last decade, and it shared with the rest of the state the same primitive conditions of what might be called an age of simplicity. There were no public schools and few private ones. The postage rate of at least twenty-five cents (a very high price then) for each letter and the delay in delivery caused by the often impassable, muddy roads discouraged letter writing, and families that had moved often lost contact with their kinsmen who had stayed behind.

There being no coal, wood from the surrounding forests supplied the heat for cooking and keeping warm. Pine torches and tallow candles furnished what little nighttime light they had. Almost every woman could spin, weave, knit, and sew, and most of the wearing apparel for the family was homemade.

There was little money in circulation, so most commerce was by barter. Hogs, cattle, and turkeys were driven to the markets in Virginia. Shafts were put through large barrels (hogsheads) filled with tobacco, and were rolled to market.

---

5. Gates County, North Carolina, Deeds, vol. 5, p. 18.
6. Gates County Book 5, p. 217.

Court days were times of meeting with friends, and some of the men did a lot of drinking, fighting, gambling, and carousing. Lotteries were licensed by law for the purpose of raising money for churches and schools. Swift justice was visited upon the criminal, and summary hanging was frequent punishment. Those who survived this type of life, predominantly rural and primitive, were hardy men and women, and their religion made most of them honest.[7] This was the milieu in which our ancestors lived.

James Tugwell moved to west Pitt County, south of the Tar River, in 1800. [See map opposite p. 39] His land was at the mouth of Jumping Run and what is now called Kitten Creek, and it adjoined his brother-in-law John Lang. There are records for the year 1800 for James in both Gates and Pitt counties. James was shown in Capt. Jesse Benton's district on the Gates County Tax List, as well as being enumerated in the 1800 federal census for Gates County (p. 280).

A Pitt County record dated 31 July 1800 shows that James Tuggel[8] of Gates County bought 200 acres of land in Pitt County from Stephen Rogers of Greene County (Greene was created in 1799 and adjoins Pitt) for 150 pounds.[9] Rogers was an old Gates County name, as was one of the witnesses to the deed, John Lang, who was James Tugwell's brother-in-law. As mentioned, James was in Pitt early enough in 1800 to be counted on the federal census for Pitt County, with Jesse Dilday enumerated next, followed by John Lang (p. 269). James' surname was misspelled, as usual, Tugel this time:

1 white male 26–45 years [James]
2 white males under 10 [William and Benjamin]
1 white female 26–45 [wife Mary]
1 white female 45 or over [probably James' mother-in-law Jemima Lang]
1 white female 16–26 [possibly Mary's sister, Chloe Lang]

The area James moved to in Pitt County was near where other men from Gates County had settled south of the Tar River. His 200 acre tract was at the mouth of Jumping Run on the south side of Williams' Mill Creek (now called Kitten Creek). It ran "up said creek to Vann Little's corner then with his line south... sd. Little's other line west...then south with John Lang's line[10]...then east on the pocosin to Little branch and down the branch to the prong of Jumping Run...then down the prong to Jumping Run and down the run to the beginning." Here are some of the neighbors in the area: Lang, Rogers, Parker, Benjamin Dilday, Redding Williams, Isaac Phillips, Lemuel Dewberry, Henry Williamson, Moses Tyson, John Wallace, and Samuel Vines. These men were witnesses on one another's deeds, indicating they were neighbors.

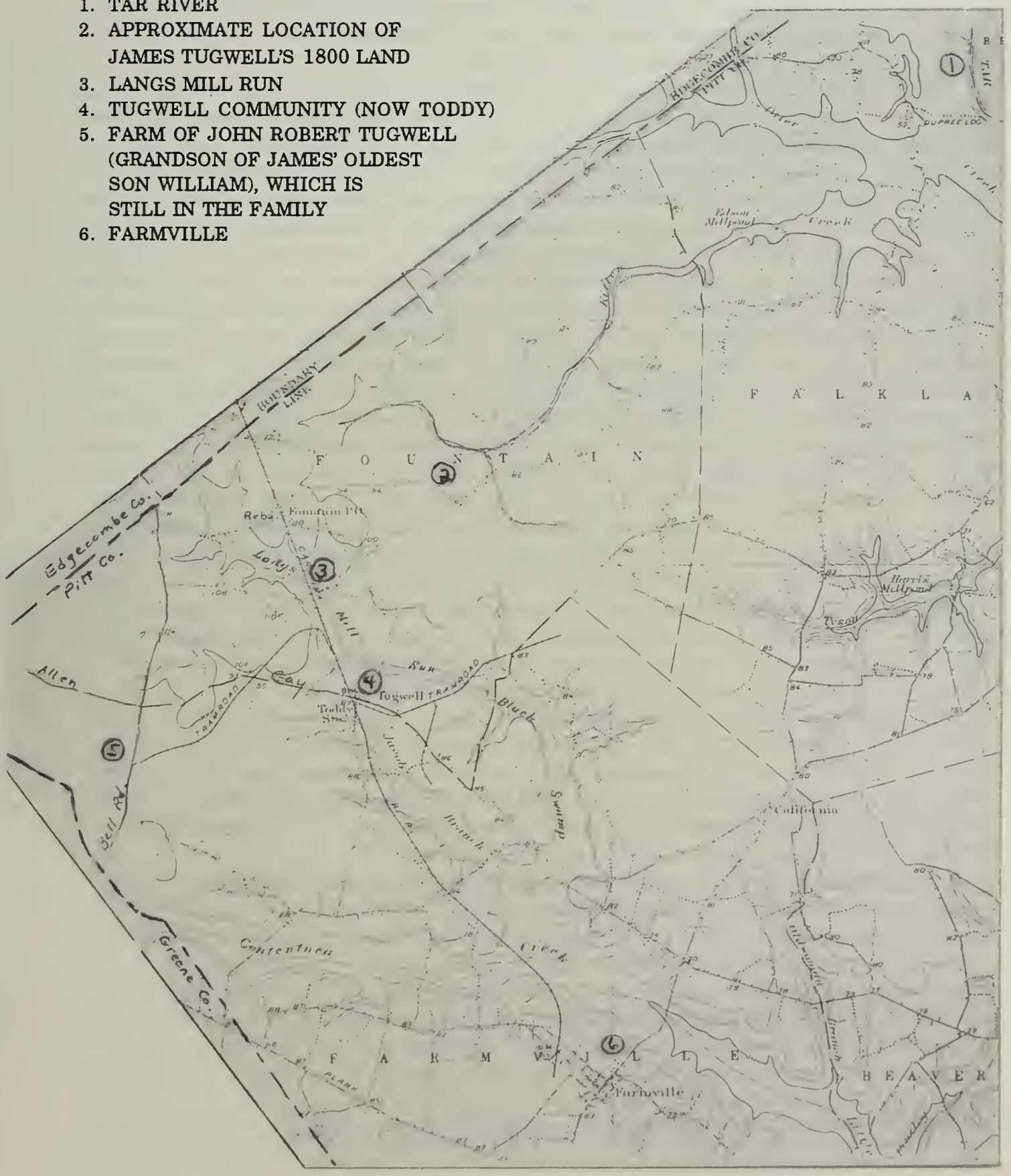
> These neighbors were usually close friends and were often relatives. It is important to realize that plantations and farms were not always squares or rectangles as we perhaps envision them. They were most apt to be irregular in shape, following the bank of a stream and having perhaps six or eight other unequal sides. Instead of building the manor house in the center of the tract, the early settlers would build their houses where several plantations came together. These families of necessity did everything together, and records of one family would reveal records of the others.[11]

---

7. Most of the information in this and the preceding four paragraphs is taken from Henry T. King, *Sketches of Pitt County, A Brief History of the County 1704–1910*, 1911, pp. 102, 103.
8. Once in the deed it appeared to be spelled "Juggel."
9. Pitt County, North Carolina, Deed Book O, p. 475.
10. Lang's Mill Run was the upper part of Black Swamp that flowed into Little Contentnea Creek.
11. Judith DuPree Ellison, *Index and Abstracts of Pitt County, North Carolina*, (1969), Introduction.

MOST WESTERN PART OF PITT COUNTY, NORTH CAROLINA

1. TAR RIVER
2. APPROXIMATE LOCATION OF JAMES TUGWELL'S 1800 LAND
3. LANGS MILL RUN
4. TUGWELL COMMUNITY (NOW TODDY)
5. FARM OF JOHN ROBERT TUGWELL (GRANDSON OF JAMES' OLDEST SON WILLIAM), WHICH IS STILL IN THE FAMILY
6. FARMVILLE



James and Mary (Lang) Tugwell owned 200 acres of land in Pitt County in 1800 and would live there the rest of their lives. For James that would be less than a decade. His grandfather Joseph Tugwell had died at age thirty-four, his father Joseph, Jr., at thirty-nine, and James would die when he was about forty-five.

There are two Pitt County records for James Tugwell in the early 1800s. On 5 March 1803 he sold 17 1/2 acres of land on the south side of Williams Mill Creek beginning at the mouth of Jumping Run to Nahum Little[12] for $57.50. Witnesses were James' brother-in-law John Lang and Henry Williamson.[13] On 4 January 1804, when Philip Rogers of Gates County sold 290 acres of land to John Rogers, James Tuggel (*sic*) and John Lang were witnesses.

This 4 January 1804 deed was the last record for James Tugwell, and since his wife Mary appeared as head of household in the 1810 Pitt County Census (p. 509), James' death can be placed between 1804 and 1810. The 1810 census showed Mary in the 26–45 age group, three males 10–16 (William, Benjamin, and an unknown boy who was apparently born in 1800 after the census was taken), two males under 10 (James and my John L.), and one female under 10 (unknown). (There is no further information on the unknown boy and girl.) Enumerated close to Mary (Lang) Tugwell's household were Warren and Samuel Truss, Samuel and Charles Vines, Henry Williamson, James and Edward Williams, and John Wallace.

No will or land division has been found for James Tugwell although a search has been made at the State Archives. He died intestate, and there is no record of James Tugwell in Pitt County Original Wills and Estates or in Mitchell's *North Carolina Wills: A Testator Index, 1665–1900.* James was born in Middlesex County, Virginia, and from the approximate age of ten years lived in North Carolina. Both of his marriages took place in Gates County, North Carolina. In 1800 he and his second wife, Mary (Lang), and their little sons William, Benjamin, and an unknown son moved about seventy-five miles southwest to Pitt County. Two more sons, James, Jr., and John L., and a daughter were born in Pitt County. The unknown son born in 1800 must have died soon after 1810. The daughter either died or married, as she is not in Mary's household in 1820. James Tugwell died probably ca. 1807. His four known sons ranged in age from approximately eleven down to three or four. The pattern was certainly being repeated, young children being left without a father in the home for much of their childhood.

Mary (Lang) Tugwell was a widow for over forty years, and the 1820 (p. 533), 1830 (p. 67), and 1840 (p. 393) Pitt County censuses showed her as head of her household and living at the same place and surrounded by many of the same neighbors through the years. Captain Dupree's district (later Captain Harris') included the familiar names of Parker, Phillips, Wallace, Spell, Vines, Williams, Cobb, Corbetts, May, Tyson, Dilday, and Williamson.

William married in 1819, Benjamin in 1822, and John L. ca. 1828. The 1830 Pitt County Census (p. 67) shows Mary in the 60–70 age classification with one male 20–30 in the household (James, Jr., was 29), and one female slave under 10. Nearby were William and wife Mary with one male under 5, one male 10–15 (11 year old Joseph L.), two females under 5, and two females 5–10. It is apparent that Benjamin is incorrectly listed as another Mary. (When the census was copied from the original and alphabetized, the copier made a mistake, as the family corresponds to his and he is otherwise not listed.) The male head of household is 30–40 (Benjamin), one female 30–40 (his first wife Elizabeth Davis), one male 5–10 (Leonard), an unknown female 15–20, and two female slaves. Mary's youngest son, my

---

12. Pitt County Deed Book P, pp. 383.
13. Pitt Book T, pp. 206, 207 relate that in 1815 Nahum Little sold this 17 1/4 (*sic*) acres to John Spell, making Spell a neighbor of James' widow.

ancestor John, was married and in his own household, enumerated in the 20–30 age group, with one female 15–20 (his first wife Mary Phillips), one male under 5 (Benjamin), and one female slave under 10.

The 1840 Pitt County Census showed three households of Tugwells in Captain Dupree's district. Mary (p. 393) was again listed in the 60–70 age group (a woman's prerogative?), and had one female 5–10 and one female 20–30, neither of which could have been her own children. The younger girl was probably 7 year old Louisa Jane, daughter of Mary's son Benjamin, whose wife had died when the baby was less than a month old. The older girl was probably Fanny Mathews, mentioned in a 14 October 1841 Deed of Gift as living with Mary.[14] William (p. 393) was in the 40–50 age group, enumerated with his wife and eight children. I cannot find 42 year old Benjamin, but a young Benjamin (unidentified) was enumerated on page 405 in the 20–30 age group. Again, and still, neighbors of Mary (Lang) Tugwell were Samuel Vines, James Parker, Isaac Phillips, John Walker (a new name), and three widows: Susanna May, Charlotte Williamson, and Anna Spell.

The last record for Mary (Lang) Tugwell was when her name appeared in the 1850 Pitt County Census (p. 29) in the household of son Benjamin and his second wife Celia and their four little children. Mary Tugwell is listed as 78 years old, but some records indicate she may have been a few years older. Mary (Lang) Tugwell died between 1850 and 1860 in Pitt County, North Carolina. Two of her sons, Benjamin in Pitt County and John L. in Haywood County, Tennessee, died in 1855, and it is not known if she was still living. She had lived over fifty years in Pitt County in the same area she and James Tugwell had come to five years after their marriage in Gates County. James Tugwell had died between 1804 and 1810, estimated ca. 1807.

Children of James Tugwell and Mary (Lang):

Note: For clarity's sake, the names of their four sons are printed in bold.

1. **William Tugwell**: b. 5 April 1796, Gates County, North Carolina (The 1850 Pitt County Census indicates William's birth date was 1798; the 1860 census, 1796; the 1870 census, 1795.); m. 21 January 1819, Mary — (from Devotional Book), Pitt County, North Carolina. Mary was nearly 10 years younger than William; she died in the 1870s. Married 4 years when, on 24 February 1823, they sold a half-acre town lot they owned in Tarborough in adjoining Edgecombe County to Henry Austin.[15] Pitt County 1850 agricultural census showed William Tugwell of Crossroads District listed under Sherrod Tison (*sic*), who owned 871 acres of land (valued at $5,750), 310 of which were improved. William and Mary were enumerated in their own household in the 1870 census.[16] d. 23 September 1882 near Centre Bluff, Pitt County, North Carolina, at age 86, outliving his brothers by many years. An obituary in the Greenville *Eastern Reflector* noted his acute sense of honor and veracity: "The latch string of all was left outside for 'Uncle Billie' as he was familiarly called. It can be truly said he was without an enemy." Children (all except Joseph Lyon, Robert "Robin," and Levi were calculated from Pitt County censuses and may not be error-free):

---

14. Pitt County, North Carolina, Deed Book KK, p. 23. Mary Tuggell (*sic*), "with a Reserve of my life time," made gifts of a feather bed stead and furniture (coverings) to her granddaughter Louisa Jane and to Fanny Mathews because of "natural love and affection." Witnesses to the deed were Samuel Vines, Sr., and Jr.
15. Edgecombe County, North Carolina, Registry, Book 17, p. 542.
16. Pitt County 1870 Census, California District, Falkland P. O., p. 24, #197.

(1) *Joseph* Lyon Tugwell: b. 27 June 1819 (date from Devotional Book);
m. (1) 4 June 1840, Sarah Wooten (b. 6 March 1820, d. 5 February 1865), daughter of Henry Wooten, and in 1847 Joseph and "Sally" moved from Pitt County to Union Parish, Louisiana; m. (2) 1866, Margaret E. (Harris) Jones (d. 1889), widow of Enoch Jones.
d. 25 August 1888. His descendants are designated as "the Louisiana Tugwells." Much of what follows on Joseph's descendants was written by Mrs. Hugh Olmand Tugwell of Greenwell Spring, Louisiana (East Baton Rouge), in 1974, and given to me by James Jared Tugwell [p. 58] of Magee, Mississippi, a descendant of James (Jr.). In August 1993 *Leonard* Joe McCown of Irving, Texas, and I made contact, and he generously furnished data unavailable to me previously [see Addendum], including Joseph L.'s first two children, Martha and Benjamin S.; and Joseph L.'s 2d marriage.
Children (all except first 3 were born in Union Parish, Louisiana):

1. Martha Ann: b. 22 March 1842; m. 1868, P. H. McVicker, Union Parish, Louisiana. They had 10 children.
2. Benjamin S.: b. 5 December 1842 (*sic*), Pitt County, North Carolina; m. Phoebe Ann Findley (b. 1848; d. 29 July 1886). A Confederate soldier 1862–1865, enlisting in Monroe, Louisiana. Listed in the 1870 Union Parish, Louisiana, Census with his wife, daughter Mary *Ophelia*, and brothers George W. and Joseph W. In 1878 he bought land in Lamar County, Texas. d. 10 October 1885. Both buried near Paris, Texas.
   Children:
   [1] Mary *Ophelia* [See Addendum, p. 328]
   [2] Thomas Beltzhoover: b. 18 December 1870, Union Parish, Louisiana;
   d. 26 May 1850, Dallas, Texas
   [3] Benjamin Franklin: b. 27 December 1879, Paris, Texas
   [4] Joseph Bullett: b. 28 December 1881, Paris, Texas;
   d. 3 January 1922, Paris, Texas
3. Willis Richard Tugwell: b. 27 January 1845;
   m. Nancy Ann Hall (b. 24 September 1848, d. 6 June 1917);
   d. 28 December 1910; buried Taylor Cemetery, Union Parish
   Children:
   [1] Rodell Tugwell: m. 1895, Mamie Augusta "Gussie" Sims
   Children:
   1. Merle: m. John Fletcher Ramsey; buried in Farmerville, Union Parish, Louisiana
   2. Grace: m. Leon Moore; lives in Rison, Arkansas
   3. Metz Tugwell: buried in Farmerville, Louisiana

   [2] Addison Comadore ("Add") Tugwell: m. Minta Ballard
   Children: Ellis, Rita, Sue
   [3] William Thornton Tugwell: b. 7 April 1873; m. Carrie Adeline Gibson (b. 5 November 1884; d. 22 September 1960); d. 22 September 1915. After her husband's death Carrie Adeline married his brother Egbert.
   Children:
   1. Hugh Olmand Tugwell: b. 13 December 1905; m. Alice Louisa Thibodeaux (b. 19 July 1909), who supplied this information.

Children:
(1) Myrt Egbert Tugwell: b. 24 March 1936;
m. (1) 1962, Loretta Evans (b. 1941), div.; she lives in Cameron, Texas, and is now married to Jack Allen.
m. (2) Rena Richton
Children of 1st marriage:
John Olmand: b. 27 August 1963; m. 9 January 1988, Jacquie Morris, daughter of Shannon *Ken* Morris and Beth Leger). John and Jacquie live in Houston near the author; and
Andrew Evans: b. 1 December 1964
Children of 2d marriage:
Tandi Elizabeth, Alice Louise, Myrt Egbert ("Bert"), Jr.
(2) Richard Tugwell

2. Marie Tugwell: b. 10 January 1908;
m. Christopher Woodward
3. Myrt Egbert Tugwell: b. 18 October 1909;
d. 11 August 1935
4. William Thornton Tugwell, Jr.: b. 4 September 1915; m. Freydis Thigpen; d. 3 April 1947

[4] Otis Lee Tugwell:
m. (1) Ossie Clark; m. (2) Nell Barnes
Children of 1st marriage:
1. W.C. Tugwell: b. at Farmerville, Louisiana
2. Floy Tugwell: m. — Roberts; lives in Lafayette, Louisiana

Child of 2d marriage:
3. Otis Lee Tugwell, Jr., who is a physician living in Bastrop, Louisiana

[5] Egbert Tugwell, M.D.: b. 4 December 1886; m. Carrie Adeline (Gibson) Tugwell, his brother William Thornton Tugwell's widow; d. 13 August 1932
Child:
1. Nancy Ann: m. John Nanovsky; lives in Shippinville, Pennsylvania
Children: Ann Marie, William Tugwell, Robert

4. George W. Tugwell (son of Joseph Lyon Tugwell, p. 44 supra):
b. 1847; m. Jane Goyne; d. 1924, Felsenthal, Arkansas
Children:
[1] Fred Tugwell: m. Lelia Peace; d. in Felsenthal; buried in Harper Springs near Huttig, Arkansas
[2] Lelia ("Lea") Tugwell: m. Fred Collier; lived in Tenn.
5. John C. Tugwell: b. 1849; m. Josephine Jones; d. 1910, Union Parish, Louisiana
Children (all deceased by 1974):
[1] Robert Tugwell: b. 1879
Children: Lena, Thelburt, William, Lovline
[2] Claude Tugwell: b. 1883

Children: Letha, Elton
[3] Mary Tugwell: b. ca. 1886
[4] Ben Tugwell: b. 1888
[5] Cleveland Tugwell: b. 1890
[6] Lou Tugwell: b. 1894

6. Joseph William ("Joe Bill") Tugwell: b. 8 January 1852; d. 1890
Children (including, and not in order):
[1] Peyton Tugwell: b. 1886; buried in Taylor Cemetery, near Farmerville in Union Parish, Louisiana
[2] Eleanor Tugwell: b. 1888; m. Abner James; lived in Ponchotula, Louisiana
[3] Sarah E. ("Sallie") Tugwell: b. 1882; m. 1903, Henry Brashier; buried in Taylor Cemetery (Farmerville)
[4] Ernest S. Tugwell: b. 1876; buried in Taylor Cemetery
7. Edmond D. ("Edd") Tugwell: b. 16 August 1854;
m. Martha ("Mattie") Hall; both buried in Taylor Cemetery
8. Robert Wickliff ("Bob") Tugwell: b. 8 February 1858;
m. Laura Emma Dean; d. 14 April 1933
Children:
[1] Andrew Patrick Tugwell. He was the Louisiana State Treasurer for five terms and lives in Baton Rouge.
Child:
1. A. P. Tugwell, Jr.: m. Carolin Adonis; lives in Baton Rouge
[2] Joseph Lloyd Tugwell: b. 29 November 1882;
d. 8 September 1953; buried in Winnfield, Louisiana
Child:
1. Martha
9. Yancy L. Tugwell: b. ca. 1860; m. 1881, Sally A. T. Murray; lived in Texas
Child:
[1] Emmet

Note: Continuing with the children of William Tugwell, who was the 1st child of Mary (Lang) and James Tugwell (p. 43 supra):

(2) daughter: b. 1821; d. 1825
(3) daughter: b. ca. 1826
(4) daughter: b. ca. 1828
(5) James L. Tugwell: b. ca. 1830; m. 24 October 1865, Catherine Tugwell (b. 1848); d. 24 March 1870. 1870 Pitt County Census has Catherine enumerated next to her in-laws, William (75 years) and Mary (65 years), keeping house. On 1 March 1871 the widowed Catherine m. Counsel Jefferson at Allen Warren, Esq.,'s home near Falkland.
(6) Elizabeth Tugwell: b. ca. 1834
(7) Robert ("Robin") Tugwell: b. ca. 1835; m. 3 February 1859, Delphia Caroline Davis (b. ca. 1832, d. 1907), youngest daughter of Benjamin Davis. The 1850 Pitt County Census (p. 24) has Robert farming and living with the family of 74 year old Benjamin Davis in the Cross-road District not far from his parents' home. On 15 May 1862 he enlisted in the Confederate Army, Company D, 44th Regiment North Carolina. d. 2 October 1863 in hospital in Orange Court House, Virginia. It is believed he died of an infection caused by tooth troubles. Widow Delphia remarried 27 December 1867, George W. Parker (b.

24 January 1821; d. 16 May 1874). They had 2 children: Margaret Ella Parker (b. 16 August 1868, d. 8 September 1943), and Zadok Parker (b. 4 March 1871, d. 7 January 1919). Delphia died 2 April 1907.
Children (all born in Pitt County, North Carolina):

1. Caroline Sarah Tugwell: b. 1 May 1861; m. May 1879, Benjamin T. May
   Children:
   [1] Benjamin ("Bennie")
   [2] Jane: m. 19 October 1904, Robert ("Bob") Tugwell, in Farmville Township, Pitt County [see p. 48]
2. John Robert Tugwell: b. 3 October 1862; m. 2 May 1888, Mattie Jane Moore (b. 30 May 1867, d. 1 September 1947), daughter of William David ("Dee") Moore and Amanda Fields; d. 5 July 1940
   Children:
   [1] William David ("Willie"): b. 20 March 1889; d. 20 April 1947
   [2] Bennie D.: b. 9 July 1891; d. 18 June 1893
   [3] John Robert ("Johnnie"), Jr.: b. 11 April 1893; m. 26 May 1914, Sue Smith Owens (b. 25 September 1894, d. 13 January 1976) in Farmville Township; d. 4 October 1958
   Children:
   1. Alfred Dawson: b. 21 February 1916; d. 25 June 1993
   2. Evelyn Lucille: b. 14 February 1918
   3. Mattie Frances: b. 12 July 1919
   4. Robert Dee: b. 1 November 1920; m. 19 August 1951, Minnie Louise Jones (b. 20 March 1929), daughter of Guy K. Jones and Verona Fields, in Farmville, North Carolina
      Children:
      (1) infant son: b/d 16 June 1952
      (2) Angela Louise: b. 15 July 1953; lives in Raleigh, North Carolina, and is a floral designer
      (3) Robert Donald ("Robbie"): b. 11 November 1956; m. 7 June 1981, *Susan* Elaine Smith (b. 12 January 1959) daughter of Earl F. Smith and Lillian McDaniel, in Greenville, North Carolina. Robbie is a Certified Energy Manager, and they live in Winterville, North Carolina. [I am grateful for the information sent to me by Robbie Tugwell, especially about William Tugwell's 7th and 8th children.]
      Children: *Derek* Robert, b. 6 June 1985; *Jonathan* Gray, b. 6 March 1989
   5. Bruce Neal: b. 3 April 1930

[4] Clarence Bennett: b. 23 February 1895; d. 15 November 1935

[5] Carrie Delphia: b. 1 September 1897; d. 6 July 1975
[6] Ora Clyde: b. 4 October 1898; d. 9 April 1982. (Ora Clyde's family Bible was the source of much of "Robbie" Tugwell's information.)
[7] Abe Lester: b. 3 October 1901; d. 24 August 1916
[8] Alfred Moore: b. 3 June 1903; d. 26 June 1911
[9] Leland Stanton: b. 25 October 1904; d. 9 April 1977

(8) Levi Tugwell: b. 1840; m. Lydia Joyner (1846–1918); d. 1897. Enlisted as Confederate soldier, Camp Gatlin, 9 September 1861 in Marlboro Guards, Company E, 27 Regiment North Carolina; listed as unaccounted for on 15 September 1861; re-enlisted with his brother "Robin" on 15 May 1862, Company D, 44th Regiment North Carolina
Children:

1. Richard J. Tugwell: b. 2 September 1865; m. (1) —; m (2) 17 November 1909, Bettie Strickland, at Bell Arthur, Beaver Dam, North Carolina; d. 10 March 1926. The *Daily Reflection* of 11 March reported the shocking death of Richard Tugwell, "highly esteemed and popular citizen of Bell Arthur, following a sudden stroke of paralysis."
   Children of 1st marriage:
   [1] Tollena: b. 1890; m. Frank Manning; d. 1918
   [2] Floyd: b. 1892; d. 1918 in World War I
2. William Thomas Tugwell: b. December 1867; m. 17 January 1894, Pennie Henson (b. 1876), at Farmville Township, Pitt County, North Carolina; d. ante-1926
   Children:
   [1] Lizzie E.: b. 1895
   [2] Carrie M.: b. 1897
   [3] Mary D.: b. 1899
   [4] Melton: b. 1900
3. Charles E. ("Charlie") Tugwell: b. 1870; m. Maggie Tyson
   Child:
   [1] W. L. Tugwell; m. 8 June 1921, Bettie Braxton, in Farmville Township, Pitt County, North Carolina
4. Ann Eliza Tugwell: b. ca. 1874; d. ante-1926
5. John H. Tugwell: b. April 1875
6. Buck F. Tugwell: b. March 1877; m. 19 January 1898, Alice L. Moore (b. 1881, d. 1956), in Farmville Township;
   d. 7 December 1924 in car accident
   Child: Pearl M., b. November 1898
7. Lucy Tugwell: b. ca. 1879; d. ante-1926
8. Robert ("Bob") Tugwell: b. 8 October 1881; m. 19 October 1904, Jane May, daughter of Caroline and Benjamin T. May, in Farmville Township [see p. 47, Caroline Sarah Tugwell]
9. Walter S. Tugwell: b. 7 August 1884; d. 8 November 1924

(9) William John Tugwell: b. ca. 1841

2. Benjamin Tugwell:

[The first Benjamin Tugwell (1721–1749), was the son of Henry and second wife Elizabeth (Baldwin) Tugwell, and he had no issue; nor did Benjamin (b. 1750), Henry's grandson who died in the Revolutionary War in 1779. Another grandson of Henry was also named Benjamin (b. 1745). James Tugwell's son Benjamin, however, had numerous progeny.]

b. 5 April 1798, Gates County, North Carolina (date from Benjamin's family Bible);
m. (1) 27 August 1822; Elizabeth Davis (d. 13 December 1832), daughter of Henry B. Davis (whose brother is thought to be Benjamin Davis); Pitt County, North Carolina;
m. (2) 16 November 1843, Celia Smith (b. ca. 1816, d. 23 March 1873), daughter of John Smith; Pitt County, North Carolina.
d. 22 September 1855, Pitt County, North Carolina
The 1850 Agricultural census of Pitt County showed Benjamin Tugwell, in Anderson's District, owned 625 acres of land (valued at $1,563), 100 of which were improved. His livestock was valued at $300, and the previous year he harvested 252 bushels of rice, 650 bushels of Indian corn, 200 bushels of peas and beans, 300 bushels of sweet potatoes, as well as some cotton and honey. Tragedy struck Benjamin's family in 1855 when two year old Jesse died 31 August and three weeks later Benjamin died. Celia was six and a half months pregnant. She did not remarry. The censuses of 1860 (p. 121) and 1870 (p. 81) show Celia Tugwell as head of household with children James T., Benjamin F., David, Joseph W., and S. Frances.
Children of Benjamin's 1st marriage to Elizabeth Davis (all born in Pitt County, North Carolina):
(1) Peter Tugwell: b/d March 1824
(2) Leonard Tugwell:

His line could be designated "the Arkansas Tugwells."
b. 15 May 1825; m. 24 August 1854, Elizabeth Dutherage. (Certificate #278 recorded in Dallas County, Arkansas, by the Rev. Alex Littlejohn.) Leonard left Pitt County, North Carolina, and went to Haywood County, Tennessee, where his uncles James and John L. Tugwell lived. There in October 1850 he bought personal property (including 3 horses) from Charles Marshall and moved to Clark County, Arkansas (ca. 70 miles southwest of Little Rock). From there, on 30 May 1854, he wrote his father a letter (in possession of his descendants), saying he had a good piece of land and would marry within 10 weeks (and that she was a good religious Methodist girl). d. 4 January 1864, Clark County, Arkansas. Widowed, Elizabeth m. Aaron P. Casey on 13 March 1866 (Certificate #581 recorded in Dallas County, Arkansas).
Children:[17]

1. James W. ("Jimmy") Tugwell: b. 4 December 1856; d. 1 September 1952, in Little Rock, Arkansas; buried Bethlehem Cemetery, Clark County, Arkansas
2. Benjamin Tugwell: b. ca. 1859
3. Lorenzo Dow Tugwell: b. 11 February 1861; m. 8 January 1885, Fannie Halsell (b. 2 October 1868, in Hot Spring County, Arkansas; d. 7 July 1952), daughter of John C. Halsell and Rachel (Watson); d. 19 December 1903; buried in Bethlehem Cemetery, Joan, Clark County, Arkansas
   Children:
   [1] Mary *Amanda* Tugwell: b. 4 November 1887; m. 18 March 1908, Walter Fulbright; d. 23 February 1936

17. Some information on Leonard's children was given by Noel P. Tugwell, Sr., [p. 51], and Wanda Tugwell Moseley [p. 50] to James Jared Tugwell [p. 58] and then to the author; and some was given by Carlene (Davidson) Tugwell [p. 51] of Pasadena, Texas, widow of Lorenzo James Tugwell, Jr.

[2] Thomas *Trigg* Tugwell: b. 9 August 1889; Brown Springs, Arkansas; m. (1) 6 March 1909, Annie V. Green (b. 1893, d. 1915);
m. (2) 9 October 1920, Goldie Ham (b. 1897, d. 1967);
d. 16 April 1960, Brown Springs, Arkansas, and buried in Bethlehem Cemetery, Joan, Clark County, Arkansas
Children of 1st marriage:

1. *Lloyd* Carl Tugwell: b. 7 November 1909, Brown Springs, Arkansas; m. 23 November 1932, *Ora* Mae Davidson (b. 1907), daughter of Henry D. Davidson and Gussie Hixon
   Child:
   (1) *Wanda* Joann Tugwell: b. 9 September 1935, Brown Springs, Arkansas; m. 2 July 1953, Carl Edward Moseley (b. 12 April 1930), son of James Moseley and Grace (Johnson), in Little Rock
   Children:
   Catherine Lynn: b. 7 August 1957, m. 1976 Donald Clyde Van Cleve;
   Melanie Ann: b. 1 April 1959, m. 1982 John David Kellar; and
   Carlyn Gay: b. 8 September 1963
2. Josephine Tugwell: b. 1911; d. 1914
3. Woodrow Tugwell: b. 9 November 1912;
   m. (1) Nettie Lou White; m. (2) Mary —;
   m. (3) Ruby —; d. 13 March 1993
4. Gladys Tugwell: b. 23 June 1915;
   m. Lloyd T. Briley

Children of 2nd marriage:

5. Vedonia Tugwell: b. 13 August 1921;
   m. Mack Williams; Malvern, Arkansas
6. Sarah *Frances* Tugwell: b. 15 September 1923;
   m. Lafayette L. Gray; Hot Spring County, Arkansas
7. Floyd Calvin Tugwell: b. 30 August 1925;
   d. 17 April 1945 in World War II
8. F. Cleo Tugwell: b. 17 August 1927;
   m. Charlie Witherspoon; d. 1987
9. Lena Mae Tugwell: b. 2 July 1930; m. Jim Rose
10. Thomas Trigg Tugwell, Jr.: b. 7 August 1932;
    m. Janet —
11. Kenneth Tugwell: b. 20 April 1937;
    m. (1) Betty Bacon; m. (2) Peggy Bonner;
    m. (3) Sharon —. Lives in Little Rock.
12. Janie Tugwell: b. 9 January 1940;
    m. Jack Culpepper

[3] Claud Tugwell: b. 10 June 1892, Hot Spring County, Arkansas; m. 8 January 1911, Nancy Lucinda Ham (b. 14 August 1892, d. 16 January 1973); d. 2 February 1976

Children:

1. *Noel* Philip Tugwell: b. 17 December 1911, Hot Spring County, Arkansas; m. 6 June 1932, *Louise* Aletha Brooks (b. 26 February 1914 in Des Moines, New Mexico), Clovis, New Mexico. In 1977 living in Donaldson, Arkansas.
   Children:
   (1) Noel *Philip* Tugwell, Jr., Ph.D.: b. 27 February 1933, in Levelland, Texas; m. 5 February 1960, Ramona Marie Stubblefield, in Fort Smith, Arkansas. "Phil" is a professor of entomology at the University of Arkansas.
      Children: Tracey Janine, b. 1962; Noel Calvin, b. 1968; and Heather Ann, b. 1971
   (2) Carolyn Aletha Tugwell: b. 4 March 1935, in Levelland, Texas; m. 2 July 1955, Harry Boyer, Donaldson, Arkansas; living in Texas in 1993.
      Children: Mark Harry, b. 1956 in Arkadelphia, Arkansas; Noel Franklin, b/d 1957 in Dallas, Texas; Timmy Dewayne, b. 1959 in Dallas; Phyllis Kay, b. 1961 in Dallas
2. *Harold* Clayton Tugwell: b. Hot Spring County, Arkansas; m. Solmas —. They live in Tyler, Texas.
3. Lorenzo James Tugwell
4. Eva Tugwell: m. Lawrence Jackson. They live in Lamesa, Texas
5. Goldie Jean Tugwell: m. Porter Roberts. They live in Friona, Texas.
6. Claud Tugwell, Jr.: pastor of Bell Avenue Baptist Church in Amarillo, Texas, in 1980
7. Donald Neil Tugwell: m. Opal — They live in Levelland, Texas.
8. Patsy Tugwell: died of cancer as a teenager in the 1940s

Note: Continuing with children of Lorenzo Dow Tugwell (1861–1903) and Fannie Halsell from p. 49 supra:

[4] Lorenzo James ("Jim") Tugwell: b. 18 July 1894; m. 16 September 1919, Eunice Joyce Bryant (b. 8 January 1900, d. 13 September 1957); d. 22 February 1968
Children:

1. Lorenzo *James* Tugwell, Jr.: b. 29 July 1920; m. 7 February 1949, Annie *Carlene* Davidson (b. 14 October 1930); d. 12 October 1990. His widow lives in Pasadena, Texas, where they had lived since 1954.

Children:

(1) Lorenzo James ("Jimmy") Tugwell III: b. 2 February 1950; m. 17 November 1972, Rhonda Marie Gilmore (b. 1 June 1952). They live in Dew, Texas.
Children: Laura Nicole, b. 30 January 1981; and Colleen Marie, b. 13 March 1990

(2) *Gary* Glynn Tugwell: b. 23 April 1951; m. 4 October 1975, Donna Louise Katje (b. 5 December 1954). They live in Pasadena, Texas.
Children: Jessica Kay, b. 31 May 1979; and Jason Robert, b. 20 November 1980

2. *Paul* Leo Tugwell: b. 23 October 1921; m. Matalee Bledsoe; div.; d. 19 April 1988, Rusk, Texas
Children: Paul Leo, Jr., Linda Lee
3. *David* Edward Tugwell: b. 7 July 1923; m. Billie Jean —; d. 26 March 1989, Pasadena, Texas
4. *Allen* Andrew Tugwell: b. March 1931; m. Ruby *Jean* Posey. They live in Friendship, Arkansas.
Children: *Keith* Allen, Craig

[5] Wallace Tugwell: b. 11 February 1897; d. 8 May 1899

[6] *Eva* Mae Tugwell: b. 8 August 1899; m. (1) Kelly Rone; m. (2) R. Joseph ("Joe") Sovoie. Eva Mae, who lives in Malvern, Arkansas, is the only one of her siblings still living in April 1993.

[7] Floyd *Calvin* Tugwell: b. 2 April 1901; m. Irene Davidson; d. ca. 1975

[8] Earnest Dow Tugwell: b/d 1904, shortly after his father's death

Continuing with children of Leonard and Elizabeth from p. 49:

4. Mary *Ellen* Tugwell
b. ca. 1863; m. — Clair

Note: Continuing with children of Benjamin Tugwell and his 1st wife Elizabeth Davis from p. 48 supra:

(3) Louisa Jane Tugwell: b. 19 November 1832; m. William Little; d. 1908
Children (Pitt County, North Carolina, Census 1860, 1870):

1. Benjamin Little: b. 1847
2. Elizabeth Little: b. 1849
3. John Little: b. 1850
4. Thomas Little: b. 1852
5. William Little (Jr.): b. 1854; d. ante-1870
6. Robert Little: b. 1856
7. Joseph Little: b. 1858
8. Sally A. Little: b. 1859
9. Fannie Little: b. 1860
10. William Little, Jr.: b. 1866
11. Edmund Little: b. 1868

Children of Benjamin Tugwell and his 2d wife Celia Smith (pp. 48–49 supra), all born in Pitt County, North Carolina:

(4) John Spencer Tugwell: b. 2 September 1844; enlisted 29 January 1862 in Pitt County as a Confederate soldier in the War Between the States, Company D, 44th Regiment North Carolina; d. 11 August 1862

(5) *James* Thomas Tugwell: b. 19 February 1846; m. 11 September 1873, Elizabeth Meeks (b. October 1845), Farmville Township, North Carolina. James was a druggist. d. 12 December 1923
Children:
1. *James* Benjamin: b. 10 May 1875; d. 10 February 1943
2. Martha Jane: b. 1877; m. 22 December 1897, B. F. Forrest, Farmville Township, North Carolina
3. *Andrew* Jackson: b. 3 November 1878; d. 25 March 1965, and buried at Fountain Cemetery

(6) Benjamin Franklin Tugwell: b. 26 February 1848; m. 23 September 1875, Sarah E. Norville (d. 23 February 1905), daughter of W. J. Norville; d. 12 April 1924
Children:
1. Lizzie Anna Tugwell: b. 10 August 1876; d. 10 September 1876
2. *Richard* Franklin Tugwell: b. 2 June 1878;
m. 26 December 1900, *Susie* Ethel Stamper (b. 28 April 1882, Halifax County, North Carolina; d. 28 October 1973), daughter of William H. Stamper and Margaret Pender;
d. 16 January 1956
Children:
[1] William Benjamin Tugwell: b. 5 April 1902;
m. 8 January 1922, May Belle Shackelford, daughter of Richard Shackelford and Sarah Dildy; d. 3 June 1967. May Belle died 29 July 1992 and was buried in the Shackelford family cemetery, U.S. Hwy. 264, Greene County, North Carolina.
Children:
1. Benjamin *Streeter* Tugwell: b. 29 August 1923; m. 27 July 1949, Helen Sturgeon (b. 24 January 1927), daughter of George Sturgeon and Lucy Hall, in Plymouth, North Carolina; div. March 1988. Helen's generous contribution is mentioned on page 28 supra.
Children:
(1) *Cheryl* Marice: b. 29 January 1952, Plymouth, North Carolina; m. (1) 2 September 1972, Raymond Linville, Farmville, North Carolina; div. January 1982. m. (2) 27 June 1987, Eric Aage Nilausen (b. 18 April 1941), son of Ole Nilausen and Ellen Aage, Copenhagen, Denmark. In 1993 Cheryl is working on her doctoral (Ph.D.) dissertation at the University of Iowa. She and Eric live in Iowa City.
Child: Ian Palle Tugwell-Nilausen, b. 16 August 1985

(2) *Marla* Gail: b. 20 February 1954; m. 5 February 1988, Joel Barber Adams (b. 19 January 1953), son of Joel B. Adams and Dorothy Beattie, Asheville, North Carolina. They live in Asheville where she is an attorney.
(3) *Janice* Susan: b. 19 August 1962; lives in Rocky Mount, North Carolina, and is a school teacher.

2. *Marvin* Thomas Tugwell: b. 1 November 1925;
m. (1) Dorothy May, div. 1982
m. (2) 1988, Frances Hyde, and they live in Pitt County, North Carolina.
Children of 1st marriage:
(1) *Larry* Marvin: b. 28 September 1956;
m. Ann Whitley, div.
Child: Gregory Wayne, b. 24 December 1976
(2) *Steven* Thomas: b. 9 December 1957;
m. Tina Parrish, and they live in Bailey, North Carolina.
Child: Daniel, b. 1985
(3) *David* Vernon: b. 8 December 1959;
m. (1) Kay Grant, div.; m. (2) Wendy Smith and they live in Lucama, North Carolina with their children:
David Vernon, Jr., Amberly Lacey
(4) William *Alan*: b. 9 May 1961; m. Beverly King; live in Simms, North Carolina
Child: Dawn Marie
(5) Marvin *Thomas*, Jr.: b. 9 November 1963;
m. (1) Catherine Gallagher, div.;
m. (2) Debbie —, and they live in Lucama, North Carolina.
Children of 1st marriage:
Marvin Thomas III, Justin
3. *Margaret* Frances Tugwell: b. 15 January 1928;
m. 29 October 1948, Robert *Wayne* Whitley (b. 16 December 1914, d. 15 July 1981), son of Ashly Whitley and Nancy Cornelia Daley; div. 1969; d. 26 March 1983
Child:
(1) *Teresa* Karen: b. 24 December 1957; graduated from East Carolina University in Greenville, North Carolina; lives in Cary, N. Carolina and works at Shearon Harris Nuclear Power Plant.
4. Richard *Vernon* Tugwell: b/d 1959
5. *Richard* Earl Tugwell: b. 2 February 1932;
m. (1) 19 May 1963, Lou Gay, daughter of Joe Gay and Thelma Pitt; div. 1984; m. (2) 21

November 1992, *Patricia* Ann Smith West, and they live in Durham, North Carolina
Children of 1st marriage:
(1) *Lisa* Sharon: b. 13 August 1964, and lives in Atlanta, Georgia
(2) Richard Timothy ("Ricky"): b. 3 January 1967; m. 1 May 1993, Melissa Bingham; living in Cary, North Carolina

6. Vivian Tugwell: b. 19 December 1933; d. 11 June 1935

[2] James *Arthur* Tugwell: b. 19 April 1903;
m. 26 December 1927, Molly Stanley (d. 27 October 1989), daughter of Howard Stanley and his 1st wife Evelyn; d. 14 March 1977
Child:

1. Howard *Stan*ley Tugwell: b. 28 March 1930; m. 26 December 1955, *Peggy* Carol Nuttall, daughter of Carroll Nuttall and Dorothy Hundley. Stan and Peggy and their children live in Norfolk, Virginia. Stan is a Captain U.S. Navy (Retired), and a dentist with a part-time practice now.
Children:
(1) *Deborah* Sue: b. 10 July 1956; m. 21 May 1983, Steven Douglas Ellis
(2) Stanley *Lee*: b. 19 May 1958; m. 6 August 1993, Dinah Green

[3] Nannie Mae Tugwell: b. 2 June 1905; m. 20 May 1936, Louis Hyman Alford; d. 1938

[4] *Lenwood* Richard Tugwell (twin): b. 31 March 1909
His twin died 31 March 1909.
m. 24 February 1940, Lizzie Thomas (d. 15 September 1991); d. 16 January 1974
Child:

1. Elizabeth Ann Tugwell: b. 10 July 1949;
m. 23 August 1968, David *Wayne* House
They live in Farmville, North Carolina.
Children:
(1) *Richard* Bruce: b. 28 February 1969; m. 17 July 1993, Deborah Joyce Rochelle McKenzie
(2) *Belinda* Ann: b. 17 July 1973; m. 18 November 1992, William Harvey Leonard
(3) *Peyton* Wayne: b. 16 September 1975
(4) *Bencie* Leigh: b. 8 December 1980

[5] Wilson Franklin ("Tug") Tugwell: b. 19 November 1914; m. 27 June 1941, *Ethel* Rivers Murphrey, daughter of Loys Linwood Murphrey and Lura Josephine Jones; d. 19 February 1988
Child:

1. Wilson Franklin ("Tuggy") Tugwell, Jr.:

b. 2 May 1942; m. *Dale* Elizabeth Ammons (b. 7 February 1949), daughter of Neal and Daphne Ammons; div. December 1991
Child: Matthew Neal, b. 22 August 1977

3. Mary Adaline Tugwell: b. February 1880; m. James O. Baker (b. July 1877)

(7) David Tugwell [4th child of Benjamin Tugwell and 2d wife Celia Smith, p. 53 supra]: b. 4 November 1849; m. (1) 1 November 1872, Allie A. V. Friar; m. (2) 24 July 1884, Winey Bailey (b. 1839, d. 1918); lived in Farmville Township, North Carolina; d. 5 November 1920
Children:
1. William J. ("Joe"): b. ca. 1874
2. Mary Ellen ("Mollie"): b. ca. 1876; m. — Morgan
3. Elizabeth C. ("Lizzie"): b. ca. 1878; m. Peyton Boyce
4. Charles M.: b. February 1879
5. Susan Virginia ("Sue"): b. 4 July 1881; m. Jesse Lee Tugwell

(8) Joseph W. Tugwell: b. 18 October 1851; m. 17 December 1874, Nancy Eugenia Meeks (b. 1855, d. 1930), Farmville Township; d. 27 March 1929
Child:
1. Jesse Lee: b. 31 October 1878; m. 9 November 1898, "Sue" Tugwell (supra); d. 14 September 1951
Child: Carlos

(9) Jesse Tugwell: b. 6 October 1853; d. 31 August 1855

(10) Sarah *Frances* Tugwell: b. 8 December 1855; m. Joe Parker; no descendants

3. James Tugwell (Jr.): b. 1801, Pitt County, North Carolina; m. 1830?, Caroline — (b. ca. 1804), Pitt County. James and Caroline left Pitt County ca. 1830 with my ancestor John and his 1st wife Mary (Phillips) to move to Haywood County in west Tennessee. James witnessed my John L.'s will in April 1855. A descendant of James, James ("Jimmy") Jared Tugwell, Sr., [see p. 58], who has done a lot of family research and generously sent me the information on Robert Andrew Tugwell and his descendants, thinks that James' wife Caroline (and maybe their oldest child Mary) died in Haywood County. Whatever the case, James and some of his children left that county and moved to north-central Arkansas, where James bought 160 acres of public land near Sandtown in Independence County: 120 acres on 1 July 1859 and 40 acres on 1 May 1860. Many of James' descendants are still living within a 20 mile radius of the original homestead. d. 17 December 1860, Batesville, Independence County, and buried in Barnett Cemetery.
Children (all born in Haywood County, Tennessee):

(1) Mary Tugwell: b. 1831, Haywood County; m. Thomas Toler; d. ante–ca. 1855
Child:
1. Mary: b. ca. 1853. In the 1860 Independence County, Arkansas, Census, she was listed in her grandfather's household.

(2) William H. Tugwell: b. 1834, Haywood County; m. ca. 1863, Matilda F. — (b. 1838, in Virginia). In the 1860 Hardeman County, Tennessee, Census, p. 35, W. H. and Matilda were enumerated with three children.
Children:
1. James W. Tugwell: b. 1854

2. Annie E. Tugwell: b. 1857
3. Robert D. Tugwell: b. 1859

(3) *Robert* Andrew Tugwell

ROBERT ANDREW TUGWELL
78 YEARS

This child of James proved that some Tugwells could live a long time. He was 79 years old when he died. His line could be designated "the Arkansas Tugwells," just like his cousin Leonard's line.

b. 2 August 1837 in Haywood County, Tennessee; m. 14 March 1861, Elizabeth A. Gray (b. 19 June 1842 in North Carolina, d. 21 September 1914), Independence County, Arkansas.

During the Civil War, Robert joined the First Arkansas Volunteers, which became a part of the regular Confederate Army in 1861, and served with Col. J. A. Schnabel until 1865 in Co. G, 27th Arkansas Infantry Regiment.

d. 17 August 1916, Independence County, Arkansas. Robert A. and Elizabeth A. are buried in Gray's Chapel Cemetery near Sandtown, Independence County, Arkansas.

Children (all born Sandtown, Independence County, Arkansas):

1. James Andrew Tugwell: b. 28 January 1862; m. 23 December 1886, Nancy Josephine Frazier (1868–1939), daughter of Robert Andrew Frazier and Mary Frances Jackson; d. 7 September 1926, Independence County, Arkansas. Both buried in Lee's Chapel Cemetery, Sandtown, Arkansas.
   Children:
   [1] Robert Andrew Tugwell: b. 8 February 1888; m. (1) 16 April 1911, Mary E. Smith; div.; m. (2) Ann Polston; d. 13 February 1971, Jacksonville, Arkansas; buried in Lee's Chapel Cemetery, Sandtown, Arkansas
      Children:
      1. Bernice Lenell: b. 1911
      2. Bonnie Audrey: b. 1914
      3. Roberta Dean: b. 1928
   [2] William Oscar Tugwell: b. 19 August 1889; m. 6 July 1913, Grace Audrey Milligan; d. 1 March 1917; buried in Lee's Chapel Cemetery, Sandtown, Arkansas; no descendants

[3] Samuel Marvin Tugwell: b. 24 July 1891; m. 6 May 1917, Harriette Reeves; d. 9 March 1923; buried in Lee's Chapel Cemetery, Sandtown; no descendants

[4] Grady Lee Tugwell: b. 6 May 1893; m. (1) 23 April 1916, Maude Montgomery, m. (2) 4 September 1927, Iva Comora Smith; d. 4 October 1969; buried in Lee's Chapel Cemetery, Sandtown; no descendants

[5] Frances Elizabeth Tugwell: b. 10 August 1895; m. 24 December 1913, William Ellsworth Montgomery, at Tugwell homeplace; d. 9 April 1970; buried in Lee's Chapel Cemetery, Sandtown, Arkansas
Children:
1. Elizabeth Norine: b. 1914
2. Maude Maxine: b. 1917

[6] Monnie Myrtle Tugwell: b. 22 August 1897;
m. (1) 23 December 1914, Arthur J. Smith;
m. (2) 29 May 1930, Earl Wade;
m. (3) Walter Patterson; d. 28 December 1968
Children of 1st marriage:
1. Beatrice: b. 1917
2. William James Arthur: b. 1923
Children of 2d marriage:
3. Betty Sue: b/d 1932
4. Bertha: b. 1938

[7] Thomas Franklin Tugwell: b. 7 June 1901; m. 25 March 1925, Adabelle Morris (d. 1981), Little Rock, Arkansas; d. 16 November 1980; buried in Forest Lawn Cemetery, Los Angeles, California; no descendants

[8] Gilbert Leon Tugwell: b. 17 October 1903; m. 18 March 1933, Beatrice Shipp Hughes (b. 1918 in Texas), daughter of Jared Woodard Hughes and Clara Mae Stroud, in Batesville, Arkansas; d. 13 November 1982; buried in Oaklawn Cemetery, Batesville.
Children:
1. James Jared ("Jimmy") Tugwell: b. 9 May 1934; m. (1) 16 September 1954, Dottie Fae Britt (b. 1930 in Cushman, Arkansas), daughter of Elijah Britt and Mary Duncan; div.; m. (2) *Iris* Dianne Sparacino (b. 1944 in Greenville, Mississippi), daughter of Dominic Sparacino and Lucille Radejefski; living in Magee, Mississippi. He has provided the information on his ancestor James Tugwell (b. 1801).
Children of 1st marriage:
(1) Jamilene: b. 1957; m. Dennis Esteb
Children: Arlena Denise, b. 1978; Matthew Bracy, b. 1984;
(2) James (twin); b. 1959;
m. (1) Pamela Kaye Henson; div.; no issue
m. (2) Bertha (Campbell) Bledsoe
Children of 2d marriage:

Amanda Jean: b. 1982, Bertha's daughter adopted by James in 1992;
Clayton Seth: b. 23 December 1989. It is through Clayton Seth that the Tugwell line is carried on in Robert Andrew Tugwell's line.

(3) Jared (twin); b. 1959; m. Tina Louise Peel
Children: Jaricka Kristina, b. 1987; Bethany Louise, b. 1991

Child of 2d marriage:
(4) James Jared, Jr.: b. 21 August 1964

2. Clara Josephine ("Jo") Tugwell: b. 8 July 1937; m. (1) 5 May 1958, Joe Neil Hunt; m. (2) 28 June 1964, Luther Olen Love (b. 1930)
Child of 1st marriage:
(1) Terry Dale Hunt: b. 1959
3. *Hughes* Andrew Tugwell: b. 1 November 1939; m. 16 May 1964, Mary Ruth Carpenter (b. 1946)
Children:
(1) Shawn Dee: b. 1964; m. Larry K. Moore; div.
Child: Bryan Andrew Moore, b. 1987
(2) Andrea Ruth: b. 1969; m. 30 December 1989, Gregory Wayne Potts
Child: Lauren Andrea, b. 1990
(3) Stephanie Jo: b. 1975

[9] Beulah Tugwell (twin): b. 23 August 1906; m. 7 June 1930, Edwin Lowell Miller, Melbourne, Arkansas
Children:
1. Robert: b. 27 February 1931
2. Martha Carolyn: b. 1936; d. 1940

[10] Eula Tugwell (twin): b. 23 August 1906; m. 29 April 1935, Orville Merton Carter, Batesville, Arkansas; d. 1 October 1990; buried in Oaklawn Cemetery, Batesville, Arkansas; no descendants

Note: Continuing with children of Robert Andrew Tugwell and Elizabeth A. Gray (p. 57 supra):

2. Mary ("Callie") Tugwell: b. 1865; m. Ludington Frazier
Children: Sanford, Iva, Delbert, Essie, Robbie, Willie, Ernest Ilo
3. William A. Tugwell: b. 1868; m. Emily E. Alexander
Children:
[1] infant daughter: b/d 1896
[2] infant son: b/d 1901
4. Louise Elizabeth ("Ludie") Tugwell: b. 6 October 1870; d. 3 January 1892
5. Priscilla Jane ("Coon") Tugwell: b. 1874; m. Samuel Phillips
Children: Roy, Albert, Lottie Belle, Florence Evelyn, Arthur, Tommy, Ernest, Laura, Raymond
6. Robert Franklin Tugwell: b. 1877; m. Sadie McMillan

Child:
[1] Douglas Cameron Tugwell: d. ante-1978

7. John Gilbert Tugwell: b. 18 May 1879; m. 21 June 1903, Lula Smith (b. 1888, d. 1980), Shawnee, Oklahoma;
d. 11 November 1957; buried in Westminster Memorial Park, Westminster, California
Children:
[1] Jessie Anna Tugwell: b. 30 August 1904; m. — Ball
Children: 1 son, 2 daughters
[2] John Richard Tugwell: b. 29 August 1906; d. 6 January 1953; buried Westminster Memorial Park, Westminster, California
Children: 1 daughter, 1 son
[3] Catherine Corinne Tugwell: b. 5 February 1913;
m. — Randel; no descendants
[4] Elizabeth ("Betty") May Tugwell: b. 16 May 1916;
m. — Skinner
Child:
1. Howard Skinner: a graduate of the United States Naval Academy

8. *Oscar* Burton Tugwell: b. 25 February 1882; m. 23 February 1908, Jeanette C. Hawkins (b. 1885, d. 1951), Sandtown, Arkansas. On 20 March 1906 Oscar's parents sold him the 155-acre family farm. After his father's death, on 16 September 1916 Oscar was appointed administrator of his estate.
d. 20 May 1962 at Roswell, New Mexico. Oscar and Jeanette are both buried in McLean, Texas.
Children:
[1] Hester Jewell Tugwell: b. 30 November 1908;
m. 20 October 1928, Raymond D. Patterson (b. 1909)
Children:
1. Donald Ray: b. 1935
2. Marilyn: b. 1938
3. Carolyn: b. 1941

[2] Frederick Franklin Tugwell: b. 14 March 1911;
m. 2 January 1932, Cora Bell Morgan (b. 1913);
d. 2 February 1968; buried in Shamrock, Texas
Children:
1. Freda Pauline Tugwell: b. 28 October 1932; m. 23 December 1949, Raymond Lee Sonnenburg
Children:
(1) Raymond Lee, Jr.: b. 1951
(2) Gary Bruce: b. 1953
2. Barbara Louise Tugwell: b. 15 June 1937;
m. (1) 3 April 1957, Ronald P. Wilkerson; div.; m. (2) 17 March 1973, J. W. Hood
Children of 1st marriage: Leland, Nancy
3. Mabel Marie Tugwell: b. 28 January 1913; m. 1947, J. M. Rice; d. 11 December 1975; buried in San Diego, California; no descendants
4. Oscar Buel Tugwell: b. 1915; d. 1916; buried in Gray's Chapel, Sandtown, Arkansas

5. Clara Eleanor Tugwell: b. 23 January 1917;
   m. (1) 18 November 1933, Walter Jay Carr (d. 1950); m. (2) 25 February 1951, Eugene Herbert Vaughn
   Children of 1st marriage:
   (1) Patsy June: b. 1935
   (2) Walter Jerry: b. 1937
   (3) Bobby Gene: b. 1940
   Child of 2d marriage:
   (4) Deborah Elaine Vaughn: b. 1952
6. Robert Ansel Tugwell: b. 10 January 1920;
   m. 22 December 1945, Wauneta Marie Bauer (b. 1924)
   Children:
   (1) Robert Lynn: b. 1949
   (2) Thomas Wayne: b. 1951
7. Maudene Tugwell: b/d 1922; buried in Gray's Chapel, Sandtown, Arkansas

9. Thomas F. Tugwell: b. 1886; d. 1887

Note: Continuing with children of James Tugwell (Jr.) and Caroline — (p. 56 supra):

(4) Perlina Tugwell: b. 1841; m. ante-December 1860, Wilson N. Pervis. They were living in Independence County, Arkansas, when her father died 17 December 1860.

(5) John W. Tugwell: b. 1843. He was 17 and living with his parents in Independence County, Arkansas, when his father died 17 December 1860.

(6) Sarah C. Tugwell: b. 1845. She was 15 and living with her parents when her father died.

(7) Frances Tugwell: b. 1847. She is thought to have died before the family's move from Tennessee to Arkansas.

4. JOHN L. TUGWELL MY DIRECT LINE

Born: 1803, Pitt County, North Carolina

Married: (1) ca. 1828, Mary Phillips, daughter of Isaac Phillips, Pitt County, North Carolina;
(2) 1832–1835, Lucinda Ball (b. 1806 in North Carolina; d. November or December 1873, Haywood County, Tennessee)

Died: between April and June of 1855, Haywood County, Tennessee

Children of 1st marriage:

(1) Benjamin

(2) David

Children of 2d marriage:

(3) Mary *Ann* E. L.

(4) John L. Theophilus

(5) James S.

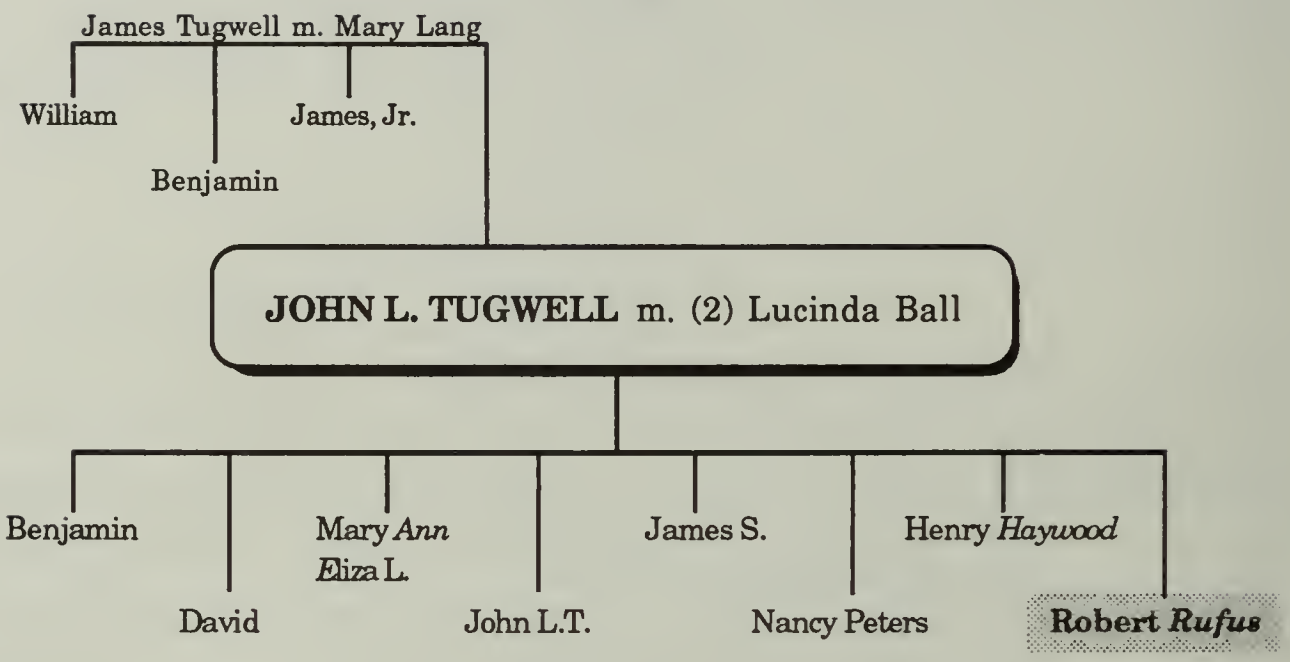
(6) Nancy Peters

(7) Henry Haywood

(8) Robert *Rufus* **(my line)**

[See "John L. Tugwell"—son]

JOHN L. TUGWELL
(1803–1855)



Note: Benjamin and David were children of John L. Tugwell's first marriage to Mary Phillips, daughter of Isaac Phillips.

JOHN L. TUGWELL was the youngest of the four sons of James Tugwell and Mary Lang. He was born in Pitt County, North Carolina, in 1803. The year of his birth was a propitious one for the United States as it coincided with the Louisiana Purchase, called "a noble bargain" by French Foreign Minister Talleyrand, by which President Thomas Jefferson acquired a 909,000 square mile region west of the Mississippi River for fifteen million dollars. John L. Tugwell lived in Pitt County until late 1830 (or possibly early 1831) when he moved with his first wife and son to Haywood County in west Tennessee.

John L.'s middle initial has long been a mystery to the family. He was always called John, and did not use his middle initial until he moved to Tennessee, and then only on certain records. There is little doubt, but no proof, that John's middle name was Lang. From before the time John's mother, Mary Lang, married John's father, the families had been closely connected in Gates County. This relationship continued in Pitt County, where the Tugwell farm adjoined the Lang farm.

John L. Tugwell's father died ca. 1807 and John would have had little or no recollection of him. At that time John's brothers were approximately eleven, nine, and six years old. John's mother, who never remarried, somehow maintained the family farm in far west Pitt County south of the Tar River. (The Tar is the upper extension of the Pamlico River.)

THE UNITED STATES IN 1803, THE YEAR OF JOHN L. TUGWELL'S BIRTH

On the 1833 North Carolina map (next page) it can be seen where the Tar River enters the county and the location of its first branch. (This is combined Otter Creek and Kitten Creek.) Kitten Creek was called Williams Creek in the 1800s, and the Tugwell land was on the south side of Williams Creek less than six miles from the Tar. (It was closer to Lang's Mill Run and Black Swamp than it was to the Tar.)

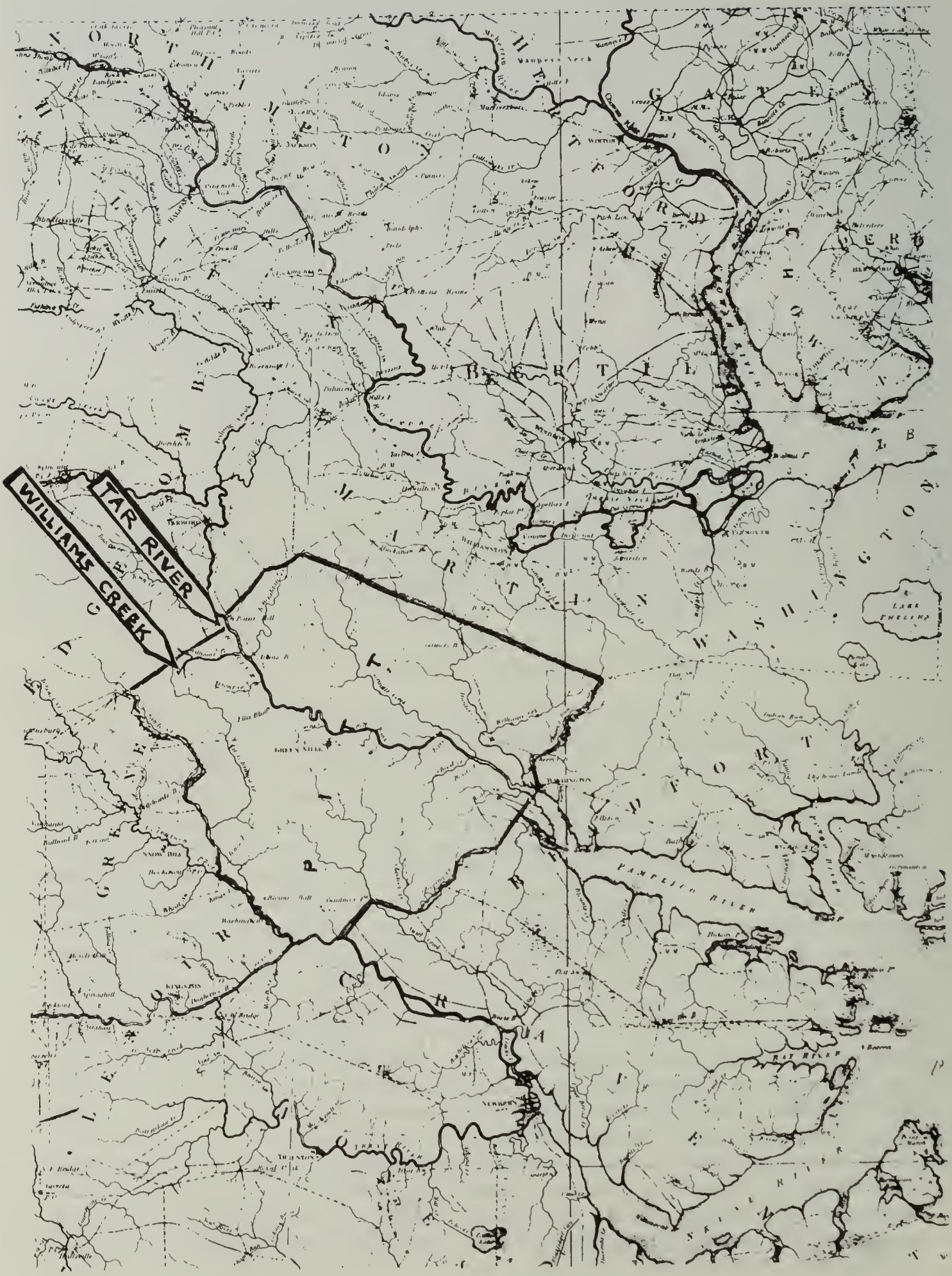
John Tugwell married Mary Phillips ca. 1828, a daughter of Isaac Phillips, who had land adjoining the farm where John grew up.[1] When they married, John was about twenty-five and Mary was no more than seventeen, judging by the ages of Isaac's three daughters in the 1820 Pitt County Census (p. 533). John's brother William had married in 1819 and his brother Benjamin in 1822. John and Mary (Phillips) named their first child, born in 1829, Benjamin.

On 22 September 1828 John Tuggle (*sic*) for $88 sold his brother James 40 1/2 acres of land that adjoined John Lang (his mother's brother) and John Spell. The deed stated it was John's "equal part or proportional share of land that fell to me by the death of my father James Tuggle." Witnesses were John's brother William Tuggel (*sic*) and neighbor John Wallace.[2]

Unfortunately many Pitt County records are missing because of the disastrous 1858 courthouse fire. There are four deeds registered for the missing book FF that would be helpful to see. There is no date or existing document, but the dates would probably have been late 1828, 1829, or early 1830. The only information from the register of the lost Book FF is:

---

1. Pitt County, North Carolina, Deed Book BB, p. 97.
2. Pitt County Book EE, p. 369.



PITT COUNTY, NORTH CAROLINA, IN 1830

p. 107 James Tugel [John's brother] sold [brother] Benjamin Tuggell land on North Jumping Run
p. 174 John Tuggle [this chapter] sold neighbor John Wallace land on South Williams Mill Creek
p. 323 Benjamin Tuggell sold [brother] John Tuggell [this chapter] land on Saw Pit Branch
p. 388 John Tuggle [this chapter] sold neighbor Reading Williams land on South Williams Mill Creek

North Jumping Run and Saw Pit Branch's names have undergone changes so long ago that they are not even listed in the *North Carolina Gazetteer*.[3] In 1803 John's father had sold Nahum Little 17 1/4 acres of his land on the south side of Williams Mill Creek, beginning on the mouth of Jumping Run. Although old maps show Williams Creek, its name today is Kitten Creek. John Tugwell lived south of (now) Kitten Creek and less than five miles southwest of the present-day town of Falkland.

WESTERN PITT COUNTY, NORTH CAROLINA, WHERE TUGWELLS AND LANGS LIVED
SEE FALKLAND AND FARMVILLE TOWNSHIPS AND THE TOWN OF TUGWELL

The 1830 Pitt County Census (p. 67) showed John Tuggil (*sic*) enumerated in Captain Harris' district. John was in the 20 to 30 age group, Mary (Phillips) 15 to 20, and infant Benjamin in the under 5 classification. There was also a young female slave in the household. The 1800 census had shown Pitt County with a population of

3. William S. Powell, 1968.

9,084. That was the year John's parents and two oldest brothers had moved there from Gates County. Population[4] increased steadily and in 1820 there were 10,001 people in Pitt County, 5,731 of whom were white. Agriculture was the occupation of 3,205; sixty-one were manufacturers; and twenty-five were in commerce. A sign of progress was when in the late 1820s a bridge was built over the Tar River and the old ferry discontinued. Growing up, John Tugwell would have seen many a steamboat going by on the Tar River, which was navigable from the port town of Washington (in Beaufort County, where the Pamlico River changes its name to the Tar)[5] upriver to Tarboro in Edgecombe County. By 1830, Pitt County's population was 12,093, but in the next ten years the population decreased by 287.

Some of those who left Pitt County, North Carolina, were the families of brothers James (Jr.) and my John Tugwell. Of course, migrations of families were almost continuous until all free land in the country had been taken up. The younger sons in a family often moved on, in company with sons of neighboring families, to take up new lands as they were opened.

John's grandfather Joseph (Jr.) had been the only Tugwell (head-of-household) in present-day Gates County, and John's father James had been the only Tugwell when he moved his family to Pitt County; and now two of James' four sons were making a much bigger move and were going to Haywood County in west Tennessee, where they would be the only Tugwells in that county.

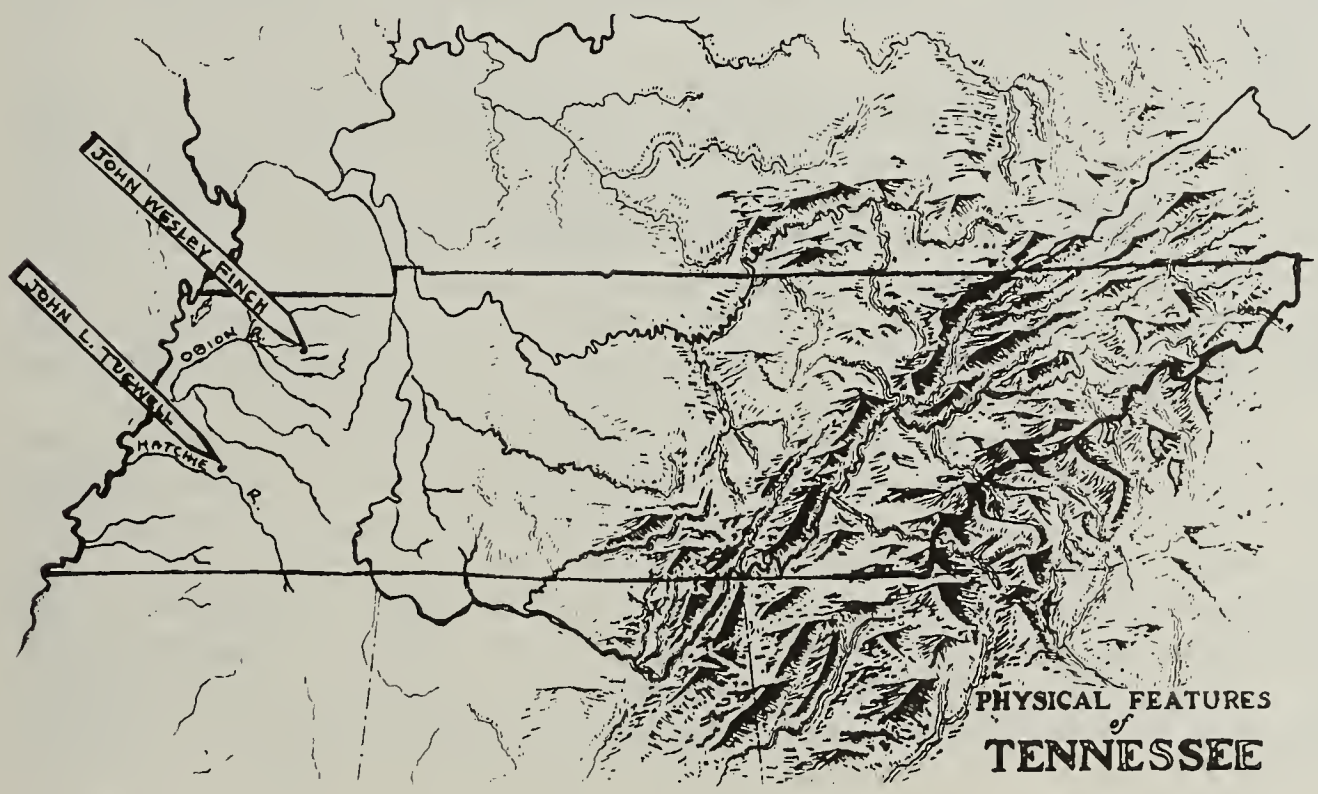
John Tugwell was enumerated in Pitt County, North Carolina, when the 1830 census was taken. In June of 1831 (brother) James Tugwell served on a jury in Haywood County, Tennessee, so we know the two families moved from east North Carolina to west Tennessee in the fall of 1830 or the spring of 1831. The author feels it is more likely they moved to Tennessee in the fall of 1830 but were too late to be enumerated in the 1830 Haywood County Census. Six Parker households were listed in Haywood in 1830, as was John Moore. John Moore lived next to Samuel Stuckey, who would be one of John and James Tugwell's neighbors. It is thought that John Moore was a relative of Alfred Moore, the husband of Elizabeth (Phillips), who was the sister of John Tugwell's wife, Mary (Phillips). In 1840 Alfred Moore was a neighbor of William Stuckey.[6] Probably most of the settlers in western Tennessee in that approximately eighty mile square, parallelogram shaped area between the Mississippi and Tennessee rivers were from North Carolina and Virginia, and so the Tugwell brothers felt very much at home.

The group moving from the Williams Creek area south of the Tar River due west to Haywood County, Tennessee, could not travel "as the crow flies." Their journey would have taken them over 700 miles because they would need to cross mountains and streams the easiest way, not the most direct way. Fortunately, by 1830 the Tugwell brothers would have well established roads to travel on. By looking at a map we can follow their journey. Probably they would have gone northwest from Pitt County to Abingdon, Virginia, then southwest to Knoxville, Tennessee, where they would have traveled the road running west between the Clinch and Holston rivers, both of which flow into the Tennessee River. Crossing

---

4. Information in the rest of this paragraph is from Henry T. King's 1911 *Sketches of Pitt County, North Carolina*, as is the small map of Pitt County on the previous page.
5. Speaking of the Tar River, the reader might wonder how North Carolina got its nickname, "The Tar Heel State." The 1991 *World Book* says it refers to one of the state's earliest products—tar. There are several stories concerning the appellation, and here are two: Some Confederate troops retreated during a fierce Civil War battle, leaving the North Carolina soldiers to fight Union soldiers alone. The North Carolineans supposedly threatened to put tar on the heels of the other Confederate soldiers so they would "stick better in the next fight." The other story purportedly started during the American Revolution when General Cornwallis' British troops emerged from a river with tar adhering to their heels.
6. Haywood County, Tennessee, Census 1840, p. 399.

the Tennessee at Kingston, they could have gone southwest to Washington, then followed Higginbotham's Trace to McMinnville, southwest to Shelbyville, to Columbia, and west to re-cross the Tennessee River at Perryville. From then on they went nearly straight west to Lexington, Jackson, and Brownsville, the county seat of Haywood County. The Hatchie River cuts across the southern part of Haywood County from east to west. John and James Tugwell settled their families north of the Big Hatchie River four or five miles southwest of Brownsville, Tennessee, in late 1830.



IN WEST TENNESSEE DESCENDANTS OF THE FAMILIES OF
JOHN L. TUGWELL (WHO SETTLED 1830) AND JOHN W. FINCH (WHO SETTLED 1826)
WERE UNITED BY MARRIAGE IN 1867

By an 1818 treaty with the Chickasaw Indians in which the Indians surrendered title to their lands, white men were allowed to come into Tennessee's so-called Western District. Hardin and Shelby (Memphis) counties were organized in 1819. The first settler in what would soon become Haywood County was Col. Richard Nixon, a North Carolinean who came with his family in 1821. Adjoining Haywood on the east is Madison County, and among those who bought lots at the first sale at its county seat of Jackson[7] were John H. Ball (who may have been the father of John Tugwell's second wife), Herndon and Vincent Haralson (who were in Haywood County by 1830), and the Hon. James K. Polk (later President of the United States). In November 1823 the county of Haywood was organized.[8] In 1824 the first court was established, a courthouse and jail built, and roads were laid out and opened up. Settlement of the county was rapid, as shown by the fact that from 1823 to 1830, when John and James Tugwell moved there, the population had increased to 5,334. The first industry of the early settlers consisted

7. Worth S. Ray, *Tennessee Cousins,* (1950), p. 732.
8. *The Goodspeed History of Tennessee* , (1887), pp. 818, 819.

of clearing and improving their lands, raising corn and other cereals. In 1828 the cultivation of cotton was begun, soon becoming the leading industry, and before the day of railroads in that area all of the cotton and other produce was shipped on the Hatchie River and the Forked Deer River (which is Haywood's northern border) and on the wagon roads to market points on the Mississippi River.

Haywood County is in that part of Tennessee that is on an alluvial plain, and at its nearest reach the Mississippi River is twenty-three miles from the western border of the county. Brownsville, the county seat, is about fifty-five miles northeast of Memphis. The altitude of Haywood County varies between 260 and 350 feet, which is much higher than the Tugwell brothers' former home in Pitt County, where the altitude was about 65 feet.

The very first record for a Tugwell in Haywood County, Tennessee, was a notation in the Court Minutes[9] that John's older brother James was one of twenty-five men summoned in the June Term 1831 for jury duty and that he served three days. In 1831 both James and John had children born in Haywood County. John and Mary (Phillips) Tugwell's first child, Benjamin, had been born in 1829 in Pitt County, North Carolina. Their second child, their first one to be born in Tennessee, was named David. Sometime after David's birth, between 1831 and 1835, Mary (Phillips) Tugwell died, but the diligent search for her date of death and the date of John's second marriage, to Lucinda Ball, has been fruitless.

Unless John remarried fairly soon, the only relative who could have helped care for his two children under five would have been his sister-in-law, Caroline Tugwell. A careful search has been made in North Carolina to try to pin down Lucinda Ball's early years, but one might say a mist prevails and there is no sign of the clouds clearing. Children's names were not listed before the 1850 census, and Lucinda's name does not appear anywhere until that year. The censuses of 1850 (p. 8), 1860 (p. 58), and 1870 (p. 348) all show Lucinda was born in North Carolina. My mother knew her Tugwell grandmother who had died before she was born was Lucinda Ball, but did not recall hearing who Lucinda's parents were.

An educated guess is that Lucinda Ball, who was born ca. 1806, had come with her family from North Carolina to west Tennessee in the 1820s. Of the few Ball families in counties adjoining Haywood, the most likely and intriguing possibility is John H. Ball (February 1788–February 1848), who seemed to have connections with Haywood County. (He was mentioned on the previous page.) He was enumerated in the 1830 Madison County Census (p. 63), but the only thing is that no female is listed in the proper age group (20–30) into which Lucinda would fit.[10] If he was her father, he was about eighteen when she was born, but his wife Sarah (1794–1835), who may have been his second wife, was too young to be her mother. John H. Ball could even have been Lucinda's older brother instead of her father.

In Haywood County the Tugwell surname was spelled "Tugwell" and pronounced "Tug'wl," and for a very good reason. About two years after John and

---

9. 1831–1834, Tennessee Reel 5657 Hb, p. 100.
10. Haywood County is bounded by Madison on the west and Fayette on the south. In the early 1830s John H. Ball moved from Madison County to Fayette County, where he established on the town square the second hotel in Somerville, the county seat. In 1836 he was elected Somerville's mayor. On 22 March 1838 he sold 11 1/4 acres of land "adjoining Brownsville" in Haywood County, land he had bought 11 April 1834 (when Joseph Peete was a witness). What John H. Ball bought for $255, he sold four years later for $1400. In the 1840 Fayette County Census John H. Ball (in the 50–60 age group) had forty people enumerated in his household—obviously the hotel. (Ten were "in Commerce," four "in Learned Professions and Engineers," eighteen slaves [of whom six were under 10 years], and eight others.) Most of the information on John H. Ball is from *The History of Fayette County Tennessee*, published by the Fayette County Historical Society, 1946, pp. 249, 259, and from the 1830 Madison County (p. 63) and 1840 Fayette County (p. 109) censuses. John H. Ball and Lucinda (Ball) Tugwell lived about twenty miles apart, but whether they were related is not known.

James Tugwell arrived in Haywood County, a Thomas T. Tuggle and family moved there from Virginia. Thomas Thornton Tuggle was twenty years older than our John Tugwell, and had sons. Probably to avoid any kind of confusion, my John Tugwell and his family and his brother James consistently spelled their name the way it has continued to come down in our line: Tugwell, pronounced Tug'wl. Being the only ones to spell their names that way, John and James Tugwell's records are easy to distinguish from the Tuggle family of Haywood County.

Some readers may be curious to know whether the Tugwells and Tuggles of Haywood County were related, as both these spellings were used in the early years. Thomas Thornton Tuggle (1783–1853) was distantly related to my John L. Tugwell (1803–1855). John L. Tugwell's great-grandfather Joseph Tugwell (1711–1745) was the older brother of T. T. Tuggle's grandfather Thomas III (1717–1754).[11] [See "Henry Tugwell" chapter, p. 24 supra] Joseph and Thomas III were sons of Henry Tugwell and his second wife Elizabeth (Baldwin) Browne, and Henry Tugwell was the son of Thomas Tugwell the Immigrant. John L. Tugwell and Thomas T. Tuggle did not live in the same district in Haywood County; Thomas was nearly a generation older; and Thomas Tuggle had previously lived in Virginia, never in North Carolina as John L. Tugwell had. An interesting question to ponder is whether these two distant cousins knew they were related and how.

The first Haywood County record for John Tugwell was in 1836 when on 25 October he paid $375 to purchase 100 acres of land from Herndon Haralson and William H. Haralson of Randolph, Tipton County, Tennessee. The land was described as being on the north side of the Big Hatchie River and on the west bank of one of its branches called Sugar Creek.[12] It adjoined Richard Jordan, Samuel Stuckey, John Hardwicke's mill tract, and John Perkins. Witnesses were Richard Jordan and F. N. Taliaferro. This land was where my great-grandfather, John Tugwell, lived until his death nineteen years later. In the next fourteen years he would buy a total of 108 more acres of adjoining land.

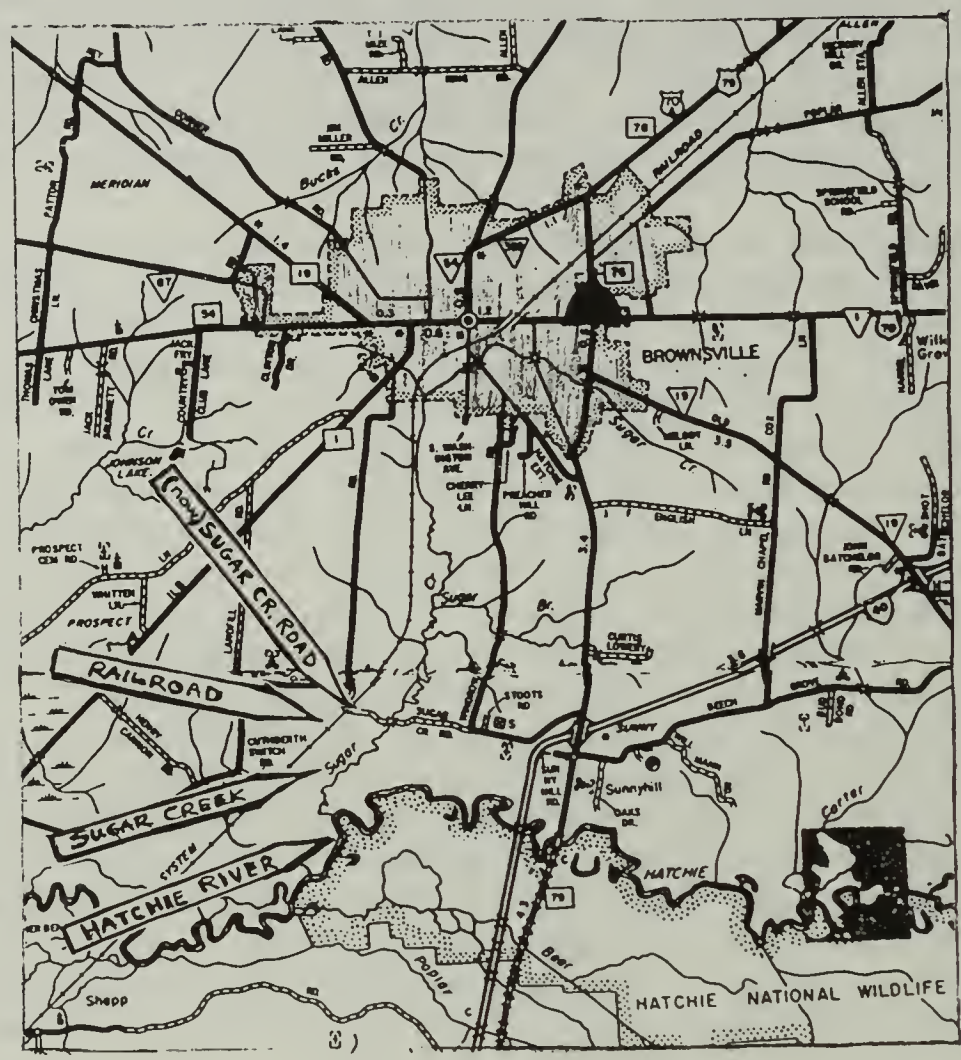
The Tugwell home was about half a mile north of the Big Hatchie River and about four miles southwest of the town of Brownsville, which is in the approximate geographic center of Haywood County.

When John Tugwell moved to Haywood, the town of Brownsville and the surrounding county were booming with prosperity. At one time between 1825 and 1835 there were thirteen business houses in Brownsville, and it had become an important trading center. It had the advantage of steamboat river navigation on the Hatchie and did a wide business in the region. The first brick building was the Methodist Church, erected ca. 1831.[13] Also, the Methodists established a camp-meeting ground in a beautiful grove two and one-half miles southwest of Brownsville and services were conducted there by the Rev. Thomas Davidson, who was the first circuit rider in the county and the organizer of the first Methodist Society in the county by 1827. It is quite possible that John Tugwell and his family attended meetings at that campground. After the boom times of the early 1830s the great

---

11. Because of the generation difference, Thomas T. was John's third cousin once removed, and John was Thomas T.'s second cousin twice removed.
12. Haywood County, Tennessee, Deed Book G, p. 426. Later John Tugwell would have land on the east side of Sugar Creek also, as mentioned in the Land Division instrument after his death. Seventy-eight year old Herndon Haralson, from whom John L. Tugwell purchased his first land, was originally from Caswell County, North Carolina, and was an early settler in Haywood County, Tennessee.
13. This 1831 church building was still standing in 1885 when my mother was born, but was used as a carriage shop. Information in this paragraph is from *The Goodspeed History of Tennessee,* (1887), pp. 825–829.

financial depression of 1838–1840 struck. Everyone had a hard time and only two or three of the stores in Brownsville survived the terrible shock.



CENTRAL SECTION OF HAYWOOD COUNTY, TENNESSEE
WITH GUIDEPOSTS TO JOHN L. TUGWELL'S LAND ON SUGAR CREEK

The Haywood County Court Minutes[14] show that in July Term 1837 John Tugwell was one of thirty-seven men ordered to appear in the October Term county court as a juror for circuit court. Of this group John was one of thirteen men chosen for the grand jury in October.[15] Some of the Haywood Minute Books prior to 1837 have been lost, and it is fortunate to have this record showing John doing his civic duty. On 27 October 1837 John's older brother, James Tugwell, witnessed neighbor Samuel Stuckey's will along with F. N. Taliaferro and B. H. Sanders.[16] After Samuel Stuckey's death an estate sale was held 16 December 1838,[17] and John Tugwell bought a wedge, hames, and singletree (for harnessing horses).

By 1840 John and Lucinda (Ball) Tugwell had five children in their household. The 1840 Haywood County Census (p. 398) showed two boys and a girl under 5. This would be Ann E., John L., and James. The boy 10–15 was 11 year old Benjamin, and the boy 5–10 was 9 year old David, both sons of John's prior marriage to Mary (Phillips). John's brother James and his wife Caroline, who

14. 1834–1840, Tennessee Reel 5657 Hb, p. 384.
15. Haywood County Court Minutes 1837–1840, Tennessee Reel 5658 H6a, p. 2 of original.
16. Haywood County Will Book 1, p. 343.
17. Ibid., p. 353.

married after John and his first wife did, were enumerated (p. 406) with three sons and two daughters.

There were twelve districts in Haywood County in 1840 and each elected three School Commissioners for two-year terms. In 1840 John Tugwell, A. W. Mann, and John Sangster were elected in District 7.[18] Some of John's neighboring landowners at this time were Allen Coleman, John Parker, Richard Jordan, L. Taliaferro, William Stuckey, Alfred Moore, and Herndon Haralson. Our John Tugwell, who had been living in Haywood County for ten years, was not only hard-working and of an enterprising disposition, but was also a man of respectability and good standing in the community.

During the 1838–1840 depression "nearly everybody was 'broken up,' and business became almost totally suspended until 1842, when it began to revive."[19] Farmers, of course, had kept on farming although prices were depressed. But beginning in 1842 the acquisition of property became rapid and easy, and the people enjoyed an unprecedented season of prosperity which continued up to the beginning of the Civil War. The value of land, slaves, and all kinds of property more than doubled during that period.

On 10 March 1846 John Tugwell paid $160 for 40 acres of land adjoining his 100 acres bought ten years earlier. The sellers were Elizabeth, Noah, and James Stuckey, and the land was described as being on the waters of Sugar Creek on the north side of Big Hatchie River, adjoining John's own northwest corner, John Perkins' branch, Richard Jordan, and Robert S. Parker.[20]

Later that year, on 17 December 1846, for $75 Alfred Moore and his wife Elizabeth sold John Tugwell 18 acres "near Sugar Creek on waters of Big Hatchie," adjoining Herndon Haralson and the heirs of David Flowers.[21] Elizabeth (Phillips) Moore was the sister of John Tugwell's first wife.

In Circuit Court Minutes of 1847 John Tugwell was mentioned as guardian for Martha Johnson when heirs of Anderson Lowery (died ante–24 February 1847) petitioned the court for sale of the land.

Upon the death of Benjamin Davis, formerly of Pitt County, North Carolina, John Tugwell of Haywood County became the guardian of the five minor Davis heirs in Haywood County. In that capacity, on 28 August 1849, he sold a 13-acre tract in Pitt County to Robert Lang, whose land it adjoined as well as the land of Richard Bynum, Benjamin Davis, and others.[22] (The Lang, Davis, and Tugwell families had intermarried in Pitt County.) The deed stated that the tract was formerly the land of Josiah Davis and then of Josiah's widow, Mary Davis. The reader may recall that John's brother Benjamin Tugwell had married Elizabeth Davis (related to Benjamin Davis), and Benjamin and Elizabeth (Davis) Tugwell had remained in Pitt County when his younger brothers John and James Tugwell had moved to Tennessee.

By the end of 1847 John Tugwell's family was complete. He had two sons by his first wife, and he and Lucinda had four sons and two daughters. The only time the entire family was listed together was in the 1850 Haywood County Census, District 7.[23] The fact that eleven year old James was listed is inexplicable. This 1850 census (on the next page) was taken 30 August, and the 1850 Mortality Schedule showed James had died in March.

---

18. Ibid., p. 507.
19. Op. cit., footnote 13, Goodspeed, p. 826.
20. Haywood County Book L, p. 683.
21. Haywood County Deed Book M, p. 192.
22. Pitt County, North Carolina, Deed Book MM, p. 356.
23. Haywood County, Tennessee, 1850 Census, p. 8, #93.

John Tugwell	47	Born in North Carolina
Lucinda	44	Born in North Carolina
Benjamin	21	Born in North Carolina
David	19	Born in Tennessee
Ann E.	14, in school	Born in Tennessee
John L.	13, in school	Born in Tennessee
James	11	Born in Tennessee
Nancy P.	9	Born in Tennessee
Haywood	6	Born in Tennessee
Robert R(ufus)	2	Born in Tennessee

Enumerated next[24] was John's brother, James Tugwell 49, his wife Caroline 46, and their children, all born after they moved to Tennessee: Mary 19, William H. 16, Robert A. 11, Pauline (Perlina) 9, John 7, Sarah 5, Frances 3. (A now unknown son and unknown daughter born between the second and third children had died 1840–1849.) The brothers, John and James, had both named a son for each other.

John purchased land for the last time on 1 October 1850. This 50 acres was on the Big Hatchie River, "north of the mill" and adjoined the 750-acre tract belonging to the heirs of David Hart. John paid Charles Marshall $300.[25] Witnesses were J. A. Scott and T. Brown. John Tugwell, now about forty-seven years old, owned 208 acres of good land on and near the Big Hatchie River. His oldest child, Benjamin, was twenty-one, and his youngest, my grandfather Rufus, was three.

A nephew of John's, Leonard Tugwell, who was the oldest son of Benjamin Tugwell back in Pitt County, North Carolina, had left home and come to visit his Uncle John and Uncle James. Apparently he decided not to settle in Haywood County, however. Before moving on to south central Arkansas, to Clark County, on 17 October 1850 Leonard purchased $250 worth of personal goods from Charles Marshall, the man from whom John Tugwell had purchased 50 acres of land on 1 October. The items Leonard bought were three horses, two beds and furniture, a two-horse wagon, and a rifle,[26]and the bill of sale was witnessed by John Tugwell. We can picture Leonard's uncles wishing him Godspeed and good luck as he set off for Arkansas. There is a letter dated 30 May 1854 in the possession of Leonard's descendants that Leonard wrote to his father Benjamin in Pitt County, North Carolina. He said he would settle down in Clark County where he had a good piece of land and had 10 acres cleared on it "and it is just number one," and that within the course of ten weeks he was going to marry the good religious Methodist girl he had known about four years; also, he sent "respects to sister [Louisa] and William [Little]."

On 23 June 1851 John L. Tugwell gave power of attorney to George W. Parker[27] of Pitt County, North Carolina, for George to take care of two matters for him in Pitt County.[28] This was occasioned by the death of Isaac Phillips of Pitt County. Two of Isaac's daughters who had married and moved to Haywood County had died: John's first wife Mary ca. 1833, and Alfred Moore's wife Elizabeth ca. 1848. John

---

24. Ibid., #94.
25. Haywood County Deed Book P, p. 138.
26. Haywood County Book P, p. 62.
27. The Parkers were a family with whom the Tugwells had been connected for sixty-five years, in both Gates and Pitt counties in North Carolina as well as in Haywood County in Tennessee. John's father's first wife was Mary Parker (no issue), and John's only aunt, Mary Tugwell, had married Miles Parker in Gates County, North Carolina, in 1784. Tugwells and Parkers had a long and continuous association.
28. Pitt County, North Carolina, Deed Book NN, pp. 105, 106.

Tugwell had been appointed guardian of Elizabeth (Phillips) Moore's six minor children[29] and of his and the deceased Mary (Phillips) Tugwell's second son, David, who was not quite twenty-one and was therefore legally still a minor.[30] The same day, 23 June 1851, John's other child by Mary (Phillips) Tugwell, twenty-two year old Benjamin, also had given George W. Parker power of attorney.[31] These grandchildren of Isaac Phillips were laying claim to their share of his estate that their deceased mothers would have inherited—money arising from the sale of "about four hundred and fifty or five hundred acres of [Pitt County] land that belonged to the said Isaac Phillips."

Sometime between 23 June 1851 (aforementioned power of attorney document) and 3 April 1855, when John L. Tugwell wrote his will, his oldest son Benjamin died. John and Lucinda had already lost a younger son, James, who had died in 1850 of pleurisy after an illness of six days. In John's will he appointed Lucinda and his second child David to be executors. He could not know that David himself would die four months after the will was written. John's will was dated 3 April 1855 and was probated in the 1855 May Term of Court.[32] Everything was left to Lucinda in her widowhood; and even if she should marry (which she never did), she should have a third of his land and other property during her lifetime. As his children married or became twenty-one, they were to be given some personal property, and an account should be kept as he desired each to have an equal share. He named his "beloved children," giving their complete names except for revealing what the *L.* stood for in his son John's (and probably his own) name: David Tugwell, Mary Ann Eliza Lafayette Tugwell, John L. Theophilus Tugwell, Nancy Peters Tugwell, Henry Haywood Tugwell, and Robert Rufus Tugwell. He began his will saying, "I John L. Tugwell..." and ended by signing *John Tugwell.* Witnesses were neighbors Howell Taylor, Edmund A. Taylor, and brother James Tugwell.

Although John wrote his will 3 April 1855 and it was probated in May Court Term 1855, it does not necessarily mean he died in April, as a court term lasted at least a couple of months, so he may have died in May. Unfortunately the estate inventory and sale were not dated.[33] Aside from the usual household and farm articles there were eleven "notes supposed to be good" that were owed the estate, totaling $2,103.16, and two "doubtful accounts" for less than a hundred dollars. J. R. Hockbott of Shelby County owed John $328, and possibly as a precaution the Administrator, Robert S. Thomas, wrote: "There is also as I understand and believe in Shelby County in this state a Negro woman and three small children in which the Deceased had an undivided interest of one third or one fourth. This property has not come into my possession."

John L. Tugwell was only fifty-two years old when he died in the spring of 1855. On 22 September of the same year John's brother Benjamin, for whom John had named his first son, died back in Pitt County, North Carolina. Benjamin was fifty-seven years old. James, John's brother just two years older than he was, moved away from Haywood County sometime between 1855 and 1859. (James' oldest son stayed in Hardeman County, Tennessee, but the others moved to north central Arkansas with their father.)

Edmund A. Taylor was a neighbor and friend of the Tugwell family. In April 1855 he had witnessed John's will, and at the August Court Term in 1855 he became

---

29. Haywood County, Tennessee, Book D, p. 404.
30. John Tugwell's guardianship-accounts for the minor heirs of Alfred Moore and for David Tugwell (as well as for Martha Johnson) were later confirmed by the Haywood County Court 7 February 1853.
31. Pitt County Deed Book NN, pp. 107, 108.
32. Haywood County Will Book E, pp. 39, 40.
33. They are found in "Settlements, Guardians, Administrators and Executors," Haywood County film roll #24, vol. February 1856–January 1866, p. 386, and vol. April 1852–November 1863, p. 447.

administrator of the estate of young David Tugwell, recently deceased.[34] In the June Court Term in 1856 E. A. Taylor was appointed guardian of the minor children of John Tugwell, deceased. Named were John, Nancy, Haywood, and Rufus.[35] Actually, John and Lucinda's oldest child, Mary *Ann*, was still under twenty-one too, but she had recently married John A. Traylor and as a married woman was not considered a minor.

As was still the custom for country people in the mid-nineteenth century, most families had a family cemetery on their property. Sad to say, now we Tugwell descendants do not know where John Tugwell and his sons Benjamin, David, and James were buried; nor for that matter where the rest of the family were buried except the youngest child, Rufus, the only one who did not die in Haywood County. There is little doubt, however, that the Tugwells had a plot on their land set aside as the family cemetery.[36]

When John Tugwell died in 1855, he had six children still living. Then David died in 1855 very shortly after his father, and daughter Ann died in 1859; sons John L. and Haywood died in the early 1860s. When Lucinda died in 1873 at the age of sixty-seven, only two children were still living: Nancy, who died ca. 1876, and Rufus who died in 1907. To sum it up about John Tugwell's eight children: two died in their teens, four in their twenties, one about thirty-seven, and only one, Rufus, lived to the age of fifty-nine, to what could maybe be called a normal lifespan.

Lucinda (Ball) Tugwell, this ancestor whom we know so little about, was the glue that held the family together after her husband's untimely death, and it must not have been easy. David, who lost his own mother before he was five and was brought up by Lucinda as if he were her own, was twenty-four when his father died, and David himself died a few months later. John and Lucinda's older daughter, Ann E., married John A. Traylor about that time, and they named their first child David for Ann's half-brother who had recently died. Their second child was a daughter named Johnanna, who was always called "Sissie." Ann died in 1859, within a year after Johnanna was born.

A little over a year after John Tugwell died, his widow Lucinda did a rather remarkable thing. She paid William H. Haralson $1000 for a 157-acre tract adjoining the land where the family home was.[37] It is very rare to find that a woman purchased land, and it is tempting to speculate that Lucinda got the money by collecting some of the debts owed to her husband's estate, as the inventory showed that was a rather large amount. The deed by which Lucinda bought her land was dated 31 August 1856, and in reading an abstract of the deed one realizes this made her land extend across the Big Hatchie River:

> William H. Haralson of Haywood county to Lucinda Tugwell of same, executrix of John L. Tugwell, dec'd. for $1,000.00 sold land in Haywood on both sides of Big Hatchie River and bounded as follows to wit: beginning at a hickory with sweet gum and poplar pointers in the east boundary line of N. T. Perkins Parker tract it being the south east corner of a tract belonging to seat of John L. Tugwell, dec'd (the tract upon which said Lucinda Tugwell now resides) then east eighty poles to a stake with hickory and beach (*sic*) pointers then south across Big Hatchie River three hundred and forty poles to a white oak thence west eighty poles to a stake in the island of a

---

34. Haywood County Book F, p. 215.
35. Ibid., p. 358.
36. The author's first cousin, Frances (Tugwell) Fowler of Memphis, Tennessee [see p. 101], lived in Haywood County until ca. 1940, and says she remembers her father (Robert Bruce) and Uncle Albert going to the Hatchie River Bottom and believes it was to the family cemetery. Years later she could locate no trace of a cemetery near where she thought John L. Tugwell's land was.
37. Haywood County Deed Book U, p. 2.

lake thence north across Big Hatchie River to the beginning containing by estimation 157 acres...
(signed) W. H. Haralson
Wit: Hugh M. Clark
Reg'd. 1 October 1855 (*sic*)

Final settlement of John Tugwell's estate by Lucinda Tugwell, executrix, was presented to the court at June Term 1858, confirmed, and ordered to be recorded. I have been unable to get copies of all the estate papers.

Railroads came to Haywood County in the late 1850s, and cattle and trains started out as natural enemies (as was the case with horses and cars a half century later). The railroad to Memphis went by Lucinda Tugwell's property and some of her stock were injured. She brought suit in January Term 1859 and won damages, but the railroad appealed. Benjamin F. Lee represented Lucinda in the higher court in Jackson, Madison County, in April 1860, and the verdict was upheld. This case is cited as *Memphis and Ohio Railroad Company v. Lucinda Tugwell in 41 Tennessee, 91.* I do not know what damages were awarded to Lucinda.

When the 1860 Haywood County Census was taken, little David and Johnanna Traylor were enumerated in two households: once with their thirty-four year old father John A. Traylor and sixty-nine year old grandfather Edward Traylor (p. 14), and also with Lucinda Tugwell (p. 58). Since there was no woman in the Traylor home, the children went to live with their grandmother Lucinda. Her household was enumerated in District 7, "the Brownsville district." Her occupation was given as "farmer," birthplace as North Carolina, and her real estate valuation was $3800 and personal valuation $1070. Lucinda's household looked like this:

Lucinda Tugwell	52	Born in North Carolina
John	24	Born in Tennessee
Nancy P.	18	Born in Tennessee
Haywood	15, in school	Born in Tennessee
Rufus	12, in school	Born in Tennessee
David T. Traylor	4	Born in Tennessee
John Ann (*sic*)	2	Born in Tennessee

Lucinda's oldest living child, John 24, gave his occupation as farmer in the census and obviously was the man of the house. He married Jacky Ann Jones of Shelby County on 20 June 1861.[38] Both John and Jackanna died, and there is a Haywood County record of Jackanna Tugwell's estate being administered in 1863 by A. H. Sevier. The Civil War had started, and Lucinda's son Haywood enlisted in the Confederate Army in Co. D, 31st Tennessee Regiment, 20 September 1861. His army record shows that he contracted measles and died at home 11 May 1862. We can wonder how Lucinda coped with all the tragedies in her family and can imagine that, although she obviously was a strong and resilient woman, she depended a lot on the only two children who were left. Nancy P. was about twenty-two and Rufus was fifteen. Lucinda's granddaughter Johnanna ("Sissie") and grandson David Traylor lived in her home too.

These two Traylor children called Nancy "Aunt Petie," contracting her middle name which was Peters. (This information was passed down in the family by my grandfather Rufus.) When Nancy was about twenty-two years old, she married John A. Traylor, the widower of her deceased sister (Ann) and the father

38. Byron Sistler, *Early West Tennessee Marriages,* (1989), vol. 1, p. 295.

of her niece and nephew. They married on 25 June 1864. Sometime in the decade between 1860 and 1870 John Traylor's son (Nancy's nephew/stepson), David, died.

The 1870 Haywood County Census showed that Lucinda Tugwell and John Traylor were in the same household with John, head of household (p. 348), and the next household listing showed Rufus Tugwell 22, head of his own household, with his wife Benanna (Finch) 18, their daughter Luella 2, and 4 month old John.

Rufus Tugwell had married Benanna Alice Finch 18 August 1867. She was the daughter of James Monroe Finch and Melissa (Montgomery) of Weakley County, Tennessee. The chance circumstance that Rufus and Benanna met and fell in love during the only two years the Finches were not in Weakley but were in Haywood County accounts for the uniting of these two families, the Tugwells and the Finches.

John Traylor's household in 1870 showed him with his second Tugwell wife, N. P. 29 [for Nancy Peters] as the enumerator wrote it, J. A. 12 [for John Anna], and Lucinda Tugwell 64. John Traylor's real estate was $4000 and personal estate value $1000. The value of Lucinda's real estate was $4000, and her place of birth was given as North Carolina. (As mentioned supra, the 1850, 1860, and 1870 Haywood County censuses all listed Lucinda's birthplace as North Carolina.) Also in the Traylor household a 24 year old white male was listed, William Copeland, who worked on the railroad, and a 21 year old black male whose work was farming.

Lucinda Tugwell died in November or December 1872. Two of three censuses placed her birth date in 1806, and it can be estimated that she was about sixty-six years old when she died. She had been a widow nearly eighteen years, and was survived by one daughter, Nancy Peters (Tugwell) Traylor; one son, Robert Rufus Tugwell; and one granddaughter, Johnanna Traylor, who was the daughter of Ann (Tugwell) Traylor, deceased.

In January Term 1873 commissioners had been appointed by the court "to make partition of the lands of which John L. Tugwell died seized and possessed." In July Term 1873 the commissioners recorded in court the plat and partition.[39] Rufus Tugwell received 64 acres, Nancy P. Traylor 161 acres, and Johnanna Traylor 84 acres, which the commissioners stated were shares of equal value. This totals 309 acres. The author knows about John's purchase of 100 acres in 1836, 58 acres in 1846, and 50 acres in 1850, which totals 208. That leaves one hundred acres unaccounted for, as well as the 157-acre tract Lucinda bought after John's death.

John A. Traylor died in March 1880, not long after his second wife, Nancy Peters (Tugwell) died. The exact year of Nancy's death is not known, but it was after the birth of their daughter Willie Kate in 1878 and before June 1879.[40] The 1880 Haywood County Census showed the sole survivor of John L. Tugwell's eight children was his youngest son Rufus, my grandfather. The Tennessee 1880 Soundex shows many Tuggles in Tennessee, but the only adult Tugwell in the entire state was 33 year old Rufus in District 5 of Haywood County. In 1880 Rufus and his wife Benanna were enumerated[41] with their five children (one had died) and Rufus' two nieces, Johnanna 21 (daughter of Ann Tugwell and John Traylor) and Willie Kate 2 (daughter of Nancy P. Tugwell and John Traylor).

What a star-crossed family it was—so many early deaths, no one close to attaining the Biblical three score and ten except Lucinda. A long life is not everything, and certainly not the most important, but surely my grandfather Rufus

---

39. Haywood County Roll #4, Book K, pp. 433–435, County Court Minutes, Tennessee State Archives.
40. If she had died between 1 June 1879 and 31 May 1880, she would have been listed in the 1880 Tennessee Mortality Schedule as John Traylor was.
41. Haywood County 1880 Census, Enumeration District 69, p. 19.

Tugwell must have been affected by the circumstances surrounding him. Also, this has made me understand better why my mother, the youngest of Rufus' eight children, knew so little of Tugwell family history.

John Tugwell, born in Pitt County, North Carolina, died in 1855 at the age of fifty-two, having lived the last twenty-five years of his life on a farm a few miles southwest of Brownsville, Haywood County, Tennessee. Only one of his sons, Rufus, had sons, and there are still descendants of John Tugwell and Lucinda Ball living in Tennessee over a hundred and sixty years after he moved to Haywood County in 1830/1831.

Children of John L. Tugwell and 1st wife Mary (Phillips):
[All of John's children died in Haywood County, Tennessee, except #8.]

1. Benjamin Tugwell: b. 1829, Pitt County, North Carolina, and named for his father's brother; d. between 23 June 1851 and 3 April 1855, Haywood County, Tennessee
2. David Tugwell: b. 1831, Haywood County, Tennessee; d. August 1855, Haywood County, Tennessee, not long after his father died

Children of John L. Tugwell and 2d wife Lucinda (Ball):

3. Mary *Ann* Eliza Lafayette Tugwell: b. 1836–1839, Haywood County, Tennessee; m. ca. 1855/6, John A. Traylor (b. 1825, d. 26 March 1880), son of Elizabeth and Edward Traylor. Although named for her grandmother, Mary (Lang) Tugwell, she was called Ann. Ann died when she was 21 (information from the 1860 Tennessee Mortality Schedule).[42] Four years later John Traylor married Ann's younger sister, Nancy.
   Children:
   (1) David T. Traylor: b. 1856; d. between 1860 and August 1870
   (2) Johnanna ("Sissie") Traylor: b. 1858/9; m. ca. 1881, George Reeves
   She lived some years in her grandmother Lucinda Tugwell's home and later in her Uncle Rufus Tugwell's home. d. 1886
   Child: G. W. Reeves, who was buried in Oakwood Cemetery in Brownsville, Tennessee
4. John L. Theophilus Tugwell: b. 1836–1839, Haywood County, Tennessee; and m. 20 June 1861, Jacky Ann ("Jackanna") Jones, Shelby County Tennessee; d. ca. 1862. Jackanna d. ca. 1862 also, and her estate was administered by A. H. Sevier in 1863.
5. James S. Tugwell: b. 1836–1839, Haywood County, Tennessee; d. March 1850 of pleurisy after an illness of six days. The 1850 Tennessee Mortality Schedule gives his age as 14. This has been mis-read as 16 but definitely is 14.[43] James carried the name of his paternal uncle as well as his paternal grandfather.

---

42. It is impossible to pin down the exact dates of birth of John and Lucinda's first three children (Mary *Ann*, John, and James) because of conflicting information given by extant records. We know from the 1840 Haywood County Census that two boys and one girl were born between 1835 and 1839. In his will where John named his children, he named Ann before John L., and where James would have fitted in is unknown as he had died before John wrote his will. The 1850 census listed Mary Ann E. 14, John L. 13, and James 11. This is straight-forward, but the ages are definitely incompatible with the 1850 Tennessee Mortality Schedule. All dates, however, do indicate Ann, John L., and James were born between 1835 and 1839.
43. Microcopy T-655, Reel 26, p. 340. Also, recall that James was listed as eleven years old in the 1850 census, five months after his death.

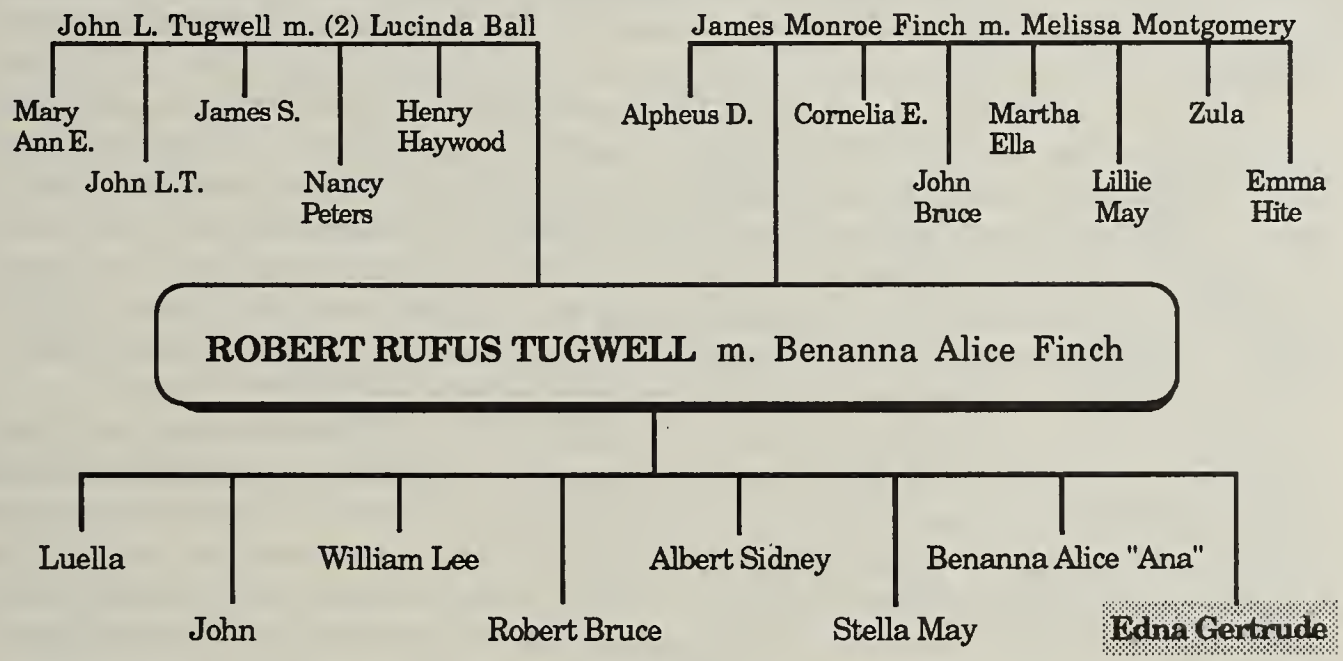
6. Nancy Peters Tugwell: b. 1841/2, Haywood County, Tennessee; m. 25 June 1864 (date of license),[44] John A. Traylor, her former brother-in-law;
d. between June 1878 and June 1879. John Traylor, widower, died March 1880 of pneumonia in Haywood County, Tennessee.[45]
Children:
When Nancy married John, her nephew and niece (David and Johnanna) became her stepchildren. Nancy and John had a daughter, Willie Kate, about 14 years after they married. She was orphaned before she was two.
(1) Willie Kate Traylor: b. 1878; died young
7. Henry *Haywood* Tugwell: b. 1844/5; d. 11 May 1862 of measles. Haywood enlisted 20 September 1861 in Company D, 31 Regiment Tennessee Infantry, for service in the Confederate Army. d. 7 1/2 months later, of measles, having been sent home from Guy's Gap (McNairy County), Tennessee.

8. ROBERT *RUFUS* TUGWELL MY DIRECT LINE
Born: 10 September 1847
Married: 18 August 1867, Benanna Alice Finch (b. 27 October 1851, d. 27 January 1900), daughter of James Monroe Finch and Melissa (Montgomery) of Weakley County, Tennessee, in Haywood County, Tennessee
Died: 14 July 1907, Dallas, Texas, and buried at Greenwood Cemetery, Dallas. Benanna had died in Haywood County, Tennessee, in 1900 and was buried there at Oakwood Cemetery, Brownsville.
Children: Luella, John, William Lee, Robert Bruce, Albert Sidney, Stella May, Benanna Alice ("Ana"), Edna Gertrude (my line)

[See "Robert Rufus Tugwell"—son]

44. Haywood County Marriage Book 1, p. 312.
45. Tennessee 1880 Mortality Schedule, Roll no. 29.

ROBERT RUFUS TUGWELL
(1847–1907)



ROBERT RUFUS TUGWELL was the sixth and youngest child of John L. Tugwell and his second wife Lucinda Ball, and was the only one in John L. Tugwell's line to pass down the Tugwell surname. He had red hair and blue eyes. Although a few records show him as Rufus Robert, my grandfather's name was Robert Rufus, and he was always called Rufus. On nearly all records he was shown as R. R. Tugwell. He was born 10 September 1847 in Haywood County, Tennessee, about four miles south-southwest of Brownsville on Sugar Creek, a northern branch of the Big Hatchie River. (To go there from Brownsville, take Windrow Road south to the old Estanaula Road and turn west toward Sugar Creek.)

Living close to the Hatchie River, Rufus would have had the fun that a river can afford a boy growing up. The Hatchie, which winds 180 miles before flowing into the Mississippi, was navigable for large keel boats eight or nine months in the year, and for smaller ones all year long as high as the town of Bolivar in Hardeman County. Just watching the steamboats would have been exciting. Rufus worked on the family farm. Also, he was better acquainted with death than most boys. He lost his father when he was seven years old, and before he was sixteen a sister and three brothers had died. His mother died when he was twenty-five.

Rufus married Benanna Alice Finch, oldest daughter of Melissa (Montgomery) and James Monroe Finch on 18 August 1867 in Haywood County.[1] Benanna was born about sixty miles northeast of there, in Weakley County, Tennessee, where her parents had lived about forty years. (The Finches, like the Tugwells, had come from North Carolina, although from different counties.) However, for

1. Haywood County, Tennessee, Marriage Book 3, p. 56. The marriage bond was dated 17 August 1867.

the very brief period of 1866–67 Monroe Finch and his family lived in Haywood County on 61 acres of land in District 6, the district adjoining Lucinda Tugwell's family in District 7. Somehow Benanna's and Rufus' paths crossed.

Benanna, who had grown up as a Cumberland Presbyterian, joined the Methodist Church not long before she married. The marriage certificate shows the ceremony was performed by "B. Medlin, M.G." Briant Medlin was a Methodist Minister of the Gospel and the husband of Benanna's Aunt Emily (Finch), who was Monroe Finch's older sister. When Benanna and Rufus married, she lacked about two months being sixteen, and Rufus less than a month being twenty. Tugwell men had never married young, and this must have been love at first sight with Rufus afraid he would lose Benanna when the Finches moved back to Weakley County.

Ten months after Benanna and Rufus' marriage their first child, Luella, was born. My mother once said, "Mother was a child herself when she had her first child." Then four sons were born within six years: John, who died before he was a year old, William Lee ("Will"), Robert Bruce ("Bob"), and *Albert* Sidney. Between 1879 and 1885 three daughters were born: *Stella* May, Benanna Alice ("Ana"), and my mother *Edna* Gertrude. The still-young couple had seven children by 1885; Rufus was thirty-seven and Benanna was thirty-three, Luella was seventeen, Will fifteen, Bob twelve, Albert ten, Stella six, Ana four, Edna an infant.

In the 1870 Haywood County Census (p. 398) Rufus and Benanna and their first two children (Luella and John) were in a separate household enumerated next to Rufus' brother-in-law, John A. Traylor (sometimes incorrectly spelled Trailor), who had co-signed Rufus' marriage bond with him three years earlier. Rufus was living on part of his mother's 310 acres. (On the 1866 tax list Lucinda had been listed with 310 acres valued at $2200, and owner of one carriage.) In 1870 John Traylor was forty-one, his second wife (Rufus' sister) Nancy P. was twenty-nine, his daughter John Anna (in other records, spelled Johnanna) was twelve, and Lucinda Tugwell was sixty-four. Also enumerated in the Traylor household were a white male who worked on the railroad and a black farmhand.

An explanation and re-cap of the John Traylor household: Lucinda Tugwell was the mother of Rufus Tugwell as well as of Nancy Peters Traylor. John Traylor's first wife, Ann E. (Tugwell), had died of "consumption" (tuberculosis of the lungs) in 1859 at the age of twenty-one, not long after the birth of Johnanna, their second child, and both their little children were living with their grandmother (the widowed Lucinda) and her children when the 1860 census was taken the next year. On 25 June 1864 John Traylor married his first wife's younger sister, Nancy P. Tugwell, making "Aunt Petie" (as she was called) the children's stepmother. David, the first child of John Traylor and Ann E. (Tugwell), had died, so the only child in the 1870 Traylor household was twelve year old Johnanna, as mentioned in the previous paragraph. John Traylor was shown with real estate valued at $4000, as was his mother-in-law Lucinda (Ball) Tugwell. They may have lived on Lucinda and John L. Tugwell's old homeplace, which John Tugwell had bought when he moved from North Carolina to west Tennessee in 1830.

In 1872 Lucinda died at the age of sixty-six, survived by only two of her children, Nancy P. Traylor and Rufus Tugwell. The year of her death coincided with economic hard times. Although at the close of the Civil War in 1865 business had revived and the price of cotton again was high in Haywood County, it had reached its peak by 1872. "Everything and everybody prospered for a season," as recorded in Goodspeed's *History of Tennessee,* p. 826. Then the price of cotton fell and the decline of business was more rapid than its advance had been. This depression continued until about 1886, when the lowest ebb had been reached and

conditions finally stabilized. During these years Rufus had a growing family and times were hard.

After Lucinda's death in 1872 her land (formerly John Tugwell's land, in which Lucinda had a life estate as his widow) was divided three ways by court appointed commissioners who declared these shares to be of equal value: 84 acres to granddaughter Johnanna Traylor (as the heir of daughter Ann E. Tugwell Traylor, deceased),[2] 161 acres to daughter Nancy P. Tugwell Traylor, and 64 acres to son Rufus Tugwell.[3] These were the only living descendants of John L. Tugwell. Rufus' share of the land bordered on that of Perkins, Flowers, Dr. Loving, and the railroad. A few years later, on 8 January 1876, Rufus and Benanna sold his inherited 64 acres to Dr. John J. Ware for $960.[4] Although the depression was under way, this appears (from comparable sales) to be a fairly good price for his land.

Rufus' brother-in-law John A. Traylor owned a 376 1/2-acre tract, touching the old Tugwell line on the Hatchie River, that he had bought from J. Rogers and R. S. Thomas. Fourteen months before he died, John Traylor (widower again), on 25 January 1879 sold his 93-acre homestead from his big tract to Rufus for $1000.[5] The next day Rufus signed a deed of trust to Mrs. Houston Baxter, who furnished a part of the purchase money, and to secure the repayment thereon gave Mrs. Baxter a lien on the property.[6] The 93-acre tract was described as beginning on the north bank of the Hatchie River, running John Chilton's west boundary line...to Sugar Creek at the crossing of the old Estanaula Road, thence down the meanderings of the Creek to the old Tugwell line, thence south with the line to the bank of the Hatchie River with its various meanders to the beginning position. Rufus repaid Mrs. Baxter but still had to sell the land. Exactly a year later, on 26 January 1880, Rufus conveyed the 93 1/3 (*sic*) acre tract to Dorsey C. Thomas for $590.[7]

The Index for the 1880 census for the State of Tennessee shows that although there were several Tuggle households, the only Tugwell listed as head of household in the whole state was Rufus Tugwell. (In the previous chapter on Rufus' father, the distant but definite relationship between Tugwells and Tuggles in Haywood County was explained.)

In the 1880 Haywood County Census the household of Rufus, farmer thirty-two, and Benanna twenty-seven, included their children Luella twelve, (little Johnnie had died in infancy), Willie L. ("Will") ten, Robert ("Bob") seven, Albert four, and Stella eight months. Luella and Will were attending school. Also in Rufus' household were his orphaned nieces Johnanna ("Sissy") Traylor twenty-one (whose mother was Ann E. Tugwell) and her half-sister Willie Kate Traylor two (whose mother was Nancy P. Tugwell). Nancy P. (Tugwell) Traylor had died in 1878/9 and her husband John Traylor in March 1880, so the orphaned children were living with their Uncle Rufus' family. The other person listed in Rufus' 1880 household was a twenty-one year old black servant and farm laborer. Benanna as a housewife and mother to seven children, and Rufus as a farmer, certainly had their hands full. Two more daughters were born, Benanna ("Anna" or "Ana") Alice in 1881 and Edna in 1885, and Rufus and Benanna's family was complete.

We know that in 1886 Rufus and his family were living on a farm he was renting from Dr. John G. Haywood, because that is stated in a Deed of Trust that Rufus signed on 3 July 1886. For an undisclosed amount he sold Fanning and

---

2. Johnanna's share of the land went "to the east bluff of Sugar Creek."
3. Haywood County, Tennessee, Court Minute Book K, pp. 433–435.
4. Haywood County Deed Book 7, p. 397.
5. Haywood County Deed Book 6, p. 396.
6. Haywood County Deed Book 4, pp. 428, 429.
7. Haywood County Deed Book 7, p. 219.

Thomas of Fanning & Co. of Brownsville all his growing crop of cotton and corn in return for which they would furnish him during the year up to $150 worth of goods, groceries, and supplies. Rufus stated he was indebted to Fanning & Co. for a $108.75 note to be paid out of the proceeds of the crop.[8] On 14 May 1887 Rufus signed another Deed of Trust (not a real estate mortgage, but a chattel mortgage), selling Fanning and Thomas his thirteen year old mare, one bay horse, one mule, and his two-horse wagon, stating he was indebted to Fanning and Thomas for $74.55 and to Fanning & Co. for an $83.75 note.[9] The next year, three days before Christmas, Rufus signed a Deed of Trust for an undisclosed amount, selling to T. O. Holloway his last two mules—a five year old black mare mule and a six year old black horse mule he had on Mrs. M. B. Holloway's place in District 11.[10]

After selling the land on Sugar Creek and the Hatchie River in 1876 and 1880, Rufus and his family lived two or three places in the county before he completely gave up farming and moved into Brownsville in 1897. The last location I have a record of was in District 6, when Rufus purchased 162 acres ("except for an acre containing a burial ground and access thereto") from Jacob and Leopold Levy and Jacob and Joe Felsenthal and their wives. The date of the note was February 1889 and the price was $600, with $200 of it in cash and the rest in notes.[11] The brief description mentions Cox's lane, Freeman's corner, and Sangston's corner. On 3 December 1892 Rufus and Benanna took out a mortgage on this 162-acre tract with the Farmers Savings and Building Association of Nashville, Tennessee, for an undisclosed amount. He used as security a tract of land which, unfortunately, was not described in the instrument. Five years later, on 6 December 1897, Rufus and Benanna sold E. L. Allen 75 acres of their land for $700.[12] The land, which was part of the 162-acre tract bought in 1889, was described as beginning at Preston's northeast corner...to E. L. Allen's northwest corner and Newburn's south boundary to the beginning. This land was a little east of Brownsville and just south of the Jackson Highway, and an old Haywood County map shows the farms of J. H. Newburn, L. M. Allen, J. Waddle (*sic*), and J. Sangston in the part of District 6 where Rufus Tugwell had his last farm.

Changes were happening in the family. Luella, the oldest child, married Dr. John A. Richardson in 1892 and they moved to Dickson, Tennessee. They were both twenty-four years old. The Tugwell boys were ready to go out on their own. Will, the oldest son, moved to the town of Dresden in Weakley County, where his mother's relatives lived, and worked as a pharmacist in Walter Bobbitt's Drugstore. Bob, the one son good at farming, married Eula Waddell in 1897 and they started married life in District 6. Bob's father-in-law gave them $500 and they bought their own farm. Albert, the adventurous one, was twenty-two when in late 1897 he moved to Dallas, Texas. No one knows what made him decide to pick Dallas, but it had far-reaching consequences, for within six years all of the Tugwell family except Bob and Eula would move to Texas.

Rufus and Benanna's sons had all left home. Bob was married, and Will and Albert obviously did not want to farm. In 1897 Rufus moved the rest of the family into town. On 9 December 1897 a house on the north side of East Main Street in Brownsville, about a quarter of a mile east of the courthouse, was purchased in Benanna A. Tugwell's name from W. W. Wagner and wife.[13] They had briefly rented the house before buying it. The lot was approximately 150 feet by 470 feet, and

8. Haywood County Deed Book 9, p. 371.
9. Haywood County Deed Book 10, p. 344.
10. Haywood County Deed Book 12, p. 84.
11. Haywood County Deed Book 15, p. 71.
12. Haywood County Deed Book 22, p. 430.
13. Haywood Deed Book 22, pp. 485–487.

the price was $650. The Brownsville house was home to a smaller family now, just Rufus and Benanna and their three youngest children: Stella nineteen, Ana seventeen, and Edna thirteen For some years the family had attended services at Marvin's Chapel Methodist Church southeast of Brownsville, and now they attended the Methodist Church in town.

Rufus bought extra land to increase the size of the town lot where their home was. On 28 September 1898 W. W. Wagner and his wife sold Rufus two lots for a $125 note.[14] The first was a fraction over one and a half acres. It began on the north margin of East Main Street at the southeast corner of the Tugwell lot, thence went north with Rufus' east boundary to a stake in B. P. Boyd's south boundary, then with J. L. Richardson's west boundary to a stake in the north margin of East Main Street at J. L. Richardson's southwest corner. The second lot was a small strip lying just north and adjacent to the Tugwell residence, being fifteen feet wide and the length of the north boundary of the Tugwell residence lot. On 21 November 1899 Rufus and Benanna made a small profit selling the 1 1/2-plus acre tract for $140 to Annie Morris, wife of R. N. Morris.[15] This is the last transaction in which Benanna was involved.

Surely life in town was less strenuous than on the farm, but it came too late for Benanna. She had lived in her house in town less than two years when she caught pneumonia during an epidemic. She could not overcome it and died within a week. Her death occurred 27 January 1900. What a sad way for the new century to begin in the Tugwell household. One happy note was that Bob and Eula's first daughter, Mary, was born 17 January 1900. Benanna died exactly one week after her mother Melissa (Montgomery) Finch died, and six months after the death of her father, James Monroe Finch. Benanna's parents had lived in Weakley County about seventy years and were nearly sixty-nine and seventy-five years old respectively. Benanna had lived all her married life in Haywood County and died at the age of forty-eight years and three months. I do not know if my mother (Edna) was justified in her belief, but she thought her mother (Benanna) died young because she did not have a strong constitution and was worn out from having so many children so young. Mother determined not to marry young. When Benanna died, Rufus still had his daughters Ana and Edna at home. Stella, who had been teaching in a rural school near Brownsville, resigned at this time.

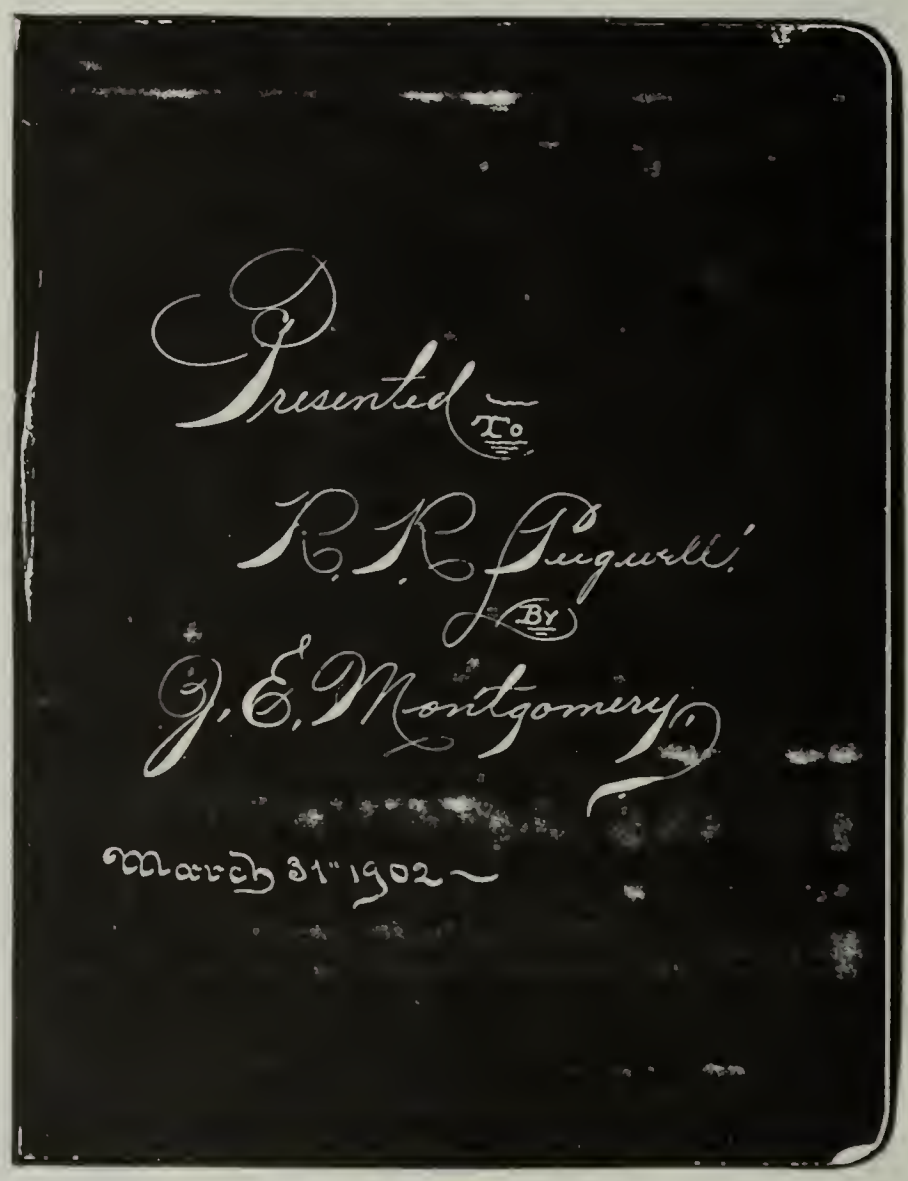
RUFUS TUGWELL AND
DAUGHTER ANA
BROWNSVILLE, TENNESSEE
1900

The 1900 Haywood County Census was enumerated in June, and showed (p. 169) Rufus to be fifty-two, a widower who

14. Haywood County Deed Book 23, pp. 528, 529.
15. Haywood County Deed Book 25, pp. 28, 29.

owned his home with no mortgage, and a grocery salesman, although unemployed the past three months; Stella to have just turned twenty-one and also unemployed the past three months; Ana nineteen and Edna fifteen, both in school.[16] Apparently Stella had come home to help take care of the household so Ana and Edna would not have to drop out of school. In 1900 Brownsville was divided into wards, and Rufus and his daughters were shown on Bradford Avenue, which is odd as the family home was on East Main Street. The streets in Ward 4 were: four blocks of Washington, three blocks of Park, two blocks of Bradford, one block of East Main Street on the north side, and one block of College. Rufus was shown as one of the census enumerators the summer of 1900. He had Enumeration District 68 in District 8, and covered 197 households, mostly farmers.

I have gathered that the family fortune was at a low ebb and Rufus was in poor health. Albert wrote giving good reports on possibilities in Dallas, encouraging the family to move there. In 1902 apparently the decision was made. Will, the oldest son, had recently moved to Runnels County in west Texas for his health. Only Rufus' middle son, thirty year old Bob, did not leave Tennessee. Bob lived near Brownsville, had two little children, and his wife Eula was expecting another one. Rufus was given a New Testament with "Presented to R. R. Tugwell by J. E. Montgomery March 31, 1902" beautifully inscribed on the flyleaf. "J. E." was Jeremiah *Elbert* Montgomery, the uncle of Rufus' deceased wife Benanna, (that is, Elbert was the brother of Melissa J. [Montgomery] Finch, who was Benanna's mother.) I imagine this was a farewell family gift, a memento that Benanna's Uncle Elbert wanted Rufus to take with him when he left Tennessee to go to Texas, never to return. The author has this New Testament in her home. [See reduced copy of the flyleaf]



FLYLEAF OF RUFUS TUGWELL'S BIBLE

Rufus disposed of the home and adjoining lot on East Main Street in Brownsville by selling it on 12 September 1902 to William H. Coffey. Since the children

16. Haywood County 1900 Census, p. 169 (Enumeration District 70, p. 27).

had shared in inheriting the property from Benanna, all their names appear on the deed.[17] R. R. (Rufus) Tugwell, Stella, Anna (*sic*), Edna, and Robert B. (Bob) Tugwell and wife Eula are shown as living in Haywood County; J. A. Richardson and wife Luella (Tugwell) in Baylor County, Texas;[18] W. L. (Will) Tugwell in Runnels County, Texas;[19] and A. S. (Albert) Tugwell in Dallas, Texas.

CHANGE IN SHAPE OF HAYWOOD COUNTY BETWEEN 1830
(WHEN RUFUS TUGWELL'S FATHER SETTLED THERE)
AND 1902 (WHEN RUFUS MOVED TO TEXAS)

The move from Tennessee to Dallas was made by train in late 1902, and the family moved into a house at 105 Matt Street. The house was in the McKells addition[20] and located at the corner of Matt and Peak Avenue. [See city map in "Edna G. Tugwell" chapter, p. 120] Rufus purchased the house on 22 November 1903 from Mrs. Mary B. Lewis, widow, for $1170.[21] The 1903 Dallas City Directory shows Albert S. Tugwell as a salesman at Titche-Goettinger (a department store), William L. (Will) a pharmacist, and their father Robert R. (Rufus). The three unmarried daughters were not listed, but of course were at 105 Matt Street too. Will must have thought his health had improved, since he was no longer in west Texas but in Dallas with the family. In 1902 Rufus' oldest daughter, Luella, had moved from Dickson, Tennessee, with her husband Dr. John A. Richardson and their little adopted daughter Hazel, to west Texas to the town of Seymour in Baylor County. It was always said they moved there for Luella's health, as the air was thought to be fresh and dry out there. The dry air enticed Will to move from Dallas to the town of Clarendon in the Texas Panhandle, as he had contracted tuberculosis from Walter Bobbitt, the family said, when he worked in his drugstore in Dresden, Tennessee. The change of climate did Will no good, however, nor did a brief stay in a tuberculosis sanitarium in the town of Comfort, near Kerrville, Texas. Will died there 21 May 1904 and was buried at Greenwood Cemetery, 3020 Oak Grove Avenue in Dallas. The whole family loved this oldest son dearly, and it was a sad time for all.

I am unable to find an extant 1904 Dallas City Directory, but the 1905 directory showed Rufus employed as a clerk at the Milam Mercantile Co., Albert a salesman at Titche-Goettinger, daughters Anna A. (*sic*) and Edna G., all living at 105 Matt Street. Stella, who had taught school briefly in Seymour and lived with Luella and Dr. John Richardson, was teaching in Clarendon at this time. Rufus continued working as a clerk, but was fighting a losing battle with lip cancer. The spot where the cancer started was right where the stem of his pipe had rested. On 24 November

17. Haywood County, Tennessee, Deed Book 29, p. 251.
18. Seymour is the county seat of Baylor County.
19. Ballinger, about 135 miles south of Seymour, is the county seat of Runnels County.
20. Plat is recorded in vol. 241, p. 96 of Dallas Deed Records.
21. Dallas County, Texas, Deeds, vol. 302, p. 149.

1904 Rufus gave the house "for one dollar and love and affection for my children" to Luella Richardson, Albert, Stella, Anna (*sic*), and Edna G. Tugwell.[22]

TUGWELL SIBLINGS (EXCEPT STELLA) IN DALLAS, 1906
(L. to R.) ANA, EDNA, LUELLA, ALBERT

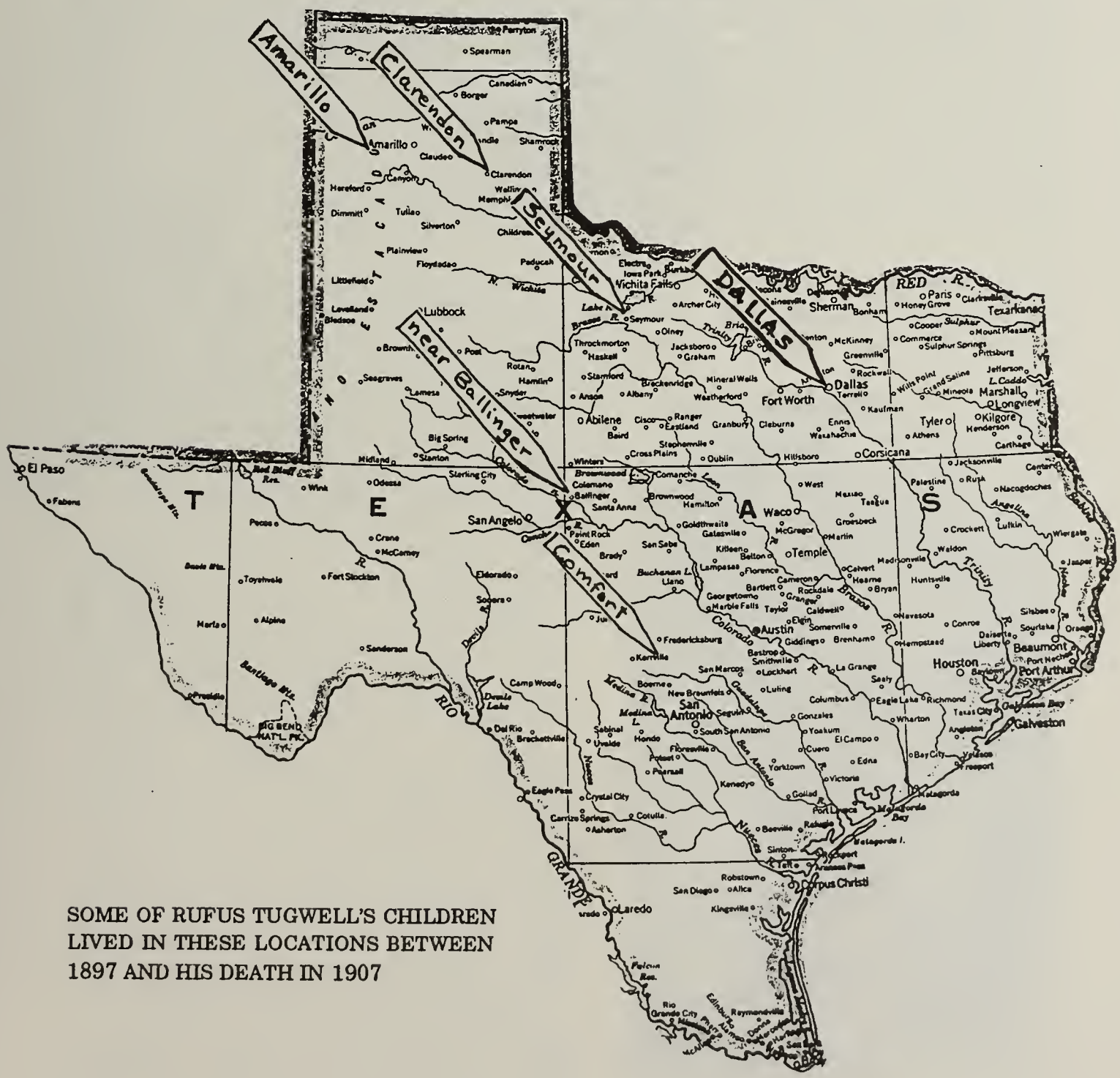
In 1906 Albert left Dallas and moved to Amarillo, Texas, where he opened Tugwell's Nickel Store. Amarillo, in the Texas Panhandle, was a bustling town about fifty-five miles northwest of Clarendon where Stella was teaching school and where Will had lived briefly. Albert then went back to Dallas to marry Nell Ray on 14 January 1907 and take her back to Amarillo. Coincidentally, Albert S. Rollins, an uncle of the author's husband, was a lawyer in Amarillo those years, knew my Uncle Albert and thought highly of him.

The 1907 Dallas City Directory listed what was left of the Tugwell family at 105 Sycamore. The Tugwells had not moved, but the name of Matt Street had been changed to Sycamore Avenue. (Sycamore is between Live Oak and Swiss avenues.) Only three in the family were at home. Rufus Tugwell was listed as a clerk, but I doubt he worked much in 1907 as he would die of cancer that summer. Ana had stayed home to take care of him, and my mother, eighteen year old Edna, went to work in downtown Dallas at Lee Newbury Shoe Store and earned the bulk of the money that kept the house going. Her occupation in the 1907 Dallas City Directory was given as "Secretary, Lee Newbury Inc."

---

22. Dallas County, Texas, Deeds, vol. 359, p. 548.

Robert Rufus Tugwell died in Dallas on Sunday, 14 July 1907, at the age of fifty-nine, and was buried beside his son Will at Greenwood Cemetery. This old cemetery is a little north of downtown Dallas and west of Central Expressway.[23] Benanna, as mentioned earlier, had died in January 1900 and was buried in Oakwood Cemetery in Brownsville, Tennessee. Grandpa's obituary in the Brownsville newspaper stated he had died after a lingering illness. "He was a kind hearted man, of an unusually amiable disposition, a good neighbor and highly esteemed...who leaves behind a good name." Concerning his "amiable disposition," I remember my mother saying that red hair did not mean a fiery temper and that "Papa" had a sweet and gentle temperament.



SOME OF RUFUS TUGWELL'S CHILDREN LIVED IN THESE LOCATIONS BETWEEN 1897 AND HIS DEATH IN 1907

23. To go there, take the Hall Street exit off Central Expressway and go to Oak Grove Avenue. Follow the pavement from the gate to the street marked "Grace," turn left and go past "Purity." The Tugwell monument can be seen on the left, approximately in the middle of the next block.

In 1907 the surviving children of Rufus and Benanna (Finch) Tugwell were Luella Richardson, Seymour, Texas; Bob Tugwell, Brownsville, Tennessee; Albert Tugwell, Amarillo, Texas; Stella Tugwell, Clarendon, Texas; and Ana and Edna Tugwell, Dallas. Although the family that had come to Texas to be together was now scattered, the Texas siblings would remain a close-knit family the rest of their lives. Immediately following this chapter are separate chapters on Rufus and Benanna's children.

[See "Benanna Alice Finch"—wife]

[See the following separate chapters for children:]
"Luella Tugwell"
"John Tugwell"
"William L. Tugwell"
"Robert B. Tugwell"
"Albert S. Tugwell"
"Stella M. Tugwell"
"Benanna A. Tugwell"
"Edna G. Tugwell" ***(my line)***

FIRST CHILD OF ROBERT RUFUS TUGWELL AND BENANNA ALICE FINCH

LUELLA TUGWELL
(1868–1945)

LUELLA TUGWELL was the oldest of the eight children born to Robert Rufus Tugwell and Benanna Alice Finch. She was born near Brownsville in Haywood County, Tennessee, 12 June 1868. She may have been named for her mother's sister Ella. She was always called "Sister" by her siblings and "Auntie" by her nieces and nephews. Luella's parents were very young when she was born, her mother sixteen and her father twenty. Her grandmother, Lucinda (Ball) Tugwell, lived on the next farm, but Lucinda died when Luella was four. Her maternal grandparents, Melissa (Montgomery) and James Monroe Finch, lived near Gleason about sixty miles away in Weakley County, and Luella was their first grandchild.

Luella married John Alexander Richardson 19 July 1892. Born 29 October 1867, he was eight months older than she. My mother was not quite seven years old when this oldest sister married, and said it seemed as if "Sister" had always been married. Benanna must have depended a lot on Luella until she married and left the family farm, because there were four males to cook and wash for and the three younger girls were twelve, eleven, and six.

As a boy John Richardson worked on his father's farm near Brownsville. John was the son of Amanda and William L. Richardson, and in the 1880 Haywood County Census William L. was listed as a teacher. John became a doctor, receiving his medical degree in 1892 from the Memphis Hospital Medical College, the medical school of the University of Tennessee. Soon after Luella and John married, they moved to Dickson, Tennessee, which (as the crow flies) is about 110 miles northeast of Brownsville and about 30 miles due west of Nashville. The 1900 Dickson County Census (p. 73B, #252) shows them in the town of Dickson with a black female servant in the household.

Luella's youngest brother, Albert, was the first one in the family to leave Tennessee, when he moved to Dallas, Texas, in 1897. Luella's oldest brother, Will, moved to Texas next. In late 1900 or in early 1901 he had moved to Runnels County

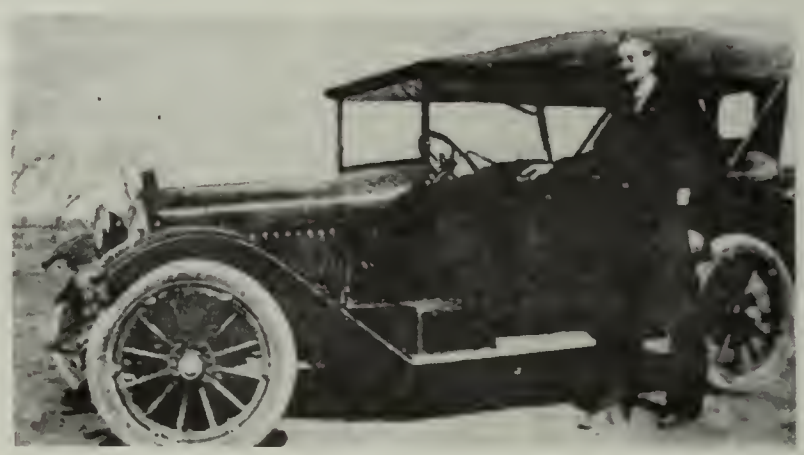
LUELLA AND JOHN RICHARDSON
40TH ANNIVERSARY, 1932

in west Texas. In late 1902, nearly three years after the death of her mother in January 1900, Luella's father and her three younger sisters moved to Dallas.

After living in Dickson about ten years and having no children of their own, Luella and John adopted a little baby girl whom they named Hazel. In 1902 Luella, John, and little Hazel moved to Seymour, Texas. Seymour is in Baylor County and is less than fifty miles southwest of Wichita Falls and 150 miles west-northwest of Dallas. I always heard that the move was made for Auntie's health. She was frail, never robust, but she lived to be nearly seventy-seven years old.

Auntie and Uncle John were well loved and well respected in the town of Seymour. Uncle John was a loyal, dedicated Christian and was Sunday School Superintendent of the Methodist Church (M. E. Church, South) the first fifteen years after he and Auntie moved to Seymour. Their home, a large corner house I remember, was very nicely furnished. Their daughter Hazel may have been pampered and spoiled as her parents doted on her. Hazel married a young Mr. Lane when she was in her teens and had six children I believe.

A personal aside to my own family should be added here. When my husband Joe was a little boy, he and his parents lived in Seymour 1923–1927 when his father was Baylor County Engineer for the State Highway Department. Dr. Richardson was their family doctor and they admired him greatly. Several years later when going through Seymour, Joe remembers that they stopped by to see the Richardsons and sat on the porch and visited.



DR. J. A. RICHARDSON
SEYMOUR, TEXAS, CA. 1920

In May 1935 John Richardson died, and Luella was a widow ten years. From approximately 1941–1943 she lived in Shreveport, Louisiana, with her sister Ana and her husband John Hardin. Then she lived with her widowed sister Stella in Dallas, Texas. Luella died in Dallas 1 May 1945, six weeks before her seventy-seventh birthday. She was buried in Seymour, Texas, beside her husband.

SECOND CHILD OF ROBERT RUFUS TUGWELL
AND BENANNA ALICE FINCH

JOHN TUGWELL
(b/d 1869)

Born: 1869, Haywood County, Tennessee. Named for his paternal grandfather, this first son, who died before he was a year old, was always called "Little Johnnie."

Died: 1869, Haywood County, Tennessee

THIRD CHILD OF ROBERT RUFUS TUGWELL AND BENANNA ALICE FINCH

WILLIAM L. TUGWELL
(1870–1904)

AFTER LUELLA, Rufus and Benanna (Finch) Tugwell had four sons born to them, the oldest one "Little Johnnie," dying before he was one. Of the three sons born thereafter, the oldest was William L., born 19 August 1870. Everyone called him Will, except my mother, who always referred to him as "Buddy Willie." He was fifteen when she was born. Like all the other children, Will was born on a farm just a few miles from Brownsville, Haywood County, Tennessee.

Will was a pharmacist, and in his twenties he moved to Dresden, Tennessee, where he lived with the family of his mother's brother, Dr. Alpheus Finch,[1] and worked in a cousin's drugstore. The family story is that Will caught tuberculosis from his third (first cousin twice removed) cousin Walter R. Bobbitt (b. 1859, son of W. P. M. Bobbitt), who owned the drugstore. Will's maternal great-grandmother was Matilda Bobbitt, whose parents were Barbara (Finch) and Green Bobbitt. It is accepted medical knowledge that TB is caused by a casual sharing of the air and that in the first half of the century was virtually a death sentence. (Now a normal case of TB can be reversed by taking antibiotics for six to eight months.) When Will's mother died in Brownsville in Haywood County, her obituary showed Will living in Dresden (Weakley County). The 1900 Weakley County Census later that year showed Will, unmarried, was twenty-eight years old, although he was in fact twenty-nine.

Will's younger brother, Albert, had moved from Brownsville to Dallas, Texas, in 1897, and in early October of 1899 Will went to visit him. After their mother's death in 1900, Will concurred in Albert's encouraging the family to leave Tennessee and move to Dallas. Because of his incipient tuberculosis Will decided to move to Texas too, but to west Texas, not Dallas.[2] West Texas had the reputation of having dry, salubrious air, which Will must have hoped would be beneficial to his health. Sometime between the fall of 1900 and early 1901 Will moved to Runnels County, Texas. Its county seat is Ballinger, located between the larger towns of Abilene and San Angelo. By the end of 1902 Will was in Dallas with Albert, and they had been joined by their father and three younger unmarried sisters who had left Brownsville, Tennessee.

The 1903 Dallas City Directory showed all were living at 105 Matt (now Sycamore) Street, and Will's occupation was listed as druggist. In late 1903 or early 1904 Will went out to Clarendon, Texas, where the air was drier and altitude higher, again hoping the change would restore his health. Clarendon, in Donley County, was where Will's sister Stella was then teaching school.

---

1. 1900 Weakley County Census, p. 93B.
2. There seems to have been a tendency in some of the family to have a weak respiratory system. One of Rufus' sisters, Ann E., died of consumption in her early twenties, and a brother, James S., died of pleurisy in his early teens. Rufus' wife, Benanna, died of pneumonia when she was forty-eight. Rufus and Benanna's first child, Luella, was said to have "weak lungs" and moved to Seymour in west Texas for her health. And Will (this chapter) died of tuberculosis, being the first of the family to die in Texas. The rest of the family, including my mother (Edna Tugwell), was quite healthy.

Old Clarendon, founded in 1878, was the third town to develop in the Texas Panhandle and was settled by a group of cultured and religious people as a Christian colony. Cowboys called it "Saints' Roost." The town site was moved five miles south to the railroad in the late 1880s and in 1900 Clarendon College was opened by the Methodists. This was the town where Will moved.

Will's health did not improve and he moved to a tuberculosis sanitarium in the pretty little town of Comfort, just east of Kerrville in the Texas "Hill Country." He died there on 21 May 1904 at the age of thirty-three. I imagine it was Albert, single and five years younger, who had helped Will make these moves. Having seen Clarendon, however, in the Texas "Panhandle," Albert must have liked that part of the state, because two years after Will's death Albert moved from Dallas to Amarillo, which was fifty-five miles northwest of Clarendon on the railroad line.

A family plot was bought at Greenwood Cemetery in Dallas, and Will was buried there. This pretty cemetery, now east of North Central Expressway and fairly close to downtown Dallas, in those early days of 1900 was near the edge of town. I have a picture that shows Albert with brother Bob, who made the trip from Brownsville, Tennessee, gazing sadly at their older brother's flower-covered grave.

My mother had, and I now have, three tangible mementos of her beloved "Buddy Willie." One is a book in which he wrote "W. L. Tugwell, July 23, 1896," entitled *Life of Napoleon the Great,* by Sir Edward Creasy (1894). The other two are his silver repoussé hairbrush with WLT engraved in a cartouche, and a dressing table jar with a silver lid that Will gave to his sister Luella and her husband. The engraving on the lid reads, "W. L. Tugwell to Dr. J. A. Richardson & Lady."

WILL TUGWELL
CA. 1898

FOURTH CHILD OF ROBERT RUFUS TUGWELL
AND BENANNA ALICE FINCH

ROBERT BRUCE TUGWELL
(1873–1936)

BOB TUGWELL, CA. 1897

ROBERT BRUCE TUGWELL, the fourth of the eight children of Robert Rufus and Benanna (Finch) Tugwell, was born 16 March 1873 near Brownsville, Haywood County, Tennessee. Only through him was the Tugwell surname passed down in John L. and Lucinda (Ball) Tugwell's line. Of John L. Tugwell's six sons (from both marriages) only the youngest child, Robert Rufus, had sons. Of Rufus and Benanna's children only Robert B. (of this chapter) had sons. Robert Tugwell and Eula Waddell had (in addition to two daughters) two sons, three grandsons, and five great-grandsons. Today a great-great grandson, James Wesley Tugwell IV, carries on the Tugwell surname in the line of John L. Tugwell, who in 1830 moved

from Pitt County, North Carolina, to Haywood County, Tennessee. Robert Bruce Tugwell, who lived all his life in Haywood County, was the only child of Rufus and Benanna who did not move to Texas.

Robert Tugwell was called Bob by the family. His middle name was for his maternal uncle, J. Bruce Finch. Five feet ten and a half inches tall, he had dark hair and blue eyes, and was said to look like his father in later years. On 30 March 1897 Bob married Eula Lewis Waddell, daughter of James W. Waddell and Amanda Gause. In 1900 they were living on the west side of Washington Street in Brownsville. The Haywood County Census[1] showed Bob as a hardware salesman twenty-seven, Eula twenty-seven, William D. two, Mary B. five months,[2] and three lodgers. Eula's father gave the young couple a gift of money, and on 11 December 1901 Eula paid $550 cash for an 85 1/2 acre farm purchased from Austin and Candice Luster.[3] The family lived on this farm in District 4 near Cliff Creek Church for six years. Bob was a hard-working man, and the first years of their marriage, after harvesting his crop, he worked in Brownsville at Emil Tamm's clothing store. Bob and Eula had two more children: James, born in 1902, and Frances, born in 1905.

Bob and Eula and their two sons and two daughters moved in 1911 to what was called "the Moody place" (in Districts 4 and 6), so the children could go to a two-teacher, instead of a one-teacher, school. They lived there several years. Next they rented close to town, and then in 1918 bought another place in District 6, in the Chestnut Grove community. Bob Tugwell was very industrious, and he began writing life and fire insurance to supplement his farm income. He was also very active at Chestnut Grove Methodist Church, where he sang in the choir and taught a Sunday school class.

Bob Tugwell had always wanted a country store. In 1925 he bought a small farm up on the highway to Jackson, about six miles east of Brownsville. Near the house, he built a store on the corner where Chestnut Grove Road crossed Highway 70. Bob and Eula lived at this location the rest of their lives.

I remember as a little girl on regular summer trips to Virginia to visit my father's family, we stopped by Brownsville to visit Uncle Bob and Aunt Eula. I recall how sweet he was to my brother and me, and I well remember the little sacks of candy he gave to both of us before we left. I know of no better way to tell about Uncle Bob, however, than to use some of the words of his two daughters, Mary and Frances, who wrote down some reminiscences in loving memory of their father.

> Papa and Mama had four children, William Dudley (Will D.), Mary Benanna (Mary), James Wesley (James), and Frances Amanda (Frances). When we were little, we lived in a farm home typical of the early 1900s, with no central heating or modern facilities. During the winter months we all gathered around the open fireplace in our parents' large bedroom, our mother in the kitchen the first part of the evening finishing up the dishes. Our dad, determined to improve our minds, gave us mental arithmetic problems to see which of us could do it first, then we went through the state capitals. With little formal education, he had a quick and intelligent mind and was determined that we children should have good minds. We also enjoyed games like Croconole (*sic*), played on a large board, and dominoes. Our mother was out of the kitchen by now and joined in the games.

---

1. Enumeration Dist. 70, p. 17.
2. Mary was born prematurely. Benanna was sick, and according to the family story, Eula went to help take care of her mother-in-law, and unexpectedly had her baby. Mary was born 17 January 1900, and Benanna (Finch) Tugwell died of pneumonia ten days later.
3. Haywood County, Tennessee, Deed Book 28, p. 85.

Evenings in the summer months were spent on the large front porch. When we were little children, Papa rocked us to sleep holding us on his lap—usually the baby girl Frances first—and singing the old songs, such as "Old Daniel Tucker" and "Way Down upon the Sewanee River." When it came Mary's time, she would pretend sleep and when he started to take her inside she would wake up so he would sit down and sing some more. He never lost patience with us about that as he seemed to enjoy it too. The boys usually lay down on the porch, as they didn't want to be rocked.

Papa was highly respected in our community, where he did small farming, wrote insurance, and had a country store at a crossroad on Highway 70. A country store consisted of everything people needed, from groceries to "yard goods" (fabrics sold by the yard). He bought eggs from farmers and resold them. And there was a gasoline pump in front of the store. The store was heated by a large stove, and in the winter months many of the men of the community came in to sit, talk, and spit their tobacco juice in the container for the ashes accumulated around the stove. Papa's store was their meeting place.

There was one man who had two dogs and spent many rainy days in the Tugwell store, bringing the dogs with him. He'd come in saying every time, "By golly, it's raining cats and dogs and puppy dog tails outside." People traveling the roads stopped in for a lunch. Sometimes they would have cheese and crackers, or buy a can of sardines and a bottle of cold drink, and my father gave them the crackers. He always had all kinds of candy, the stick candy in a large glass jar.

Mary taught two years in Haywood County before she married. Frances graduated from the Brownsville high school in June 1922, the same month Mary married Edward Davis. After Mary and Ed moved to Illinois, it was their joy to spend part of the summer visiting their parents in Tennessee. When they returned home in early fall "Grandpa Tugwell" always fixed up a large bag of goodies from the store for the children. Ed loved his father-in-law and they spent many hours conversing together.

Neighbors would call and ask our dad to come sit with someone sick in the family, as they didn't know what to do as the sick one was trying to get out of bed. When Papa was asked about it when he came home, he said all he did was promise the sick man that if he'd rest a while then he would take him wherever he wanted to go, and then (the sick man) would lie down and go to sleep. There were many instances where the negroes in the community would ask our dad to come and read some scripture, say a prayer and some words. When they lost one of the family in death, this he always did, and Mother would arrange baskets of flowers, asking only that the baskets be returned so she would have them for another funeral.

In 1923 when James Tugwell married, only Frances, the youngest of Bob and Eula Tugwell's four children, was at home. When Frances finished school she taught in a one-teacher school in Haywood County. There was no electricity, water, or indoor toilet. They built fires in an iron woodburning stove, swept the floor, and got water from a neighbor. When she started teaching seventh and eighth grade math, it was hard for her at first. Her father worked the problems with her and put them in a notebook, and this was her textbook. Later county schools were consolidated, and conditions and salaries improved.

There was musical talent in the family. Bob Tugwell had a good voice, and in the summers when the children were still at home, they often had "singings" in the country church, Chestnut Grove Methodist. Daughter Mary played the old pump organ as someone would stand by her and fan with a big palm-leaf fan. Her father was often asked to give the prayer at church service. He enjoyed the singings, and they often sang at home, especially when they had guests after church for Sunday dinner.

Robert Bruce Tugwell died suddenly of a heart attack 4 June 1936 at the age of sixty-three, and his funeral was held at home. A huge crowd of people gathered at the funeral, and the whole yard was covered with negroes sitting on the ground. One colored man came to the door to ask if they could come in and see Mr. Tugwell.

As they filed by his casket, they said, "Lord, he shore was such a good man." His family could say "Amen" to that. Bob Tugwell was loved and highly respected by his family and the community in which he had spent his life. It was a life well spent.

SECTION OF HAYWOOD COUNTY, TENNESSEE
WITH CIRCLES SHOWING SOME OF THE PLACES BOB TUGWELL LIVED

Robert Tugwell's widow, Eula (Waddell), lived four more years in their home, dying 30 September 1940 in a hospital in Memphis, Tennessee, which is less than sixty miles southwest of Brownsville. After Eula died, daughter Frances spent many weekends visiting her brother James at Brunswick, on the northeast edge of Memphis, and that is where she met her future husband, Ed Fowler. One Sunday in church she saw a handsome brown-eyed man looking at her. He got a friend to introduce them, and within two years, on 5 June 1942, they were married. Living in Memphis, Frances taught in a large school until she retired in 1970 after a total of teaching forty-two years. It is Frances who for so many years has been interested in and done so much research on her family, for which all her Tugwell kin can be grateful.

Eula (Waddell) Tugwell was buried next to her husband, Robert Bruce Tugwell, in Oakwood Cemetery in Brownsville. Robert was buried next to his mother, Benanna (Finch) Tugwell, who had died when he was twenty-six years old. Nearby are buried Johnanna (Traylor) Reeves and her son George W. Reeves.

Johnanna (b. 1859, d. 1886), was the niece of Rufus Tugwell, and therefore Robert B. Tugwell's first cousin.

Children of Robert Bruce ("Bob") Tugwell and Eula Lewis (Waddell), all born in Haywood County, Tennessee, near Brownsville:

1. William Dudley (Will D.) Tugwell: b. 11 January 1898
   m. (1) 1915, Floy McConnico; div.
   m. (2) 1921, Dorothy Mildred ("Dot") Stone (b. 8 April 1900, d. 10 June 1983), daughter of Lillian (Venabel) and Edward Braslin Stone; div.
   m. (3) ca. 1944, Eva Walton of Springfield, Tennessee
   d. 10 November 1973, Nashville, Tennessee, and buried in the Springhill Cemetery there.
   Will D., as the family called him, or "Tug," went to business college in Humboldt, about twenty-five miles from home. In World War I he enlisted in the Navy, and while in New Jersey married Dorothy Stone, his second wife. He worked in the postal service in Brownsville, in New Jersey, in Atlanta, and then they settled in Nashville and lived there with their three children many years. They divorced, and Will D. married Eva Walton. Will D. was a gun collector and loved to hunt. He raised and loved hunting dogs, especially Irish setters and pointers. After retirement he cultivated miniature fruit trees and gardened. A member of the Methodist church, Will D. taught the Men's Bible Class for many years.
   Child of 1st marriage:
   (1) Bernice McConnico: m. (1) Earl Peebles, m. (2) Sol Tuchfeld. They live in Jackson, Tennessee. Bernice was crowned "Miss Tennessee" in a "Miss America" contest in the early 1930s.
   Children of 2nd marriage:
   (2) William Dudley ("Bill") Tugwell, Jr.: b. 13 December 1921, Burlington, New Jersey; m. 14 July 1943, Jessie Newell (b. 1924), daughter of Margaret Tanner and Fred William Newell, in Madison, Tennessee. Bill worked for the DuPont Corporation. d. January 1988. Jessie is an artist using metals in designs and in 1992 was living in Athens, Tennessee.
      Children:
      1. William Dudley Tugwell III, called "Tug": b. 26 April 1944, Madison, Tennessee; living in New Orleans, Louisiana.
      2. *Julia* Margaret Tugwell: b. 1 April 1950; m. 1969, Carlos Peterson, Baptist minister; living in Athens, Tennessee
         Children:
         [1] April Beth: b. ca. 1974
         [2] Ginny Margaret: b. ca. 1977
         [3] Emily Rebecca: b. ca. 1980
   (3) Dorothy Frances ("Dottie") Tugwell: b. 16 January 1924, Brownsville, Tennessee; m. (1) 1948, Ballard VanHorn Higbee; m. (2) 26 March 1964, Alexander Pilurs, in Skokie, Illinois. Dottie is a commercial artist and lives in Orange Beach, Alabama.
      Stepchildren: Jonathon, Daniel, Kathleen, Laurel, Thomas, James. The boys all have Alexander for their middle name, and the girls' middle name is Alexis.
   (4) Robert Bruce ("Bob") Tugwell II: b. 29 April 1926, Burlington, New Jersey, and named for his grandfather; m. 29 November 1950,

Nancy Laux (b. 1 September 1924), daughter of Frances Harper and Henry Laux; d. 24 January 1981, of cancer, Madison, Tennessee, and buried in Springhill Cemetery, Nashville, as is his father. Bob worked for the U.S. Postal Service.

Children:

1. Karen Ann Tugwell: b. 18 June 1952; m. Robert Cannon. She is a speech therapist in Calhoun, Georgia.
2. Robert Bruce Tugwell III, called "Tug" by family and friends: b. 23 March 1954, Gallatin, Tennessee; m. Karen Jeanne Soderberg. They live in Gallatin, Tennessee, and have two daughters.
   Children: Jami and Tonya
3. Michael Lee ("Mike") Tugwell: b. 25 June 1956, Nashville, Tennessee; m. Carol Ann Hill of Grenada, Mississippi;[4] living in Hendersonville, Tennessee. Carol is a Registered Nurse with a B.S. degree from Mississippi University for Women. Mike has a Masters degree from Tennessee Technological University, and is Region III Traffic Engineer with the Tennessee State Department of Transportation.
   Children:
   [1] Tiffany Ann: b. 18 March 1983
   [2] Laura Lee: b. 26 February 1986
4. Tina Marie Tugwell: b. 7 January 1960, Madison, Tennessee; m. Barry Hudson. They live in Madison, Tennessee, and have a son and a daughter.
   Children: Corey and Chelsea

2. *Mary* Benanna Tugwell: b. 17 January 1900; m. 14 June 1922, Edward Lester Davis (b. 29 December 1897, d. 27 November 1986), son of Emma McMurry and John W. Davis, Brownsville, Tennessee. Mary studied piano from a Dutch music master after she married, and taught music for many, many years in Onarga, Illinois, while Edward taught science for forty-five years in Onarga Military School. Edward raised flowers, and Mary won prizes for her flower arrangements. Edward had a unique collection of over five thousand bottles, and was an organizer of the county museum. Their home was decorated and on "Merry Christmas tours." After spending many winters in Port Charlotte, Florida, they moved there permanently in 1978. Edward died in 1986. Mary died 20 April 1993 and was buried at Onarga Cemetery, Onarga, Illinois, beside her husband and son Lester. At Onarga Military School, where her husband had taught so many years, the flag was at half-mast.

MARY AND ED DAVIS
JANUARY 1981

4. Carol Tugwell wrote me that there are only 806 Tugwells listed in *The World Book of Tugwells*. This shows what an uncommon name it is.

Children:

(1) Lester Tugwell Davis: b. 7 September 1924, Brownsville, Tennessee; d. 5 November 1943 in Tularie, California. He was an Air Force cadet in World War II and died when his training plane crashed. Buried in Onarga, Illinois.

(2) Marilyn Davis: b. 14 January 1928, Onarga, Illinois; m. 26 August 1950, in Onarga, Claude C Boles (b. 1 September 1928), son of Beulah Fern Hutchison and Harold Maurice Boles. Marilyn and CC live in Winnetka, Illinois, but enjoy spending time on their boat, coming down from Chicago via lakes and rivers to the Atlantic Ocean.

Children:

1. Claudia Boles: b. 15 August 1952 in Nashville, Tennessee; m. 25 May 1974 in Winnetka, Illinois, Richard Jay ("Dick") Myers (b. 14 November 1951, Kansas City, Missouri), son of Coleen Cecelia Vogel and Jay Floyd Myers. Claudia and Dick met at the University of Kansas, and now live in Englewood, Colorado, where they've been since 1976. She works for the American Heart Association and he is employed by G. E. Capitol, the financial arm of General Electric.

   Children:

   [1] *Megan* Coleen Myers: b. 16 August 1977, Aurora, Colorado

   [2] *Lauren* Mary Myers: b. 17 April 1980, Aurora, Colorado

2. Lester Davis ("Les") Boles: b. 26 November 1954, Anchorage, Alaska; m. 27 June 1992, in Lake Bluff, Lake County, Illinois, *Diane* Carla Saxonberg (b. 3 November 1964), daughter of Sonja Sampson and Cyril Burton Saxonberg. Les and Diane live in Madison, Wisconsin.

3. *James* Wesley Tugwell: b. 8 April 1902; m. 18 January 1923, *Nina* Frances Harrell (b. 30 October 1904; d. 20 August 1993, Brunswick, Tennessee), daughter of Mary Elizabeth (Byrum) and John Robert Harrell, Brownsville, Tennessee. d. 23 October 1984, Memphis, Tennessee. James and Nina are buried in Memory Hills Gardens in Memphis.

   Child:

   (1) James Wesley ("Jamie") Tugwell, Jr.: b. 29 June 1925, Brownsville, Tennessee; m. (1) 11 April 1945, Marjorie Dene Williams (b. 21 August 1925), daughter of Bessie L. Roth and — Williams; div.

   m. (2) 21 August 1971, Jean Smith McCoy. Jamie inherited the Tugwell Oil Company started by his father in the early 1920s, and with his sons operates a thriving distributorship in Brunswick and Millington, Tennessee. Jamie is a talented musician, and for many years was church organist and choir director at two Christian Churches in Memphis.

   Children of 1st marriage:

   1. Nina Lynn Tugwell: b. 15 June 1947, Memphis, Tennessee; m. Jerry Hollis Patton (b. 6 November 1945, Baldwin, Mississippi), son of Jewel Ford and Hollis Patton. Nina Lynn, who has a Master of Arts degree from Memphis State University, is Principal at Belton High School, Memphis, and Jerry is a BMW automobile dealer.

      Children:

      [1] Randal Scott Patton: b. 20 February 1966;

m. Michelle McGee. They live in Bartlett, Tennessee.

1. Erin Olivia: b. 20 September 1993

[2] Lori Michelle Patton: b. 15 November 1968

2. James *Wesley* Tugwell III: b. 15 March 1952, Memphis, Tennessee; m. (1) 20 August 1971 in Rosemark, Tennessee, Susan Marie Matthews (b. 4 November 1952), daughter of Margaret Murph and Benjamin E. Matthews
m. (2) 15 September 1990 in Shelby County, Tennessee, Ann Clark Houser (b. 5 February 1947), daughter of Mary Hurst Ellington and George Clifford Houser, Jr. They live in Rosemark, Tennessee. Wesley is an Exxon Oil Company distributor and Ann a speech pathologist.
Children of 1st marriage (both born in Memphis):
[1] Angela Christina Tugwell: b. 2 February 1975
[2] James *Wes*ley Tugwell IV: b. 13 February 1979
3. Christopher Wayne ("Chris") Tugwell: b. 28 February 1958. Chris lives in Bartlett, Tennessee.
4. *Frances* Amanda Tugwell: b. 7 October 1905. Frances' middle name is for her maternal grandmother, Amanda (Gause) Waddell. m. 5 June 1942, Sam Edward ("Ed") Fowler, Jr. (b. 3 July 1913 in Corinth, Mississippi), son of Stella Turner and Sam Edward Fowler.
Frances and Ed have lived in Memphis all their married life. In 1952 Frances got her degree from Memphis State University. She taught school forty-two years, and Ed was bookkeeper for the Tugwell Oil Company. Frances and Ed are members of the Cumberland Presbyterian Church, where Ed was an elder, teacher, and Sunday School Superintendent.

FRANCES AND ED FOWLER
CA. 1981

Frances, the youngest of Robert Bruce ("Bob") Tugwell's four children, is still living (September 1993). For many years on Christmas cards Frances would mention what she was working on regarding the Tugwells. Those years I felt I was too busy to do research, and I owe her a lot. [See p. 28 supra] I think we two first cousins felt we were the only ones interested.

FIFTH CHILD OF ROBERT RUFUS TUGWELL AND BENANNA ALICE FINCH

ALBERT SIDNEY TUGWELL
(1875–1945)

ALBERT SIDNEY TUGWELL was the fifth child and youngest son of Benanna Alice (Finch) and Robert Rufus Tugwell. He was born 24 September 1875 near the town of Brownsville in Haywood County, Tennessee. West Tennessee (in which Haywood County is located) was part of the "Cotton Belt" and much more supportive of the Confederacy during the Civil War than was east Tennessee. One of the heroic generals was Albert Sidney Johnston, who was killed in Tennessee at the Battle of Shiloh. Many Southern boys were named for him, including my husband's Uncle Albert Sidney Rollins, and this is doubtless whom my Uncle Albert was named for too.

My memories of Uncle Albert center around what a truly sweet man he was. He was kind, refined, gentle, and had the most pleasing disposition. He was of average height, slender and very handsome. He had thick black hair like his mother, Benanna, and grey-blue eyes like his father, Rufus.

21 YEARS OLD, 1896

I wish I knew about Albert's growing-up years. In Haywood County he always lived on a farm, but he did not want to be a farmer all his life. In late 1897 his parents and younger sisters moved into the town of Brownsville, Haywood's county seat, and Albert, obviously the adventurous one in the family, moved that same year to Dallas, Texas. He was twenty-one (possibly twenty-two) when he went to make his home in Dallas, which was the third largest city in Texas, with a population of about 40,000. Why Dallas I do not know, but his move to Texas had far-reaching consequences for the Tugwell family. The Dallas City Directory for 1898–1899 shows Albert S. Tugwell was a clerk at B. T. Robinson's and had rooms at the corner of Harwood and 141 San Jacinto Street.

A letter Benanna wrote to her oldest daughter, Luella Richardson, who was living in Dickson, Tennessee, reveals that Albert's oldest brother Will went down to Dallas to visit him in early October 1899. On 27 January 1900 Benanna died, and within three years all the rest of the family except brother Bob would move to Texas too. First, Will moved to west Texas (to Runnels County), and then Luella and her family moved to that part of the state too, but to Baylor County. In late 1902 Rufus and his youngest daughters—Stella, Ana, and Edna—moved to Dallas to join Will, who had left Runnels County, and Albert.

Until the mid-1950s there were five important department stores in Dallas, and at various times Albert was associated with three of them: Harris, Sanger, and Titches. When he first moved to Dallas, and after starting out at B. T. Robinson's,

Albert worked at A. Harris & Co.[1] In 1902 he was with the newly organized Titche-Goettinger and roomed at 161 Cabell. The 1903–1906 Dallas city directories show Albert continuing to be at Titche's, but now living with the Tugwell family in their home at 105 Matt. (In 1907 Matt Street was renamed Sycamore Avenue.)

Albert's brother Will, who was a pharmacist, died 21 May 1904. In 1906 Albert decided to go into business for himself, and he moved to Amarillo, a town of 5,000 people south of the Canadian River in the Texas Panhandle, where he opened Tugwell's Nickel Store. The idea of "5 and 10¢ stores" (such as well established Woolworth and Kress) was in vogue at the time. Drugstores and department stores in the first decade of the 1900s were not like what they would later develop into, carrying everything. Drugstores mostly sold medications, and department stores had various departments for fabrics and all types of clothing. So there was a good place for variety stores that carried everything in between, and the Tugwell Nickel Store had notions, toys, china, cut glass, first edition books, and hundreds of other items.

ALBERT TUGWELL, 1903

The next year Albert came back to Dallas to marry his sweetheart, Nell Ray, daughter of Lucinda Emaline (Frasier) and Edmund Rogers Ray, who lived at 2029 San Jacinto. Nell was born 28 December 1881 in Queen City, Cass County, Texas, at her grandparents' home. Albert and Nell's younger daughter, my first cousin Nell Ray (Tugwell) McClure, told me that my mother had introduced Albert and Nell. Nell played the organ at Westminster Presbyterian Church, and that was the church where they married on 14 January 1907.

On 14 July 1907 Albert's father, Rufus Tugwell, died in Dallas and was buried there in Greenwood Cemetery beside Will. Albert and Nell had two daughters, both born in Amarillo, Texas. Margaret was born 6 January 1908 and Nell Ray 13 October 1915.

The town of Amarillo was organized in 1887, and already by the next year was declared the best shipping point for range cattle in the Panhandle of Texas, in fact in the whole plains region. It was a natural, as it had plenty of grazing land, running water, and several intersecting railroad lines. Cattle were actually driven 300 miles to Amarillo to be shipped. This activity became less important as in the early 1900s many cattle ranches were divided into stock farms and settlers poured into the area. The fertile plains proved satisfactory for agriculture and became one of the great wheat-producing areas in the country. Amarillo, at the hub of it all, prospered and grew with the land traffic boom. Whereas in 1900 there were 1,442 residents, in 1906 (when Albert moved there) the population was 5,000, and in 1910 it was 9,957. There was a library, a College of Music, a brick opera house and brick schoolhouses, and an energetic Chamber of Commerce.

---

1. It was the next year,1899, when the nearby Linz Building, seven stories, was completed. It was regarded with awe and visitors frequented it to view the city from its top.

In Amarillo, Albert and his family were members of Polk Street Methodist Church. One of my husband Joe's uncles, Albert S. Rollins, was practicing law in Amarillo the same years Albert was there. He once told Joe that he and Albert Tugwell "just about ran that church."

After living nearly twelve years in Amarillo, Albert and Nell, Margaret, and Nell Ray moved back to Dallas in 1918. On 31 January 1919 they bought a home at 4912 Abbott in Highland Park, and Albert lived there the rest of his life. They were only a few blocks from Highland Park Methodist Church, joining the Church in 1918 and becoming active members. Within a year Albert was on the Board of Stewards, serving faithfully twenty years and ushering every Sunday. I still remember his nice conservative suits, neat appearance, and welcoming smile. When Albert's family joined the church, it was housed in a little brown wooden building near the southwestern end of the S.M.U. campus in what was later called Arden Forest, although then it was a treeless field.[2] The first service held in the beautiful new stone church building was in February 1927, and Albert Tugwell was one of the ushers.

"THE LITTLE BROWN CHURCH," 1917

I remember that my Aunt Nell and Uncle Albert had an upright piano with player-rolls in their living room. She always let my brother and me play the rolls, and we loved doing it.

Nell was fun and she was interesting to be with. I remember that in hay fever season she suffered greatly, but kept going. Being interested in genealogy, she did a lot of work on the Rays and allied family lines and was active in Daughters of the American Revolution, U. S. Daughters of 1812, and other genealogical and historical groups.

WHAT HIGHLAND PARK UNITED METHODIST CHURCH GREW TO BE

Albert was well known and well liked, and for about a quarter of a century continued in the retail business in Dallas. He spent many years as a floor manager, first at Sanger Bros. (which had opened in Dallas back in 1872), and then from 1923 until a few months before his death he was with Titche-Goettinger.

---

2. University Methodist Church was organized in 1916 with 168 charter members and A. Frank Smith (later a Bishop) the pastor. Although from the beginning the new church and S.M.U. (opened in 1915) were closely intertwined, in 1917 the Church changed its name to Highland Park Methodist Church and moved its services from the auditorium in S.M.U.'s Dallas Hall to the simple wooden building known affectionately as the "Little Brown Church." (Information my brother found in Doris Miller Johnson's 1966 *Golden Prologue to the Future.*)

Albert Sidney Tugwell died 14 June 1945 at the age of sixty-nine. Nell (Ray) Tugwell was sixty-four when Albert died and was a widow twenty-two and a half years, dying 3 January 1968 just six days after her eighty-sixth birthday. She was buried beside Albert and her parents in Oakland Cemetery in Dallas. Oakland was then in a quiet, very attractive neighborhood. With Albert's death there were only three surviving Tugwell siblings, his three younger sisters.

Children of Albert Sidney Tugwell and Nell (Ray):

1. *Margaret* Ann Tugwell: b. 6 January 1908, Amarillo, Texas; m. 9 June 1932, Dallas, Texas, *Fred*erick Thomas Porter, Jr. (b. 10 March 1904, d. 5 November 1971), son of Mary Womack Dashiell and Frederick T. Porter, deceased, of Terrell, Texas. Margaret and Fred lived in Terrell a few years and then returned to Dallas and lived there the rest of their lives. They were active at Highland Park Methodist Church and in community affairs. Margaret was president of the Dallas Lawyers Wives Club and the Highland Park Browning Club, a literary club. Fred was a successful and outstanding lawyer. Margaret d. 17 May 1976 in Dallas, Texas. She and Fred are buried in Oakland Cemetery, Terrell, Texas.
   Children:
   (1) Frederick Thomas ("Tom") Porter III: b. 23 November 1935, Terrell, Texas; m. (1) 6 September 1959, Lynette Fairey, Austin, Texas, div.; m. (2) 30 March 1985, *Lea* Gilbert Byrd, in Austin. Tom and Lea live in Scottsdale, Arizona.
      Adopted children of 1st marriage:
      1. Frederick Thomas ("Rick") IV: b. April 1966
      2. daughter Kelly: b. 1968 or 1969
   (2) *Lucinda* Ann Porter: b. 1 February 1937, Terrell, Kaufman County, Texas, and named Lucinda for her maternal great-grandmother, Lucinda Emaline Frasier, and Ann for her maternal great-aunt, Annie (Ray) Presley. m. 2 August 1958, Dallas, Texas, Richard Lewis ("Dick") McRoberts (b. 2 October 1932), son of Chesta Mae Roberson and Charles Monroe McRoberts, Sr. Lucinda and Dick lived at 4912 Abbott in Highland Park, the same home her Tugwell grandparents had bought in 1919. They and their four children attended Highland Park United Methodist Church. In June 1972 the family moved to Richmond, Virginia, where they still live.
      Children (all born in Dallas, Texas):
      1. *Brian* Porter McRoberts: b. 1 March 1960
      2. *Scot* Patrick McRoberts: b. 1 November 1962;
         m. 11 July 1987 in Richmond, Virginia, Teresa Lynne Kannan (b. 10 September 1963), daughter of Jacquelyn Ray (Pyles) and Mickael Moses Kannan
      3. *Andrew* Ray McRoberts: b. 13 September 1964; m. 20 May 1989 in Norfolk, Virginia, Constance Leigh ("Connie") Bruce (b. 24 December 1965), daughter of Rosalie Mae (Hughes) and Leonard Washington Bruce. Andrew, an attorney, and Connie live in Richmond, Virginia.
         Child:
         [1] Bruce *Porter* McRoberts: b. 15 January 1993
      4. *Mary* Margaret McRoberts: b. 27 April 1967;
         m. 11 September 1993, *Jeff*rey Lee Peterson

2. *Nell Ray* Tugwell:
b. 13 October 1915, in Amarillo, Texas; m. 14 January 1936 in Dallas, Texas, James Curtis "Jim" McClure (b. 28 April 1909, d. 8 May 1984), son of Ella Mae McDermott and Noah Walter McClure of Shreveport, Louisiana. Nell Ray met Jim (at a Chi Omega sorority houseparty) when she went to Centenary College in Shreveport in 1934. The first year she lived with Aunt Ana (Tugwell) and Uncle John Hardin on the college campus, then in the dormitory, and in 1936 married Jim. They lived 39 years in their cedar shake house at 3812 Creswell. When Jim died in 1984, they had been married 48 years. In April 1991 Nell Ray moved to a condominium, where she presently lives.

NELL RAY (TUGWELL) AND JIM MCCLURE
8 MAY 1982

Children (both born and married in Shreveport, Louisiana):

(1) James *Curt*is McClure, Jr.: b. 5 January 1940; m. 18 April 1964, Mary *Carol* Foster Brock (b. 5 October 1943), daughter of Maureen Carroll Foster Brock and Keith Casper Foster. Curt and Carol live in Shreveport.

Children:

1. James Curtis ("Jim") III: b. 25 November 1964; m. 30 January 1993, *Carlyn* Ann Berghoff, and they live in Chicago
2. Marilyn Foster: b. 16 October 1967; a 3d year medical student (in 1993) at Louisiana State University in New Orleans
3. *Emily* Carol (twin): b. 10 June 1971; a graphic artist and will graduate December 1993 from Auburn University
4. *Elizabeth* Ray (twin): b. 10 June 1971; graduated June 1993 from Auburn University as a Registered Nurse with a B.S. degree and is now at Chicago Children's Hospital, Neonatal Unit

(2) Peggy ("Peg") McClure: b. 10 November 1942; m. 23 November 1974, *Charlton* Havard Lyons, Jr., and they live in Shreveport

SIXTH CHILD OF ROBERT RUFUS TUGWELL AND BENANNA ALICE FINCH

STELLA MAY TUGWELL
(1879–1955)

STELLA MAY TUGWELL, the second daughter of Benanna Alice (Finch) and Robert Rufus Tugwell, was born 16 September 1879 near Brownsville, Haywood County, Tennessee. Although she was always called Stella, she carried the same middle name as her mother's younger sister, Lillie May. When Stella was born, her older sister Luella was eleven, and her brothers were Will nine, Bob six, and Albert three. She would have two younger sisters, Ana and Edna.

STELLA TUGWELL
16 YEARS OLD

It is really a shame to know so few dates and specific facts about Aunt Stella. I have regrets that the family talked so little about the past. The first twenty-three years of her life Stella lived in Haywood County, Tennessee. After going to the Brownsville Female Academy, she taught in a county school. After her mother died in 1900 and the family (except brother Bob) moved to Texas in 1902, she taught school in the west Texas towns of Seymour and Clarendon. Seymour was where her older sister Luella and family lived, and Clarendon was 110 miles northwest of there.

Stella and James Addison Walker (born 23 March 1863) met or renewed acquaintance when she was teaching in Clarendon. He was the son of Ann Addison (born in South Carolina) and Dr. Allen Walker (born in Tennessee, where his parents had moved from North Carolina).[1] Jim grew up in Humphreys County, Tennessee, and was enumerated there in the 1900 census, single, insurance agent, as a boarder in the household of the Ed S. Purvis family in Waverly, the county seat.[2] At some period between 1892 and 1902 and before he moved to Texas, however, Jim lived less than twenty-five miles east of there, in Dickson, the county seat of Dickson County,[3] where Luella (Tugwell) and Dr. John Richardson lived. It is very possible that Jim knew the Richardsons and met Stella when she was there visiting her sister.

Stella and Jim married in Dallas in 1909 and lived in Ennis, about thirty miles south of Dallas.[4] When they married, Stella was thirty and Jim was forty-six, and they were a handsome couple. Uncle Jim was slim and several inches

1. Dr. Walker had been a Confederate surgeon in the Civil War.
2. Humphreys County, Tennessee, 1900 Census, Enumeration District 19, p. 6.
3. Ana (Tugwell) Hardin's daughter, Edna Earnest, has several of our Uncle Jim's books with his name on the flypage, and *Pilgrim's Progress* (pub. 1881) has "J. Addison Walker, Dickson, Tenn."
4. Edna Earnest also has four volumes by James Whitcomb Riley with "James A. Walker, Ennis, Texas, July 15, 1908" in the front.

over six feet, and one of the most impeccable dressers there ever was. Aunt Stella was about five feet seven inches and carried herself proudly. She had dark hair as a young woman and very blue eyes, and was perhaps a bit vain about her looks.

STELLA TUGWELL WALKER
CA. 1920

Stella and Jim were in Ennis several years. I do not know the year they moved to Dallas (possibly ca. 1915), but in 1920 they were living at 4121 Junius Avenue, and by the mid-1920s had bought their home at 5844 Marquita.

Stella and Jim had no children, and called one another "Sweetheart." This, and the fact that their house on Marquita always looked perfect, made an impression on me when I was a child. For a few years they lived in El Paso, Texas, where they moved for Uncle Jim's health. (He smoked long, Cuban cigars, and he had a deep cough.) Our family visited them there the summer of 1932. After their return to their home in Dallas, I remember many times our family visited on Sunday afternoons, and always had refreshments, such as lemonade in blue, Mexican blown glasses and cookies, served prettily. My brother H.C. and I liked to go up the long, long block from their house to the streetcar (trolley) line where we daringly put a couple of pennies (never both at once) on the track to see them heated and smashed beyond recognition. Sometimes I was invited to spend the night, and on these occasions I was so pampered that I felt like a princess. They dearly loved all their Texas nieces and nephews—John and Edna Hardin (Edna called Aunt Stella "Doddy"), Margaret and Nell Ray Tugwell, and H.C. and me—but because I was youngest, I received special attention.

Jim Walker was an independent insurance salesman with State Life Insurance of Indianapolis. Growing up, I thought they were quite well off financially, but later I realized the good years were balanced by far less remunerative years. Stella was only fifty-six when Jim Walker died on 16 December 1935. She continued to live in their home on Marquita. Stella was still an attractive woman and probably could have remarried after Jim died, but she did not want to hear any talk of it and always said he was the one love of her life.

After a few years Stella rented a bedroom of her home to a lovely young working woman, Ella Davis, who until her marriage in the early 1940s was an understanding friend and companion to Stella. Stella's oldest sister, Luella, who had lost her husband six months before Jim Walker died, came in 1943 to live with Stella. She had been living in Shreveport, Louisiana, with the Hardins for about two years. Luella died in Dallas in May 1945, and the next month their brother

Albert died. In the late 1940s Stella decided she should sell her house. In breaking up housekeeping, Aunt Stella gave me her teacart, which I dearly love. My husband and I have had it in our dining room in Denison, Austin, and Houston.

Stella had a lot of pride, and she hated to give up her home. First she lived in a spacious upstairs room in a big beautiful old frame house in the area where the Hardins had lived on Swiss Avenue and where my parents had married. It was somewhere between Ross Avenue and Gaston Avenue, was a corner house, and had windows nearly all the way around the room. Aunt Stella had a knack for making a place look attractive and feel homey, and it was lovely. After a couple of years she moved to a small apartment in a red brick apartment house on Abbott Street.

Stella's youngest sister, my mother Edna, died 9 January 1953. Ever since Jim's death in 1935 my parents had tried to help Stella manage on her own, which was not always easy. Stella tried to be thrifty and selfless I am sure, but it really was not her nature to be so.

In 1953 Stella moved to Shreveport to live with Ana, her only surviving sister. Ana and John Hardin had lived for years on the campus of Centenary College, and were known and loved all over Shreveport. It gave a new lease on life to Stella to be in this household where interesting things were going on, but it was not easy for Aunt Ana, concerned with her husband John's deteriorating health.

Stella May Tugwell Walker died 27 June 1955 at the age of seventy-five. She had just stepped out of her car, and had a heart attack. About six weeks after Stella's death, Ana's husband died. Of the four girls and three boys of Benanna (Finch) and Rufus Tugwell who lived to maturity, now only Ana, the penultimate child, was left.

SEVENTH CHILD OF ROBERT RUFUS TUGWELL
AND BENANNA ALICE FINCH

BENANNA ALICE ("ANA") TUGWELL
(1881–1962)

ANA TUGWELL, named Ben*anna* Alice, was the third daughter of Robert Rufus Tugwell and Benanna Alice (Finch). She was born 3 May 1881 in Haywood County, Tennessee, near the town of Brownsville. Ana, like all her siblings, grew up on a farm. The family did not buy a home in Brownsville until 1897. By then none of her brothers were at home—Will was working in Dresden, Tennessee, Bob had married, and Albert had moved to Texas.

When her mother died in January 1900, Ana was eighteen years old and attending the Brownsville Female Academy, which was called "a finishing school." In late 1902 Ana moved to Dallas, Texas, with her father Rufus and sisters Stella and Edna, where Albert had moved five years earlier. Will was in Dallas after living about two years in Clarendon in west Texas, and Luella and her husband John Richardson had recently moved from Dickson, Tennessee, to Seymour, Texas. Only brother Bob and his family stayed in the Brownsville, Tennessee, area.

JOHN HARDIN AND ANA TUGWELL
CA. 1905

In Dallas Rufus, Will, Albert, and the girls lived in a house at 105 Matt Street (soon to be called Sycamore Avenue), and the three men were employed. Soon Stella moved to Seymour to live with the Richardsons and teach school, but after a brief time there went to teach in Clarendon, where Will lived briefly too. Will died in 1904 in Comfort, Texas. In 1906 Albert moved to Amarillo, Texas. By then Rufus was not able to work full time as his lip cancer had progressed, so Ana stayed home to take care of him and Edna got a job in downtown Dallas.

Rufus died 14 July 1907 and was buried beside his son Will at Greenwood Cemetery in Dallas. Six weeks later Ana married John Alexander Hardin, son of James Horace Hardin and Anna Cora (Patterson). John was born 15 June 1880 in the Ten Mile community, Meigs County, Tennessee, about forty-five miles southwest of Knoxville. John spent most of his boyhood years on a farm outside of Sweetwater, Tennessee, and attended Sweetwater College. He graduated from the University of Tennessee, and started work on his master's degree at the University of Chicago. When he moved to Dallas, John taught at one of the largest private

schools in Dallas, University Military School located on the northwest corner of Haskell Avenue at Main.[1]

Ana Tugwell and John Hardin met at Grace Methodist Church, which they both attended and where Ana sang in the choir. Ana had flame-colored red hair as a child, that turned into a pretty auburn when she was grown. Her eyes were brown, and she was about five feet seven inches tall, with beautiful posture.

Ana and John married at the home of her older sister Luella Richardson in Seymour, Texas, 26 August 1907. Stella and Edna were there, but Albert and his wife Nell (Ray), who lived in Amarillo, were not able to attend. Nell was pregnant and possibly it was too hard a trip for her to make. Ana and John's first home was 105 Sycamore in Dallas, where twenty-two year old Edna continued to live.

This arrangement lasted about a year. In the summer of 1908 Ana and John moved to El Paso, Texas, and in late August Edna sold the Tugwell home at 105 Sycamore. In El Paso John taught at El Paso Military Institute, a preparatory school, where they lived with other faculty, and here their first child, John, Jr., was born 19 February 1909. One faculty member could speak German, and the family story is that they were there long enough that little John was talking in German as well as English.

In 1911 Ana, John, and John, Jr., moved back to Dallas, where John Hardin organized and became Principal of Hardin School for Boys. His brother, Roy H. Hardin, was Assistant Principal. A city directory advertisement at the time read:

> A select preparatory school. Prepares for the best Colleges and Universities. Men teachers of successful experience. Firm discipline, thorough work. Attendance limited.

HARDIN SCHOOL FOR BOYS

Ana and John, John, Jr., Roy Hardin, and Ana's younger sister Edna all lived in a big house at 4507 Reiger, near the corner at Carroll.[2] Edna had supported herself for eight years and was now secretary-treasurer of Lee Newbury, Inc. On 12 May 1913 Ana and John's second child was born and was named Edna Gertrude for her Aunt Edna. In September, my father Hicks Carr Maiden moved from near Abingdon, Virginia, to Dallas to teach at the Hardin School for Boys. He had been recommended by J. Luke Hardin, Treasurer of Emory and Henry College where Hicks graduated, and was John Hardin's uncle. (My father Hicks always referred to J. Luke Hardin as "a prince of a fellow.") Hicks boarded at Ana and John's, and three years later, when he married Edna Tugwell, became Uncle Hicks to John, Jr., and Edna Hardin. All of their lives my parents (Edna and Hicks) had a very special feeling for the whole Hardin family.

Adapting to the times, Hardin School for Boys became Hardin Military School during World War I, but the school fell on hard times. Although accredited and

---

1. One of the school's ads in 1907 reveals a sign of the times: "Incorrigibles and cigarette fiends forbidden admittance. Twenty boarders in the home of the president, John B. Dodson. Attendance limited to eighty pupils." Other private schools in Dallas in the early 1900s were The Terrill School, Dallas Academy, St. Mary's College (Episcopal), and Academy of Our Lady of Good Counsel.
2. In the early 1900s East Dallas was one of the best places to live, and even in the 1940s still showed signs of its early beauty through its tree-lined streets and large, old houses. Now it is not the most desirable residential location, being too close to downtown, east of Interstate 45 (Central Expressway) and north of Interstate 30.

capably run, it could not compete with the Terrill School for Boys, an older and better-funded preparatory school in Dallas.

Hardin School had several locations in its eight years of existence, at the northwest corner of Haskell and Main, at the corner of Swiss and Haskell,[3] and in a final big effort to make a go of it, in 1918 leased the Carruth homestead, a fine old home out on Greenville Road. In 1919 Miss Ela Hockaday purchased the Carruth homestead for her prospering school for girls, and Hardin School had to move.[4]

4021 SWISS AVENUE, DALLAS

In 1919 Ana and John Hardin, son John, Jr., and little Edna moved across town to 118 E. Bishop Street in Oak Cliff, then an attractive area in Dallas across (west of) the Trinity River that runs through Dallas. For the first time the Hardin family did not live at the school, but across the street in a duplex. The family lived in Oak Cliff three years.

After teaching more than fifteen years in preparatory schools, John Hardin made a big change. The family moved to Shreveport, Louisiana, in the summer of 1922 and John became head of the mathematics department at Centenary College, becoming dean in 1924. When the move was made to Shreveport, Ana was forty-one, John forty-two, John, Jr., thirteen, and Edna nine.

Edna, my first cousin who is now eighty, wrote me of the early years in Shreveport. When they moved to Shreveport her parents were terribly in debt, but did not consider bankruptcy honorable. After their first school year there, John and Ana went to Chicago for the summer, where John finished his Master's degree that had been interrupted at the University of Chicago when he ran short of money years earlier, and Ana took a short course in Library Science. John, Jr., spent that summer on his Uncle Joe Hardin's farm in Oklahoma, and Edna stayed in Dallas with "Doddy" (Aunt Stella) and Uncle Jim Walker.

Ana Tugwell Hardin, who had never held a paying job before, became Librarian at Centenary College. The Library was not well organized, and books had not even been accessioned. The very early years in Shreveport were doubtless hard, but it was surely a case of "All's well that ends well." Ana and John Hardin served Centenary College faithfully and with distinction during the expansion of the 1920s, the Depression of the 1930s, and the war years of the 1940s. They were also active in community affairs and at the First Methodist Church.

The Hardin family's life centered on Centenary College, and their home was beautifully situated on the campus grounds. John, Jr., and Edna both graduated from Centenary. Ana was Librarian for about eleven years, and John was Dean of Centenary for twenty-three years, from 1924 until 1947. He then remained as head of the mathematics department until ill health forced his retirement in 1953. At commencement exercises that year he was awarded the honorary degree of Doctor of Laws. Two years after John's death, a new dormitory was named Hardin Hall in honor of Dean John Hardin. Not only was he recognized as one of the leading mathematicians of the South, but he and Ana were truly loved and respected by all who knew them.

---

3. The Hardins had moved to this large and beautiful home at 4021 Swiss Avenue because it was spacious enough to house the family and the school rooms, and the grounds were suitable for the students' calisthenics and baseball and basketball practices. Swiss Avenue, with its wide esplanade dividing the street, was new then. Since 1973 it has been part of the designated Historical District of Dallas because of the unique examples of early twentieth century residential architecture in the area.
4. The Terrill School for Boys continued a number of years, and The Hockaday School expanded and moved from its Greenville Avenue location in 1961 to Forest Lane and Welch Road.

John A. Hardin died at his home on the campus, 108 Sexton Drive, 6 August 1955, at the age of seventy-five. He was a kind, gentle, wonderful man, a Christian gentleman. The following is a brief excerpt from a tribute given by the College president, Dr. Joe J. Mickle, at Uncle John's funeral:

> He was earnest and sincere—yet possessed of a wonderful sense of humor ...I have said that I believe that no person in the 130-year history of Centenary College ever left such a fine imprint on the lives of students over so long a period of time. Now the wonderful thing about his influence on students was that it grew stronger and deeper through the years—they never forgot what this man stood for. His friendships did not wear out.

JOHN AND ANA HARDIN, 1947
RETIRED FROM THE DEANSHIP
AT CENTENARY COLLEGE

Ana was a widow six and a half years. She continued to live in her home on the campus, where she had lived nearly forty years. A founder of Centenary Women's Club many years before, she continued active and in good health until her death on 25 February 1962. She lacked a little over two months being eighty-one, and had outlived all her siblings. A friendly, attractive, capable, very charming woman, Ana always had a wide circle of friends. Ana (Tugwell) Hardin was buried beside her husband in Forest Park Cemetery, Shreveport, Louisiana.

Children of Benanna Alice ("Ana") (Tugwell) and John Alexander Hardin:

1. *John* Alexander Hardin, Jr.:
   b. 19 February 1909 El Paso, Texas; m. 20 May 1933, Opal Roquemore, Shreveport, Louisiana. The Hardin family had a special place in my heart, and several summers I spent a week visiting Aunt Ana and Uncle John. I loved "Little John," who married when I was eleven, and had wanted to marry him myself! He was so good to me, had such a warm personality, could play great tunes on the piano, was good-looking, and so kind and likeable. He was a smart man too, and successful in business. After graduating from Centenary College, John worked at an oil refinery in Bossier City (just across the Red River from Shreveport). When the United States got into World War II, he was sent to Little Rock, Arkansas, to work at an ordnance plant. Somewhere in those years he was noticed by a man who became president of Universal Oil Products, a

JOHN A. HARDIN, JR.
ABOUT 55 YEARS OLD

huge company based in Des Plaines, Illinois. The day after the war ended, Mr. Harris called and asked John to be Personnel Director of UOP. This took Opal and John to Chicago in 1945. They moved to Evanston, and John did well with the company. After retirement, Opal wanted to move back to Shreveport, and they did, in the early 1970s.
d. 5 November 1976, in Shreveport, Louisiana, of a heart attack. Since John's death, Opal has continued to live in Shreveport. No descendants.

2. *Edna* Gertrude Hardin: b. 12 May 1913, Dallas, Texas; m. 8 January 1938, Jesse *Clyde* Earnest (b. 20 August 1912, d. 14 July 1984), son of Loni Bishop and Jesse S. Earnest, Shreveport, Louisiana. When I visited in Shreveport as a young teenager, Edna took me swimming at the Natatorium, let me watch her put on makeup, and tried to teach me to play popular music on the piano with chords. I thought she was so glamorous. She was good to me, and made me wish I had a sister.

EDNA AND CLYDE EARNEST, 1982

The first nine years after Edna and Clyde's marriage in 1938 they lived in Houma, Louisiana, southwest of New Orleans, where Clyde worked for Texaco Oil Company. In February 1947 they moved to New Orleans and Clyde worked for John H. Carter Co. as a manufacturer's representative. With his engineering experience he was very skilled at selling engineering products to oil companies. Combining good products with Clyde's honesty, good personality, and natural talents made for a very successful career. Edna and Clyde had a very happy marriage and an active social life. After Clyde retired, they took trips all over the world, and since his death in 1984 Edna has continued to travel worldwide. She lives near New Orleans in a townhouse in Metairie .
Children:
(1) *John* Clyde Earnest: b. 24 June 1941, Houma, Louisiana; m. (1) 19 July 1963, Nancy Brauner, daughter of Evelyn and Randall Brauner,

New Orleans; div. 3 January 1983; m. (2) 7 April 1984, Carole Lewis, daughter of Maggie Fuller and George B. Lewis, in Delhi, Louisiana. John and Carole live in West Monroe, Louisiana, and John is retired.

Children of 1st marriage:

1. Shawn Earnest: b. 30 September 1964; m. 28 June 1986, Brian Brown. They live in Monroe, Louisiana.

   Children:

   [1] Blake (twin): b. 4 May 1988

   [2] Cory (twin): b. 4 May 1988

   [3] Tiffany: b. 29 April 1991

2. Shannon Earnest: b. 11 July 1966

(2) Elizabeth ("Betty") Earnest: b. 12 October 1947, New Orleans, Louisiana; m. 22 October 1968, Alan Boudreaux, son of Anna Talamo and Clayton Boudreaux of Slidell, Louisiana; div. August 1973. Betty lives in New Orleans and is a lawyer.

Child:

1. Elizabeth Bishop ("Beth") Boudreaux: b. 15 June 1969

EIGHTH CHILD OF ROBERT RUFUS TUGWELL
AND BENANNA ALICE FINCH

EDNA GERTRUDE TUGWELL
(1885–1953)

BORN 25 AUGUST 1885 near Brownsville, Haywood County, Tennessee, Edna Gertrude Tugwell was the youngest of the eight children of Benanna Alice Finch and Robert Rufus Tugwell. Her siblings were Luella seventeen, Will (whom she always referred to as "Buddy Willie") fifteen, Bob twelve, Albert nine, Stella five, and Ana four. Edna was my mother, and forty years after her death I write about her with a full and grateful heart. She was sixty-seven when she died. I am now seventy-one.

As a child I heard Mother had the "Tugwell eyes," which meant they were deep-set, pensive, and somewhat sad. Her auburn hair she inherited from her father, and her large and expressive brown eyes were inherited from her mother, who was a Finch. Edna was of average height, not as tall as Stella and Ana, and maybe not as pretty in the classic sense. Whatever the case, Edna's more than redeeming feature was her warm, friendly, and ready smile. Accompanying this was a very winning, warm, and outgoing personality that drew people to her. Edna's attitude toward life had a powerful effect on my brother and me. She knew that words and thoughts not only affect one's own happiness but that of others as well. This attitude, and her cheerful disposition, along with our father's calm steadiness, contributed greatly to our happy homelife.

On what would have been Mother's sixty-eighth birthday, 25 August 1953, her favorite sister, Ana, wrote Father:

> I've been re-living in my mind so much the past days the sweet memories which start with the coming into my life of a lovely little red-haired sister. She was always so dear to me, and the older we grew the closer we became to each other. We all have such dear and precious memories of a life that was lived for everyone but herself. She was always the very *light* of our home.

Several letters Father received right after Mother's death specifically mentioned her unselfishness, and that her life appeared dedicated to rendering useful, loving service to others.

People were comfortable around Mother; as Father said, "She never knew a stranger." She tried to help other people, but did not intrude or interfere. Mother had what today would be called a remarkable "network." She seemed to know and have a connection with so many people in all walks of life, and she kept in contact with an unbelievable number of people.

I always had the impression that Mother felt her childhood ended abruptly. Her mother died 27 January 1900 when she was fourteen and a half. In late 1902 Edna, Ana, and Stella left their home in Brownsville with their father to move to far-off Dallas, Texas. Albert had been in Dallas five years and had encouraged the family to come join him in Texas. In 1902 "Sister" (Luella) and her family (Dr. Richardson and little Hazel) had moved from Dickson, Tennessee, to

DOWNTOWN DALLAS, CA. 1902

Seymour in west Texas. "Buddy Willie" (Will), who had been working in Dresden, Tennessee, moved first to Runnels County in west Texas and then to Dallas by the time Rufus and the three unmarried sisters arrived there. Only Bob Tugwell stayed in Haywood County, Tennessee. This was a complete and final break with the past, and for seventeen year old Edna the end of her formal education. Whereas her adventurous brother Albert looked on Texas as the land of opportunity, Edna was closing the door on her childhood and the known assurances of a small town of 2,800 people.[1] In 1902 the population of the big city of Dallas was approximately 45,000. (The only larger Texas city was San Antonio, as Dallas had bypassed Houston by then.)

In Dallas, Rufus and his children, Will, Albert, Stella, Ana, and Edna, lived at 105 Matt Street (now Sycamore Avenue).[2] Rufus and Albert were both associated with retail dry goods stores: Rufus at the Milam Mercantile Company and Albert at Titche-Goettinger, Dallas' big, new department store. Will, who had worked in Tennessee as a pharmacist, continued that work in Dallas. Stella had taught school in Tennessee, and shortly after the family came to Texas, went to Seymour to resume her teaching career. There she lived with her older sister, Luella, and her physician husband, Dr. John A. Richardson, and their little adopted daughter, Hazel. Soon Stella had a teaching job in Clarendon, one hundred forty miles northwest of Seymour.

In late 1903 or early 1904 Will had to move to west Texas for his health. He lived briefly in Clarendon, then died in a sanitarium in Comfort, Texas, in May 1904. Income was needed to keep the family in Dallas afloat. Albert was working as hard as he could; Rufus was working, but I wonder how steadily, as he had developed lip cancer which started at the place where his pipe rested on his lip. To help bring in money, Edna did what was very unusual for a refined young woman in the early 1900s: she got an office job in downtown

EDNA TUGWELL
18 YEARS OLD

1. The population of Brownsville in 1993 is 10,224; of Haywood County, 19,654.
2. Situated in east Dallas, Sycamore is the first street northwest of Swiss Avenue.

Dallas. I remember she once said it was a sad day when she "put up her hair" (on top of her head) and had to go to work. (Remember, dear reader, this was ninety years ago.) However, she was extremely capable and found out she had a "head for business." Ana, who was four years older than Edna, stayed home and kept house. Edna got a job at Lee Newbury, Inc., probably in 1903, the year she turned eighteen. I have a stock certificate showing she owned a $100 share in the company, dated 1 August 1904. Lee Newbury must have been a good employer, as Edna worked there thirteen years.

In 1906 Albert moved from Dallas to Amarillo, Texas. He came back to Dallas in January 1907 to marry Nell Ray and take her back with him. So, by late 1906 only Rufus and his two youngest daughters, Ana and Edna, were living at the home on Sycamore Avenue in Dallas. In July 1907 Rufus died from lip cancer and was buried next to his oldest son, Will, at Greenwood Cemetery in Dallas. Probably there was not enough money to take Rufus' body back to Brownsville to be buried beside Benanna, but sentiment could have played a part, as now Rufus would be buried near his son Will in the family plot in their new home state, chosen of necessity.

With Rufus' death the household broke up. Ana, who had probably postponed getting married, was free to wed her sweetheart, John A. Hardin, who taught at the University Military School in Dallas (founded in 1898). They married in August 1907, the month after Rufus' death, and the following year moved to El Paso, Texas. Stella was still teaching school in Clarendon, Texas.

EDNA TUGWELL, CA. 1911

Edna was twenty-two and completely alone in Dallas as far as family was concerned. Surely other arrangements could have been made, but she had the spirit and self-confidence to want to stay in Dallas with her steady office job at Lee Newbury Shoe Company and manage on her own.[3] The decision showed her independence. With none of her siblings now living in Dallas (Luella Richardson lived in Seymour, Albert Tugwell in Amarillo, Ana Hardin in El Paso, and Stella Tugwell in Clarendon), on 28 September 1908 Edna took care of selling the house at 105 Sycamore Avenue. The deed was prepared in Dallas and Edna sent it to her sisters and Albert for their signatures. The purchaser was Mrs. M. A. Miller, and the price was $2,000.[4]

On 28 May 1908 Edna bought fifty $1 shares in Eagle Bird Mining and Milling Company based in Salt Lake

3. A completely unrelated, but contemporary, historical aside re Dallas: The Praetorian Building, started in 1904 and completed in 1908, was fifteen stories tall, giving Dallas the first real "skyscraper" in the southwest.
4. Dallas County Deed Records, vol. 611, p. 325. Edna retained a vendor's second lien secured by a deed of trust on the property. When the note was paid, she signed the release giving clear title on 11 April 1914. The release is recorded in vol. 705, p. 1.

City, Utah. I have this certificate, made out to Miss Edna Gertrude Tugwell. Whether she made or lost money on this venture I do not know, but I do admire her trying to make her money work for her.

The 1909 Dallas City Directory showed Miss Edna G. Tugwell living at 355 Worth Street. Here, near Worth and Haskell Avenue, Edna had room and board in the home of the Edward S. McLaughlin family for three years. From 1909 until she quit working in early 1916 to marry, Edna was listed in the City Directory as Secretary-Treasurer of Lee Newbury, Inc., Boots and Shoes, with two downtown stores, at 258 Elm and 550 Elm Street. This was a rather impressive title for a young woman in those days.

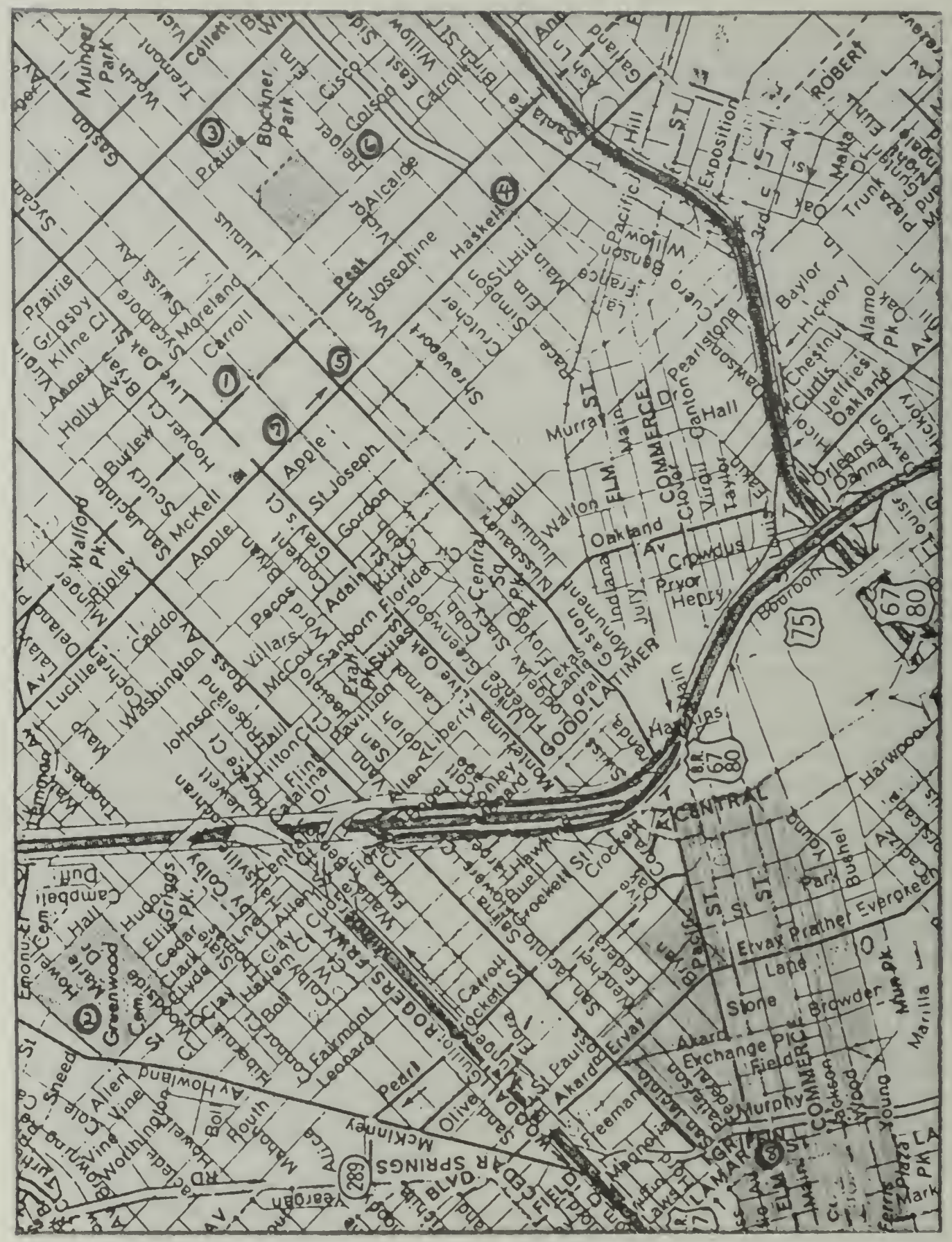
In 1911 Ana and John Hardin with little John, Jr., moved back to Dallas from El Paso. John had been a teacher in Dallas before teaching in El Paso, and now he and his brother Roy opened the Hardin School for Boys in Dallas on the northwest corner of the intersection of North Haskell and Main Street. In 1912 Edna moved into Ana and John's home, contributing her share to the household budget and being happy to have a real home again with family. In May 1913 Ana and John named their second child for her adoring aunt.

It was about this time that Edna made some real estate investments.[5] On 6 August 1912 she bought Lot No. 5 in Block No. 4 of Wesley Place Addition for $650. After a small down payment she would make monthly payments (at seven percent interest) to C. M. Harless, agent for S. C. Riddle.[6] This lot is on Asbury Avenue in (present) University Park, and is a block south and two blocks east of where our family later lived at 3609 McFarlin Boulevard. The Asbury lot is a block west of Hillcrest and S.M.U. (Southern Methodist University).[7] On 4 October 1913 Edna G. Tugwell, *femme sole*, made another purchase. This was Lot 13 in Block O of the addition called East-We-Go, which she purchased for $1,400. She paid Caroline and G. L. Williams $900 cash and signed a note (at eight percent interest) for $500 to Mrs. David Cooper for the balance to be paid out monthly in five years.[8] This lot was commercial property on Santa Fe Avenue, bordering on the Gulf Coast & Santa Fe Railroad. The East-We-Go Addition was two blocks wide and eight blocks long, bounded by Santa Fe Avenue and Grand Avenue at top and bottom and Henderson Street and Graham Avenue on the sides. Its developers had seen that the city was growing east and chose the whimsical name East-We-Go for their addition. Edna's lot is about half a mile north of Thornton Freeway and a little over a mile and a quarter north of the Cotton Bowl at Fair Park. Before Edna married she also bought a lot on Preston Road near Mockingbird Lane, as well as a lot in east Texas, but I have not been able to locate either of those deeds. I am really awed by Mother's thrift and business sense, by the fact that before she was thirty she had invested some of her money in four lots.

On 25 August 1913 Edna was twenty-eight. In her working days in early Dallas, 1903–1916, she got to know many business men, some of whom later were prominent citizens. (The groundwork for her large network of friends from all walks of life started early.) Edna had a number of "beaus" (the term in those days for sweetheart or admirer), and I know that one, Paul Penland, gave her a silverplated chafing dish for the popular "Welsh rabbit" (a melted cheese dish).[9]

---

5. My brother got the Mapco Maps and plats for me.
6. Vol. 553, p. 242; plat recorded in Dallas County Maps Book 1, p. 362.
7. Methodists will recognize the name Asbury.
8. Vol. 595, p. 534. Edna was still paying on the note when she married, and she and Father did not get it paid off in 1918, so arranged in October 1918 for a three-year extension at the same interest (vol. 751, p. 498).
9. I have this handsome chafing dish, and with the silverplate removed some years ago, the brass underneath is beautiful.



THE WORLD OF EDNA TUGWELL, 1902–1916, SHOWN ON A MODERN MAP OF DALLAS

1. 105 SYCAMORE AVENUE —FIRST HOME IN DALLAS (1902–1908)
2. GREENWOOD CEMETERY—BROTHER WILL TUGWELL AND RUFUS TUGWELL BURIED THERE (1904, 1907)
3. 355 WORTH STREET—THE MCLAUGHLIN HOME (1909–1912)
4. HARDIN SCHOOL—FIRST LOCATION, HASKELL AT MAIN (1911–1915)
5. GRACE METHODIST CHURCH—EDNA TUGWELLS' CHURCH (1903–1919)
6. 4507 REIGER—THE HARDINS' HOME (1911–1915)
7. 4021 SWISS AVENUE—THE HARDINS' HOME (1915–1918)
8. DOWNTOWN DALLAS—LEE NEWBURY, INC. (1903–1916)

Edna belonged to a young ladies' social club called Epsilon Phi Tau. She was also very active in the young people's group at Grace Methodist Church, located on the northwest corner of Haskell Avenue at Junius, the Rev. A. L. Andrews, pastor.[10] In addition to weekly activities at the church, there were some out-of-town excursions, and I have wondered how many times Edna got to make these trips. I vaguely remember (but find it hard to believe) hearing there was a trip to San Francisco. At least I have Mother's sterling silver spoon showing symbols of California. I know there was a 1905 trip to Colorado, as I have a picture of her on a donkey with a group going up Pike's Peak. On the back of the picture she wrote, "The most fun I ever had." She was self-supporting, thrifty, family-oriented, and enjoying life.

GRACE METHODIST CHURCH
DALLAS, TEXAS

Edna seemed in no hurry to marry. She was a matchmaker for others but not for herself. A sweetly teasing letter from Rev. Andrews (who had become pastor at First Methodist Church in Wichita Falls), written when she did marry, mentioned it was her time after she had matched up so many others. Mother's answer to me when I once asked her why she waited late to marry was never completely satisfactory. She said she did not want to marry early, as her mother had married so young and had so many children and died too young. Whatever the reason, the right man would soon come along.

EDNA AND HICKS
1915

In the fall of 1913 the right man did. Hicks Carr Maiden came to Dallas to teach at the Hardin School for Boys and live in the Hardins' home at 4507 Reiger. Edna called Hicks "Mr. Maiden" at this time, a quaint habit she continued in later years, when she wasn't calling him "Father."

The wedding date was set for the first day of June, 1916. Edna was thirty and Hicks was twenty-seven. Hicks was the son of the Rev. John Milton Maiden and Sarah Jane Grubb of Glenford, Virginia, seven miles northeast of Abingdon. He was a graduate of Emory and Henry College in Washington County, Virginia, and had taken graduate courses at Columbia University until his money ran out. J. Luke Hardin, a Tennessean and the Treasurer of Emory and Henry, was instrumental in Hicks going to Dallas and teaching at his nephew's Hardin School for Boys. Hicks was the only one of his siblings to leave Virginia permanently.

Edna's two older sisters, Stella (Mrs. James A. Walker) and Ana (Mrs. John A. Hardin) gave an announcement party at the family home, now at 4021 Swiss Avenue.[11] *The Dallas Morning News* writeup mentioned that the bride-to-be's

---

10. In 1902 the North Texas Conference of the Methodist Episcopal Church, South, authorized the combining of two congregations, the Floyd Street Mission and the Haskell Avenue Methodist Church (at Haskell and East Side). On 31 March 1903 the two congregations met together for the first time, in a temporary tabernacle, and decided that the name of this new church would be Grace Methodist Church. In 1903 the first unit of the building was completed, and the size of the congregation and the church itself grew steadily.
11. See footnote 3 in previous chapter on Edna's sister Ana.

chosen colors of pink and white were "featured in the house decorations, bowls of pink and white roses and vases of old-fashioned bridal wreath being placed throughout the library and music-room." Embroidered guest towels were given Edna and the game of hearts was played. At the close of the last game three year old Edna Gertrude Hardin appeared, "dressed in a white embroidered frock with pink ribbons, carrying a daintily decorated box, which she presented to Mrs. W. H. Allen, telling her that she had brought her something from Dan Cupid. On opening the box, a beautiful white carrier pigeon was disclosed, which, upon being set free, unfurled white satin ribbons, to the end of which was attached the message from Cupid, which Mrs. Allen read. An ice course was served to about forty guests." Now that was a party!

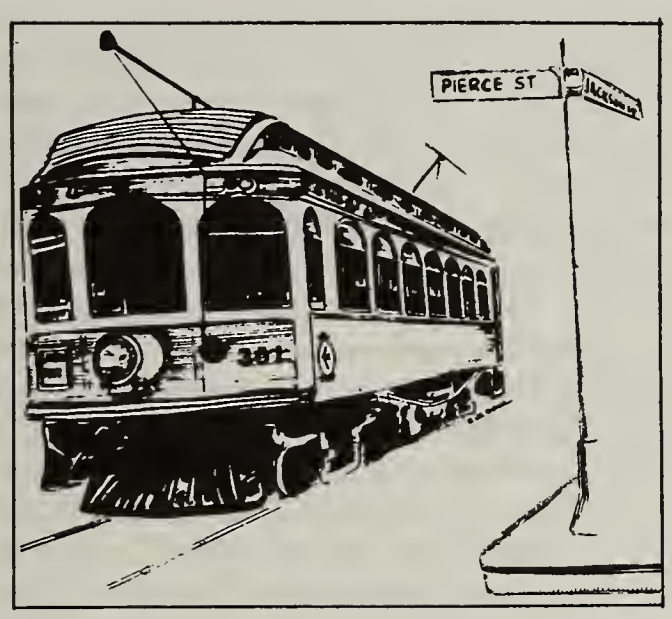
Other friends gave parties, including Julia and Gladys Gillespie, and Maude McLaughlin. Engraved wedding invitations showed Mr. and Mrs. John A. Hardin invited attendance at the wedding of their sister in their home at 4021 Swiss Avenue on the evening of June 1, 1916. An enclosed engraved card said, "At home after September first Preston Road near Mockingbird Lane."[12] The out-of-town guests were Mrs. J. A. Richardson (Luella) and daughter Hazel of Seymour, Robert B. Tugwell (Bob) and older daughter Mary of Brownsville, Tennessee, Mr. and Mrs. Albert Tugwell and daughters Margaret and Nell Ray of Amarillo, and the Rev. Marvin Maiden of Abingdon, Virginia, Hicks' older brother who taught at Hardin School 1915–1917. Quoting from *The Dallas Morning News:*

> The ring ceremony was performed by the Rev. W. J. Johnson, pastor of Grace Methodist church, under a large wedding bell of daisies suspended in the center of the living room. The home was decorated with palms, daisies and cathedral candles. Before the entrance of the bridal party the "Lohengrin" bridal chorus was sung by fifteen young ladies, intimate friends of the bride. Miss Ruby Lawrence played Mendelssohn's wedding march for the processional. The ribbon bearers were little Miss Margaret Tugwell and Master John Hardin. Just preceding the bride was the flower girl, Edna Gertrude Hardin, the three year old niece and namesake of the bride, bearing a basket of pink Killarney rose buds. The bride wore a dress of white taffeta and Georgette crepe with valley lilies and a white bridal poke bonnet trimmed with valley lilies. She carried a bouquet of white bride roses and sweet peas. Misses Hazel Richardson and Mary Tugwell, nieces of the bride, presided at the punch bowl. Misses Mary Brown, Mary Capers and Maude McLaughlin were in charge of the bride's register.
>
> The bride and groom left after the service for a three months bridal trip, which will include Houston, Galveston, Atlanta, Abingdon, Washington and New York. The bride's traveling costume was a tailored suit of blue cloth, a tailored sailor hat and accessories of gray.

Although the writeup stated that plans for the honeymoon were extensive, it did not turn out quite that way. The newlyweds went to Houston by train and then took the fancy blue and white interurban (electric railway), "The Galveston Flyer,"[13] to the island to stay at the large, new Galvez Hotel, a showplace in its time. Then they

---

12. This is now part of the Dallas Country Club land.
13. The "Fastest Interurban in the United States" (in operation 1911–1936) was heavier and bigger than little city trolleys. The cars were fifty-two feet long, and the arched lighted ceilings measured eight feet high at the center. The Flyer could seat about fifty-four passengers on its leather seats, and the arched windows were framed in gold mirrors. There was even a toilet in back. "The bell clang-clanged past the Union Train Station, and soon the passengers leaned back to catch the warm wind against their faces while watching prairie grass unfold in every direction. With the four 75-horsepower electric motors, they were going much faster now, reaching speeds of 50 miles an hour, later 60, finally 70. The car swayed gently to the clickity-click of the steel wheels on the rails. The Galveston Flyer was on its way." (From story by Bill Odell in *The Houston Post,* ca. 1989.)



"THE GALVESTON FLYER"

went by train to Abingdon, Virginia, and out to the farm, because Hicks wanted to introduce Edna to his family and show her beautiful southwest Virginia.

I have a big, fifteen-inch basket with a handle that Father wove for Mother during that visit. He said they went for a walk up on one of the hills where they could look over at Grandmother's house. (Father's parents had built a big, new house in 1915.) Hicks gathered striplings and later wet them and wove the basket. On the bottom he carved "June 1916 Edna—Hicks." I love this graceful, sturdy basket and keep it filled with magazines or potted plants.

The final phase of the honeymoon was to have been spent in Washington and New York. However, a check he had been waiting for from the Hardin School bounced, and the trip was canceled. Many years later Father told me about this and said he was embarrassed. Hicks had had two semesters at Columbia University in 1912–1913, starting work on a Masters degree, and probably planned to show Edna the sights in the big city. But he continued to teach at The Hardin Military School three more years. He was very fond of the Hardins and he always said "those [four] Tugwell girls were close."

When Edna and Hicks returned to Dallas, they did not live at "Preston Road near Mockingbird Lane," but in the Hardin home, just as they had before they were married. The year before as well as the first year of their marriage (i.e., 1915–1917), Hicks not only taught at Hardin School but worked on his Master of Arts degree at Southern Methodist University. S.M.U. had opened its doors in September 1915, and Hicks and his brother Marvin, in June 1917, were among the first to receive graduate degrees. I have a gold S.M.U. medallion-pendant that Edna received the year before she married for making a cash contribution to the new university. It has the Dallas Hall[14] seal on the front and "Members Club 1915" on the back. Edna had an enduring interest in S.M.U. the rest of her life.

Mother without a college degree, and Father with two, both stressed the value and enjoyment of education. This interest never waned for either of them. Mother bought many books when she was single, something I imagine was rather unusual for a young woman working and supporting herself in those days.[15] To her, learning was a lifelong experience. Something else Mother bought before she married was a little white marble bust of Shakespeare. She always called it "Billy" Shakespeare, and my husband Joe and I still do.

Hardin School was having a hard time financially. With renewed effort the school opened in 1918 in a new location near what was then the north edge of Dallas. This was another great big home on an extensive lot out on Greenville Avenue. The property was sold to Miss Ela Hockaday a year later and she moved her Hockaday School for Girls there. The Hardin School moved across town to Oak Cliff at that time.

---

14. Dallas Hall is still the hub, the main building at S.M.U., which has 8,800 students.
15. The author has a number of these books—biographies, poetry, religious. For example in *The Poetical Works of Dante* Mother wrote her full name and the date Nov. 22nd, 1911.

Edna and Hicks had already moved to 5634 Richard Avenue by the time their first child, H.C., Jr., was born 5 February 1919 at St. Paul's Hospital. Hicks was thirty and Edna was thirty-three. The great joy they had in their big, healthy son was shaken when H.C., Jr., was only a few weeks old and diagnosed as having pyloric stenosis, that is, a narrowing of that part of the stomach from which the small intestine leads.[16] The operation, performed at St. Paul's Hospital, was only the second successful one of that kind in Dallas.[17] At great sacrifice, the $2,000 cost of the operation and doctor bills was paid off within three years. In those days people were expected to pay bills promptly, and there was no health insurance.

In 1919 *The Bachelor,* The Hardin Military School's yearbook, was dedicated to Hicks Carr Maiden as a tribute to his "faithfulness and high standards." However, by the end of the spring term in 1919 the time had come for a change, as it became obvious the school was going out of business. Father and Mother and little H.C. moved fifty miles northeast of Dallas to Greenville, the town that for years had a big sign hanging over Lee Street declaring it had the "Blackest Land and the Whitest People."[18] Wesley College, a small Methodist liberal arts college, had been established in 1905 in Terrell, Texas, by the North Texas Annual Conference of the Methodist Episcopal Church, South. In 1912 the College was moved to Greenville, new buildings were built on the new campus, and the school continued to grow. It was one of seven junior colleges in Texas given a "class A-plus" rating by the committee on Classification of Texas Colleges. It had a well trained faculty of eighteen, a student body of 375, and a good reputation.[19]

At Wesley College Hicks was headmaster and taught mathematics. As headmaster, he and Edna and little H.C. lived in an apartment in the men's dormitory, Delaney Hall. My parents spoke of how enjoyable their three years were at Wesley. They liked the town of 12,400, the college atmosphere, and the young people. H.C., Jr., was everyone's pet and the mascot of the Tennis Club, and many snapshots attest to the good times in Greenville. The other side of the coin was that it was a constant struggle for the college to compete for freshmen students in a time of great economic depression. S.M.U., founded in 1915, was getting all the Methodist Church's support in north Texas, and there was a state school (East Texas State Teachers College) about fifteen miles away at Commerce, Texas.

Affectionate and concerned letters of Hicks' and Edna's reveal that a great part of each summer he was "on the road," going by train from one small town to another, trying to drum up students, depending on the charity of loyal Methodist preachers for a place to sleep. This part of his job was hot, exhausting, and thankless. He was responsible for signing up a number of students each summer, but it cured him of "selling" forever. Wesley College struggled valiantly, and would not close for about thirteen more years. In spite of its good reputation, it could not attract enough students to be a financially healthy institution.

When Hicks' salary was not paid in full or on time during the 1921–1922 school year, he saw the handwriting on the wall. They were expecting another child (me) and the family needed a dependable income. Hicks signed a contract to teach in the Dallas Public School system. By then Dallas had a population of about 161,000 and was the largest city in Texas. In June 1922 the family moved to Beckley Street in Oak Cliff, and then soon bought a house at 812 North Madison Avenue.

---

16. As a result, milk could not pass down and was spit out, ejected with force.
17. The first infant to survive the operation was Sawnie R. Aldredge, Jr., the previous year. This same Sawnie was in Law School at S.M.U. with my husband.
18. It was Greenville's Chamber of Commerce bragging to the world about Hunt County's rich, black soil and nice people. Remember the old expression, "That's mighty white of you."
19. In the small world department, my husband's uncle, John Wesley ("Dough") Rollins, coached football at Wesley College shortly after Father left.

Oak Cliff is that part of Dallas west of the Trinity River. Father started teaching at Oak Cliff High School that fall. On 27 July 1922 I was born at St. Paul's Hospital, brought into the world by Dr. E. S. Gordon, who had delivered H.C. in 1919.[20] Mother told me they planned to have me—here I always got a hug—and, because little girls could not live in a boys dorm, of course they had to move out of Delaney Hall at Wesley College and move to Dallas. I happily accepted that explanation for the move to Dallas for many years.

812 NORTH MADISON AVENUE
1923–1935

After several years at Oak Cliff High, Father was transferred to the big, new Sunset High School when it opened. One year the yearbook was dedicated to "H.C. Maiden, friend and mathematics teacher." Father liked young people and always got along well with his students.

3609 MCFARLIN BOULEVARD
EDNA'S FINAL HOME

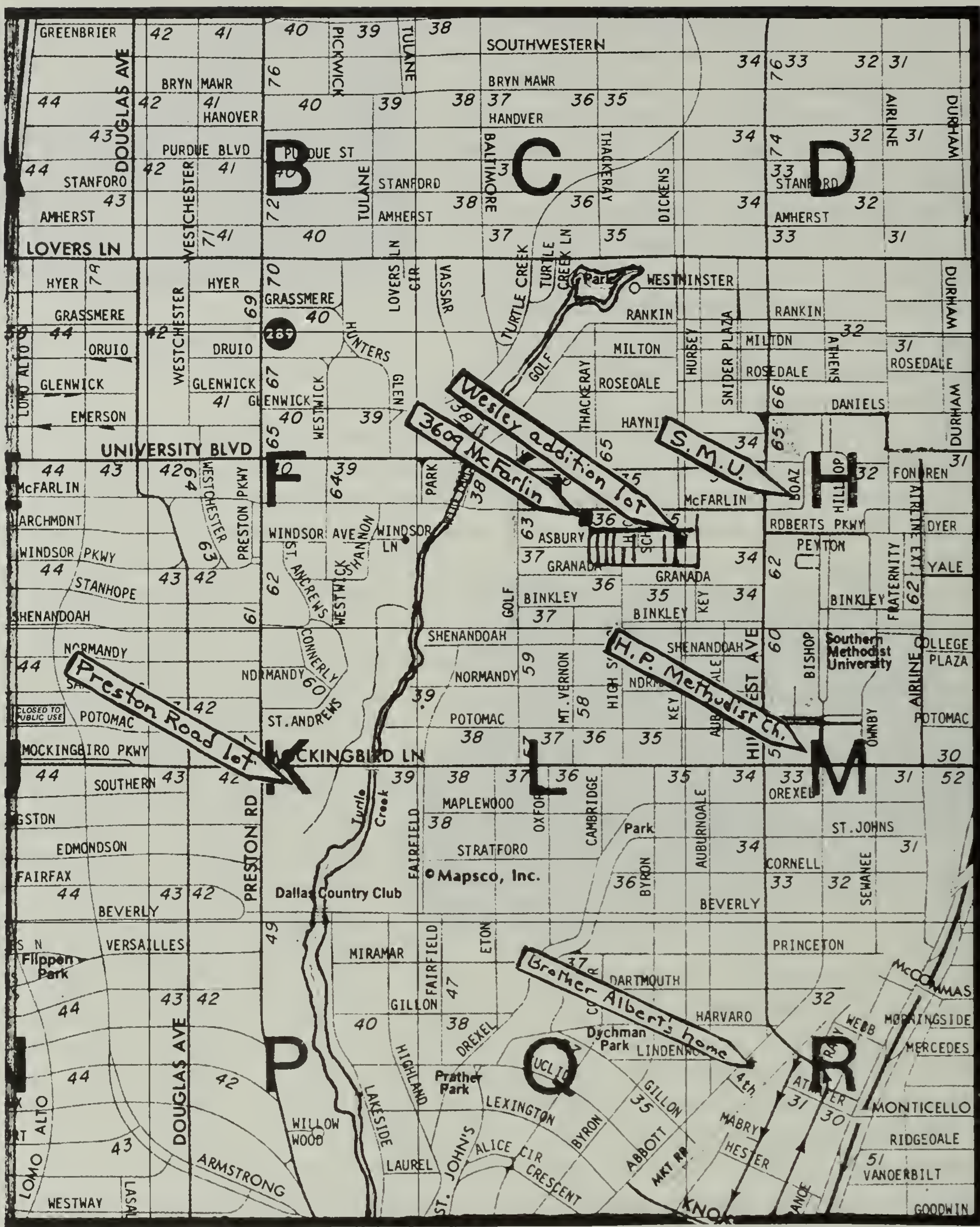
In July 1935 we moved from 812 North Madison across town to University Park, 3609 McFarlin Boulevard.[21] We were leaving good neighbors: the Lasaters, George Chestnut, Beulah Brown, the Huckabays, and the Rowes. It seemed to me as if we were moving to another city. Our house was a three block walk to S.M.U. My brother had had one year at S.M.U., and it seemed wise to move close to it. Father's request to be transferred to North Dallas High School was granted. It was easier for him to drive to North Dallas High School than for H.C. and later me to spend at least two hours every day on the streetcar en route to and from S.M.U. Nearly all families then had only one car.

Edna never drove a car in Dallas. While living in Greenville, she nearly had a wreck driving down Lee Street (the main street) while (as Father loved to tell) waving to friends on this side of the street and then the other. She had to stop suddenly, and the braking threw my two year old brother H.C. through the windshield. He miraculously was not hurt, nor was the car, but Edna gave up driving forever.

In the nineteen years Edna and Hicks had been married, Dallas had grown north to surround and extend beyond S.M.U., and the Park Cities (as University Park and Highland Park styled themselves) were a desirable place to live. Where we lived in University Park was about three quarters of a mile, as the crow flies, from the property Edna owned before she married, at "Preston Road near Mockingbird Lane," that is now part of the Dallas Country Club land. Edna and Hicks had sold the two Dallas lots she owned as well as the one in East Texas. I never recall any "If only we'd..." lamentations being uttered. Reality was what counted, and the

---

20. On 15 March 1946 our first child, Guy III, was delivered by this same Dr. E. S. Gordon, and then he retired. (When this story is told, the emphasis is on "then," and followed by a smile.)
21. It is on Lot 22 of Vanderbilt Addition; map recorded in vol. 1, p. 406, Map Records of Dallas County.



UNIVERSITY PARK, DALLAS

reality was that Hicks had a steady job in the profession of his choice and had super-excellent health. Hicks continued to teach math at North Dallas High, and he taught some summer school and evening math classes at S.M.U. during World War II when there was a shortage of regular teachers. To contribute to the family income, for several years Edna kept rented the two upstairs bedrooms in our home and the garage apartment behind the house, the latter always to married S.M.U. theology students.

When H.C. and I were growing up, Father took the family to Virginia nearly every summer for about ten days. The long car trip was looked forward to eagerly, and Hicks never lost touch with his Virginia roots. There was so much to see—we might go by way of Brownsville, Tennessee, where Edna grew up, or by Norfolk or

Virginia Beach, Virginia, or Washington, D.C. Mostly we just "went to Grandmother's." If Edna ever got tired of these regular visits to see her in-laws, she never said anything. It was a fair arrangement. The rest of the year our "family" was her Tugwell kin in Dallas (Albert and Stella), Seymour, Texas (Luella), and Shreveport, Louisiana (Ana).

Mother's telephone was her lifeline, the conduit for many conversations, but very rarely were they lengthy ones. She never liked prolonged phone calls. Likewise she never wrote long letters of several pages. She wrote letters, but her trademark was quick postcards with more news included than most people could get on a big sheet of stationery. Not only did my husband marvel at the really long, twisted extension cord Mother had on the telephone, but we both got many a laugh in puzzling over Mother's postcards as we tried to decipher all she had written. Something else Joe thought unusual was Mother's enthusiasm for baseball; she was a radio fan and knew all the hometown players and their stats.

One of the things I am proudest of that Mother did was her helping young people get scholarships at S.M.U. For several years it was nearly as if she were an unofficial member of the committee. I do not know how this got started, but when Mother knew a student with potential who was hardworking and deserving, she would make telephone calls to two or three of her friends at S.M.U. Her information could be relied on, and she was careful whose case she undertook. Her input was appreciated and she obviously did not overstep the bounds. It is a rough guess, but I believe she was responsible for at least eight excellent students going to S.M.U. who otherwise could not have afforded to.

Mother was a lifelong Methodist, as was Father. Our family transferred our membership from Oak Cliff Methodist Church to Highland Park Methodist Church on 13 October 1935. [See picture on p. 104] Mother was active in the Lula Rose (women's) Sunday School Class and the Women's Society of Christian Service (long ago called the Women's Missionary Society). She was also an active member of the Women's Auxillary of the C. C. Young Memorial Home,[22] the Dallas High School Teachers Wives, U.S. Daughters of 1812 (through ancestor John Wesley Finch), the Southern Memorial [Civil War] Association, and the Lambda Chi Alpha and the Delta Delta Delta Mothers clubs.

AT H.C.'S GRADUATION, 1939
EDNA, ALBERT, ANA
STELLA, LUELLA

All of our family was active and faithful at Highland Park Methodist Church, located at Mockingbird Lane and Hillcrest on the southern end of the S.M.U. campus. H.C. graduated from S.M.U. in 1939 and went to work full time at the First National Bank downtown, where he had worked after school and summers during college. H.C. was in the Navy in World War II for four years. As with all parents then, Mother and Father were consumed with the war, following the news through newspapers and the radio. H.C. married Natalie Mildred Dorsey of Bayside, Long Island, New York, on 13 August 1943. She continued to live with her parents until the war ended, while H.C. was on troop transport ships

22. My brother H.C. is the longest continuing Board member (since 1947) of the Methodist-related C. C. Young Memorial Home, with its several campuses including Blanton Garden and Asbury Place. He has served as Treasurer for twenty-five years.

and in several invasions.[23] No one could have a better big brother. When we were growing up, I always looked up to him—and not just because he was so tall—and he was always protective of his "Sis." My parents were proud of him and I am too.

EDNA'S CHILDREN

1942 (l.)

AND

1948 (r.)

Natalie ("Nat") and H.C. have lived in Dallas since World War II, being busy with their five children and eleven grandchildren as well as working unceasingly in activities in Highland Park United Methodist Church and the S.M.U. and Dallas communities.

When I graduated from S.M.U. in 1942, it was exactly twenty-five years after Father had received his M.A. there. His class had its Silver Anniversary, and we both wore our Mortar Board caps and gowns for the graduation ceremony that June day. Hicks and Edna's two children had college degrees; they expected it of us, and H.C. and I wanted it too. After working two years (one at S.M.U. and one teaching at Franklin High School, Robertson County, Texas), on 22 August 1944 I married Joseph Guy Rollins, Jr., who was a lieutenant in the Navy and home on leave. We married at Highland Park Methodist Church and the reception was at home. Joe, son of Ethel (Stratton) and Joseph Guy Rollins, is a graduate of Texas A. and M. and the S.M.U. Law School, and practices law in Houston.

After the summer of 1944 Hicks and Edna had no one else at home. Their worries ended in 1945 when their son and son-in-law were home from World War II and back, uninjured, in Dallas. The next years were full and busy ones, truly enjoyable for them. They had a good time together and certainly financial worries were a thing of the past.

EDNA AND HICKS'
FIRST GRANDCHILD H.C. III
25 NOVEMBER 1945
Edna: "Looks like we're singing—
well maybe we are!!"

23. H.C. was on the *USS Thurston*, APA 77, and invaded North Africa at Rabat, Sicily at Gela, another battle star for KMF25F to Naples, and France at Omaha Beach. He helped commission the *USS Darke*, APA 159, at Astoria, Oregon, and invaded Iwo Jima 19 February 1945 and Okinawa 1 April 1945, the day his and Natalie's son, H.C. III, was born. He was aboard the *Darke* when it was in Tokyo Bay for the 3 September 1945 Japanese surrender ceremony.

In 1947 Edna was operated on for intestinal cancer. She recovered quickly from the surgery, but was slowed down for awhile with phlebitis that developed in one leg. After that she was active as ever, and for three years her annual checkups at the hospital were satisfactory. In late 1951, however, she developed a low-grade fever that persisted. In November 1952 her hospital checkup showed all tests negative, but she was not well. After Christmas she rested on the bed most of the time. The first Sunday in January when H.C. was over at the house, he told Father that Mother should go into the hospital immediately. Father afterwards said he had not realized how much and how quickly her condition had worsened as she did not complain. At the Dallas Medical and Surgical Clinic, where six weeks earlier all reports had been good except for the unexplained low-grade fever, Mother's system deteriorated rapidly and she died Friday morning, 9 January 1953. The cancer had metastacized to her liver.

For those of us who loved her so much, she had died all too soon at the age of sixty-seven years four and a half months. I was only thirty, and remember being grateful at the time for the full, long life she had lived. The funeral was held at Highland Park Methodist Church, and the large sanctuary was filled to the back row. People said they could not remember the sanctuary ever having been so full for a funeral service. (I know it will be the same at my brother's funeral someday, because he has so many of our mother's endearing characteristics.) Edna's caring, outgoing personality made her reach out to people, and people in all walks of life loved and respected her. My husband, Joe, has always told our children she had a special charisma, which I think is a lovely tribute from a son-in-law.

EDNA TUGWELL MAIDEN, 1950

Edna Gertrude Tugwell Maiden was buried at Restland Memorial Park Cemetery north of Dallas on Greenville Road.[24] She was survived by two of her siblings, Stella (who died in 1955) and Ana (who died in 1962), H.C. and me, six grandchildren (H.C. III, Marilyn, and Bonnie Maiden; Guy, Sally, and Edna Rollins), eight nieces and nephews, and her husband, my Father. Hicks Maiden survived Edna by nearly fourteen and a half years. He died 16 June 1967 and was buried at Restland beside Edna.

24. Restland is located east of North Central Expressway and north of LBJ Freeway. In the early 1950s it was on the far north edge of Dallas and was considered practically out in the country.

Children of Edna Gertrude (Tugwell) and Hicks Carr Maiden:

1. Hicks Carr ("H.C.") Maiden, Jr.:
b. 5 February 1919, Dallas, Texas; m. 13 August 1943, *Natalie* Mildred ("Nat") Dorsey (b. 4 September 1920, Benton Harbor, Michigan), daughter of James Walter Dorsey and Gertrude (Gale). Before marriage Natalie was a Dental Hygienist, first with Metropolitan Life Insurance Company and then with the U.S. Public Health Service (attached to the Coast Guard). She and H.C. have been very active at Highland Park United Methodist Church in Dallas all of their married life, and for several years Natalie was in charge of Hospital Lay Visitation. H.C. has been in banking nearly all his life, starting in college as a runner and office boy at First National Bank in downtown Dallas. He was a Vice President at First National many years, until retirement, and then was an officer at NorthPark Bank for ten years. H.C. and Nat lead busy lives and enjoy a lot of traveling. They have recently celebrated their 50th wedding anniversary with a large party and family gathering.

NATALIE AND H.C. MAIDEN
IN THE LATE 1970S

Children (2d through 6th born in Dallas; all married in Dallas):

(1) Hicks Carr ("H.C.") Maiden III: b. 1 April 1945, Jamaica, Long Island, New York; m. 1 September 1973, Brenda Tucker (b. 16 April 1948, Sherman, Texas), daughter of Raymond Mitchell Tucker, Jr., and Willie Fay (Conwell). They live in Plano, Texas.
Child:
1. *Samantha* Amber ("Sam") Maiden: b. 22 May 1988

(2) James Dorsey ("Jimmy") Maiden: b. 9 January 1947; d. 7 April 1947

(3) *Marilyn* Gale Maiden: b. 24 March 1948; m. 5 June 1970, Jack Leslie ("Jay") Paris, Jr., son of Jack Leslie Paris and Bettye (Sullivan); div. Marilyn and son Jason live in Dallas.
Child:
1. *Jason* Landon Paris: b. 16 June 1975 in Dallas

(4) *Bonnie* Lee Maiden: b. 25 April 1950; m. 24 June 1972, *Jerry* William Burnett (b. 20 June 1949, Bentonville, Arkansas), son of Glenn Burnett and Mary Louise (Hileman). They live in Overland Park, Kansas.
Children (all born in Kansas City, Missouri):
1. *Diane* Elaine Burnett: b. 5 July 1977
2. *Karen* Anne Burnett: b. 3 April 1979
3. *Steven* Glenn Burnett: b. 19 June 1981

(5) *Nancy* Louise Maiden: b. 5 August 1953; m. 13 October 1978, Francis Stanger ("Frank") Lee, Ph.D. (b. 9 August 1947, Camden, New Jersey), son of Ernest Widenor Lee and Mildred Highley (Hutchinson). They live in Walnut Creek, California.
Children (all born in Dallas, Texas):
1. *James* William Lee: b. 13 August 1984
2. Robert Andrew ("Bobby") Lee: b. 23 March 1986
3. *Bonnie* Brittany Michelle Lee: b. 22 June 1988

(6) *Dean* Dorsey Maiden: b. 23 June 1958; m. 27 November 1981, Mary LeDuc (b. 15 February 1958, Midland, Texas), daughter of Clarence Porter and Alice (Broussard); div. 1993. Dean lives in Allen, Texas.
Children (all born in Dallas, Texas):
1. *Melissa* Rochelle Maiden: b. 15 July 1982
2. *Joanna* Marie Maiden: b. 6 October 1986
3. *Dean* Dorsey Maiden, Jr.: b. 27 July 1990

THE "MAIDEN VOYAGE" HAS LASTED 50 YEARS
AUGUST 13, 1993

Back row: JASON PARIS, MARILYN MAIDEN PARIS, BRENDA MAIDEN, H.C. MAIDEN III
Middle row: STEVEN BURNETT, DIANE BURNETT, KAREN BURNETT, (JERRY BURNETT not pictured), BONNIE MAIDEN BURNETT (partial), NANCY MAIDEN LEE, FRANK LEE, DEAN MAIDEN, JR., DEAN MAIDEN
Front rows: BOBBY LEE, BONNIE LEE, H.C. MAIDEN (JR.), MELISSA MAIDEN, NATALIE MAIDEN, JAMES LEE, JOANNA MAIDEN, SAMANTHA MAIDEN

2. *Sarah Finch* ("Skippy") Maiden

Born: 27 July 1922, Dallas, Texas

Married: 22 August 1944, Joseph Guy ("Joe") Rollins, Jr. (b. 21 April 1918, Merit, Texas), son of Joseph *Guy* ("J.G.") Rollins (1893–1976) and Ethel (Stratton) (1896–1977). Joe served 52 months on minesweepers in the Navy in World War II, the last two years as Commanding Officer. After the War we lived in Denison, Texas, for 11 years, then moved to Austin, during which time I got a Master's degree in English with a minor in Spanish from the University of Texas. We have lived in Houston since 1961, where Joe, who is Board Certified in Civil Trial Law and Personal Injury Trial Law, continues to practice law. For pleasure, he has studied Spanish at the University of Salamanca, Spain, receiving a *Diploma de la Lengua y Cultura Española, Sobresaliente* ("with highest honors"); French at the University of Geneva and in Paris; and German in Kleve and Frankfurt, Germany. I enjoyed being a substitute English teacher at Memorial Senior High School, Houston, for 10 years; then did weekly volunteer hospital work (recovery room) for many years; and am a docent at Bayou Bend, American wing of the Museum of Fine Arts, Houston. We are members of Chapelwood United Methodist Church.

JOE AND SARAH FINCH ROLLINS IN 1988
WITH CHILDREN: EDNA, GUY, SALLY

Children:

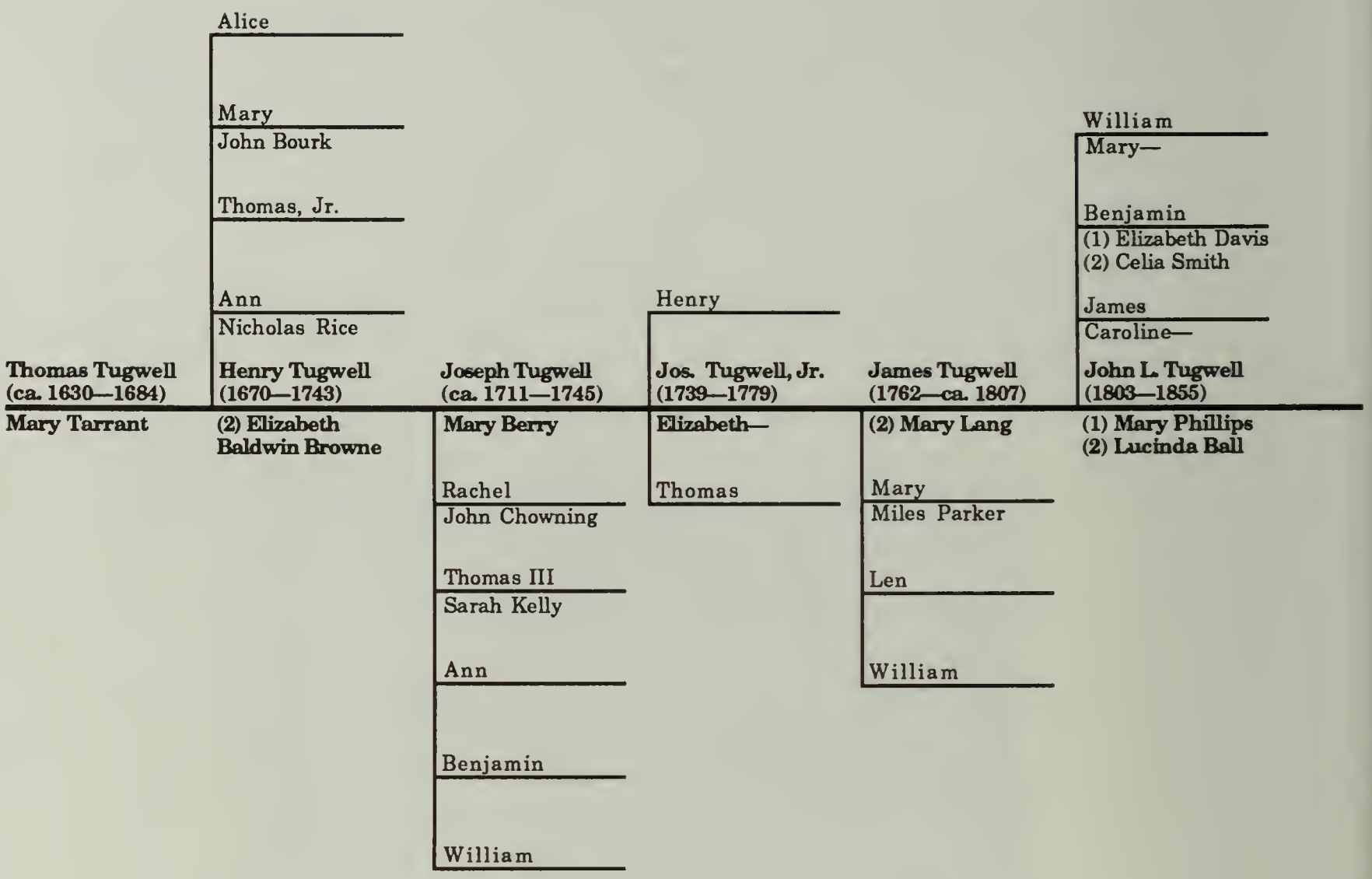
(1) Joseph *Guy* Rollins III: b. 15 March 1946, Dallas, Texas;
m. 22 December 1985, *Elaine* Carol Miller (b. 11 March 1952, Boston, Massachusetts), daughter of Ernest Francis Miller and Carol Mitchell (Houde). Guy is a graduate of Rice University and received a Master of Architecture degree from the University of Colorado. They live in Austin, Texas.
Stepdaughter: *Cara* Lynne Belliveau, b. 4 April 1975

(2) Sarah Finch ("Sally") Rollins: b. 5 March 1949, Denison, Texas; m. 25 March 1983, *Ingvar* Edmund Sodal (b. 12 February 1934 in Hemne, Trøndelag, Norway), son of Ingebrigt Sødal and Johanna (Auset). Sally graduated with a B.A. from S.M.U. in Dallas, with majors in history and political science. It is Sally and Ingvar who have helped so much with this book. They live in Boulder, Colorado.
Stepdaughter: *Silje* Marit Sodal, b. 29 December 1970

(3) *Edna* Ethel Rollins: b. 23 June 1950, Denison, Texas; m. (1) 3 July 1971, Michael Harrison ("Mike") Gary (b. 9 February 1946, Denison), son of Sam Harrison Gary and Nettie Inez (Francis); div.; m. (2) 21 September 1990, *James* Raymond Gaddis (b. 24 March 1940, Avinger, Texas), son of Raymond Gaddis and Jeanette (Hicks). Edna received a B.S. in elementary education from University of Texas at Austin, later earning an M.S. degree in public school administration from Southeastern Oklahoma State University, and has enjoyed teaching all these years. They live in Denison.
Children (both born in Denison, Texas):
1. *Jeff* Harrison Gary: b. 7 March 1974
2. *Gina* Allison Gary: b. 6 November 1976

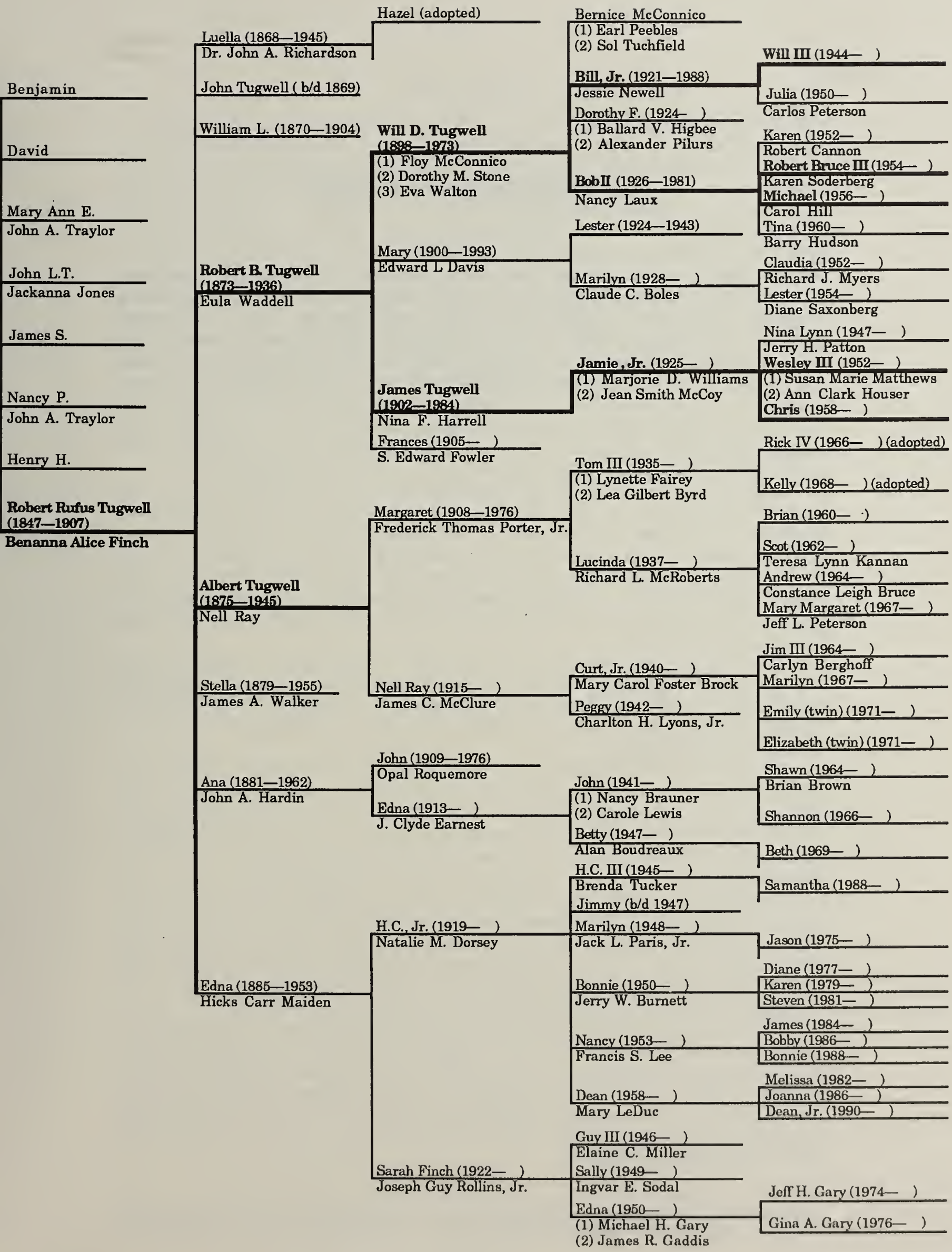
Stepchildren:
3. *Charles* Raymond Gaddis: b. 12 September 1965;
m. 21 March 1992, *Vicki* Reneé Neasbitt
4. *Sheila* Joyce Gaddis: b. 23 June 1967;
m. 3 October 1992, *James* Abner Roberts, Jr.
5. Jennifer *Nicole* Gaddis: b. 29 August 1974

1992: (Couples, left to right) JAMES AND EDNA GADDIS, GUY AND ELAINE ROLLINS, JOE AND "SKIPPY" ROLLINS, INGVAR AND SALLY SODAL, JEFF GARY, GINA GARY



DESCENT FROM THOMAS TUGWELL

SARAH FINCH MAIDEN ROLLINS
1993


Benjamin
David
Mary Ann E.
John A. Traylor
John L.T.
Jackanna Jones
James S.
Nancy P.
John A. Traylor
Henry H.
Robert Rufus Tugwell (1847—1907)
Benanna Alice Finch
Luella (1868—1945)
Dr. John A. Richardson
John Tugwell (b/d 1869)
William L. (1870—1904)
Robert B. Tugwell (1873—1936)
Eula Waddell
Albert Tugwell (1875—1945)
Nell Ray
Stella (1879—1955)
James A. Walker
Ana (1881—1962)
John A. Hardin
Edna (1885—1953)
Hicks Carr Maiden
Hazel (adopted)
Will D. Tugwell (1898—1973)
(1) Floy McConnico
(2) Dorothy M. Stone
(3) Eva Walton
Mary (1900—1993)
Edward L Davis
James Tugwell (1902—1984)
Nina F. Harrell
Frances (1905—)
S. Edward Fowler
Margaret (1908—1976)
Frederick Thomas Porter, Jr.
Nell Ray (1915—)
James C. McClure
John (1909—1976)
Opal Roquemore
Edna (1913—)
J. Clyde Earnest
H.C., Jr. (1919—)
Natalie M. Dorsey
Sarah Finch (1922—)
Joseph Guy Rollins, Jr.
Bernice McConnico
(1) Earl Peebles
(2) Sol Tuchfield
Bill, Jr. (1921—1988)
Jessie Newell
Dorothy F. (1924—)
(1) Ballard V. Higbee
(2) Alexander Pilurs
Bob II (1926—1981)
Nancy Laux
Lester (1924—1943)
Marilyn (1928—)
Claude C. Boles
Jamie, Jr. (1925—)
(1) Marjorie D. Williams
(2) Jean Smith McCoy
Tom III (1935—)
(1) Lynette Fairey
(2) Lea Gilbert Byrd
Lucinda (1937—)
Richard L. McRoberts
Curt, Jr. (1940—)
Mary Carol Foster Brock
Peggy (1942—)
Charlton H. Lyons, Jr.
John (1941—)
(1) Nancy Brauner
(2) Carole Lewis
Betty (1947—)
Alan Boudreaux
H.C. III (1945—)
Brenda Tucker
Jimmy (b/d 1947)
Marilyn (1948—)
Jack L. Paris, Jr.
Bonnie (1950—)
Jerry W. Burnett
Nancy (1953—)
Francis S. Lee
Dean (1958—)
Mary LeDuc
Guy III (1946—)
Elaine C. Miller
Sally (1949—)
Ingvar E. Sodal
Edna (1950—)
(1) Michael H. Gary
(2) James R. Gaddis
Will III (1944—)
Julia (1950—)
Carlos Peterson
Karen (1952—)
Robert Cannon
Robert Bruce III (1954—)
Karen Soderberg
Michael (1956—)
Carol Hill
Tina (1960—)
Barry Hudson
Claudia (1952—)
Richard J. Myers
Lester (1954—)
Diane Saxonberg
Nina Lynn (1947—)
Jerry H. Patton
Wesley III (1952—)
(1) Susan Marie Matthews
(2) Ann Clark Houser
Chris (1958—)
Rick IV (1966—) (adopted)
Kelly (1968—) (adopted)
Brian (1960—)
Scot (1962—)
Teresa Lynn Kannan
Andrew (1964—)
Constance Leigh Bruce
Mary Margaret (1967—)
Jeff L. Peterson
Jim III (1964—)
Carlyn Berghoff
Marilyn (1967—)
Emily (twin) (1971—)
Elizabeth (twin) (1971—)
Shawn (1964—)
Brian Brown
Shannon (1966—)
Beth (1969—)
Samantha (1988—)
Jason (1975—)
Diane (1977—)
Karen (1979—)
Steven (1981—)
James (1984—)
Bobby (1986—)
Bonnie (1988—)
Melissa (1982—)
Joanna (1986—)
Dean, Jr. (1990—)
Jeff H. Gary (1974—)
Gina A. Gary (1976—)

LANGS: INTRODUCTION

THE LANGS ARE important in the family history of the Tugwells, and research in our Lang lineage encompassed one Virginia county and four North Carolina counties. The Virginia county is Nansemond, specifically the area that was then in Nansemond's Upper Parish.[1] The North Carolina counties are (1) Chowan from which was formed (2) Bertie in 1722, from which was formed (3) Hertford in 1759. The fourth North Carolina county, Gates, was formed from portions of Chowan, Hertford, and Perquimans in 1779. During the time when the Langs lived in these counties, all four North Carolina counties adjoined the Upper Parish of Nansemond County, Virginia. Like many who lived in the area, branches of the Lang family were on both sides of the Virginia–North Carolina border.

It is unfortunate in the extreme that two of the five counties involved in the Lang genealogy lost virtually all of their early records during the Civil War. Some few colony-level records survive for Hertford; only one volume of Vestry Minutes survives for Nansemond. The genealogy given here is based on a search of all surviving records of four counties for the time period under discussion. The search was undertaken primarily to discover the ancestry of Mary Lang, my great-great grandmother, who in 1795 became the second wife of James Tugwell in Gates County, North Carolina.

The surname Lang has often been carelessly transcribed as "Long." At least one illiterate Lang known to have been a member of the Chowan–Gates County family, John of Hertford (not ours), did appear in records as "Long"; and the "Longs" of Nansemond were clearly the same men as the "Langs" of Chowan–Bertie–Hertford–Gates.

There was an early Long family in Chowan and Perquimans (North Carolina) counties who may have included the progenitor of the Langs discussed in the following chapters. James Long, Sr., and wife Ales/Alice were in Perquimans County when their son John Long was born in 1673. At this point there seems a reasonable possibility that our John Lang (of the following chapter) was, indeed, this John Long born in Perquimans County, North Carolina, in 1673.

In addition to (our?) John Long/Lang, Alice and James Long also had sons James Jr., Thomas, Giles, William, and Robert, all of whom were born prior to 1673 and prior to James Long, Sr.,'s settling his family in North Carolina. The given name Joshua appears among James, Sr.,'s grandsons, and of the given names associated with James Long, Sr., only Thomas and Giles do not appear among the Langs of Nansemond and Chowan–Bertie–Hertford–Gates.

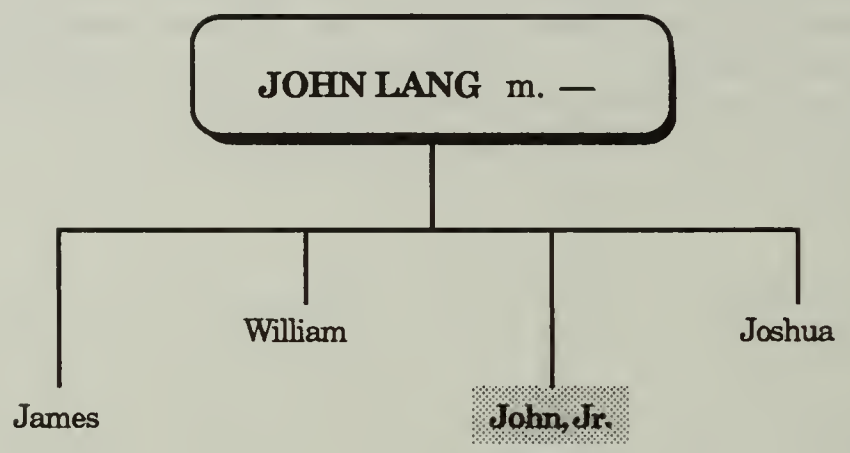
John Long of Perquimans County (born 1673 and youngest son of James, Sr.) in 1698 married Susan Ames, widow of George Ames, and had a daughter Elizabeth born in 1703 in Perquimans. No other children are mentioned in the Perquimans records of births, deaths, and marriages, nor is John's death mentioned. John's last appearance in Perquimans records was as a juror in 1703. He was mentioned in William Long's 1701 will as "brother," along with "brother" Thomas' sons Joshua, James, and William.

---

1. "Upper" meant the portion farthest from the James River and Jamestown, i.e., the southern half of Nansemond that adjoined the North Carolina border.

Examination of the originals of the Long wills at the North Carolina State Archives shows that James Long, Sr., made his mark instead of signing his name, as did his sons James, Jr., William, and Thomas. From James Long, Sr.,'s original grant of land on Yeopim River in Perquimans, one son moved south across the Albemarle Sound into Tyrrell County and another west across the Yeopim into Chowan County. It is not unreasonable to consider the possibility that one son, (our?) John, moved a comparatively short distance north into the Upper (southern) Parish of Nansemond County, Virginia, by 1705. Comparing the naming patterns of the early Longs to the Lang names, it is reasonable to consider the possibility that Long and Lang were merely different recordings of the same original surname. Research on the Perquimans County Longs has not been completed, and therefore, although it may be true, I have no proof James Long, Sr., was my John Lang's father. We will begin with John Lang.

JOHN LANG
(1673/75–ca. 1750)



JOHN LANG, whose name appears in a number of transcribed Virginia records as "Long," was born between 1673 and 1675, and by 1705 was married and living in Upper Nansemond County, Virginia.[1] John Lang is the earliest proven ancestor in our Lang line. He may have had an older brother, Robert Lang, among others, mentioned in the preceding Introduction.

John's putative brother, Robert, was granted land in Chowan County, North Carolina, 28 July 1713 and 1 March 1719/20, and he bought and sold land 1722–1733 in that part of Chowan that became Bertie County in 1722. (Coincidentally, this Robert Lang lived in the Occoneechee area near another of my ancestors, John Bobbitt "of Chowan.") Robert Lang died intestate in Bertie County ca. 1733, leaving his widow Eleanor and no known issue.

Some of information on our ancestor John Lang has been gleaned from *The Vestry Book of the Upper Parish, Nansemond County, Virginia, 1743–1793,* edited by Wilmer L. Hall, Richmond State Library, 1949. Mr. Hall interpreted the surname "Lang" as "Long" in transcribing the old vestry book, also listing "Langston" as "Longston." The records themselves show that the Langs/Longs were living among and were closely associated with persons who later moved to Chowan County, North Carolina, or whose family members moved there. It should be remembered that the Upper Parish of Nansemond County, Virginia,[2] was the area that adjoined what eventually became present-day Gates County, North Carolina.

The transcription on p. 10 of *The Vestry Book* has many abbreviations and archaic forms, and this is what it says in more readily understood modern English than in the 1740s:

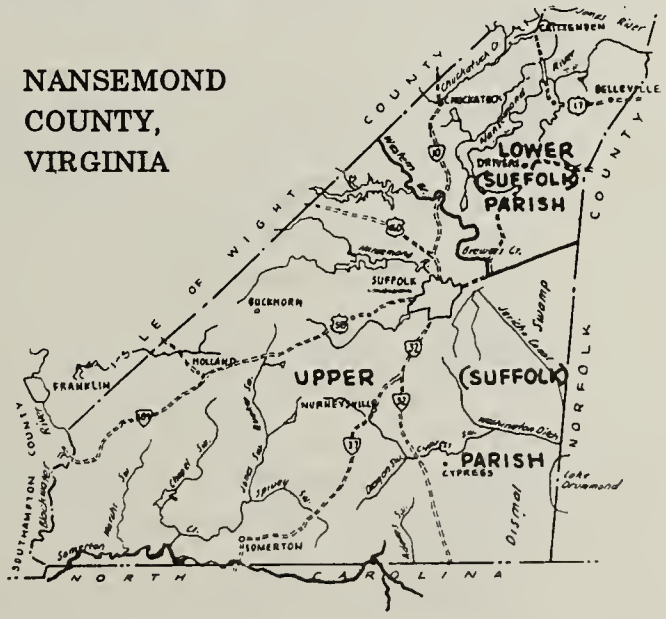
---

1. See "Lang Introduction": John Lang may be (no proof) the John Long (*sic*) born 1673, son of James Long of Perquimans County, North Carolina. If so, John Lang's wife was (Mrs.) Susan Ames whom he married in 1698 in Perquimans County, their first surviving child being Elizabeth, born 1703. Since there is no proof, Elizabeth is not shown as John's child on the diagram at the top of this page.
2. In general it was the area around and below the town of Suffolk, Virginia.

> Pursuant to an Order of the Court dated Novemb. 23d 1743 for the respective Vestrys to appoint Processioners in their parishes, The Vestry hath proceeded as followeth: . . .
>
> Ordered that Henry Skiner and *Jno Long* in the presence of the Inhabitants procession all the Bounds of Land on the West Side of the Beaverdam to Fran: Copelands Branch, down the sd. Branch to Bakers Mill, then down said run and Creek to Pughs Creek, including all the land in the said Bounds. You are to go round every mans land & renew the Land Marks, & return to the Vestry an account of every mans land you process: and the names of the persons present at the same and what land in your precinct you sall faile to procession and you are to give an account with the particular reasons of such failure, and if any refuse to have their land processioned you are to certifie the same to the church wardens within tenn days from under your hands. (emphasis added)

Processioners were appointed by the Virginia vestries to physically walk the boundaries of each tract of land in their districts, thus verifying and re-marking the corner trees, stakes, etc., that were used as landmarks. The above quotation gives hints as to where in Nansemond County, Virginia, John Lang's district was located.

A Vestry meeting of Upper Nansemond Parish was held at Suffolk Town on 24 January 1746/47 for "laying the parish levy."[3] Church Wardens present were Jethro Sumner and Mills Reddick (surnames that continued to be associated with Langs), and five Gentlemen of the Vestry. Among payments that were made was one to John Long for having kept an orphan or indigent person in 1745 named Mary Jordan, as the payment had been missed the previous year.



It was sometime between 1747 and March 1752 that John Lang died intestate in the Upper Parish of Nansemond County, Virginia. According to law in the Virginia Colony, all his land became the property of his oldest son, James Lang. In *The Vestry Book* report[4] dated 6 March 1752 concerning processioners, land processioned, and persons present, these Nansemond County (Virginia) surnames are also found just across the border in Chowan County (North Carolina) tax lists of the same period: Cross, Russell, Parker, and Rogers. It was noted that the line between Robert Parker and James Lang was marked and was near Baker's Mill Run. John and son James Long/-Lang were the only persons of that surname mentioned in the Upper Nansemond Vestry Minutes, and by March 1752 John Lang's land belonged to his oldest son, James.

After John's death his oldest son remained in Nansemond County about ten years, but his other sons, possibly with financial aid from John before his death, had already made the short move to (then) Chowan County, North Carolina. They settled in that part of Chowan that in 1779 became Gates County, and it was there that the Langs first came in contact with the Tugwells in the early 1770s.

---

3. Wilmer L. Hall, ed., *The Vestry Book of the Upper Parish, Nansemond County, Virginia*, 1949, p. 21.
4. Ibid., p. 71.

Children of John Lang/Long and wife:

Note: Attribution of these four sons to John Lang is based on deduction. They were all in the same circumscribed place at the right time, of the right general age, all were associated with the same neighboring families, and the surname is an unusual one. In addition, there is no surviving evidence that there was more than one older Lang in Nansemond County, Virginia, at the time these children were born.

1. James Lang

   Born ca. 1706, James was the oldest son and inherited his father's land. If John had left a will dividing his land, other sons' names would have turned up in the Nansemond County, Virginia, processioning records between 1752 and 1760. James appears to have sold his Nansemond County land ca. 1760–1764, for it is not mentioned in the processioning records after 1760.

   It is probable he married and had children, for the names James and John Lang continue to be found in Virginia, following westward (Lunenburg County) settlement patterns.

2. William Lang

   b. ca. 1708

   It is not known when or where he married, but apparently he did, for his land did not revert to his older brother (James) at his death.

   William was "of Nansemond County in the Colony of Virginia" on 8 September 1744 when he purchased 125 acres of Henry Johnson's land in Chowan County, North Carolina,[5] adjoining William Goodman and William Ashly, with John Pervis (*sic*) as one of the witnesses.

   Either in 1744 or shortly thereafter William moved from Nansemond to Chowan, for his land is referred to in the Chowan County Court Minutes of July 1747 as "William and [brother] Joshua Lang's" in a petition for a new road. In 1755 William purchased from William Goodman an additional 40 acres in Chowan County, North Carolina, land described as part of a patent granted to William Ashly (deceased) on 1 March 1719 and adjoining William Lang's own line and his brother John's line.[6]

   In 1759, as a resident of Chowan County, William signed a petition for the formation of Hertford County.[7] Other familiar names were Sumner, Odom, and Langston. Between January and October 1761 William acted as administrator of the estate of John Webb,[8] and Jesse Bethay was security on William's bond.

   d. intestate in Chowan County, North Carolina, sometime after 1761.

3. JOHN LANG, JR. MY DIRECT LINE

   Born: ca. 1710, Nansemond County, Virginia
   Married: ca. 1734, Judith —, Nansemond County, Virginia
   Died: 1750 or 1751, Chowan County, North Carolina
   Children: James Lang (my line), and possibly daughters

   [See "John Lang, Jr." chapter]

---

5. Chowan County, North Carolina, Deed Book E-11, p. 35.
6. Chowan County Deed Book H-1, p. 59.
7. *Journal of North Carolina Genealogy,* vol. XXIV, no. 14, p. 2165–2167.
8. *The North Carolinean,* vol. IV, no. 2, p. 143.

4. Joshua Lang

b. ca. 1720–1726, Nansemond County, Virginia. Joshua was born ca. 10 years after John and may have been the child of a later marriage of their father, or John (Sr.) may simply have had several daughters between John and Joshua.

m. ca. 1745–1750, probably in Chowan County, North Carolina

d. ca. 1770, probably in Hertford County, North Carolina. Joshua had been living with William Lang in Chowan County, North Carolina, in 1747 and had been there long enough and was old enough for it to appear to others in the county that the two owned the land jointly (see William, supra). It appears therefore that Joshua accompanied William to Chowan ca. 1744. (My John, Jr., moved soon after.)

By 1749 Joshua had moved to Bertie County.[9] When Hertford County was formed from Bertie in 1759, Joshua's residence (which was not described in the Bertie records) apparently became part of Hertford, although there is no surviving record of his presence there. (There are no surviving Hertford records at all for this time period.)

By 1771 Joshua's son was identified as John "of Hertford" when he made his mark and sold a tract of land in Chowan that adjoined additional land he owned in Hertford.[10] (It is assumed Joshua's son was selling his recently deceased father's land, but Joshua may have died earlier.) There is no record of the purchase or grant of this land to a Lang (or Long) and it is assumed that the land had come to Joshua by marriage.

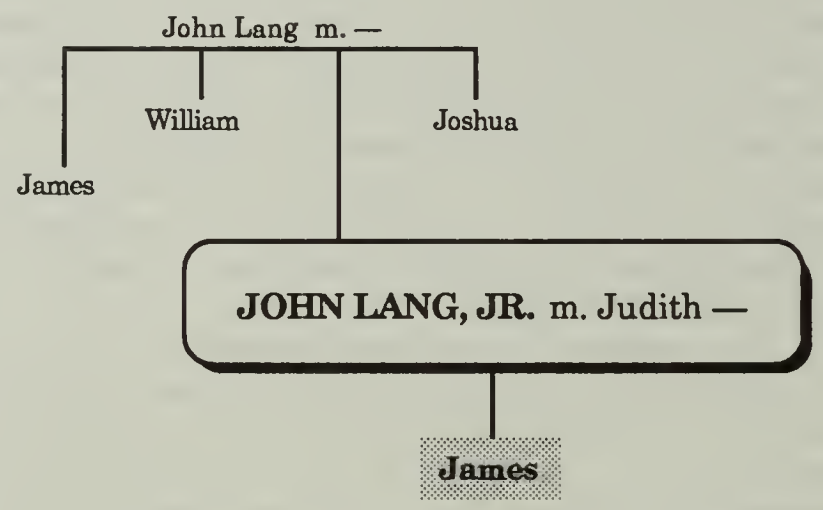
Children:

1. Joshua may have had daughters, but the only child known is son John "of Hertford."

[See "John Lang, Jr."—son]

9. Bertie County, North Carolina, Deed Book G, p. 227.
10. Chowan County Deed Book O, p. 370, and P, p. 38.

JOHN LANG, JR.
(ca. 1710–1750/51)



JOHN LANG was born around 1710 in the Upper Parish of Nansemond County, Virginia. He was the third son of John Lang, and for clarity's sake he will be referred to in this book as John, Jr., although no records make that distinction.

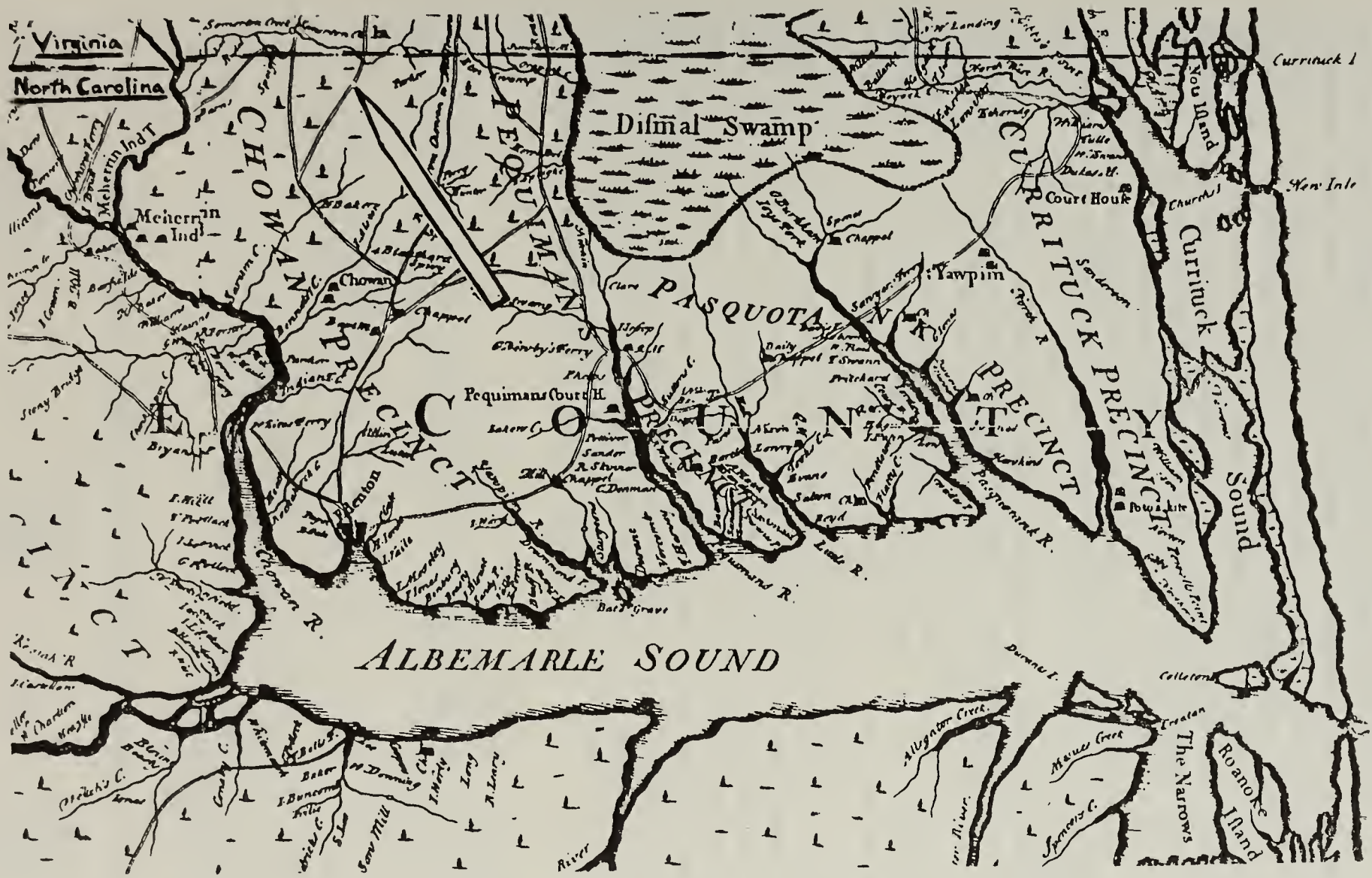
John Lang, Jr., grew up in Nansemond County in that southern part closer to the North Carolina border. Lower Nansemond was closer to Jamestown, while Upper Nansemond was farther south and not as close to the James River. (Nansemond County, created from Upper Norfolk County in 1637, does not appear on present-day maps, as it merged with Suffolk City in January 1974.)

It was in approximately 1734 that John Lang, Jr., and Judith (last name unknown) married. Their son, our ancestor James, was born in 1735. They probably had daughters too, but their names (which so seldom appeared on records and changed when they married) are now lost, as was unfortunately often the case with females then.

John and Judith Lang moved their family from Nansemond County, Virginia, across the border to what was then Chowan County, in eastern North Carolina. In 1670 Chowan had been formed from Albemarle, one of the three original counties of the Province of North Carolina, and Chowan itself would be the mother of many counties as population increased. The exact year John Lang, Jr., moved from Nansemond County to Chowan is not known; he may have come in 1744 with his brothers William and Joshua, or maybe shortly thereafter. His first land purchase in North Carolina was not made until 1749.

In 1749 John Lang, Jr., purchased land in Chowan County from John Purvis and his wife.[1] Only in an Index of early Chowan County deeds was the Purvis-to-Lang deed mentioned. The North Carolina Archives in Raleigh has some of the

1. This is very likely the John Purvis who on 8 September 1844 was a witness when John's brother, William Lang, had purchased Chowan land, and who, along with John Cross, Sr., would sign a report on 6 March 1752 in the vestry book of the Upper Parish, Nansemond County, Virginia.



SECTION OF MOSELEY'S 1733 MAP OF NORTH CAROLINA POINTING TO PROBABLE LOCATION OF LANG LAND, NEAR "PARKER"

JOHN LANG, JR., MOVED FROM SOUTHERN NANSEMOND COUNTY, VIRGINIA, TO UPPER CHOWAN COUNTY, NORTH CAROLINA, CA 1747.

original Chowan deed books, but not Book F-1, where the Purvis-Lang 1749 deed was recorded on an unnumbered page at the back of the book. The ink has faded so badly that the Archives' microfilmed copy is completely illegible. Nor can the Chowan Courthouse in Edenton, North Carolina, furnish a legible copy of the deed. The 1782 Gates County Tax List shows that John Lang, Jr.,'s son James was taxed for 275 acres of land, which is what he had inherited from his father, so we assume John Lang, Jr.,'s 1749 purchase from John Purvis amounted to 275 acres.

Because of the aforementioned problem there is no description of the land John Lang, Jr.,.bought in 1749. However, after reading all the 1776–1803 deed abstracts in both volumes of *Gates County Land Deeds* by Marilyn Poe Laird, Vivian Poe Jackson, and Judith Krause Reid (pub. 1977), the author realizes the Langs lived in the upper central part of what is present-day Gates County. Only the county name of the area where their land was located would change—from Chowan to Hertford (in 1759) to Gates (in 1779).

By compiling a list of the most common places and names associated on deeds with John's son and two grandsons, a reasonable picture is formed to suggest the men who were in the area where the Langs lived and what some of the landmarks were. Looking at the 1733 Moseley map (previous page), one sees the upper Chowan River, which is the western border of present-day Gates County. Less than two miles below the northern border of the county is Somerton Creek. Heads of the creek rise in both Nansemond County, Virginia, and present-day Gates County, North Carolina, and flow westerly to northwest Gates County where the creek enters the Chowan River. About two miles farther down Chowan River an old road ran northeast out of the county, crossing the county line and running from Winton (North Carolina) to Suffolk Town in Nansemond County, Virginia. The names Barns and Speight appear on the road, and the name Parker is east of the road near one of the upper branches of Somerton Creek. Somewhere in this general area in the northern part of Chowan (Hertford in 1759, Gates in 1779 to the present) is where the Lang farm was located. This is present-day Reynoldson township. Some area place names, most of which have fallen into disuse and been forgotten, are:

1. Cypress Swamp (branch of Somerton Creek)
2. Long Branch (Lang land was on this Branch)
3. Beech Swamp (Lang land joined south side of this)
4. The main road (from Suffolk, in Nansemond County, Virginia, to Winton, North Carolina)
5. Short Beaver Dam Creek (flows northwest into Virginia where it enters Somerton Creek)
6. Richard Barnes' corner
7. Deep Branch (Cypress Swamp in mouth of Deep Branch)
8. Colonel Goodman's corner
9. Poly Bridge Branch
10. Lady of Honor Branch

Surnames in the upper part of the county where the Langs lived are:

Parker	Goodman	Vann
Rogers	Cross	Lee
Odom	Dilday	Langston
Bethay	Rawls	Sumner
Pipkin	Harrell	Braddy
Barnes	Gatling	Hiatt
Riddick	Landen	Williams

Many of these families, like the Langs, had moved south only about twenty miles, coming from the southern part of Nansemond County, Virginia, into the very upper part of eastern North Carolina.

Reading the old records shows the great variety of trees in the area. Mentioned were cedar, ash, sourwood, beech, hickory, mulberry, holly, white oak, chinquapin, water oak, black gum, pine, hawtree, red oak, persimmon, cypress, maple, lightwood, post oak, poplar, black oak, elm, sweet gum, juniper, and birch.

John Lang, Jr., was not destined to live on his Chowan County land more than a year. He died intestate in late 1750 or early 1751, leaving his widow Judith and at least one child, my ancestor James. The land, however, continued to be referred to as "John Lang's" as late as 1755.[2]

Chowan County Taxables 1717–1769, Folder for the Year 1750, in the State Archives[3] shows "John Lang [of this chapter], 1 poll," listed next to his brother "William Lang, 1 poll," on John Alston's list. Familiar names of families associated with the Langs appeared on this and other tax rolls: Russell, Bethay, Sumner, Goodman, Langston, Pipkin, Odom, Vann, Rogers, Hiatt, and Parker. Folders for 1751, 1752, and 1753 show "Judith Lang, 1 poll," listed next to her brother-in-law "William Lang, 1 poll." Since white females were not taxable as polls, Judith in 1752 and 1753 was paying a poll tax on a 16 year old (or older) white male, who was my ancestor James. John Lang, James' father, had appeared on the tax list only in the year 1750, and then had died.

The date and place of death for Judith Lang are not known, but it was most likely after 1755 and in Chowan County, North Carolina. The fact that the land was still referred to as John's (of this chapter) in 1755 indicates that his widow was alive and actual head of the household. John Lang, (Jr.), had died when he was about forty years old. Judith was dead (or living with a married daughter) in 1786 when the North Carolina State Census was taken, for her son James Lang was listed only with his wife and daughters in his household.

Children of John Lang, Jr., and Judith (—):

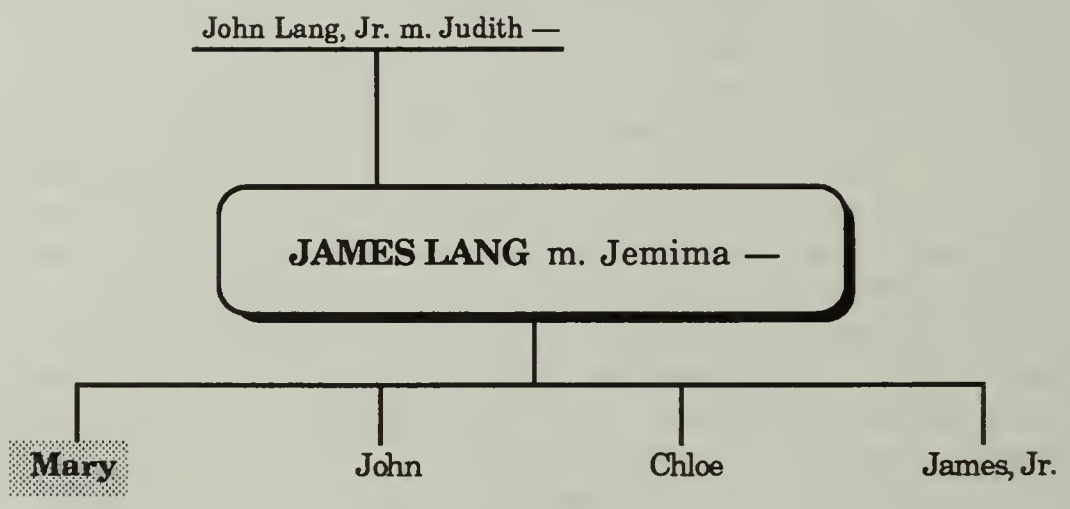
1. JAMES LANG — MY DIRECT LINE
   Born: 1735, Nansemond County, Virginia
   Married: ca. 1760, Jemima —, in Hertford (was Chowan) County, North Carolina
   Died: 5 November 1791, Gates (was Chowan/Hertford) County, North Carolina
   Children: Mary (my line), John, Chloe, James
   [See "James Lang" chapter]

2–. There may have been daughters also, born between 1737 and 1750.

[See "James Lang"—son]

2. Chowan County, North Carolina, Book H-1, p. 59.
3. File #C.R.024.701.2.

JAMES LANG
(1735–1791)



JAMES LANG was the only son (known of, who lived to maturity) of John Lang, Jr., and Judith (last name unknown). James was born in 1735 in Nansemond County, Virginia. His grandfather, John Lang, Sr., died sometime between 1747 and 1752. Sometime between 1744 and 1749 James' parents moved their family from Nansemond County, Virginia, across the line into Chowan County, North Carolina. James' Uncle James had stayed in Nansemond, but his other two uncles, William and Joshua, had moved to Chowan County in 1744. This was the common pattern of younger sons in a family looking for good, cheap land.

After the death of John Lang, Jr., in 1750 (or early 1751) when James was fifteen, he and his mother continued to live on their homeplace adjoining the farm of his Uncle William. Probably at this time James assumed responsibility for running the farm that one day would be his. James' father had appeared on the Chowan County, North Carolina, tax list in 1750, but James' widowed mother, Judith Lang, was on the 1751 tax list, paying the poll tax for him when he became sixteen. He began paying his own poll tax in 1756, so we know that 1756 was the year James came of age.

In 1759 the area where the Langs lived was taken out of the northern part of Chowan and fell into the northern part of newly created Hertford County. James married Jemima — (surname unknown) ca. 1760, and they had two daughters and two sons who lived to maturity. Census records show they also had a son who died without issue prior to James' death and a daughter not identified in records. James and Jemima Lang lived all their married life on the family farm in Chowan–Hertford–Gates County. (Gates was formed from parts of Chowan, Hertford, and Perquimans counties in 1779.) In the newly created county of Gates, the Court Minutes for 2 November 1779 show that James Lang was one of thirty men summoned to serve as grand and petit jurors. James' name appeared on the Gates

NORTHEASTERN NORTH CAROLINA

James Lang was just a boy when he moved with his parents ca. 1747 from southern Nansemond County, Virginia, to Chowan County, North Carolina. He and his wife Jemima lived all their married life in this same location in Chowan–Hertford–Gates County. Only the name of the county changed.

County Tax List for 1782.[1] In that decade James was chosen as a juror on 21 November 1781, 11 August 1783, and at May 1789 Court Term.[2]

The 1782 tax list (mentioned above) showed that James Lang was taxed for 275 acres of land, no slaves, three horses and/or mules, and twelve cattle. Just preceding James on the list were Thomas Hiatt, Elisha Lawrence, and Lewis Braddy; immediately after his name were John Bethay and James Bethay. On the 1784, 1785, and 1786 tax lists James Lang was enumerated in Capt. William Goodman's district, and was taxed for 275 acres, one free poll, and one black poll. The name of my ancestor James Tugwell, who in 1795 would marry James Lang's daughter Mary, appeared for the first time on the 1786 list. (The Tugwells had moved to this area in 1771/72.) In 1788 James Lang was taxed for two black polls, but most years it was for one. The 1791 tax list was the last time James' name appeared on the list, as he died near the end of that year.

James Lang appears to have been moderately prosperous, a peaceful and substantial man in his neighborhood, witnessing deeds for neighbors and being a juror. Whereas James, along with William Goodman and James Bethay, witnessed Joel Gordon's will in January 1786, James himself did not write a will. He died intestate in Gates County, North Carolina, on 5 November 1791 at the age of fifty-six.

---

1. North Carolina State Archives file #L.P.46.1.
2. Gates County, North Carolina, Court Minutes.

In November Court 1791 James' older son John was appointed administrator of his estate and posted a thousand pound bond, with Philip and Enos Rogers as his bond sureties. (Bond was usually set at twice the estimated value of the estate.) An estate sale was held. The usual items in the fairly extensive inventory included hay, thirty-two hogs, fifteen cattle, six sheep, two horses, pewter dishes, punch bowls, iron and brass pots, four chests, three spinning wheels; also eight books, one slate, more bees than usual ("ten stocks of bees"), twenty-six barrels, and a set of cooper's tools. The account of the sale was dated 8 December 1791[3] and was filed in February Court 1792.

At that same court session John filed a petition against Jemima Lang, his mother, asking for relief from the court as his mother had taken possession of all his father's land. John said he, his brother James, and their mother, Jemima, were the only living heirs of James Lang, Sr., who died intestate on 5 November 1791, owning about 275 acres of land. [An aside here: Between 1784 and 1795 in North Carolina, the law provided that the land of a man who died without leaving a will was divided equally between his sons, with the widow entitled to a lifetime interest in one-third of the land. Not until after 1795 were daughters included in land divisions. Therefore, James' daughters were alive but would not have been heirs to his land and therefore were omitted from John's 1791 petition. Chloe is thought to have married in 1788, and Mary, the older daughter who was my ancestor, would marry James Tugwell in early 1795.] In response to John Lang's petition the Court ordered the Sheriff to aid the court-appointed commissioners in laying off Jemima's dower part of the land.

At the August Court 1792 "in the 10th year of American Independence," Jemima's share (acreage not mentioned) was described as bounded by the Long Branch, a small branch, James Reddick, (the north side of) the Beech Swamp, and John Bethay. A number of men signed the document: John Bethay, James Bethay, Abel Cross, Philip Lewis, Francis Speight, Henry Speight, John Lewis, Milt Lewis, Bray Warren, William Warren, and James Parker. All these men lived in the area near the Lang land and were familiar with it.

As James Lang, Jr., was not yet twenty-one, in the November 1792 term of court his brother, John, was appointed his guardian. Bond was 500 pounds, and Robert Parker (son of Dempsey Parker) and Enos Rogers were the sureties. (All the above estate papers are in James Lang's 1791 file mentioned in footnote 3.) A month or so before James Lang's death his older son John had married Elizabeth Rogers, and Philip Rogers was his bondsman. In November 1791 Philip and Enos Rogers had gone on John Lang's bond as administrator of James Lang's estate, and Enos Rogers was a bondsman for the guardianship in November 1792. Probably either Philip or Enos was son John's father-in-law.

Beginning in 1792 John was on the tax list as head of the family, paying the tax on the 275 acres that had belonged to his father James (this chapter) and his grandfather John (Jr.). On the list Capt. John Bethay replaced Capt. William Goodman as militia officer for the district.

Finally, in August Court 1793 Henry and William Goodman and Philip and Jonathan Rogers were ordered to review the final accounts of John Lang, (older son and) administrator of James Lang, deceased, and to make division among the heirs. The personal estate of James Lang totaled 203 pounds 6 shillings.

In January 1795 James and Jemima Lang's oldest child, Mary, married James Tugwell. On 13 November 1795 John and James Lang sold their portions of

---

3. State Archives, Gates County, North Carolina, Loose Original Estates Records, folder "Lang, James 1791," file #C.R.041.508.68.

the 275 acres of land they had inherited from their father James (of this chapter).[4] It was described as joining the land of John Bethay and James Bethay, and witnesses to the deed were Stephen and Jonathan Rogers and Hilary Willey.[5]

A Gates County record dated 24 March 1796[6] shows "John Lang of the County of Pitt" sold [his former Gates County neighbor] Henry Lee a slave named Boson for 80 pounds. Witnesses were Mary and William Goodman. Thus we know James Lang's older son John had moved to Pitt County, North Carolina, between November 1795 and March 1796. He settled in the western wedge of Pitt County on what was soon called Lang's Mill Run. That was the name given to the upper part of Black Swamp (stream) that flows into Little Contentnea Creek. [See map on p. 41] Apparently second son James (Jr.) continued to live with his mother in Gates County as the 1800 Gates County Census (p. 272) shows him enumerated there. (John and James, Jr, of course, were my Mary [Lang] Tugwell's brothers.)

On 15 December 1800 Jemima Lang, the widow of James Lang (Sr.) deceased, sold an unnamed acreage for 20 pounds to neighbor Henry Lee. The tract was described as beginning at the edge of Old Field...running to Williams Fork...to Henry Lee's line and the Beach (Beech) Swamp. Witnesses were Richard Rawls and William Lee.[7] This closed the book on the Gates County Langs in our direct line, and we pick them up next in Pitt County.

John Lang, Jr., (previous chapter) had moved from southern Nansemond County, Virginia, to northcentral Gates (then Chowan) County, North Carolina, between 1744 and 1749. By the end of the century, following the 1791 death of his son James (this chapter), James' sons John and James had sold the family land in Gates County and moved about seventy-five miles south-southwest to Pitt County, North Carolina. James' daughter, our ancestor Mary, and her husband James Tugwell in 1800 moved to Pitt County too, and the widowed Jemima Lang moved with them.

Children of James Lang and Jemima (—):

1. MARY LANG MY DIRECT LINE
   Born: ca. 1764, Chowan (later Gates) County, North Carolina
   Married: 15 January 1795 (date of bond), James Tugwell, son of Elizabeth and Joseph Tugwell, Jr., Gates County, North Carolina
   Died: post-1850, Pitt County, North Carolina
   Children: William, Benjamin, James, Jr., John L. (my line)
   [See "Mary Lang" chapter]

2. John Lang: b. 1766, Chowan (later Gates) County, North Carolina;
   m. 29 September 1791 (date of bond), Elizabeth Rogers, daughter of Priscilla (Cross) and — Rogers, Gates County, North Carolina. Phillip Rogers was bondsman.
   It was John who petitioned the court after his father's death in 1791 for a division of the land. On 1 May 1793, when James Reddick of Gates County sold Henry Lee of Nansemond County, Virginia, 353 acres of land, it was described as adjoining John Lang and John March.[8] In 1794–5 John was a juryman four times. The 1795 Gates County Tax List showed John in Capt.

---

4. Gates County, North Carolina, Deeds, vol. 4, 1794–1799, p. 33.
5. The town of Willeyton was named for the Willey family.
6. Vol. 4, 1794–1799, p. 125.
7. *Gates County Deed Books 6 and 7, 1803–1808,* Mona A. Taylor, 1983, p. 9.
8. Gates County, North Carolina, Deeds, vol. 3, 1786–1795, p. 79.

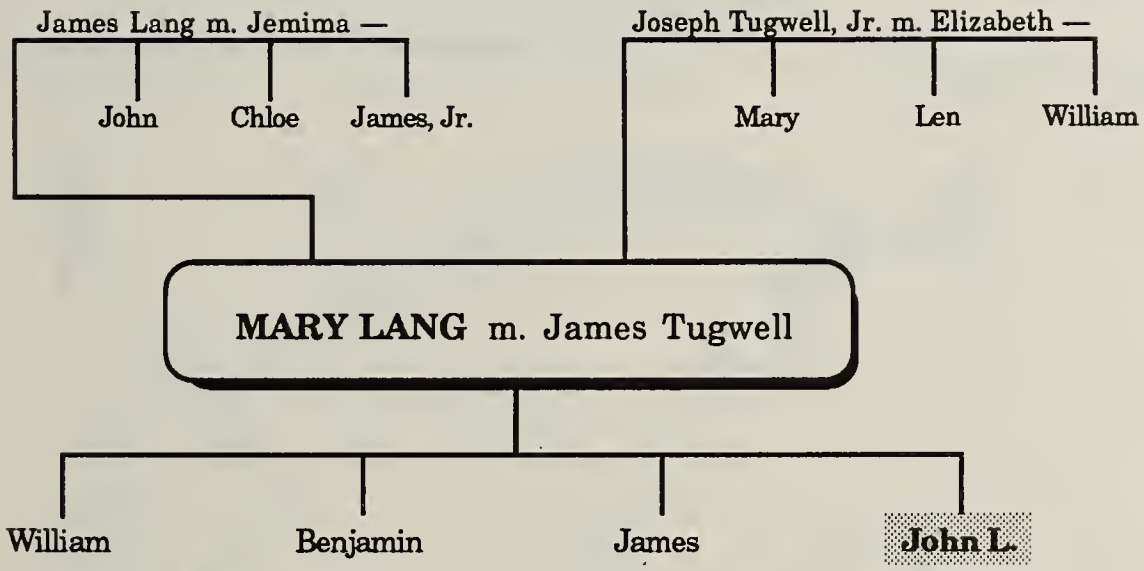
John Bethay's District listed as "John Lang (son of James)" to distinguish him from his cousin "John Lang (of Joshua)," although both James and Joshua were deceased. John and Elizabeth, moved to Pitt County, North Carolina, in late 1795 or early 1796. (The John Lang on the Gates County Tax List after 1796 was the son of Joshua Lang.)
d. Pitt County, North Carolina
Children (from Pitt County 1810 Census, p. 259, and 1820 Census, p. 543):
(1) son: b. 1792–1794
(2) son: b. 1795–1800
(3-6) 3 sons and 1 daughter: b. 1800–1809

3. Chloe Lang: b. ca. 1768?, Chowan (later Gates) County, North Carolina;
m. 19 August 1788 (date of bond), Jesse Langston, Gates County, North Carolina. Henry Goodman was the bondsman, apparently the same Henry Goodman who witnessed a deed with Chloe's father on 18 December 1786 and was a longtime neighbor of the Gates County Langs. It is assumed Chloe and Jesse married, but there is no direct proof they did.
4. James Lang, Jr.: b. ca. 1773, Chowan (later Gates) County.
James was a minor over 14 years of age in 1792 when he came into Gates County Court and requested his brother John be appointed his guardian. When on 21 November 1794 Enos Rogers of Craven County, North Carolina, sold Jonathan Rogers of Gates County 104 acres of Gates County land, it was described as "adjoining James Lang, the road that leads to Cotton's Ferry, and the Old Road that comes in against Robert and Philip Rogers."[9] On 13 November 1795 James and his older brother John sold the Gates County land they had inherited from their father. James stayed on in Gates County until 1800,[10] but John went on to Pitt County, North Carolina.
m. ca. 1805–1808, Pitt County, North Carolina.
By 1810 James had a wife (under 26 years) and a son (under 10), and was living next to his brother John in Pitt County.[11]
Children (including):
(1) son: b. 1800–1810

[See "Mary Lang"—daughter]

9. Gates County Deeds, vol. 4, 1794–1799, p. 6.
10. Gates County 1800 Census, p. 280.
11. Pitt County, North Carolina, 1810 Census, p. 272.

MARY LANG
(ca. 1764–post-1850)



MARY LANG, born ca. 1764 in Chowan (now Gates) County, North Carolina, was the oldest child of James Lang and Jemima (surname unknown). Mary's grandfather, John Lang, Jr. (born ca. 1710), had moved to (then) Chowan County from Nansemond County, Virginia, between 1744 and 1749, when her father was still a boy. Her parents married and lived on the farm her father had inherited, and this is where Mary was born and reared. By 1779, when she was fifteen, the Lang family's land was part of newly created Gates County.

Mary's father, James Lang, died intestate on 5 November 1791. Her two brothers received an equal share of his 275 acres of land, with widowed Jemima inheriting a life estate or "ownership" in one-third of it. By law, Jemima and all the children received an equal portion of James' personal property.

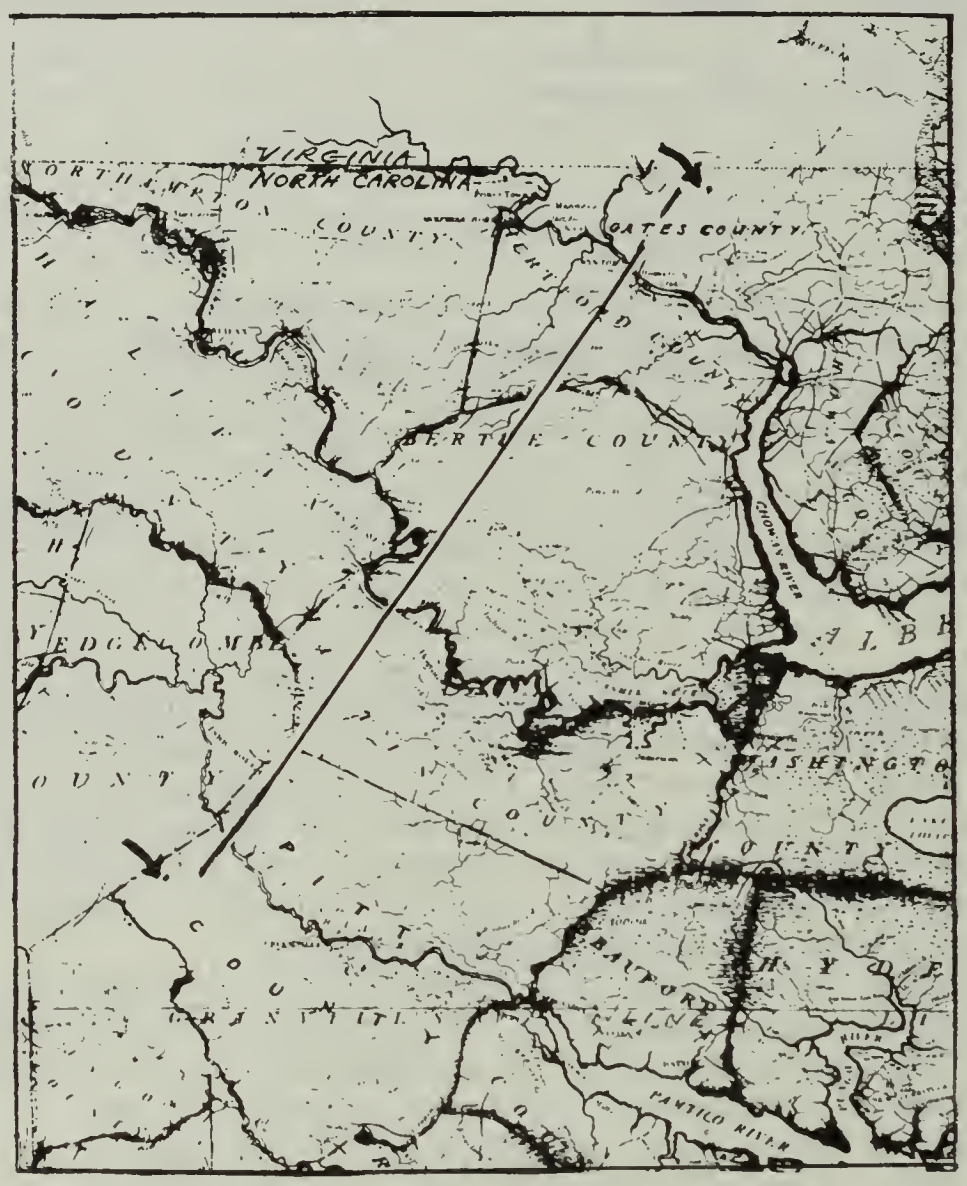
One record for Mary Lang several years before her marriage shows that on 21 December 1784 she witnessed a deed from John Goodman of Edgecombe County to Solomon King of Gates County for land adjoining William Goodman and Isaac Pipkin of Gates, neighbors of the James Lang family.[1] Uriah and William Odom were witnesses with Mary.

Through the generations the Lang men had married at approximately twenty-five years of age. Although this would have been rather late for many men of their era to marry, there is every indication that the pattern in the Lang family was to marry somewhat later than average. Mary Lang did not marry at a young age either. She was approximately thirty years old when on 15 January 1795 the marriage bond was recorded for her to become the second wife of James Tugwell, son of Elizabeth and Joseph Tugwell, Jr., of Gates County. (Joseph Tugwell, Jr., had died in 1779.) James was about thirty-three, a widower, and did not have any

1. Gates County, North Carolina, Deeds 1784–1788, vol. 1, p. 256.

children by his first marriage. Mary Lang and James Tugwell would have several children: William, Benjamin, James, John L., and a daughter (name unknown).

In 1795, the same year Mary married, her brothers, John and James, sold their Gates County land which had been in the Lang family nearly fifty-years, and John moved to Pitt County, North Carolina. In 1800 Mary and her husband James Tugwell moved to Pitt County too, and that is where they reared their family and spent the rest of their lives. For James Tugwell that was not very long. He died in Pitt County between 1804 and 1810.



EASTERN NORTH CAROLINA WHERE MARY LANG TUGWELL LIVED
CA. 35 YEARS IN GATES COUNTY AND CA. 50 YEARS IN PITT COUNTY

Mary (Lang) Tugwell was head of her household in the Pitt County Census in 1820 (p. 533), 1830 (p. 67), and 1840 (p. 393). In the 1850 census (Anderson District, p. 29) she was listed in the household of her son Benjamin. Son William also lived in Pitt County, but sons James and John (my line) had moved to Haywood County in west Tennessee in 1830. Mary (Lang) Tugwell died in her eighties, having been a widow more than forty years.

When Mary Lang married James Tugwell, these lines combined, and upon her death in Pitt County, North Carolina, probably in the early 1850s, the Lang

surname disappeared from our family history. We are grateful to have at least some information on four generations of Langs, beginning ca. 1675, as Mary Lang Tugwell was the mother of our great-grandfather, John L. Tugwell. For more complete information on Mary Lang and her children, see the chapter on James Tugwell, her husband.

Children of Mary Lang and James Tugwell:

1. William Tugwell: b. 5 April 1796; d. 23 September 1882
2. Benjamin Tugwell: b. 5 April 1798; d. 22 September 1855
3. James Tugwell: b. 1801; d. 17 December 1860
4. JOHN L. TUGWELL: b. 1803; d. April–June 1855 MY DIRECT LINE

[See "James Tugwell"—husband]

PART TWO

FINCH

HOCKADAY

POWELL

THE FINCH FAMILY

MOST OF MY Finch research began with John Wesley Finch, born in 1793. From his father, John Finch, Jr., on back to the 1663 immigrant in our line, Thomas Finch, I have depended to a great extent on Ruby Finch Thompson's 1972 *Finch Families of Dixie: Three Hundred Years in the South*, plus doing research on my own. I agree with the claim in the foreword to Mrs. Thompson's fine book that it is the largest collection of "Finchery" ever published.

Finch Families of Dixie tells us that the Finches came originally from Viking stock. Having a Norwegian son-in-law, I like that. One of the earliest Viking settlements outside of Scandinavia was in France, where the Northmen were known as Normans and their home as Normandy. William II of Normandy became William I (the Conqueror) of England in 1066.

One of William the Conqueror's followers was Herbert FitzPeter. Nobody in those days, nearly a thousand years ago, had family names. To identify themselves most used *fitz* plus their father's name. Fitz was the Norman version of *fils* (pronounced "feece"), which in French means "son". Herbert was married to Emma, daughter of Eudo, the Count of Blois and an important leader in the invasion of England. Six generations later the name Finch appeared when a Herbert FitzHerbert married the daughter and heiress of the Finches. There being no male heirs, and to keep the name from dying out, son-in-law Herbert FitzHerbert did what was often done in such a case. He took the surname of Finch. Being casual about surnames then, for a couple of generations his descendants called themselves either Finch or Herbert or both. Herbert FitzHerbert/Finch's eighth generation descendant was Sir Thomas Finch of Eastwell Place, Kent. (All the intervening names are in the standard genealogies of the English families.) Sir Thomas' daughter, Lady Jane Finch, in October 1582 married Sir George Wiatt (*sic*), and their son Sir Francis Wyatt was the first Royal Governor of Virginia. There is no proof whatsoever that the Finches in Virginia were related to Sir Thomas, or even to Sir George Wiatt's sister who married a Finch, but it is at least likely that some were younger sons of other branches of the family of the first governor's mother or aunt. Our Finch ancestors are thought to be from the shire of Kent, England.

As Ruby Finch Thompson said, "If there had been a Statue of Liberty on the Virginia shores it would have said, 'Give me your younger sons.'" And the Finches in England had plenty of them. Because the oldest sons inherited all of the family land (primogeniture), younger sons had to seek their fortunes in the army, the church, or elsewhere. In the 1600s the Virginia Colony was "elsewhere," offering free land and excitement enough for the most adventurous. There were Finches who came to Massachusetts in 1630 with Governor Winthrop. There were Southern Finches who came to Virginia in the 1630s and settled along the James River. Our immigrant ancestor, however, came thirty years later to the York River, and the information on this "first-comer" is scant in *Finch Families of Dixie*. We will follow eight generations of Finches, beginning with the immigrant Thomas Finch who was born before the middle of the seventeenth century.

FINCHES IN THE VIRGINIA COLONY IN THE 1600s

Finch	Brought By	Date	Destination
John	Thomas Osborne, Jr.	16 June 1637	Henrico Co.
Frances	John Flood, Gent.	12 May 1638	James City Co.
Francis (and Dictoris Christmas)	Land grant	10 Oct. 1642	"300 acres, beg. at small creek called Finches Creek"
Richard, Mary, Elizabeth, John, William, Mary	Richard Croshaw	27 Feb. 1649	York Co.
Francis	Capt. John Flood	7 June 1650	James City Co.
Hugh	Land mentioned in Robert Newman's grant	1 April 1651	Northumberland Co.
John	Land grant	1 Oct. 1652	Lower Norfolk Co.
John	Land grant	11 Mar. 1653	Lower Norfolk Co.
Anne	Robert Woody	16 April 1653	Lower Norfolk Co.
William	William Walker	19 Oct. 1653	Northumberland Co.
William	Withers, Garey	6 Oct. 1654	Westmoreland Co.
Mary	John Symons	26 Mar. 1656	Nansemond River
Francis	Edward Sanders	5 Mar. 1662	Land between Lancaster and Northumberland counties
Francis	James Samford	8 April 1662	Rappahannock Co.
Mary	Lt. John Howell	25 Mar. 1663	Bristol Parish
Francis	Thomas Hanckes (Haukes)	8 April 1663	New Kent Co.
John	Capt. John Weir	26 June 1663	Rappahannock Co.

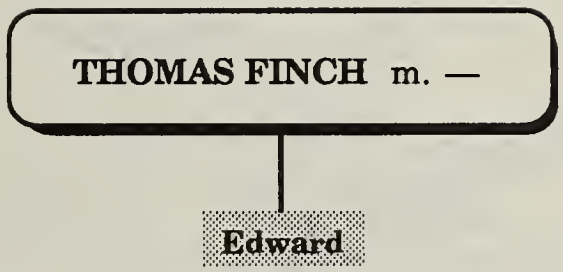
Finch	Brought By	Date	Destination
*Thomas **	*George Morris*	*19 July 1663*	*New Kent Co.*
Mary	James Suer	18 Feb. 1664	Nansemond Co.
Richard	Pitt, Bridger, Burgh	21 Mar. 1664	Isle of Wight Co.
John	Webley, Davis, Freshwater	24 Aug. 1664	Land in Rappahannock and Northumberland counties
John	Capt. John Savage	2 Oct. 1664	Northampton Co.
Samuel	Capt. John Ashton	16 Nov. 1664	Westmoreland Co.
Richard	Thomas Vicars	16 Feb. 1665	Gloster (*sic*) Co.
George	William Lech	27 July 1665	Lancaster Co.
Joseph	Page, Hodgson, Weilding	3 April 1667	Rappahannock Co.
William	Meders, Peters	17 April 1667	Rappahannock Co.
Benjamin	Laurence Robinson	23 Mar. 1671	Northampton Co.
Mary	Augustine Warner	8 Oct. 1672	Rappahannock and New Kent counties
Adam	Henry Smith	27 May 1673	Northampton Co.
Elizabeth	William Phillips	18 Feb. 1673	New Kent Co.
Benjamin	John Bowsey	5 Nov. 1673	Rappahannock Co.
Richard	Mathew Tompson	12 Jan. 1677	Stafford Co.
Edward	Lyonell Morris	23 Apr. 1681	Verina Parish, Henrico Co.
Ma. (*sic*)	Tucker, Morris	22 Sept. 1682	New Kent Co.
Francis	Col. Edward Hill	20 Nov. 1683	Charles City Co.
Gilbert	Adam Mekeele	20 April 1686	Accomack Co.

* *Our ancestor*

Finch	Brought By	Date	Destination
John	Woodson, Ferris, Carter	21 Oct. 1687	Verina Parish, Henrico Co.
Ann	Christopher Wormley	21 April 1690	Middlesex Co.
Elizabeth	Joshua Storey, Gent.	28 April 1691	New Kent Co.
John	James Barrett	29 April 1692	James City Co.

Data from Nell Marion Nugent, *Cavaliers and Pioneers*, vol. 1, (1934), vol. 2 (1977).

THOMAS FINCH
(ca. 1639–ca. 1700?)



THOMAS FINCH is listed as having come from England to New Kent County, Virginia, 19 July 1663, brought by George Morris. At this time there were approximately 35,000 people in colonial Virginia. The 19 July 1663 date is recorded in Nugent's *Cavaliers and Pioneers,* vol. I, p. 542. It is entirely possible, as has been found to be the case with many other immigrants, that Thomas was in the colony before that.[1]

Waterways furnished the principal means of transport and communication. The lower reaches of the Tidewater rivers of Virginia had been quickly settled, and the development of the interior soon followed. Charles River County, one of the original shires or counties in the colony (whose name was changed to York County in 1642), as originally established had extended westward indefinitely. Following the cut-off for Gloucester County on the north side of the lower York River, a large interior region on both sides of the Pamunkey and Mattaponi rivers (upriver extensions of the York River) was designated as New Kent County in 1654. The new county was erected from that part of York County west of Skiminoe Creek, and it was here that Thomas Finch settled. [See map on next page]

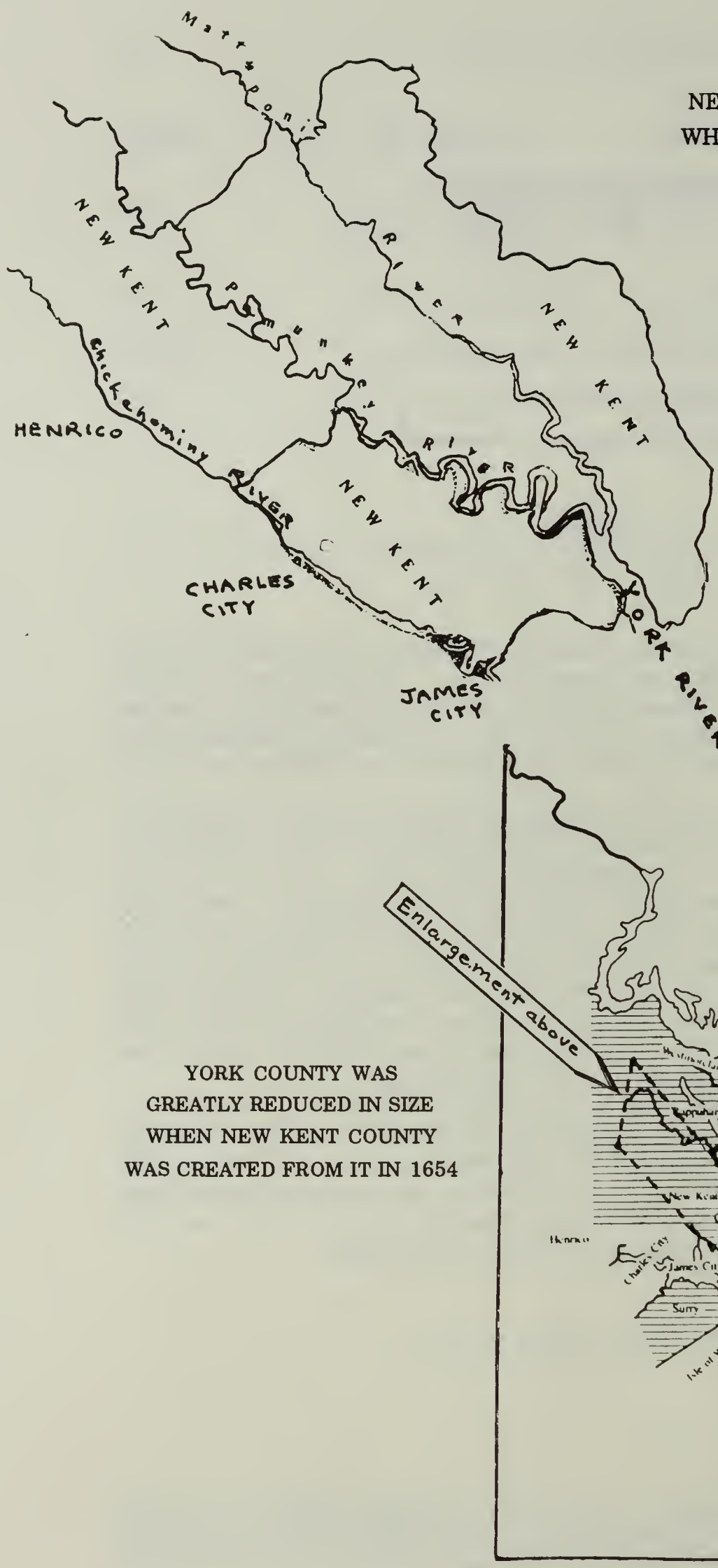
Thomas and Francis Finch paid taxes on 300 acres of land in New Kent County in 1664. There is no further information on Francis Finch. It is assumed that Thomas was the father of Edward Finch who forty years later paid taxes on the same 300 acres of land in New Kent County. Because the records are mostly from Charles City County, it is believed that the Finches may have lived near the dividing line between New Kent County and Charles City County.

[See "Edward Finch"—son]

---

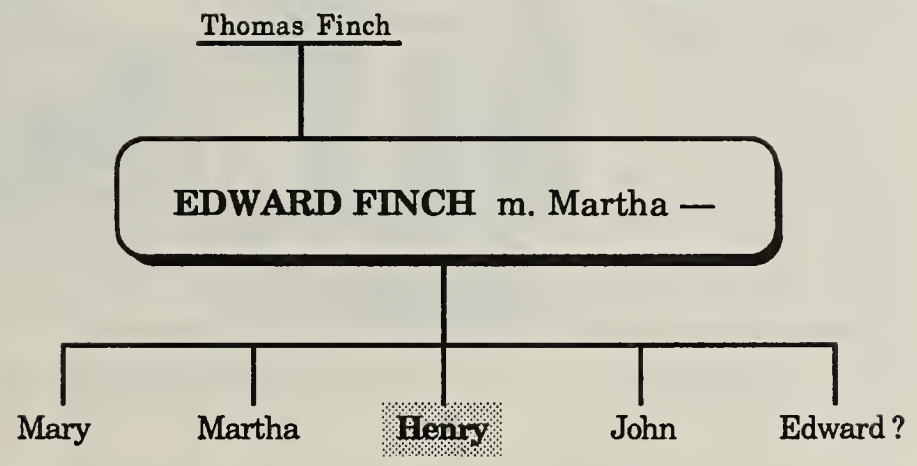
1. From "Explanatory Notes" in *Adventures of Purse and Person, Virginia 1607–1625*, compiled and edited by Annie Lash Jester, 2d ed., 1964, p. xxiv: "The persons named as headrights in a patent did not necessarily arrive in the colony the year the patent was named, but ofttimes such dates are the only clues to first appearances in Virginia. Before a patent was issued the claimant was required to show receipt as proof that passage money was duly paid."

NEW KENT COUNTY, VIRGINIA,
WHEN THOMAS FINCH SETTLED
THERE IN 1663



YORK COUNTY WAS
GREATLY REDUCED IN SIZE
WHEN NEW KENT COUNTY
WAS CREATED FROM IT IN 1654

EDWARD FINCH
(ca. 1660?–post-1704)



IT IS NOT KNOWN whether Edward was born in England or in Virginia. Judging by the date of his first child's birth, Edward's birthdate has been estimated to be ca. 1660, but may have been closer to 1665. Probably his father died ca. 1700, as Edward was the one who paid taxes on Thomas' 300 acres of land in New Kent in 1704. This is recorded on "A Rent roll in the Parish of St. Peter's and St. Paul's Anno 1704."

In 1691 New Kent County decreased in size when King and Queen County was formed from it, but since Edward and Martha Finch's 300 acres was south of the Pamunkey River (upriver extension of the York River), they were not affected and were still in New Kent. The surname of Edward Finch's wife Martha is unknown, and the loss of New Kent records has made it difficult to establish family relationships in that area. Their children were baptized in St. Peter's Church in New Kent except for Martha, although her death date is recorded in the parish records. The Parish of St. Peter was formed from the western part of Blisland (Blissland) Parish in 1679. The Finches were good members of the Church of England in the Virginia Colony and became prosperous planters, but it can be assumed they were not of the upper elite because no records we know of show our Finches held public positions, civil or military.

NEW KENT COUNTY, VIRGINIA

St. Peter's Church, which our early Finches attended in New Kent County, was where George Washington's wife Martha Dandridge worshipped in her early years and married her first husband, Daniel Parke Custis. St. Peter's is near the town of Providence Forge, not far off U.S. Highway 60 between Williamsburg and Richmond, and it is located only a few miles north along back country roads for the last mile or so. St. Peter's, seen here in 1937, is a charming example of colonial brick architecture and is in a clearing in the woods, surrounded by mostly unmarked graves.

ST. PETER'S CHURCH, 1937

Children of Edward Finch and Martha —, all born in New Kent County:[1]

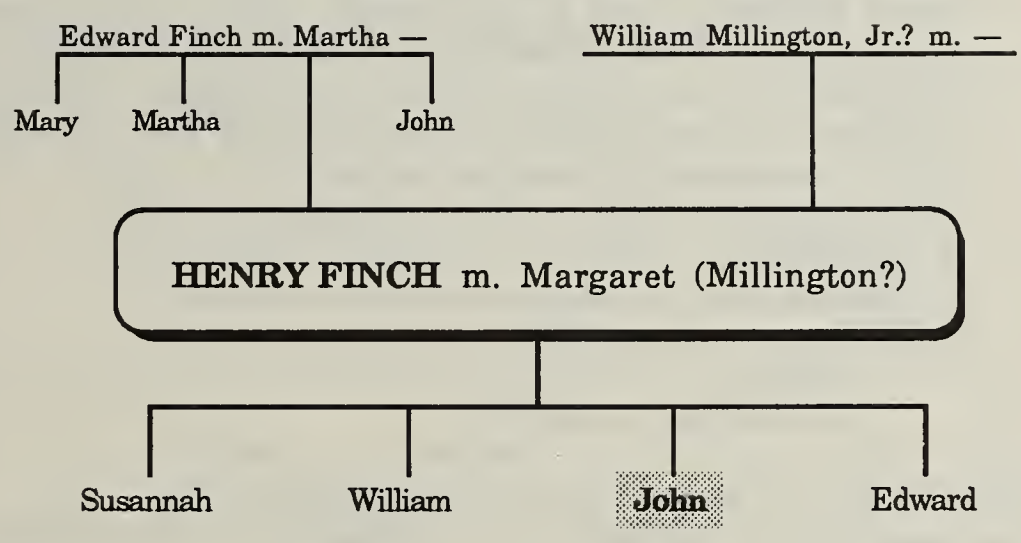
1. Mary Finch: baptized 18 April 168—
2. Martha Finch: d. 24 August 1716
3. HENRY FINCH MY DIRECT LINE
   Baptized: 15 February 1698 (or 1699?)
   Married: 1719, Margaret, thought to be the daughter of William Millington, Jr., New Kent County, Virginia
   Died: ca. 1754
   Children: Susannah, William, John (my line), Edward
   [See "Henry Finch" chapter]
4. John Finch: b. 20 March 1699; m. Sabra Stroud. They moved early to the Halifax County, Virginia, area.
   Children (included):
   (1) Stroud Finch: b. 2 (or 17) February 1724/5, St. Peter's Church Register
   (2) Charles Finch: b. 27 October 1728, St. Peter's Church Register; m. Joyce Moss (b. 7 August 1730), daughter of Susannah and Thomas Moss. (For descendants see *Finch* book, pp. 116–129.) Charles' will,[2] recorded 5 March 1795, names his children.
   (3) Martha Finch: b. 27 July 1737, St. Peter's Church Register
   (4) Thomas Finch: b. 27 October 1738, St. Peter's Church Register
   (5) Sabra Finch: m. ca. 1758, Julius Scrugg
5. Edward Finch (possibly their son): See *Finch* book, pp. 136–201.

[See "Henry Finch"—son]

---

1. C. G. Chamberlayne, transcriber and editor, *The Vestry Book and Register of St. Peter's Parish—New Kent and James City Counties, Virginia, 1684–1786*, 1937, see Index.
2. Deed Book 4, Oglethorpe County, Georgia, p. 9.

HENRY FINCH
(1698–1754)



HENRY FINCH, son of Edward Finch and Martha —, was baptized 15 February 1698 at St. Peter's Church, New Kent County, Virginia. About the only thing we know about Henry is that in 1719 he married Margaret, who is thought to be the daughter of William Millington, Jr., who had died 14 June 1710 in New Kent County. Margaret Millington was baptized 5 November 1699 at St. Peter's Church. The 1704 New Kent County rent roll in the Parish of St. Peters and St. Paul listed William Millington with 200 acres of land. The baptisms of Margaret and Henry Finch's children were recorded in the Vestry Register of St. Peter's Parish,[1] and all were brought up in the Church of England (Anglican/Episcopal). It is thought that Henry was the one whose estate was under the jurisdiction of the court in neighboring Charles City County in 1754, with sons John and Edward as executors. Most of the (1750s) wills themselves, for Charles City County, are not extant. At the time of Henry Finch's death the population of the Virginia Colony was estimated to be 284,000.

Children of Henry Finch and Margaret Millington, all born in New Kent County, Virginia:

1. Susannah Finch: b. 25 September 1719 (The Register shows "Susana Daughr of Henry ffinch Born the 25th Day of 7br [*sic*] 1719.)
2. William Finch: baptized 12 December 1722; m. Anne —; d. between 1784 and 1790. In early married life William and Anne lived in the Surry/Sussex County, Virginia, area, then moved to North Carolina between 1765 and

1. C. G. Chamberlayne, transcriber and editor, *The Vestry Book and Register of St. Peter's Parish—New Kent and James City Counties, Virginia, 1684–1786*, 1937, pp. 463, 464; original Vestry Book, vol. 1, pp. 113, 114. This book is well indexed.

1768. William's younger brother John (see #3 infra) moved to North Carolina about the same time.
Children (for details see *Finch* book, pp. 12–79):
(1) Henry Finch (thought to be their son), who had a son Ethelbert (*Finch* book, pp. 12–14)
(2) Isham Finch: baptized 5 July 1761. Isham moved to North Carolina prior to the Revolutionary War. He had several sons, four of whom moved to counties in west Tennessee. Wright and John moved to Henry County. Williamson and Wiley moved to Weakley County, where Williamson had a son Caswell. Their distant cousin, my ancestor John Wesley Finch, moved to Weakley County in 1826. The 1836 Tax List of Carroll County (which adjoins both Henry and Weakley counties) shows Wright and Henry Finch in District 16 and Williamson and Edward in District 17.
Children (several sons—order uncertain—including):
1. Wright
2. John
3. Williamson: b. ca. 1793
Child:
[1] Caswell: b. 1825/27
4. Wiley
(3) Allen Finch: b. 4 March 1765 and baptized 28 July 1765
(4) Claiborne Finch: m. Sarah Hunt 26 January 1790 and John Finch (below) was bondsman

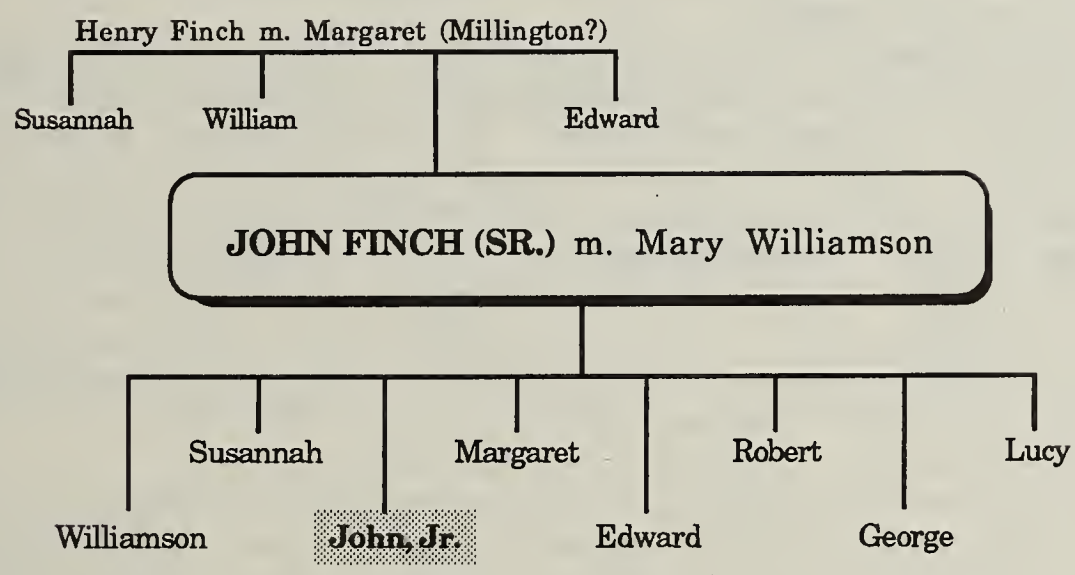
3. JOHN FINCH (SR.) MY DIRECT LINE
Born: 17 June 1725, New Kent County, Virginia
Married: Mary Williamson, New Kent County, Virginia
Died: 1793 (probably August), close to the border of Granville and Franklin counties, North Carolina
Children: Williamson, Susannah, John Jr. (my line), Margaret, Edward, Robert, George, Lucy
[See "John Finch (Sr.)" chapter]

4. Edward Finch: b. 2 October 1726; baptized 22 February 1728 at St. Peter's Church, New Kent County, Virginia; m. Elizabeth Moss (baptized 13 June 1730 at St. Peter's Church), daughter of James Moss

NOTE: Unidentified are two Finches in the 1782 Head of Family list for New Kent County: Lydall Bacon's group shows James Finch (three whites, eight blacks) and Henry Finch (ten whites, twelve blacks).

[See "John Finch (Sr.)"—son]

JOHN FINCH (SR.)
(1725–1793)



JOHN FINCH, son of Henry Finch and Margaret (Millington?), was born 17 June 1725 in New Kent County, Virginia, and his baptism was recorded in the registry of St. Peter's Church. About 1745 he married Mary Williamson. John's father died in 1754, and it may have been soon after this that John and Mary moved their family from New Kent County up the Chickahominy River and a little west into Goochland County, Virginia. The Chickahominy River borders New Kent County on the south and divides it from Charles City County. Some of John and Mary's children were born in New Kent County and some in Goochland County.

Records for their three youngest children are in what is called the Douglas Register of the Dover Church in Goochland County.[1] There is no record for John Finch anywhere in the colony of Virginia after their youngest child was baptized in 1761. It was sometime between 1766 and 1768 that the John Finch family left Virginia and moved about a hundred miles southwest across the Virginia–North Carolina border into Granville County, North Carolina.[2] In the eighteenth century Granville County was a gateway for migration to the South and West, for pioneers coming from Pennsylvania and the Valley of Virginia as well as for those from eastern Virginia and Southside (south of the James River). Until Wake and Chatham counties were formed about 1770, Granville and Orange counties had dominated the general area where the Finches moved.

Our Finch line had been in Virginia a little over a century and would live in North Carolina about sixty years. In 1826 John's grandson, John Wesley Finch,

---

1. No register had been kept for St. James Northam Parish (Dover Church), Goochland County, Virginia, until the Reverend William Douglas came there in 1750. Now called "The Douglas Register," it was owned by his descendants and not made available to the public until 1928.
2. On a modern North Carolina map John Finch's land would be approximately twelve miles southeast of Oxford and eight miles south of Henderson.

along with some Finch and Bobbitt relatives and other neighbors, would leave Granville County and make the great leap westward to Weakley County in northwestern Tennessee. Many other Finch lines have remained in North Carolina to the present time.

The first North Carolina record for John Finch is the Granville County List of Taxables for 1769, and it shows "John Finch 3 whites," the other two besides himself being his oldest two sons, Williamson and John, Jr. Also on the 1769 tax list, John's brother was listed: "William Finch 1 white." In 1771 John's three oldest sons, Williamson, John, and Edward, were listed in Captain Jonathan Kittrell's militia company in Granville County.

I have not been able to locate the deed showing the exact date between 1766 and 1768 that John Finch made his first land purchase in Granville County. Within five years he was buying and selling land. John Finch was nearly forty-seven years old when on 26 May 1772 he sold land to Baxter Ragsdale of Lunenburg County, Virginia.[3] On 11 June 1772 John paid William Roberts 25 pounds for 200 acres of Granville land.[4] One witness to the second deed was Henry Finch, whom I cannot identify (but may be his nephew, William's son), and the other was John Dickerson, a neighbor. The land was in the fork of Long Creek and the Lick Branch near the eastern edge of Granville County. Long Creek flows into Tabb Creek, which in turn flows into the Tar River just west of what in 1772 was the Granville–Bute county line. [See map on opposite page]

I have discovered a number of deeds of conveyance reciting John Finch as either grantor or grantee; there may possibly be more. Therein lies the problem. Deeds for the years 1772–1792 total 1495 acres, a sizeable amount, and none of them indicates "Sr." or "Jr." All the deeds are for land around creeks that started near what in those days was the eastern edge of Granville and flowed into Bute County. It must be remembered that when John Finch, Sr., and Mary (Williamson) moved their family to eastern Granville County, Granville adjoined Bute County. In 1779 Bute was abolished and Franklin and Warren were created from it, thus making the Finch land adjoin Franklin County after 1779. However, as indicated on a present-day map of North Carolina, the Finch land is in the little lower panhandle wedge of Vance County, which was created from Franklin, Granville, and Warren counties in 1881, a hundred years later. In the eighteenth century this was the Epping Forest District of Granville County.

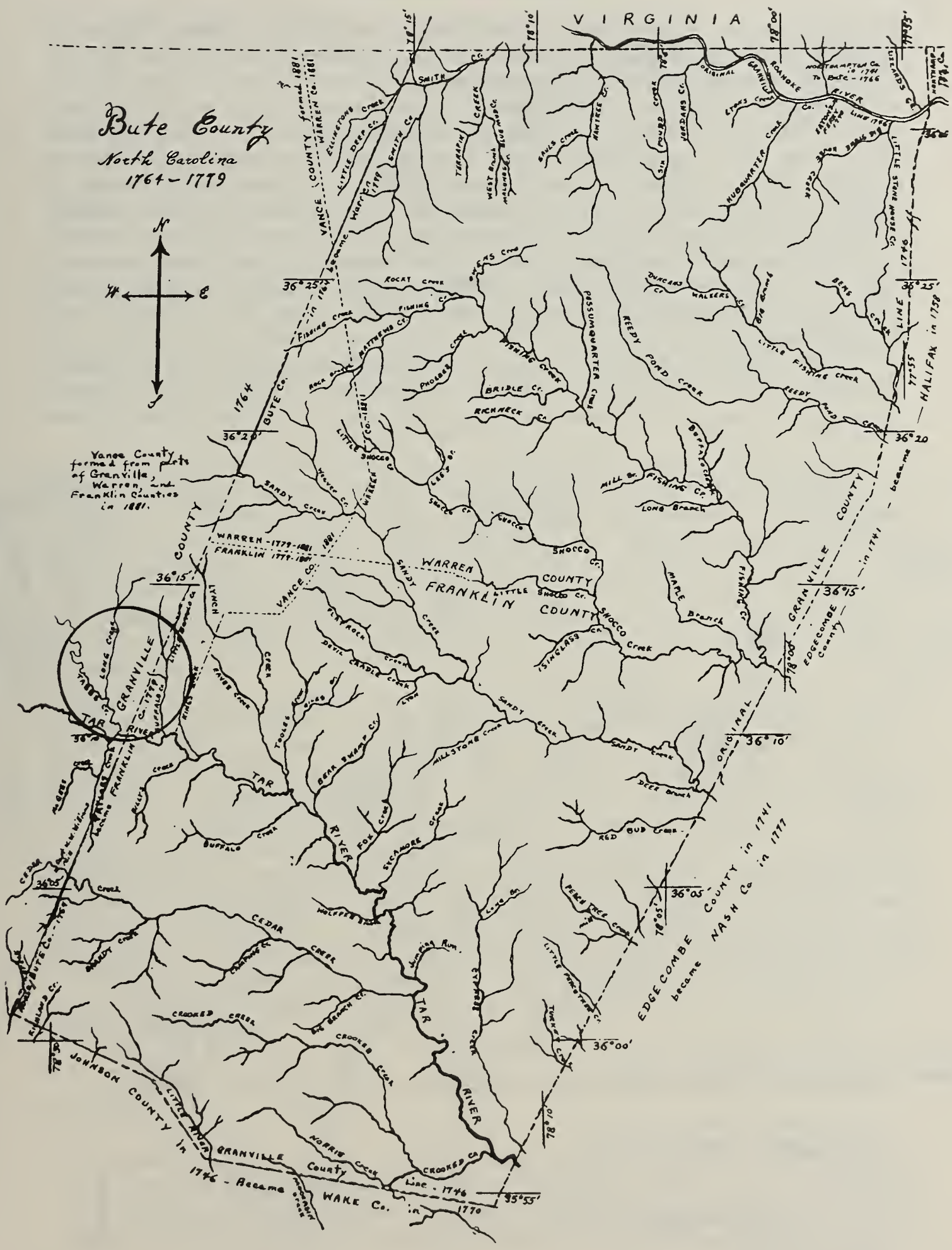
As just mentioned, there are many deeds for John Finch. I am arbitrarily setting 1783 as the cutoff date for the deeds attributed to John, Sr., and the deeds after that date are in the next chapter on John, Jr.

In 1774 John Finch paid 2500 pounds for 285 acres of land and appurtenances. On 8 May 1775 Nathaniel Jarrott of Bute County sold John 100 acres in Bute County "along the county line" between Granville and Bute, adjoining Thomas Smith, who would be a longtime neighbor.[5] By noting some of the buyers at the estate of William Chavers, deceased, and seeing John Finch's name, we may assume some other neighbors in 1774 were Benjamin Wade, David Hunt, John Smith, Joseph Hawley, Thomas Sherrod, and John Nevill.

The American Revolution was approaching, and although John had sons the right age to serve, there is no record they did, which is puzzling. Admittedly, Granville County was awash with Loyalists, but Finches were certainly not recorded as Loyalists either. Having six ancestors on my father's side who fought

---

3. Granville County, North Carolina, Deed Book K, p. 102.
4. Ibid., pp. 7, 8.
5. Bute County, North Carolina, Deed Book 5, p. 230 (registered in Warren County). The Chavers estate sale is in Granville County Will Book 1, pp. 176–179.

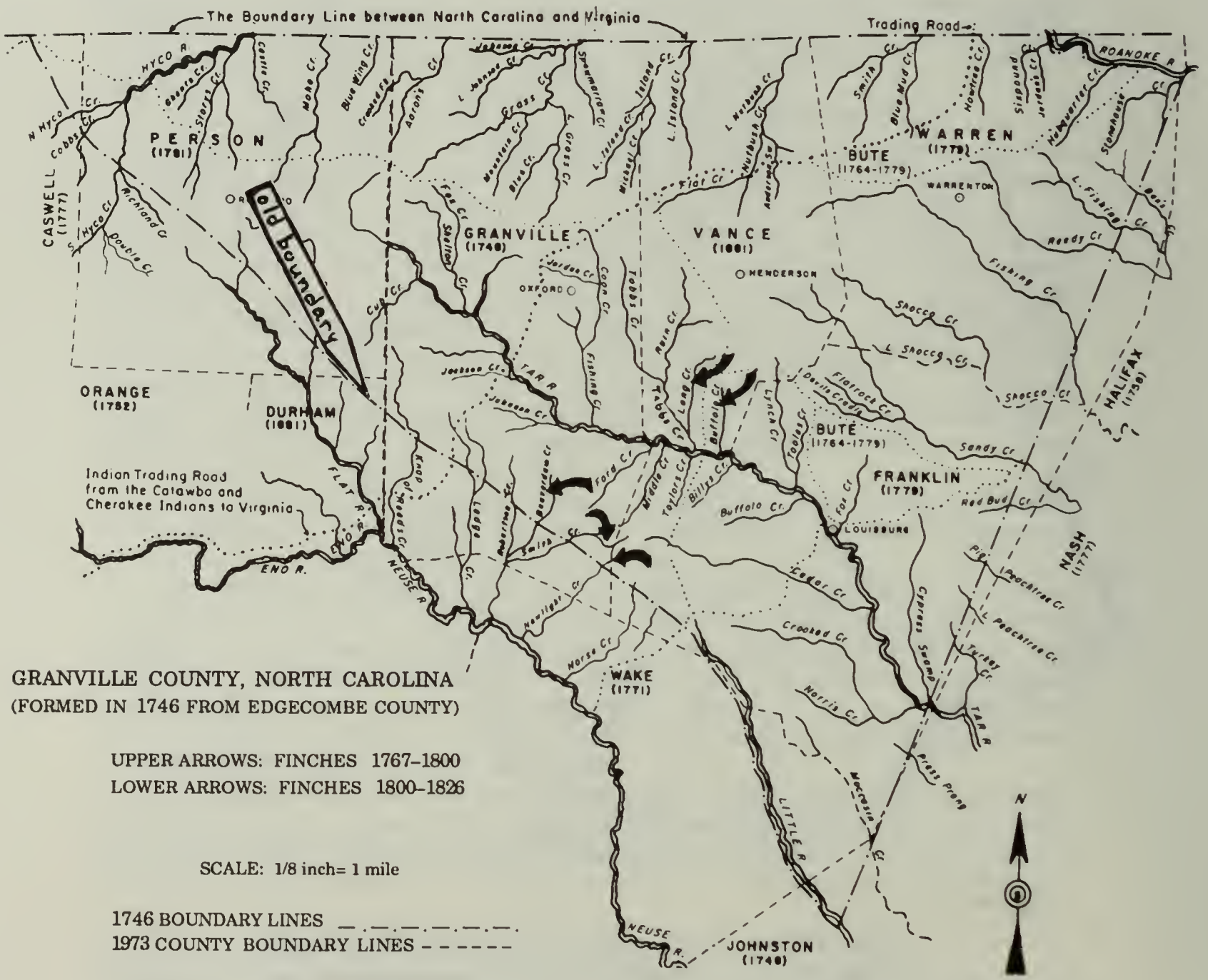


BUTE COUNTY, NORTH CAROLINA, SHOWING (SEE CIRCLE): TABBS CREEK, LONG CREEK, GRANVILLE–BUTE (FRANKLIN) COUNTY LINE, BUFFALO CREEK, AND TAR RIVER

in the Revolution, I am curious to know why I can find no Finches, Tugwells, Bobbitts, etc., in my mother's direct line who were soldiers in that war, and hope to be contacted if anyone has information about that.

In those early days, four documents were involved before a man received land: the entry, the warrant, the plat, and finally the grant. On 10 October 1778 John Finch was mentioned in Entry #208 issued for a man named French Haggard, who was applying for 375 acres of land in Bute County on the waters of Buffalo and Lynch Creek. The entry stated the tract abutted John Finch, Joseph Leeman, John Merritt, Samuel Fuller, Roger Jones, Thomas Smith, and the (Granville–Bute/Franklin) county line. When French Haggard's land was surveyed on 1 February 1779, the plat (file #38) showed he received only 359 acres but the same neighboring landowners were mentioned. Haggard's grant (#36) was issued 20 September 1779.[6]

On 14 October 1783 James Whatley sold to John Finch "of Franklin County" 360 acres of land in Granville County on the south side of Buffalo Creek.[7] This is the only reference to "John Finch of Franklin County" and shows he had land on



GRANVILLE COUNTY, NORTH CAROLINA
(FORMED IN 1746 FROM EDGECOMBE COUNTY)

UPPER ARROWS: FINCHES 1767–1800
LOWER ARROWS: FINCHES 1800–1826

SCALE: 1/8 inch= 1 mile

1746 BOUNDARY LINES _ . _ . _ . _ . _ . _ .
1973 COUNTY BOUNDARY LINES - - - - - -

---

6. Land Grant Office, Raleigh, Virginia.
7. Granville County Book O, pp. 353, 354.

both sides of the county line between Granville and Franklin (which was Bute County until 1779). Here John is acquiring more land in that area that was east of Long Creek [see map on opposite page, upper arrows]. Buffalo Creek, mentioned in the deed, flows gradually southeast into the Tar River. We know how indispensable maps are, but they can also be tricky when place names are repetitious. For example, there were six Buffalo Creeks in old Bute County.

In 1785 John and his sons Williamson, John, Jr. (my line), and Edward are on the Granville County tax list. The 1786 tax list shows that of the seventy-two "souls" listed as heads of families in the Epping Forest District of Granville,[8] only seventeen owned one or a few slaves (except Samuel Fuller who owned eighteen). John Finch, Sr., owned one slave. In 1787 son Edward moved to Wilkes County, North Carolina, and then on to Newberry County, South Carolina. Consequently, the 1788 Granville County tax list does not list Edward but does show John Finch, Sr., Williamson, John, Jr., and George. In 1789 John Finch, Sr., age sixty-four, was one of about ten men exempted from the tax, as shown in the Granville County court minutes (p. 172).

The first federal census of the new United States was taken in 1790, and in Granville County's Epping Forest District the Finches enumerated were John, Sr., Williamson, John, Jr., and George in their separate households. Other familiar names in that district were Kittrell, Higgs, Joseph Leeman, John Merritt, Samuel Fuller, Roger Jones, Thomas York, William Rogers, William Roberts, Thomas White, and John's longtime neighbor Thomas Smith, who also lived on the Granville–Franklin county line. In addition to the four Finch households of John, Sr., and his sons, there were only seven other Finch households in North Carolina, eleven still in Virginia, four in South Carolina, (as well as 105 households in the northern states).

Finch Families of Dixie mentions (with no specifics) several deeds in the 1780s and early 1790s that appear to have been the distribution of John Finch's lands, because no real property is mentioned in his will. John Finch, "being weak in body," wrote his will 6 July 1793 in Granville County, and it was probated in September 1793 in adjoining Franklin County.[9] In his will, John named only his unmarried daughter Susannah, to whom he left all personal and household goods, with no mention of land. It is thought that Susannah lived the rest of her life on the family farm, and that the sons had received land previously as they were left the token five shillings. John appointed his "beloved friend William Hight" to be his executor, and John Hight and Roger Toney were witnesses. Because she was not mentioned in his will, we assume Mary (Williamson) Finch had died before 1793.

John Finch, who in the 1760s had moved from Virginia to Granville County, North Carolina, and was a prosperous farmer, died in 1793 (probably in August) at the age of sixty-eight.

Children of John Finch (Sr.) and Mary Williamson, possibly all not in order of birth:

1. Williamson Finch: b. ca. 1746, New Kent County, Virginia; m. Molly Spivey. In 1771 Williamson was in Captain Kittrell's militia company, Granville County, North Carolina. In 1794[10] Williamson and Molly sold Daniel Hunter the land Molly had inherited from Littleton Spivey, deceased. In the

8. Epping Forest was an eighteenth century designation for the community located near the present town of Kittrell in the most southern part of present Vance County.
9. Franklin County Book A, p. 110.
10. Granville County Book P, p. 49.

1800 census of Franklin County, North Carolina, Williamson apparently was a widower.
d. post-March 1801
Children: 2 sons, 4 daughters

2. Susannah Finch: the only child mentioned in her father's 1793 will; probably named for her father's sister

3. JOHN FINCH, JR. MY DIRECT LINE
Born: 1750, New Kent County, Virginia
Married: (1) ca. 1772, probably — Hight
(2) 9 April 1789, Elizabeth Haynes
(3) 24 October 1815, Mary Bradford
Died: July 1822, Granville County, North Carolina
Children: Mary ("Polly"), Hight, Cliff, Fanny, Caswell, Ellender, Elizabeth, John Wesley (my line), Barbara, Patsy, Nancy
[See "John Finch, Jr." chapter]

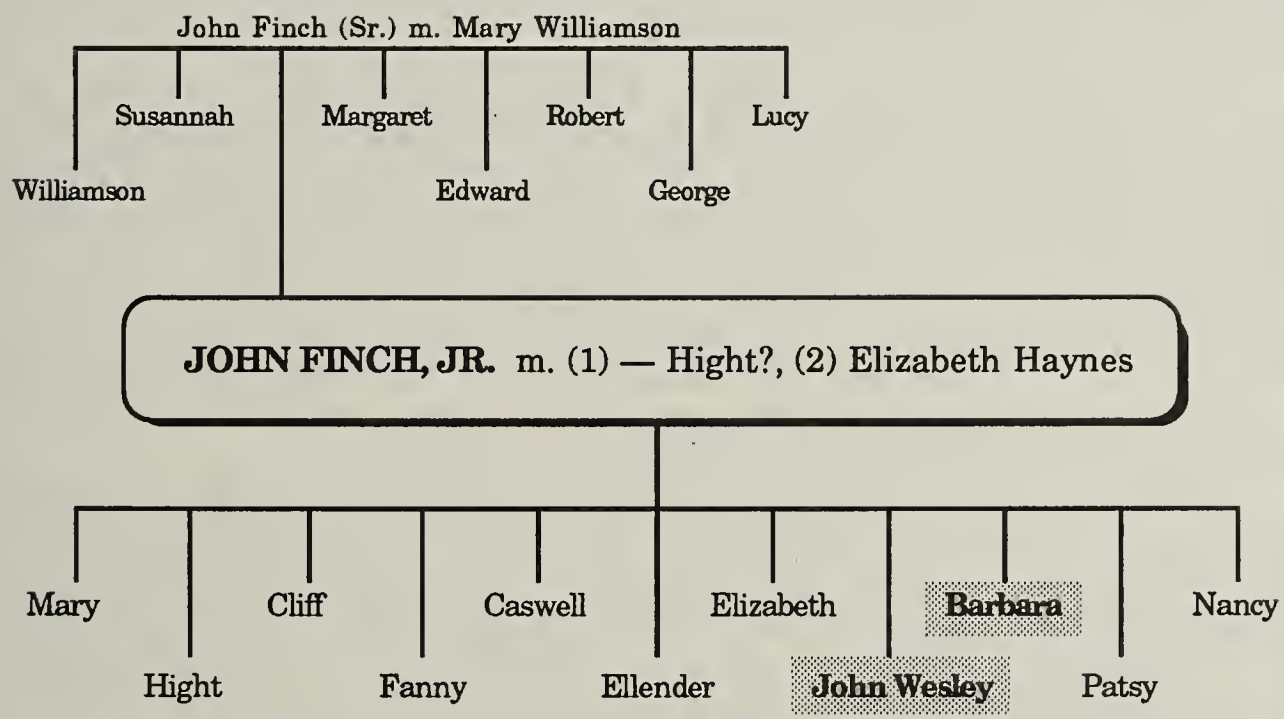
4. Margaret Finch: probably named for her grandmother, Margaret (Millington) Finch; m. 13 February 1781, David Daniel
5. Edward Finch: b. ca. 1754. A Franklin County court record in June 1786 shows Edward and John Finch were instructed "to lay off a road...." In 1787 Edward moved from Franklin County to Wilkes County, North Carolina, and settled in Newberry County, South Carolina.
6. Robert Finch: b. 1 October 1757 and baptized 30 January 1758 at Dover Church, Goochland County, Virginia. Robert and his family moved to Georgia.
7. George Finch: b. 20 October 1759 and baptized 11 February 1760 at Dover Church, Goochland County, Virginia
m. Elizabeth —
d. post-1810,[11] Granville County, North Carolina
Children: 4 sons, 4 daughters. The James Finch enumerated in Epping Forest District of Granville County in 1820 could be one of George's sons.
8. Lucy ("Sunny") Finch: b. 1 April 1761 and baptized 26 July 1761 at Dover Church, Goochland County, Virginia;[12]
m. 24 October 1786, Charnell (Carnall) Hight
d. 15 June 1848, Franklin County, North Carolina
Children: at least 1 son and 3 daughters

[See "John Finch, Jr."—son]

---

11. 1800 Granville County Census.
12. Baptism dates for the youngest three children of John Finch, Sr., are from W. Mac. Jones, transcriber and editor, *The Douglas Register*, 1928, p. 194; original pp. 51, 56, 60.

JOHN FINCH, JR.
(1750–1822)



Note: No children by 3d marriage

JOHN FINCH, JR. was the second son of John Finch and Mary Williamson. He was born ca. 1750 in New Kent County, Virginia, but grew up in Goochland County, Virginia. Finches had lived in Virginia for a hundred years. He was in his teens when, sometime between 1766 and 1768, his parents John and Mary moved with their children to Granville County, North Carolina. John Jr., as well as his parents, lived in Granville County the rest of his life. Now the Finches were in the general area where many of the families with whom they would intermarry lived, including the Bobbitts and Hights.

In 1771 there were six militia companies in Granville County. *The State Records of North Carolina*[1] show John, who was twenty-one years old, and his brothers Williamson, twenty-five, and Edward, seventeen, in Capt. Jonathan Kittrell's Company of seventy-four men.

Probably it was about 1772 that John married for the first time. This wife's name is not known, but her family name is thought to be Hight inasmuch as she and John named their first son Hight. She may have been the daughter of John's father's "beloved friend William Hight" who was to be executor of his father's will

1. Walter Clark, ed., 1907, vol. 22, pp. 165, 166.

in 1793.[2] Six children were born of this first marriage: Mary ("Polly"), Hight, Cliff, Fanny, Caswell, and Ellender.

As mentioned in the previous chapter on John's father, none of the deed records I found for John Finch designate "Jr." or "Sr.," so I do not know exactly what land was the family homestead where John, Jr., lived with his first two wives and children. We can be sure, however, it was in eastern Granville County near or on the county line with Bute (that in 1779 became Franklin) County or just over the line in Bute/Franklin. The Finch land on a modern map would be shown in the lower panhandle part of Vance County, created in 1881, not far from the little towns of Kittrell and Bobbitt. (Later John moved less than fifteen miles south-southwest of there.)

In December 1784 Richard Person of Surry County, North Carolina, sold Granville County land to four men who were already friends and neighbors. On 13 December 1784 he sold John Finch of Granville County twenty acres of land for 30 pounds. The land ran down Buffalo Creek to Seaman's (*sic*) line, who was Joseph Leeman, mentioned as John's father's neighbor in 1778.[3] Richard Person sold land to John Hight, Sr., of Franklin County, and to Thomas Smith of Granville County. Seventeen days later John Person sold 75 acres to John Finch's younger brother George. All this land was located near the Granville–Franklin county line and was west of Buffalo Creek near its south fork. Finch, Leeman, Jones, Person, Haynes, Smith, and York families were neighbors.

John Finch, Jr.,'s name appeared on the Granville County tax lists of 1785 and 1786. The 1786 information shows John, Jr., living in the Epping Forest District along with his oldest brother and his father, all in separate households and not listed consecutively. The household enumerated just after John Finch, Jr.,'s was that of John Haynes, probably a relative of John's future wife, Elizabeth Haynes. John, Jr., was shown with three males under twenty-one years, who would be Hight, Cliff, and Caswell, and with three females "all ages," who would be his wife and their daughters Mary and Fanny.

It should be kept in mind that we are talking about land on the border between Granville and Franklin (formerly southern Bute) counties. When John Finch, Sr. (of the previous chapter) sold land to Baxter Ragsdale in 1772, it was Granville land. Now in 1785 Baxter Ragsdale "of Franklin County" sold John's son, John, Jr. (of this chapter), Granville land. The date was 24 May 1785, and John Finch purchased 185 acres of land for 200 pounds,[4] adjoining lines of Moss, Clapton, Harris, Jones, and Williamson (a relative of his mother's?). The 1786 Epping Forest District tax list shows Samuel Jones, Edward Harris, and Margit Clapton all listed one after the other and Williamson Finch four names above Jones. I do not know the first name of neighbor Moss, but the Moss and Finch families were interwoven. John Finch, Jr.,'s Uncle Edward had married a Moss as had John,

---

2. *Hight Families* by Georgia H. Truslow, pp. 61–63, however, opens the possibility that John's first wife may have been Mary, the third and last child (b. ca. 1750) of Mary and John Hight (b. 1723 in Virginia; d. post-10 September 1795 in Franklin County, North Carolina). This John Hight was a witness to John Finch, Sr.,'s will in 1793. After Mary's mother's death, her father married Eleanor — and they had several children, including Charnell (who in 1786 m. Lucy Finch, John Finch, Jr.,'s youngest sister), and Lively (who in 1788 was the second wife of William M. Bobbitt). Incidentally, Lively's stepchildren included Turner, Britton, and John Bobbitt. [See Hight Finch, second child of John Finch, Jr., this chapter, p. 180; also, see "William Bobbitt, Emigrant from Wales" chapter, his great-grandchild William M. Bobbitt, p. 262.]
3. Granville County, North Carolina, Deed Book O, p. 362. Often the beautiful script of colonial times is difficult for us to "interpret" today. The curvy *S* and *L* are sometimes difficult to distinguish. So the name mentioned could be Seaman although I believe it is Leeman. The other three deeds are on pp. 355, 358, 379.
4. Ibid., p. 398.

Jr.,'s distant cousin Charles. Witnesses to the May 1785 deed were John, Jr.,'s father and Millington Finch, relation unknown. (The first Millington connection was in 1719 when Henry Finch, John, Jr.,'s grandfather, married Margaret, whose father is thought to be William Millington, Jr.) At the time of this land purchase John, Jr., was thirty-five and John, Sr., was sixty.

The minutes of the August 1786 Court Term (p. 21) and the February 1787 Term (p. 62) showed that Zachariah Higgs witnessed three Granville County deeds involving John Finch and two Whites. First, John Finch had sold Thomas White the 185 acres of land he had bought in May 1785; then on 17 August 1785 Thomas White sold John Finch 225 acres on the east side of Tabb Creek adjoining (Richard) Thomason, (John) Dickerson, and (John) Walker's lines.[5] Next, Mark White sold John Finch 100 acres. All this involved Granville County land.

Looking at the first map in the previous chapter (p. 169), one can see Finch land going from the east side of Tabb Creek over to and across the Franklin County line. Maybe the two counties were cooperating and using men from both for a big road project, because the Franklin County 1786 court session shows John and his brother Edward Finch were two of a group of men appointed to lay out a road from the ford on the Tar River due east from Hillsborough (in Orange County) to Tarboro (in Edgecombe County).

The 1788 tax list and the 1790 federal census for the Epping Forest District of Granville county show John, Jr., brothers Williamson and George, and their father. Also listed was William M. Bobbitt, son of Lewis Bobbitt, Sr.

John Finch, Jr.,'s first wife died, and in the spring of 1789 he married Elizabeth Haynes, probably related to the John Haynes who was listed next to John on the 1786 tax list for the Epping Forest District. According to Watson Bradley, Elizabeth's father was Nathaniel Haynes.[6] The marriage bond was dated 9 April 1789, and although the exact date of the marriage is not known, it was probably that same month. Signing on the five hundred pound bond with John was his brother-in-law Charnell Hight, husband of John's youngest sister Lucy ("Sunny"). Elizabeth Haynes Finch was the mother of John's last five children: Elizabeth, John Wesley (my line), Barbara, Patsy, and Nancy. At the time of their marriage, Elizabeth's six stepchildren ranged in age from approximately fifteen down to two years of age.

On 28 November 1789 John Finch sold Thomas Jenkins of Warren County (like Franklin County, it was formerly part of Bute County) 275 acres of land on the branches of Tabbs and Long Creek,[7] and the instrument was proved in court by John Walker. Neighbors adjoining were Thomason, Joshua Kittrell, William Hunt, John Walker, Loyd, Dickerson, and Mason.

On 12 September 1792 John Finch bought twenty acres of land on Buffalo Creek for 10 pounds from Dorothy Scribner. The land adjoined Thomas Smith and Richard Thomason, old neighbors. When John had purchased 225 acres from Thomas White in 1785 on the east side of Tabb Creek, it adjoined Thomason, and in 1775 when John's father bought 100 acres on the county line, it adjoined Thomas Smith. The 1792 (Scribner to Finch, Jr.) deed was witnessed by John Harp and Charles Moore. The four involved in this deed with John Finch all lived near one another, as Smith, Thomason, Moore, and Harp families were listed in that order in the 1786 tax list, with Thomas York just before them and Mark White (who sold John land in 1785/6) just after. The Thomas York tabulation is interesting because

---

5. Ibid., pp. 487, 488.
6. Watson Montgomery Bradley (deceased 1991), Nashville, Tennessee [see p. 195], was a descendant of Finches, Hockadays, Bobbitts, and Montgomerys.
7. Granville County Deed Book O, p. 635.

in 1793 he married John Finch, Jr.,'s oldest child, Mary, called "Polly." Thomas York's father must have died before 1786, because no male over twenty-one was counted in 1786; however, there were seven males under twenty-one years (with Thomas listed as head of household), eight females of "all ages," and four slaves.

John Finch, like several of his neighbors, had land on the Granville–Franklin county line. Several deeds I found for the years 1792 through 1810 showed Thomas Person, John and Henry Goodloe, Bryant Cavener (Cavanaugh), Turner Bobbitt, Joseph Leeman, and William Haynes had land "lying in both counties," as the deeds stated. A 17 May 1792 deed that John Finch proved in Granville County's November Court 1795 was just such a description:[8] "Joseph Leeman of Franklin County deeds to William Leeman of Granville County land lying in both counties."

On 6 October 1792 John Finch of Granville County deeded 133 acres of land on the west side of Buffalo Creek to William Haynes of Franklin County, doubtless a relative of his second wife Elizabeth.[9] The only name mentioned in the description was long-time neighbor Thomason. The price for the land was 40 pounds, and witnesses to the deed were John Haynes and Turner McDaniel.

In March 1793 John and Elizabeth (Haynes) Finch's only son was born, my ancestor John Wesley Finch. (Since the Finches were Methodists, I have wondered whether, besides carrying his father and grandfather's name, his middle name was for the founder of Methodism, John Wesley, who had died in 1791.) John and Elizabeth Finch already had a daughter, Elizabeth, and would have three more, Barbara, Patsy, and Nancy. In 1793, probably in August, John's father, John Finch, Sr., died.

The August 1795 Court Minutes (p. 271) show that John Finch (Jr.) and John Smith were securities on a 10,000 pound bond when John Peace was appointed guardian for the six Smith children. The Smiths were longtime neighbors of the Finches.

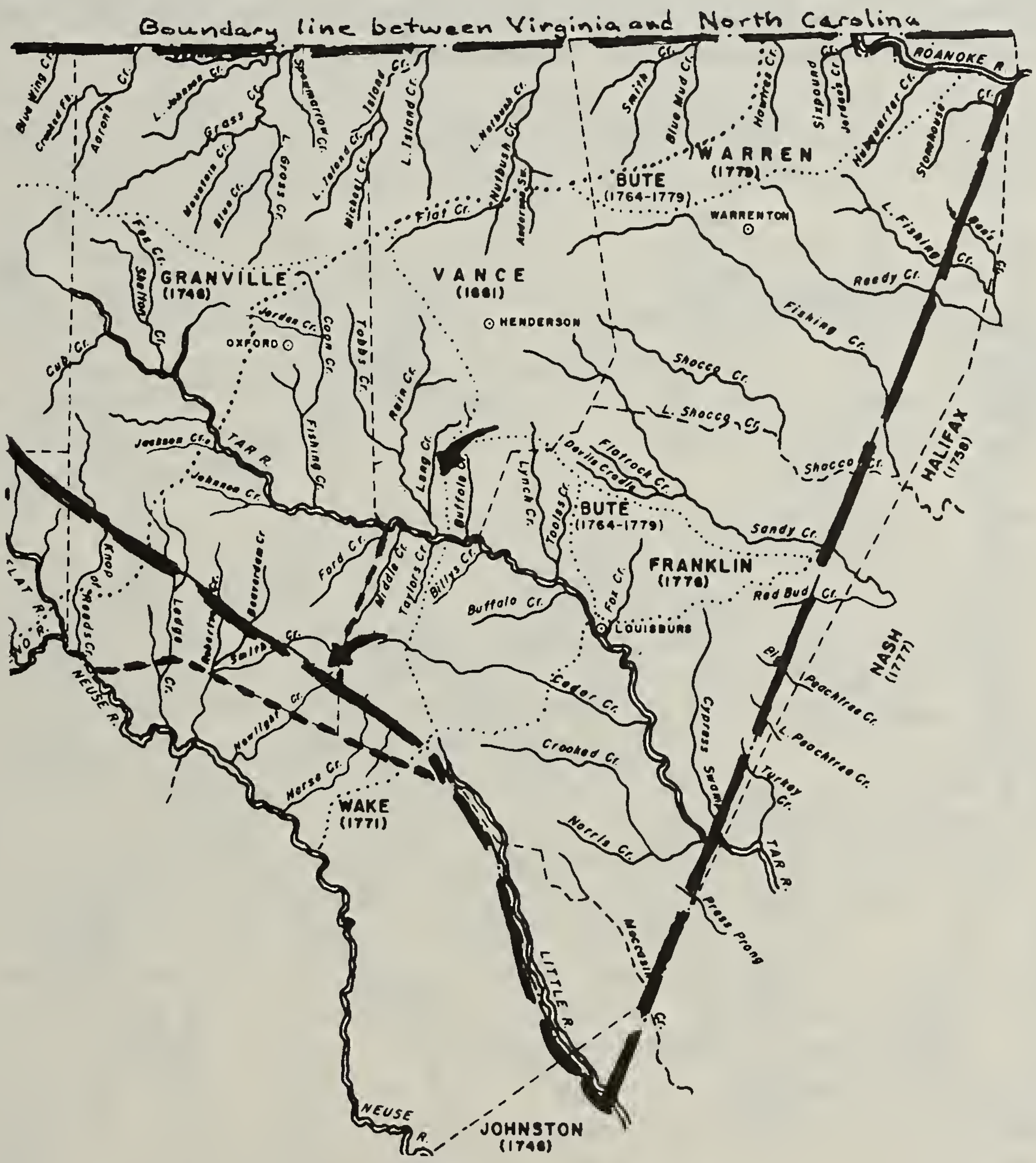
The birth date of Elizabeth Haynes Finch, John's second wife, is not known, but the 1800 Granville County Census (p. 530) that enumerated him in the "45 and up" age group (he was 50), recorded her in the "26 to 45" year classification, as did the 1810 Granville Census (p. 121). This means Elizabeth was born ca. 1770 and was approximately twenty years younger than John.

In 1800 only John's oldest child by his first wife, Mary ("Polly"), was married, having married Thomas York in 1793. Still at home were six daughters and five sons. Two sons were under ten, and the identity of only one is known (my John Wesley Finch), so a now unknown son must have died young, for whom there are no more records. Listed next to John Finch, Jr., and his family in the 1800 Granville County Census was the household of Jonathan Hight "26 to 45," unidentified, but probably a relative of John's first wife.

With the first year of the new century about to draw to a close, John made a change. On 29 November 1800 John Finch of Granville County sold the land "whereon I now live" to Lewis Patterson of Warren County.[10] This is an important deed because it shows John Finch, Jr., was leaving the area where he and his father before him had lived since coming from Virginia to North Carolina ca. 1767. John continued to live in North Carolina, but from then on and until his death in 1822, John Finch would live in the Beaver Dam District less than fifteen miles south of where he had been, much closer to the border with Wake County. The 251 1/2 acres of land, John's homeplace, that he sold to Lewis Patterson for 125 pounds "Virginia

8. Granville County Deed Book N, p. 145.
9. Ibid.
10. Granville Book Q, pp. 518, 519.

currency" was described as being on Buffalo Creek adjoining the lands of Isaiah Smith, Richard Thomason, William and Joseph Leaman (*sic*), and Herbert Hight (probably a relative of John Finch's first wife). Witnesses were Hight Finch, John's oldest son, and David Patterson. The deed was not recorded until February Court 1802.



PART OF OLD GRANVILLE COUNTY, NORTH CAROLINA

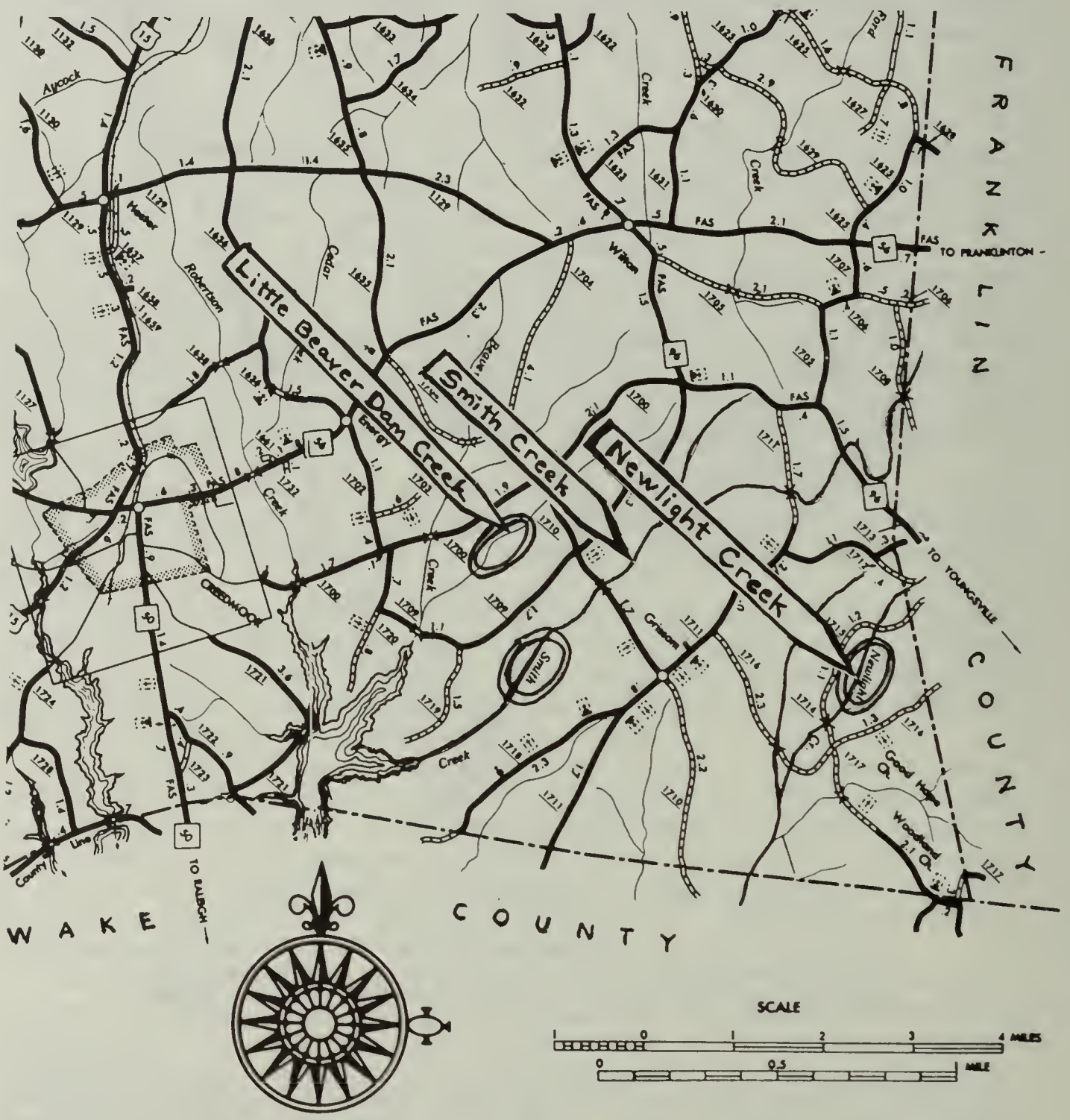
When John Finch, Jr., moved from Epping Forest District (top arrow) in 1800 to Beaver Dam District (lower arrow), he was on the Franklin County line and close to Wake County. The *long* heavy lines show the boundary then; the short heavy lines show the Granville–Wake boundary line now.

John Finch, Jr., moved to the Beaver Dam District of Granville County where Beaver Dam Creek, New Light Creek, Smith Creek, and others begin their southward flow to the Neuse River in Wake County. He was near where Granville, Franklin, and Wake counties join.[11] On 3 January 1801 John Finch "of Granville County" bought 212 acres of land from Grif Carrell of Franklin County. He paid

11. Two of John's brothers, Williamson and George, stayed in the Epping Forest District, which in 1881 became part of the southern part of newly created Vance County, and many descendants still live there.

$500 for his new land in Franklin County, and it was described as having one border on the Granville–Franklin county line. Also mentioned were John Young's line, Simm's Road, Fuller's line, and Dick's Branch.[12]

On 23 November 1805 Turner Bobbitt of Franklin County sold John Finch "of Franklin County" 100 acres of land on Smith's Creek for $400. The document was witnessed by John's oldest son Hight, and by John's son-in-law Britton Bobbitt, husband of Fanny Finch. Britton was Turner's younger brother, and both were sons of William M. Bobbitt and grandsons of Lewis Bobbitt, Sr. This 100 acres of land John



SOUTHEAST CORNER OF GRANVILLE COUNTY, NORTH CAROLINA, ON MODERN ROAD MAP

John Finch, Jr., had land on Smith and Newlight creeks and his son John Wesley had land on Little Beaver Dam Creek.

12. Franklin County, North Carolina, Deed Book 3, pp. 100, 101.

bought was in the lower part of Granville County on the upper reaches of Smith's Creek before it flowed into Wake County.

Eight years later John bought more land, just a little southeast of his Smith Creek tract and this time on Newlight Creek. The 22 December 1813 deed shows John Finch "of Granville County" bought 129 1/4 acres in Granville County from Robert Roberson for $300.[13] The tract began "at a corner sweetgum on a branch in Roberson's line, thence with Goodloe's line to a postoak sapling on the Ridge Path, thence with the path and Vinigum's [?] line to the center of two pines on sd. path, thence west to a red oak sapplin (*sic*) in Harrises line, thence North to a pine thence west with Harrises line, to an ash on the bank of Newlight Creek, thence the various courses of sd. creek to an ash at the mouth of a branch, thence the meanders of said branch to the beginning."

It is important to remember that the southern boundary of present-day Granville County was originally approximately two miles north of where it is now established. When Granville was created in 1746 its lower border was designated as "the Middle Grounds between Tar River and Neuse River...keeping the Middle between the said two Rivers." This means John Finch, Jr.,'s land (and later on John Wesley Finch's land too) was even closer to the Wake County line than it would appear today.

John, Jr.,'s second wife, Elizabeth (Haynes) died, year unknown. The children of John's first marriage were married. Of his and second wife Elizabeth's children, Elizabeth (Betsey) married William M. Jenkins in 1806 and Barbara married Green Bobbitt in 1813. [See "Barbara Finch" and "Green Bobbitt" chapters] In July 1815 my ancestor John Wesley (John W.) married Judith Hockaday. John and Elizabeth's two youngest daughters would marry before 1820.

I do not know how long John Finch was a widower, but in the fall of 1815 he married Mary ("Polly") Bradford, the date of the bond being 24 October 1815, and the bondsman being Britain (*sic*) Bobbitt. John was sixty-five and Mary was fifty-five. She was the daughter of Philemon Bradford, who along with his brother David Bradford and Robert Goodloe had been the three largest landholders in the Beaver Dam District of Granville County back in the 1780s.

John Finch wrote his will 28 April 1817, and it was witnessed by John Terrell and John Jenkins. (Like Finch, the Terrell and Jenkins names occur later in Weakley County, Tennessee.) By his will, John bequeathed to his wife Polly [Mary] Finch the 129-acre tract on which he was living, a Negro woman, two horses, four cattle, eight sheep, sixteen hogs, certain farm tools, most of the household and kitchen furniture, and a lifetime estate in all his real and personal property. After Mary's death it was to be divided equally among his eleven children, whom he named, with their married names where applicable. In the Beaver Dam Creek District, the 1820 Granville County Census (p. 16) listed John and Mary "45 and up" living alone except for one male slave in the same age bracket.

John Finch died in the summer of 1822. (His oldest son, Hight, died the same year.) Since in his will he had not designated an executor, at the August 1822 session of Granville County Court when the will was probated,[14] it was noted that administration of the will was granted to Mary Finch, widow, who had entered into bond for $2000 with John Jenkins and Jesse Jenkins. (A copy of the 5 August 1822 bond, however, shows it was for $1000.) At the August 1822 court the "Inventory of the

---

13. Granville County, North Carolina, Deed Book W, pp. 410, 411. The "Ridge Path" mentioned in the description was near the county boundary line set in 1746 between Granville and Wake counties. This is shown with "dash dot dash" lines on Zae H. Gwynn's map in her 1974 *Abstracts of the Early Deeds of Granville County, North Carolina*, which is on p. 170 of the previous chapter.
14. Granville County Will Book 9, pp. 122 ff.

goods and Chattels Lands and tenants of John Finch, Dec'd" was entered by Mary Finch, having been made 27 July 1822. It is quite an extensive inventory and shows that John Finch would have been considered a very prosperous farmer. There was no silver and china, but earthen and pewter sets of dishes and utensils, looking glasses (mirrors), and a "parcel of books" were listed among the usual interesting items. In addition to corn, wheat, bacon, and wool, there was cotton; also, notes John held for four men, and $20.15 cash on hand.

Mary Bradford Finch, John's widow, remarried between August 1822 and November 1825, evidenced by the fact that when she filed an account of the estate at the 1825 November Court[15] she was listed as Mary Hall, formerly Mary Finch. All debts of the estate were paid and debts to the estate paid off. Names mentioned were William Hockaday, John W. Finch, David Ray, Isaac Glasgow, Thomas York, James Duar (?), and Sterling Haley.

John Finch, Jr., lived the first seventeen or eighteen years of his life in Virginia, and approximately the last fifty-five years in Granville County, North Carolina. He died in mid-1822 at the age of seventy-two. Finches were Methodists, but it is probably less likely he was buried near a church than in a family plot on his homeplace, most likely beside his first two wives. Of the sons who survived John, Caswell stayed in North Carolina, and Cliff and John Wesley went to northwest Tennessee in the late 1820s, as did some of John's daughters.

Children of John Finch, Jr., and 1st wife — Hight (?), all born in Granville County, North Carolina:

1. Mary ("Polly") Finch: b. ca. 1774, and probably named for her paternal grandmother; m. 24 July 1793 (date of bond), Thomas York, Granville County
   Children: at least 2 sons and 3 daughters[16]
2. Hight Finch: b. ca. 1779–1784;
   m. Matilda Wilson (b. 22 December 1789, d. post-1877). An announcement in the *Raleigh Minerva* stated Mr. Height (*sic*) Finch of Wake County married Miss Matilda Wilson, daughter of Joshua Wilson of Halifax County, North Carolina, 28 February 1811.
   On 23 November 1805 when Turner Bobbitt of Franklin County, North Carolina, sold 100 acres on Smith's Creek in Granville County to Hight's father, Hight and his brother-in-law Britton Bobbitt (Fanny Finch's husband) were the witnesses. The same day, when Turner Bobbitt sold Britton Bobbitt 100 acres adjoining Hight's father, John Bobbitt and Hight were witnesses. (The above-mentioned Turner, Britton, and John Bobbitt were brothers, sons of William Bobbitt and Martha [Turner], and grandsons of Lewis Bobbitt, Sr., who was a nephew of John "of Chowan.") In 1816 Hight and Matilda accompanied the wagon train led by the (Methodist) Reverend Wilson from Halifax County, North Carolina, to Clarke County, Alabama. d. 1822. Matilda married a Mr. Henderson, who died within a year.
   Children:
   (1) James Monroe: m. Mary Ann Cammack (b. 1814, d. 1904); d. 1873
   (2) John Madison: b. 1812; m. (1) 24 October 1836, Hannah Foster; m. (2) 15 November 1858, Martha S. Thompson; d. 1895
   (3) Melissa Cliff: b. 1815; m. 6 December 1832, William Henry Davis; d. 1902

---

15. Granville County, North Carolina, Will Book 10.
16. Granville County 1810 Census, p. 128.

(4) Emily Hight: possibly born after the family moved to Alabama;
m. 1 December 1834, Robert Dunham Davis. In addition to other children, this line continued down through their daughter, Emily Isabelle Hight Davis who m. Thomas James Lewis; Jefferson Davis Lewis who m. Cora May Cooke; Mary *Lunelle* Lewis who m. James Nelson Robinson, Abilene, Texas; to Susan Nell Robinson who m. Tommy Lee Hamilton. (This information is from a 1990 letter from Lunelle Robinson to Lou Herrington of DeSoto, Texas.)

3. Cliff Finch: b. ca. 1783; m. 5 December 1812, Frances A. Hight in Franklin County, North Carolina, with James Haggard Hight the bondsman.
There are Granville County records of 28 August 1809 and 10 August 1810 showing Cliff Finch was a witness when Turner Bobbitt bought and sold land.[17] Also, at May Court 1815 Cliff Finch and Stephen Bridges proved the will of John Prewitt, dec'd. There are Franklin County records for Cliff in 1820 and 1821 in Will Books F and G.
Cliff and his family moved with several of his half-siblings and other families to Weakley County, Tennessee, in 1826. In May 1827 Cliff had an Occupant Entry of 137 acres on the Middle Fork of the Obion River in District 13, Range 1, Section 6.[18]
Frances died prior to 1840. Cliff d. November 1840 in Weakley County, Tennessee, intestate.
Children—The 1840 Weakley County Census (p. 301) shows Cliff with 3 sons and 3 daughters:
(1) Amanda: m. —Swaim
(2) Adaline: m. John E. Denton
(3) daughter
(4) M. E. E.: d. intestate in the spring of 1846 in Weakley County, Tennessee[19]
(5) M. T. Cicero ("M.T.C."): b. 1823, Granville County, North Carolina. He was a minor when his father died in 1840, and Moses D. Swaim was court-appointed guardian 1842–November 1844. A Weakley County record shows M. T. C. and his brother D. P. C. lived at or near the Ridge Road in 1844. In the fall of 1845 M. T. C. died intestate.[20]
(6) Demosthenes P. C. ("D.P.C."): b. 1824, Granville County, North Carolina; also a minor in 1840 when his father died.
m. Melissa E. (or J.) Derryberry (b. 1832 in Tennessee), daughter of Margaret Swaim and Henry W. Derryberry, in Weakley County, Tennessee. Melissa's maternal uncle was Jeremiah W. Swaim. In 1860 D. P. C. was living in District 10 in Weakley County, next door to his cousin, W. O. K. Finch, oldest son of John Wesley Finch. Later D. P. C. and Melissa moved to Prairie County, Arkansas. It is thought that D. P. C. died in the Civil War and Melissa remarried. (Information from Lou Herrington.)
Children (including):
1. Augusta H.: b. 1849
2. Andrew J.: b. 1854
3. Sarah H.: b. 1859

---

17. Granville County, North Carolina, Book V, pp. 28, 102.
18. Original Weakley County, Tennessee, Entry Book, pp. 15, 16.
19. Weakley County, Tennessee, Will Book B, p. 169.
20. Ibid., p. 113.

4. Fanny Finch: b. ca. 1784; m. 21 November 1803, Britton (Brittain) Bobbitt, son of William M. Bobbitt and Martha Turner. (William was a son of Lewis Bobbitt, Sr.) The marriage bond was recorded in Franklin County, North Carolina, with Fanny's oldest brother, Hight Finch, bondsman.
   Britton bought 100 acres of land from his older brother Turner Bobbitt of Franklin County, North Carolina, the same day that his father-in-law John Finch did (23 November 1805), so they had adjoining tracts on Smith's Creek in Granville County, North Carolina.[21] On 27 December 1809 Britton of Granville County sold John Bobbitt 100 acres on Smith's Creek.[22] The *Bobbitt* book[23] states Britton and family moved to Tennessee with relatives.
5. Caswell Finch: b. 1785; m. 29 December 1810, Temperance Bridges, daughter of Josiah Bridges, in Franklin County, with James Haggard Hight the bondsman. Caswell and Temperance lived in Franklin County, North Carolina. Caswell served in the War of 1812.
   One biographer said of Caswell Finch: "He was a man of remarkable modesty, delicate sensibility, and retiring deportment, almost wholly given to books and teaching, in which employment he spent, consecutively, forty of the best years of his life."
   Temperance died in 1853, probably in September, and in her will named their children, to whom she left six slaves. Caswell's will was dated 27 January 1849 and probated 1852 in Franklin County, North Carolina.[24]
   Children:
   (1) Matilda M. A. Finch: b. 1812; m. 28 September 1829, Edward Ransdell
   (2) Josiah John Finch: b. 5 February 1814, named for both grandfathers; m. 1838, Mary Louisa (b. 1816; d. 1859, Gatesville, North Carolina), in Edenton, Chowan County, North Carolina. Josiah J. and Mary Louisa opened Sedgwick Female Academy in Raleigh.
   d. 21 January 1850 of tuberculosis. Both are buried in City Cemetery, Raleigh North Carolina, section E3, #41. Josiah's monument was erected by the First Baptist Church in Raleigh in gratitude for his services since March 1845.
   Children: William H., Martha E., Mary Wills, Alonzo
   (3) Gilbert Mortier Lafayette ("G.M.L.") Finch: b. 15 September 1824; m. 1853, Sarah Ellis (b. 1829, d. 1890). G.M.L. was studying for the ministry at Wake Forest College when his brother Josiah died in 1850, and he left school to become president of Sedgwick Seminary. He preached regularly and was ordained a Baptist elder.
   d. 30 October 1863, Wilmington, North Carolina. After G.M.L. died, Sarah lived with her father in Chowan County, North Carolina, then taught at The Culpeper (Virginia) Female Institute five years, then lived in Bristol, Tennessee, until her death.
   Children: Charles Ellis, John C., Lula, Sarah
   (4) Mary Emily Finch: m. McCullar Stone
   (5) William C. Finch: b. 1832; m. (1) Sallie; m. (2) Pattie; m. (3) Maud
   Children (from 1st marriage): 3 sons
6. Ellender Finch: b. ca. 1788?; m. Burwell Duke, Jr., son of Burwell Duke, and brother of Brittain Duke

---

21. Granville County, North Carolina, Book S, p. 246.
22. Ibid., Book V, p. 420.
23. John W. Bobbitt, *The Bobbitt Family in America*, 1985, p. 387.
24. Franklin County Will Book N, p. 344.

Children of John Finch and 2d wife Elizabeth (Haynes), all born in Granville County, North Carolina:

7. Elizabeth ("Betsey") Finch: b. ca. 1790?; m. 28 November 1806 (date of bond), William M. Jenkins. They moved to Weakley County, Tennessee, in the 1820s. d. post-1840

8. JOHN WESLEY FINCH MY DIRECT LINE
   Born: 12 March 1793
   Married: 8 July 1815 (date of bond), Judith Hockaday, daughter of William Hockaday and Ann Powell, in Granville County, North Carolina
   Died: 21 August 1846, near Abingdon, Virginia
   Children: W. O. Kelly, Fannie M., Lucy Emily, John Hite, James Monroe (my line), Calvin F., Elizabeth C., Alfonso C., Pelina B.
   [See "John Wesley Finch" chapter]

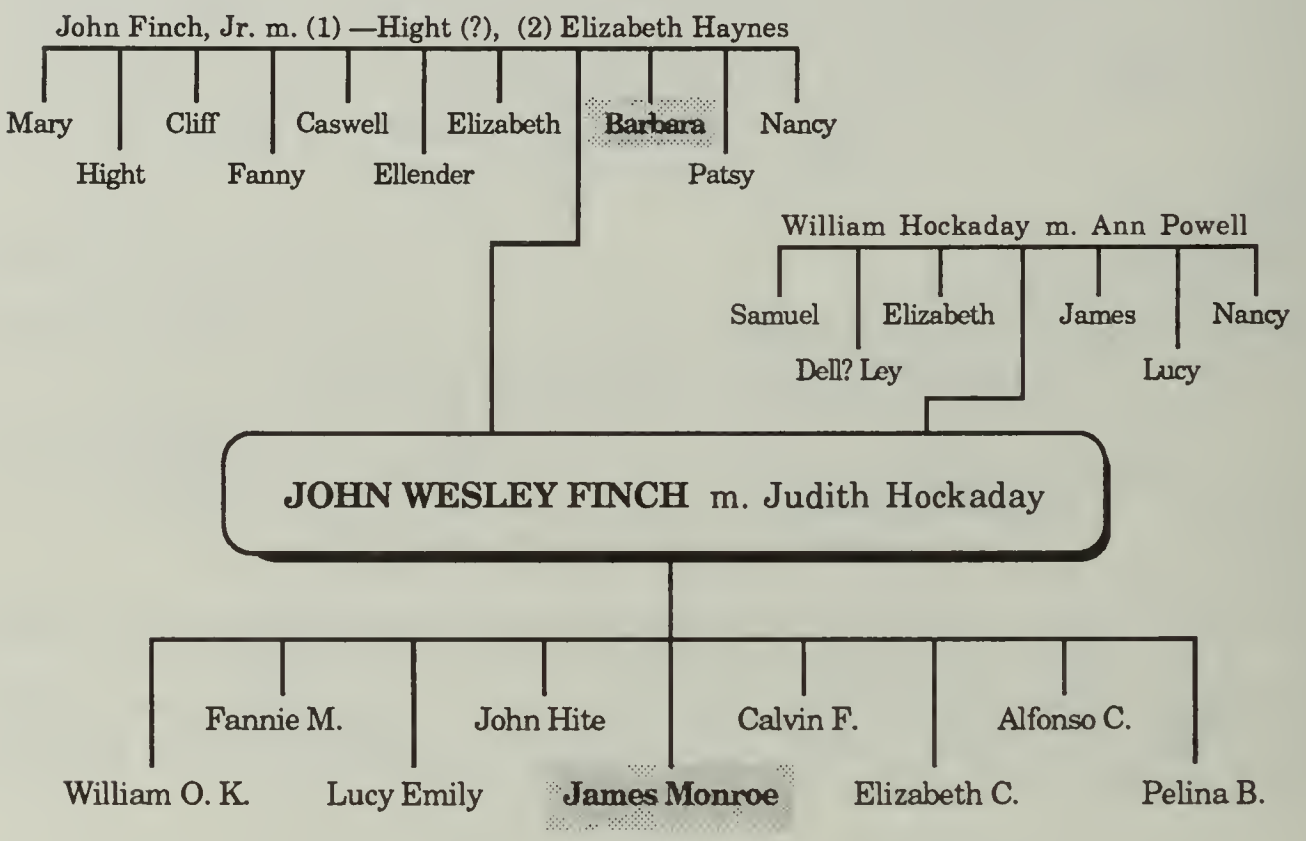
9. BARBARA FINCH ALSO MY DIRECT LINE
   Born: 20 March 1795
   Married: 18 June 1813, Green Bobbitt, son of John Bobbitt and Mary Hazelwood, Granville County, North Carolina
   Died: 30 July 1859, Weakley County, Tennessee
   Children: Matilda Caroline (my line), Melissa Jane, William P. M., Haywood Edison
   [See "Barbara Finch" chapter]

10. Patsy Finch: b. ca. 1798; m. 5 February 1818 (date of bond), Willis Jackson, Granville County, North Carolina
11. Nancy Finch: b. ca. 1800; m. 6 December 1816 (date of bond), James Jenkins, Granville County, with Jesse Jenkins the bondsman. They moved to Weakley County, Tennessee, in the late 1820s.

[See "John Wesley Finch"—son]
[See "Barbara Finch"—daughter]

JOHN WESLEY FINCH
(1793–1846)

(EIGHTH CHILD OF JOHN FINCH, JR., AND ELIZABETH HAYNES)



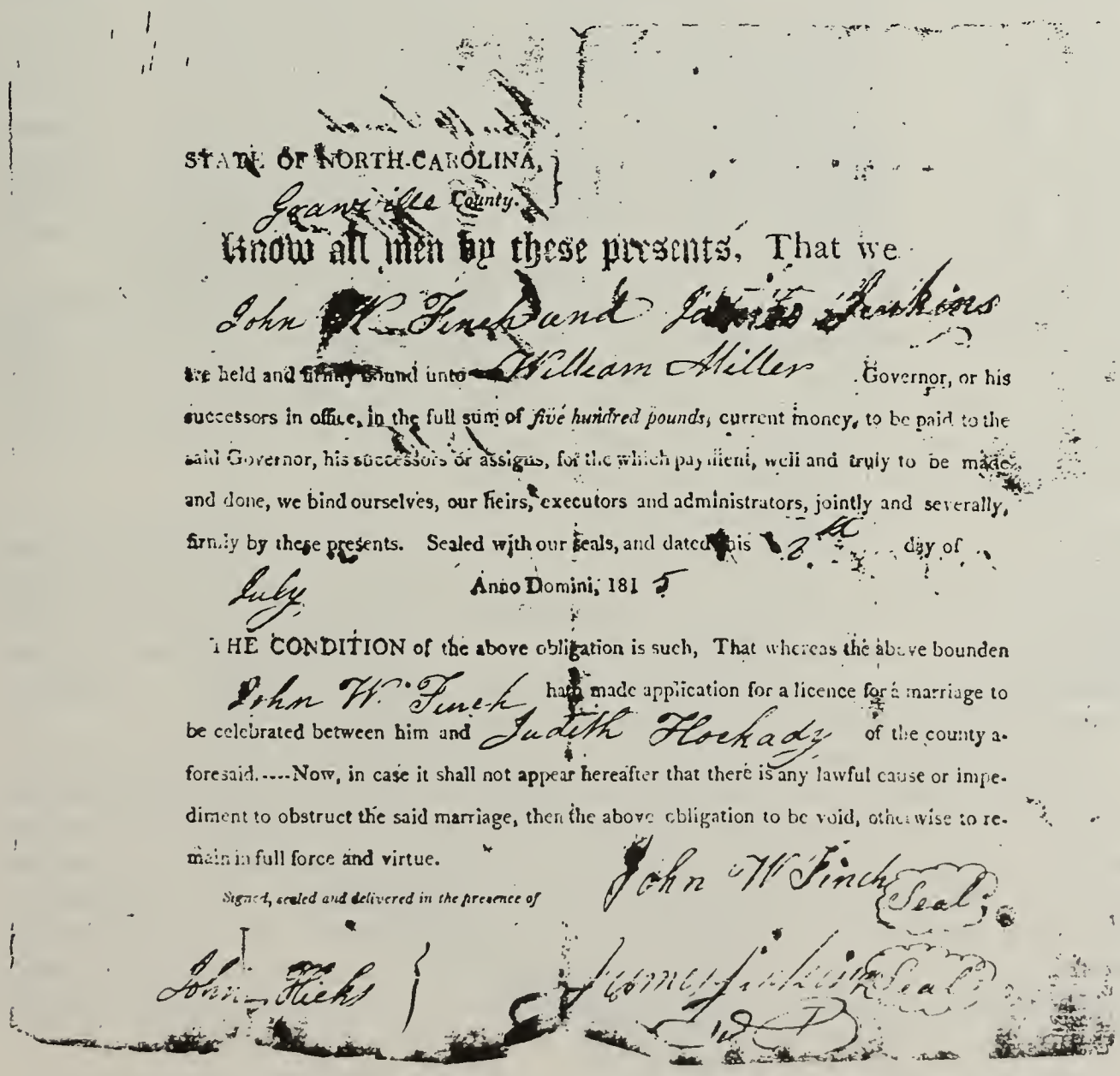
THE YEAR 1793 was a difficult one in world affairs—a time of general war in Europe, terror in France, and uncertainty throughout the Western world. This was the year John Wesley Finch was born.

John Wesley Finch was the only son of John Finch, Jr., and his second wife, Elizabeth Haynes. John W. was born 12 March 1793 in the Epping Forest District in Granville County, North Carolina. He had an older sister and three younger sisters, as well as three older half-brothers and three older half-sisters. When John was seven years old, his family moved from the Epping Forest District about fifteen miles south-southwest to the Beaver Dam District of Granville County. This area was close to where Granville, Franklin, and Wake counties converge, and it was here John W. Finch grew up. In adult life he was doubtless called John, and official records show him as John W., but in this book he is sometimes referred to as John Wesley Finch to distinguish him from his father and grandfather.

Between 18 June 1812 and 16 February 1815 the United States engaged the British in a war which came to be called the War of 1812. Even though our independence had been recognized by Great Britain in 1783, the two countries continued to clash, and the British government left no real alternative between submission and war. At the beginning of the war, the United States was made up of eighteen states and four territories, and the population approached 7,700,000. Approximately

285,000 men performed military service in the War of 1812. Records in the National Archives show that on 21 September 1814, exactly four weeks after Washington, D.C. went up in flames, twenty-one year old John W. Finch volunteered in Granville County for six months service. His group rendezvoused at the Gates County (North Carolina) courthouse nine days later, and the men were sent two hundred miles away to Portsmouth, Virginia, in the Norfolk harbor. John W. Finch served as a private "on extra duty carpentering" for $8 per month in Captain John Green's Infantry Company First Regiment (McDonald's) North Carolina Militia. Caswell Finch, an older half-brother of John's, also was a soldier, enlisting from Franklin County just across the line from Granville County. The War of 1812 ended victoriously for the United States before John W.'s enlistment was up, and he was discharged 5 February 1815 and returned home to Granville County, North Carolina.

Five months later John Wesley Finch married Judith Hockaday, daughter of friends and neighbors Ann (Powell) and William Hockaday. Judith was eighteen years old, and how I wish I had a picture of her with her bridegroom. The marriage bond was dated 8 July 1815, and signing with John W. was James Jenkins, who the next year would marry Nancy, John W.'s youngest sister.



STATE OF NORTH-CAROLINA,
Granville County.

Know all men by these presents, That we John W. Finch and James Jenkins are held and firmly bound unto William Miller Governor, or his successors in office, in the full sum of *five hundred pounds*, current money, to be paid to the said Governor, his successors or assigns, for the which payment, well and truly to be made and done, we bind ourselves, our heirs, executors and administrators, jointly and severally, firmly by these presents. Sealed with our seals, and dated this 12th day of July Anno Domini, 181 5

THE CONDITION of the above obligation is such, That whereas the above bounden John W. Finch hath made application for a licence for a marriage to be celebrated between him and Judith Hockaday of the county aforesaid.----Now, in case it shall not appear hereafter that there is any lawful cause or impediment to obstruct the said marriage, then the above obligation to be void, otherwise to remain in full force and virtue.

Signed, sealed and delivered in the presence of

John W Finch Seal

John Hicks

James Jenkins Seal

JOHN WESLEY FINCH AND JUDITH HOCKADAY'S MARRIAGE BOND
8 JULY 1815

In October 1815 John W. Finch and Thomas Winston were witnesses when John Morris, Sr., wrote his will.[1] Eleven years later John W. and some Winstons would be neighbors in west Tennessee.

The 1820 Granville County Census (p. 16) showed John W. Finch enumerated in the Beaver Dam Creek District. John W. was twenty-seven and Judith twenty-five, and their children were W. O. K., Fannie, and Emily. The male "16–18" in their household is unidentified. Nearby were the households of John's father, John Finch (Jr.), Judith's parents Ann and William Hockaday, and Judith's sister Elizabeth and her husband Wyatt Cannady and children.

In 1821 and 1822 John W. Finch purchased 590 acres of land in the Beaver Dam District. The two tracts were a little west of his father's land that was between Smith and Newlight creeks, and appear to have been between Little Beaver Dam Creek and Smith Creek about two miles northwest of the present small town of Grissom. This is about four miles above the (present) Wake County line and about four miles west of the Franklin County line. John W. bought the first tract from William Fuller, a large landowner, paying $730 for 350 acres.[2] The land began on the west side of Beaver Dam Creek on the Pine Log Branch at Mays' line...along the road to Terrell's line...up the creek to Cercy's (Searcy's) line...along the road to Canaday's line...down Pine Log Branch to the beginning. [See the map, "Southeast Corner of Granville County," p. 178.] The second tract, 240 acres, John W. purchased on 10 August 1822 from Bridges Williams.[3] The land was on the headwaters of Smith Creek and mentioned neighbors John Moore, William Huskey, and Thomas Winston, with witnesses being John Nevill and Jesse Jenkins. Always neighbors were dealing with neighbors. This was the natural way. Just three months before buying the 240 acres in August, John W. Finch and Bridges Williams were witnesses to the will of Bryant Cavener (Cavanaugh) written 22 May 1822.[4]

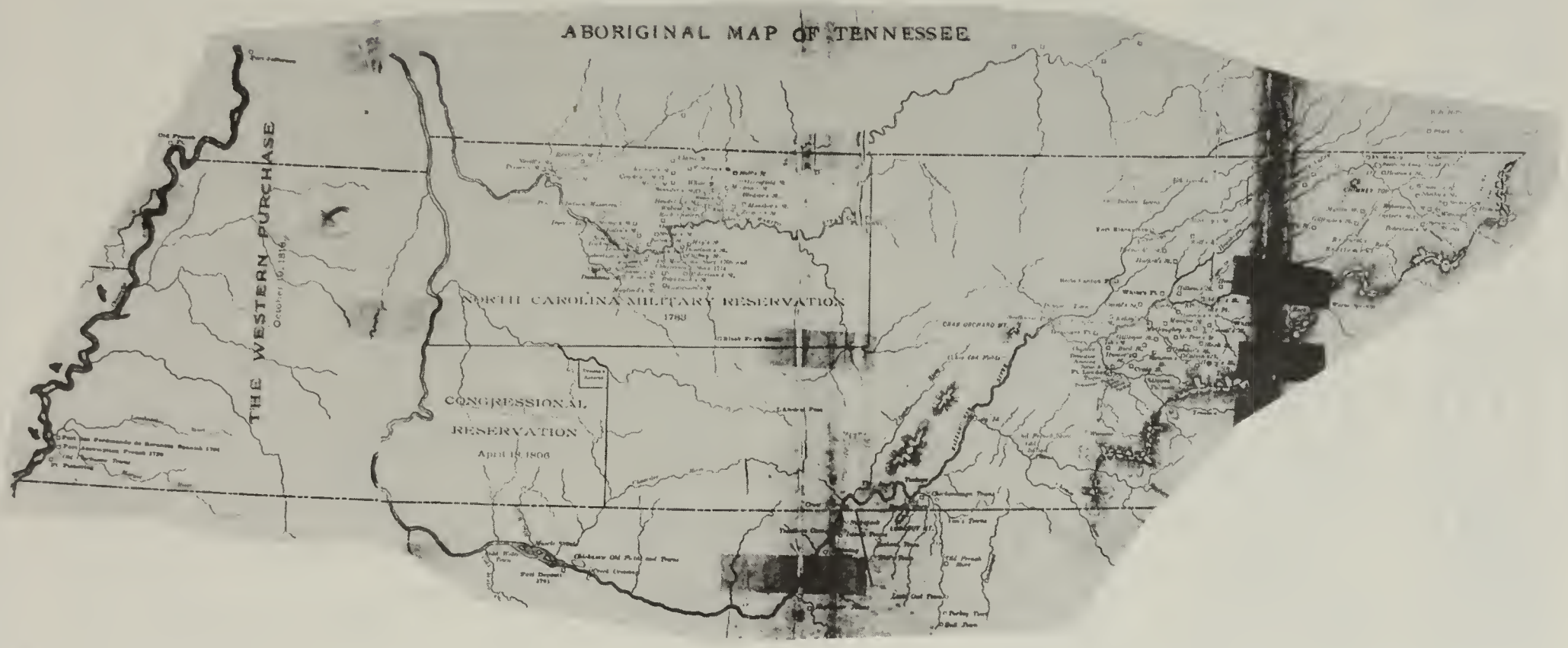
I have not found the records showing how John W. Finch later disposed of these 590 acres before moving to Weakley County, Tennessee, in 1826, although he sold part of it to his father-in-law. William Hockaday's 1829 will shows he left to his daughter Elizabeth Cannady the land he had purchased from John W. Finch, "lying on the west or north side of the Beaver Dam Creek...," with the exception of ten acres of woodland and the "fresh field" below it.

John W.'s father and oldest half-brother died in the summer of 1822, and his father's estate was settled in November 1825. His stepmother had remarried, and she had a life estate in his father's property. As often happened after the death of the family patriarch, moves were undertaken. Except for Cliff Finch, children of John Finch, Jr.,'s first marriage stayed in Granville County, but the children (with the possible exception of Patsy) of John Finch, Jr., and his second wife, Elizabeth Haynes, moved to western Tennessee. All were grown and married.

Prior to 1819 it had been illegal for white people to live in the Indian Territory of western Tennessee, but when Andrew Jackson and Isaac Shelby negotiated the purchase of the land from the Chickasaw Indians, many people crossed the Tennessee River. The Indian danger was almost completely eliminated by the Jackson Purchase. The Chickasaws not only kept their word but they served as policemen to make sure the white man was not harassed by other tribes. Almost all the early settlers came from North Carolina. Most of them had lived in Virginia before moving to North Carolina, and their forebears had arrived in the colonies from the British Isles during the 1600s or the 1700s. It was a homogeneous group.

---

1. Granville County, North Carolina, Will Book 7, pp. 550, 551.
2. Granville County Deed Book Z, pp. 350, 351.
3. Granville County Deed Book 2, p. 402.
4. Granville County Will Book 10, p. 330.



JOHN W. FINCH MOVED TO WEST TENNESSEE IN 1826 (SEE ARROW)

The 1818 Western Purchase from the Indians permitted settlement which had previously been limited to eastern and upper-central Tennessee.

The first settlement in present-day Weakley County, Tennessee, whose northern edge borders on Kentucky, had taken place in the fall of 1819 about seven miles west of what in four years would become the town of Dresden. In an address Col. John A. Gardner delivered at Dresden on the Fourth of July 1876, he told of early times in Weakley County.

> The style of living of the early settlers was exceedingly plain and primitive. ...There were no stores nor sawmills in the country. They often had to go twenty or thirty miles to a gristmill. Lumbrick's Mill on Old Town Creek, about thirteen miles from Dresden [going east] on the dirt road to Paris [in adjoining Henry County], did all the grinding for the early settlers....The early supply of salt was brought from Mill's Point [Kentucky, on the Mississippi River] on horseback....As the wild animals were destroyed, the livestock of the country increased rapidly.

As to topography, Weakley County is drained by the North, Middle, and South forks of the Obion River, which flows westward to the Mississippi River. The lesser streams, all tributary to the above, are Spring, Mud, Cypress, and Cane creeks. The central portion of the county is gently undulating, becoming more level as it reaches west. It is easy to understand why our ancestors willingly struggled against innumerable hardships to gain and hold entry here. Weakley County is beautiful.

Weakley County was officially established in October 1823, and that is where thirty-two year old John W. Finch and Judith (Hockaday) moved from Granville County, North Carolina, with their five children: Kelly nine, Fannie seven, Emily five, Hite three, and Monroe two (my line). They arrived in Weakley County, Tennessee, in February 1826, the year the "occupant law" went into effect, and first settled on the old Dudley Glass (Sr.) farm a mile and a half west of Dresden in the direction of the road to present-day Martin. Later John W. would leave the Mud Creek area and move about seven miles south of Dresden. [See map on p. 198]

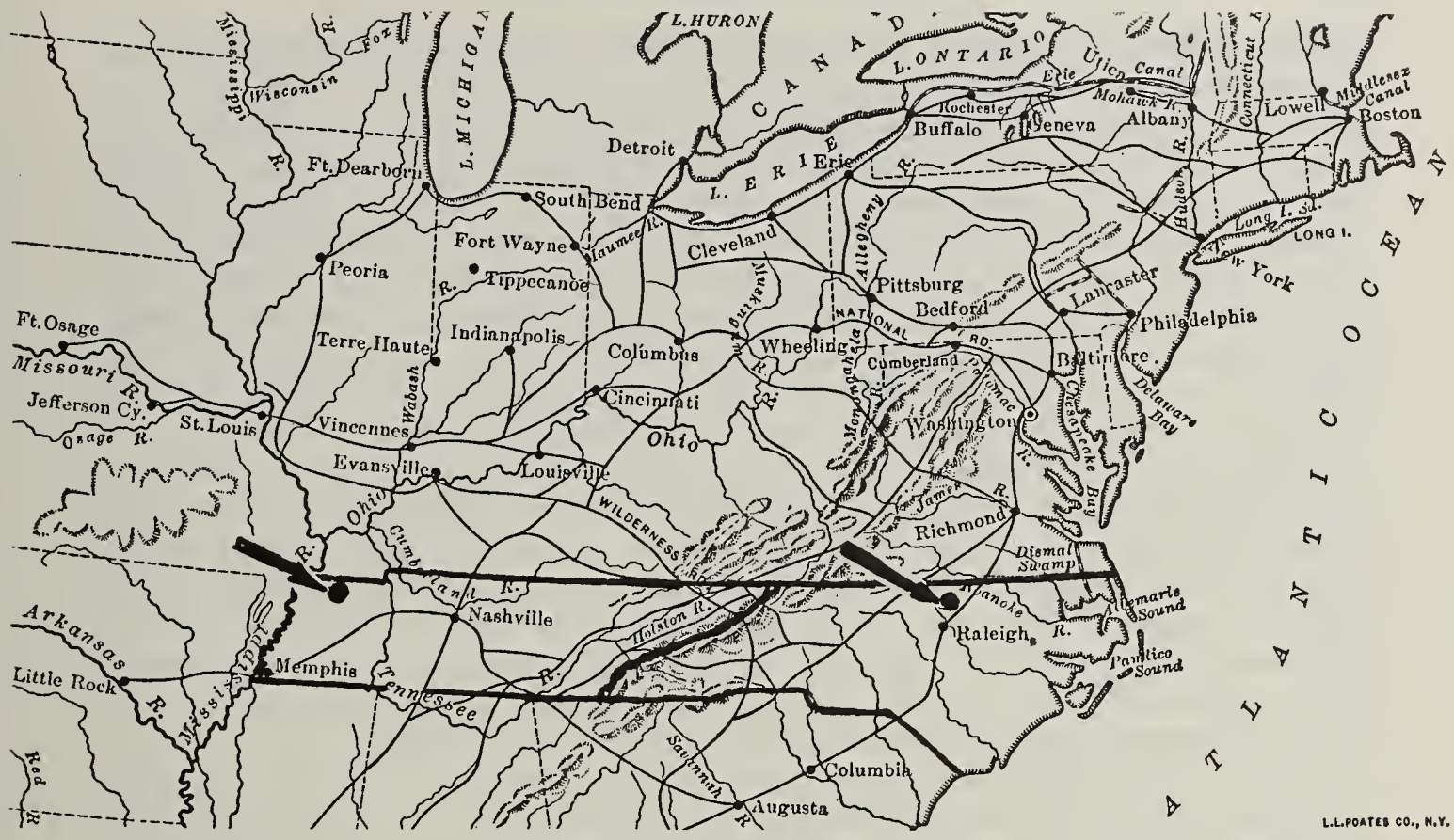
It seems that most of the people who moved to northwest Tennessee had come from North Carolina's central counties. Being from Granville County, the Finches conformed to this pattern, and like the others had probably come through the Cumberland Gap and then used more than one mode of travel on one of several routes to get to their destination. [See map on opposite page]

Typically, they did not come alone. John Wesley Finch and his family traveled with his older half-brother Cliff and his family, and apparently with two sisters who had married Jenkins brothers, Betsey (Finch) and William M. Jenkins and Nancy (Finch) and James Jenkins. Also, John W. had four second cousins-once-removed who had gone to west Tennessee just before he did in 1826. These four brothers, including Williamson and Wiley, were sons of Isham Finch, first cousin of John W.'s father. Williamson (b. 1792) was listed in the Occupant Entry Index, p. 194. About the same time as the Finches, some of the Bobbitt and Montgomery relatives moved to northwest Tennessee, to Weakley and neighboring counties, as had, a little before or after, some Terrell, Swaim, Medlin, Glasgow, and many, many other neighbors. The first Weakley County record for John W. Finch, dated 20 July 1826,[5] shows that John W. sold his slave George to John Terrell for $500.

When in October 1823 the Tennessee General Assembly created Weakley County, it had provided that the court of pleas and quarter sessions and circuit court should be held in John Terrell's house. Soon a site for the permanent seat of justice was determined near the center of the county (thirty–nine acres given by John Terrell) and named Dresden. The county was then divided into civil districts, each with a constable and a justice of the peace. The very first minutes of the Weak-

---

5. Weakley County, Tennessee, Book A–B, p. 4.



ROUTES TO THE WEST, 1815–1825

John Wesley Finch moved from Granville County, North Carolina, to Weakley County in west Tennessee in 1826.

ley County Court, dated 8 October 1827, show that John W. Finch was one of seven men appointed to inspect the two roads southeast from Dresden to Huntingdon (county seat of adjoining Carroll County) and at the January Term of Court report which was the nearest and best way.[6] The others serving with John W. were John Terrell, Robert Powell, Dennis Cockran, Thomas Adams, Benjamin Bondurant, and Isaac Willingham. The next morning when court reconvened, John W. Finch was one of thirteen men elected by the court's ballot to serve on a Grand Jury.

The Weakley County, Tennessee, Supplement Tax List for 1828, p. 7, showed John W. Fich (*sic*) had been granted 500 acres on Entry #775 in Range 1, Section 5, District 12, and owned one slave. He was also listed in 1829, p. 30; in 1830 and 1831, pp. 58, 84, he was listed in Section 6; and in 1832, p. 113, in District 13, Section 6, with two slaves. There were a number of transactions through the years, land and deeds of trust, involving John W. Finch with these men: Charles Gunter, Ransom Mobley, Floyd Trantham, Moses D. Swaim, John Terrell, William Williams, David Reddick, J. A. Lewis, G. W. Fields, Henry Parks, and I. F. Outhouse.

On 23 March 1833 John W. Finch sold a female slave and her two children to Dr. Jubilee Rogers for $575.[7] Whereas in east Tennessee slaves constituted only about one-twelfth of the population, in middle and west Tennessee slaves made up about twenty-five percent. The earliest record showing John W. Finch acting as agent for someone was in August 1833.[8] Wyatt Cannady of Granville County, North Carolina, who was the husband of Judith (Hockaday) Finch's sister Elizabeth, gave the power of attorney to John W. to advertise and sell the slaves and other

6. In many of the older states, prior to state highway departments and trained and salaried county civil engineers, this method of locating public roads by a "jury of view" was well established.
7. Weakley County Book C, p. 59.
8. Ibid., p. 106.

Weakley County property of the deceased widow of Wagstaff Cannady of whose estate Cannady was executor.[9]

A deed registered 16 August 1832[10] showed John W. Finch purchased a half interest in a mill on Spring Creek in Range 1, Section 5, District 13 and the 52-acre tract it was on from James Moran and Joseph Vincent. John W. Finch had first settled his family a little west of Dresden. On 16 October 1833 John W. bought from Ransom Mobley part of John Terrell's original grant of 666 acres in Range 1, Section 6, District 13. He paid $200 for a square tract of 100 acres whose east line was the Meridian,[11] a road going north/south through the county seat of Dresden. On a Weakley County map (p. 198) find the area where John W. Finch's family lived by looking due south of Dresden near where Spring Creek crosses the Meridian Road.

The cultivation of cotton began with the settlement of the county, and nearly all pioneers engaged in it. The cultivation of tobacco began about 1833, and it was soon discovered that it was a more profitable crop than cotton. Other crops were Indian corn, oats, rye, wheat, and hay. The land was good and still sparsely settled. An historical aside to Texans: David (Davy) Crockett lived in Weakley County, Tennessee, in the 1820s. In the 1820s and 1830s he had three terms in Congress before being defeated in 1835 by Adam Huntzman, a wooden-legged lawyer. Crockett came to Texas, where he lost his life at the Alamo in March 1836.

From 1826 until his accidental death in 1846, John W. Finch was repeatedly mentioned in the minutes of the Weakley County Court. It is obvious he was one of the substantial men, trusted and well liked in the county. Sometime, whether when growing up or when serving in the War of 1812, John W. had learned the trade of carpentry, and in Weakley County was involved in building public works. In 1827 he worked under John Scarborough (of Stewart County) in constructing the first county courthouse, a two-story brick building. In 1828 John was awarded the contract by the county commissioners to build a bridge across the North Fork of the Obion River on the road from Dresden north towards Mills Point (now Hickman), Kentucky, on the Mississippi River. Later he filed a legal action to recover (successfully) the $250 still owed him for the job. John was sole contractor for the brick building that was the first county jail, which was built on the south side of the Troy road in the western part of Dresden. He also frequently was overseer for construction of various new roads. In 1837 he was paid $258 as contractor for building a bridge "across the slough" on Meridian Road north of the Middle Fork of the Obion.

The 1840 Weakley County Census, p. 304, showed J. W. Finch with his wife, seven children, and one slave. Unaccountably, no female was enumerated in the age bracket into which daughter Emily (nineteen and unmarried) would fall, and Fannie is unaccounted for too, but she may have already married.

John W. Finch was a solid citizen of good reputation, innumerable times being appointed to the jury and several times delegated to partition land in estate disputes. Sometimes he subscribed to substantial bonds, acting as surety. In July 1837, and later in March 1846, he was an election judge in District 10. He had been elected to a term as one of the constables in October 1830, and in June 1836 John W. Finch, Esquire, was chosen for a term as one of the "worshipful Justices of the Peace." Part of the justices' duties was to settle the property and poll taxes to be paid to the county. Along with these civic duties, of course he was primarily a farmer.

He traded in land too. On 8 March 1837 John W. Finch sold 25 acres of land for $100 to Ransom Mobley. It was described as in the 12th Surveyor's District with its

---

9. Wyatt Cannady and his family had never left Granville County, North Carolina, but his widowed mother had moved to Weakley County, Tennessee.
10. Weakley County Book B, pp. 313, 314. Spring Creek flows into the Middle Fork of the Obion River.
11. Op.cit., p. 121.

west line on the Meridian line. Witnesses were I. F. Outhouse and Henry Parks. On 6 November 1837 John W. bought 143 1/2 acres of land from Charles Gunter in the 12th Surveyor's District, Range 1, Section 5, and on 8 October 1839 he sold it to Ransom Mobley. On 28 December 1839 he bought 140 acres of land from Charles Gunter in Range 1, Section 6, and on 22 July 1841 sold it to Moses D. Swaim.

John W. Finch was on the tax lists of 1842 and 1843. In the 1844 Weakley County tax list his two oldest sons, W. O. K. and J. Hite, were included. In 1846 my ancestor J. M. (Monroe) was also on the list, and that was the last list on which John W.'s name appeared, as his death occurred in August of that year. In 1847 John W.'s next son, Calvin, was on the tax list with his brothers.

Just as from 1833–1835 John W. had power of attorney to take care of North Carolinean Wyatt Cannady's business in Weakley County, the reverse was the case in 1846. Several people in Weakley and adjoining Carroll County who were heirs of James Weathers, deceased, gave John W. power of attorney to take care of business for them back in Granville County, North Carolina, where James Weathers had died. John W. and his wife Judith (Hockaday) returned to their native state of North Carolina to attend to this and other business and to visit friends and Finch, Hockaday, and other relatives. On the return trip back to Tennessee, accompanied by a nephew, John W. and Judith met their death in untimely fashion. It happened 21 August 1846 about six miles west of Abingdon, Virginia. The story was first reported on 2 September 1846 in the Richmond, Virginia, *The Times and Compiler*, then in the Raleigh, North Carolina, *Standard* and the 30 September 1846 issue of the Little Rock, Arkansas, *Arkansas Banner*. In reading the Raleigh writeup, keep in mind that "the two old people" you are reading about are the vigorous John W., fifty-three, and Judith, forty-nine.

MELANCHOLY CASUALTY.

> We copy the following from the Richmond Compiler of the 2d instant:
>
> "MELANCHOLY CASUALTY. Mr. John Wesley Finch and his wife met with a melancholy death on the 21st instant, near Abingdon, Virginia. They were travelling, and had encamped for the night about six miles west of Abingdon, and were quietly reposing in their carryall, together with a nephew, when the horse being tethered to the wheel, took fright, turned the wagon bottom upwards, and the two old people were suffocated before they could be relieved. The young man who was with them states that they were returning from a visit in North Carolina to their residence near Dresden, Weakly [*sic*] county, Tennessee."
>
> The gentleman here mentioned, Mr. John W. Finch, was in this City [Raleigh] on the 7th of August, when we saw him and transacted some business with him. We parted with him on the evening of the 7th, and on the 10th he told us he expected to start from Granville with his wife for Weakly county, Tennessee. He was somewhat advanced in years, but was an active, robust man; and it seems strange to us that he should have met his death in the manner represented. Mr. Finch was an honest and intelligent man, and sustained an excellent character.
>
> Raleigh (N.C.) Standard.
> [September 1846]

In the 1700s buffalo and Indians followed a trail from the north and south and from the east and west at what in 1846 was the town of Abingdon, Virginia. Abingdon was the gateway through the mountains and was the most expedient way for John W. and Judith to travel from North Carolina home to Tennessee. They never got home, but died and were buried in a now unknown place in Abingdon, the county seat of Washington County, Virginia. An aside to my family: In 1888 my father, Hicks Carr Maiden, was born about seven miles northeast of Abingdon. In

1916 in Dallas, Texas, he would marry Edna G. Tugwell, a great-granddaughter of John W. Finch and Judith Hockaday who were buried in Abingdon.

Benjamin K. Buchanan, court-appointed "curator of John W. Finch, deceased," filed an account found in Washington County, Virginia,[12] giving certain information. Cash on hand at the death of the intestate was $210.36. Deductions totaling $53.37 were made for: the coroner, inquests, shrouds, removing property and keeping horse, services on day of burial, attorney, and county court fee.

John W. and Judith died 21 August 1846, and on 7 September 1846[13] Israel F. Outhouse, Esquire, of Weakley County was appointed administrator of the estate to collect and pay all debts and deliver the remainder to the lawful heirs. He was later paid $89.02 for "going to Virginia on business for estate."[14] Three (or possibly four) of John W. and Judith's children were married: W. O. K. ("Kelly"), Lucy *Emily*, John *Hite*, and possibly Fannie M. The unmarried children were my ancestor James *Monroe* twenty-two, Calvin F. twenty, Elizabeth C. seventeen, Alfonso C. fifteen, and Pelina B. thirteen. All were living south of Dresden and west of Gleason in Weakley County at the time of their parents' death.

John Wesley Finch and Judith Hockaday, native North Carolineans, had chosen in their early thirties to move with their five children to northwestern Tennessee. Four more children were born to them in Weakley County. Although many descendants of John W. and Judith went on to other states, to this day a number of their line still live in Tennessee.

Children of John Wesley Finch and Judith (Hockaday), all married in Weakley County, Tennessee:

1. William O. Kelly Finch: called Kelly, but referred to in records as W. O. K. Finch. b. 20 July 1816, Granville County, North Carolina; m. ca. 1842, Burrilla R. — (b. 1821, d. 1874); d. 20 July 1876, Weakley County, Tennessee. Both Kelly and Burrilla are buried at Mt. Zion (Cumberland Presbyterian) Cemetery, Weakley County, Tennessee.
   Children (and possibly others):
   (1) Elizabeth: b. 1843
   (2) Burilla: b. 1849, died young
   (3) Mary: b. 1850 or 1851
   (4) Curren M.: b. 1854; m. 1876, Liddie Gray; d. 1926
   Children: only 3 of their 5 children were living in 1910
   (5) John W.: b. 1857 and named for his Finch grandfather
2. Fannie M. Finch: b. 6 March 1818, Granville County, North Carolina. She may have been named for John W.'s half-sister.
3. Lucy *Emily* Finch: b. 10 December 1820, Granville County, North Carolina. Her first name was for her mother's next-younger sister. m. 1 September 1845, Rev. Briant Medlin, born in Granville County, North Carolina. Since Briant was a Methodist minister, he and Emily lived several places in west Tennessee. The Dyer County Census of 1850 shows that after the accidental death of Emily's parents, her youngest sister, Pelina Finch, lived with them. On 9 March 1857 Bryant (*sic*) Medlin of Madison County bought 70 acres of land in Weakley County for $500 from his brother-in-law John Hite Finch, with witnesses Monroe and Calvin Finch.[15] In 1867

12. Washington County, Virginia, Will Book 10, pp. 156, 157.
13. Weakley County, Tennessee, Will Book B, p. 181.
14. Weakley County Guardian Settlements 1843–1851, p. 245.
15. Weakley County Book O, pp. 24, 25.

Briant performed the marriage ceremony when Emily's niece, my ancestor Benanna Finch (oldest daughter of J. Monroe Finch), married Robert Rufus Tugwell in Haywood County, Tennessee. d. ca. 1870

4. John Hite Finch: He was called Hite (variously spelled Hight/Hiatt) by the family but referred to in official records as John H.
b. 30 April 1822, Granville County, North Carolina, and named for his father, John, and his father's oldest half-brother, Hight.
m. (1) 27 December 1844, Emily L. Harris (b. 29 June 1830 in Arkansas, d. 22 February 1886). In the 1880 census they were enumerated in District 11. They built a large brick home in McKenzie, where several of the younger children attended Bethel College.
m. (2) 1886, Anna — (b. December 1848). John H. and Anna lived near Greenfield, Weakley County. After his death Anna lived with family members. John Hite's younger children moved to Oklahoma.
d. 1903, Greenfield, Tennessee, at the age of 81 and had outlived all his siblings; buried in Mt. Zion Cemetery beside his 1st wife
Children (all with 1st wife):
(1) Martha B.: b. 27 December 1845; m. Sandy B. Clark
Children: Mattie, Marvin, William
(2) John Houston: b. 20 February 1848; m. 10 December 1868, Martha J. Swaim (b. 28 February 1852, d. 11 February 1930); d. 15 January 1916. John H. and Martha are buried in Mt. Zion Cemetery.
Children:
1. Walter L.: b. 1870; m. Betty Phillips; d. 17 September 1939
Children: 13
2. Jerry O.: b. 27 September 1871; m. Allie M. Capps; d. 1 March 1946
Children: 3 daughters
3. Hite E. (A?): b. 10 January 1873; m. 1902, Annie B. Haley; d. 14 February 1953
Children: 1 daughter
4. James Lee: b. 13 March 1875; m. Nora Nash; d. 31 December 1953
Children: 1 son, 1 daughter
5. Ernest: b. 13 March 1877; m. Della Hodges; d. 1947
6. Beulah Mai ("Lela"): b. 7 April 1879; m. Calvin Parks; d. 19 August 1954

(3) Mary Elizabeth: b. 19 June 1850; m. James P. Lynn
Children: Kate, Iva (died young), Alton (was an Oklahoma businessman and d. 26 December 1960), Ethel, Robert Carl
(4) Judith Edvenah ("Juda"): b. 12 January 1853 and named for her grandmother, Judith Hockaday Finch; m. Thomas Miller
Child: Grover
Children: daughters Lena and Maurine (Memphis, Tenn.)
(5) Cordelia: b. 23 January 1855; m. — Casey
Child:
1. Lamar: m. Pearl —; lived in California; no descendants.
(6) Henry B.: b. 10 December 1856;
m. (1) Catherine Jeter; m. (2) Mary Anna Yeargin; d. 1919, buried in Mt. Hermon Cemetery, Weakley County, Tennessee
Child of 1st marriage: John Hite
Children of 2d marriage: Ruth, Opal, Luther, Mary

(7) Medorah C. ("Dora"): b. 5 May 1859; m. Dallas Steel, Shawnee, Okla.
(8) Emily *Bell*: b. 6 March 1861; m. James Walters; lived in Shawnee, Oklahoma
Children: Mamie, Beulah
(9) Sallie H.: b. 8 September 1863; m. John F. Rafferty
Children who lived to maturity:
1. Clyde D.: d. 1935
2. Carl H.: b. in Birch Tree, Missouri; d. 16 October 1978
(10) Irie Dell: b. 20 October 1865; m. William Shell; lived in Sapulpa, Okla.
Daughters: Emma, Willie Dell
(11) Robert Lee: b. 8 January 1869; m. Ella Alma Payne (b. 1872; d. 1953). Moved to Birch Tree, Shannon County, Missouri, in 1892; to Broken Arrow, Oklahoma in 1903; to Oklahoma City in 1912.
Children:
1. Chester Lee: m. Hallie Ruth Dickson
Children: Ruth G.,[16] Chester Lee, Jr.
2–4. Esther Cecil, Alton Earl, Howard Lynn
(12) Carl J. Finch: b. 21 June 1871; m. Anna Genette; d. 1954
Children: Carl, Jr., Ruth
(13) Ida *Leona*: b. 9 June 1876 (according to 1900 Weakley County Census, p. 138B, that also showed her as the only child in her father and stepmother's household); m. William Shrimp; d. ca. 1904

5. JAMES MONROE FINCH MY DIRECT LINE
Born: 15 February 1824, Granville County, North Carolina
Married: November 1848, Melissa Jane Montgomery (b. 7 April 1831, d. 20 January 1900), daughter of Matilda Caroline Bobbitt and William B. Montgomery, in Weakley County, Tennessee
Died: 21 July 1899. Both buried in Mt. Zion Cemetery, Weakley County
Children: Alpheus D., Benanna Alice (my line), Cornelia E., John Bruce, Ella, Lillie May, Zula, Emma Hite
[See "James Monroe Finch" chapter]

6. Calvin F. Finch: b. 28 August 1826; the first of John W. and Judith's children to be born in Weakley County, Tennessee; m. ante-1850, Sarah A. Hisaw (b. 1826, d. 1899). They lived near Gleason in District 10, and Sarah's sister, Elizabeth, lived with them many years. They were members of the Cumberland Presbyterian Church. Calvin was a county officer, a Trustee, 1870–1874. The 1880 Weakley County Census[17] showed their 21 year old nephew Joshua Casey (Elizabeth Finch Casey's son) in the household.
d. 23 February 1890 and buried in Mt. Zion Cemetery. The *Dresden Enterprise* gave an account of Calvin's death and funeral, telling of the vicious tornado which hit as his funeral was in progress.
Children:
(1) Alice: b. 1851
(2) Legran: b. 1853
(3) Buchanan: b. 1858, died young
(4) J. Tully: b. July 1859; never married and the 1900 census showed his 69 year old aunt, Lizzie Hisan (*sic*), living in his home.

---

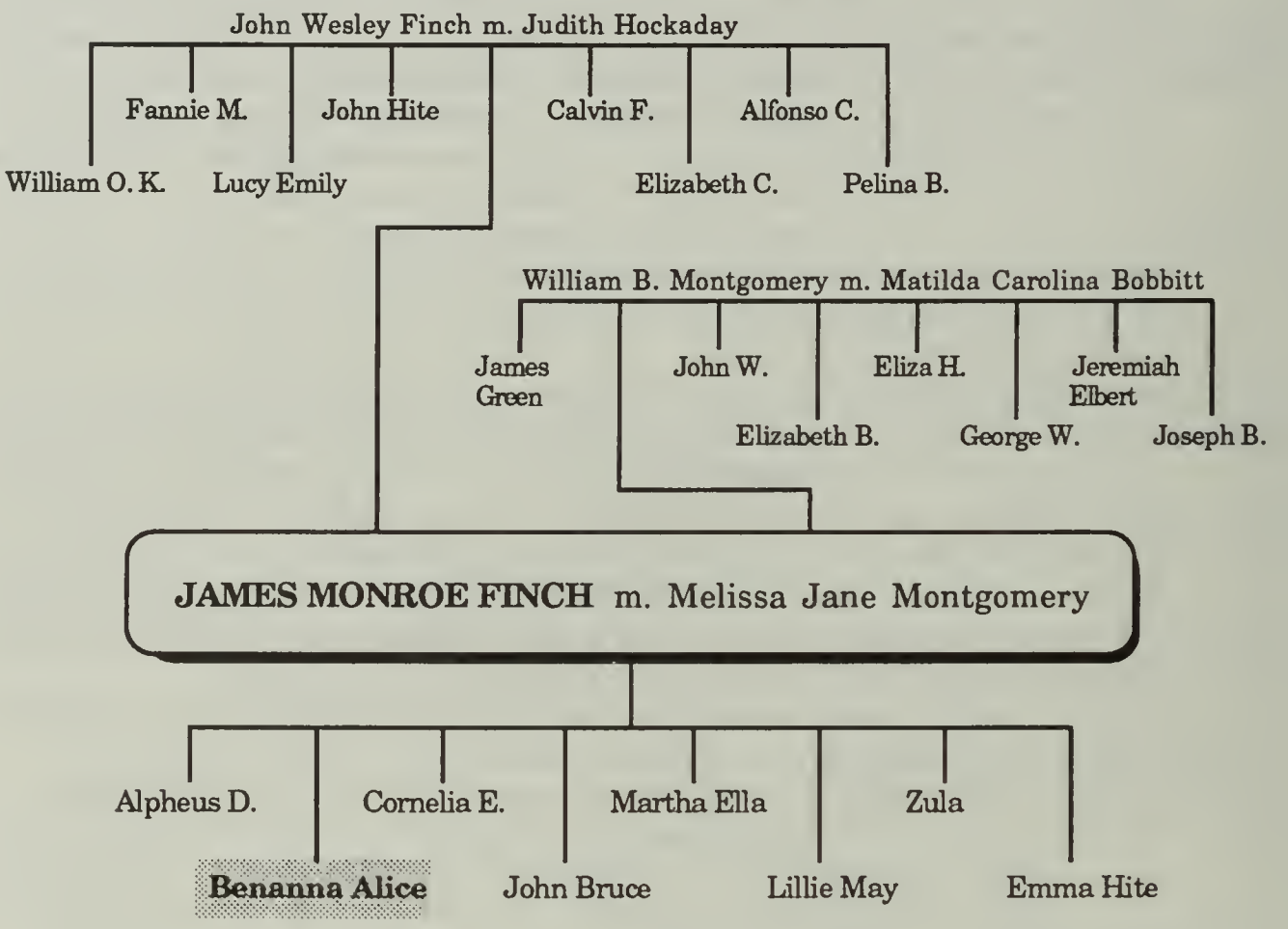
16. Ruth G. Finch Watkins sent information on John Hite Finch's children to Mary E. Schulz of Salt Lake City, Utah, who sent it to me.
17. P. 20, #302.

7. Elizabeth C. Finch: b. 5 February 1829, Weakley County, Tennessee, and probably named Elizabeth for her mother's and her father's sisters.
   m. ca. 1848, — Casey. Elizabeth's husband died between 1856 and 1860 and in the 1860 census[18] she was listed as head of household, living next door to her brother John Hite Finch and his family, in Civil District 10, Range 1, Section 5. Elizabeth sold her 50 1/2 acre homestead to John H. on 19 November 1860 for $550[19] and witnesses were siblings Monroe Finch and Pelina B. (Finch) Montgomery.
8. Alfonso C. Finch: b. 15 April 1831, Weakley County, Tennessee. The 1860 Fayette County, Tennessee, Census[20] shows an A. C. Finch, 29, born in Tennessee, and Sarah, 22. The next household, that of J. J. Gwyn and wife, has a mystifying and large household. There are eight male Bobbitts (ages 24 down to 2) and one female Bobbitt (7 months). Alfonso is said to have been a Confederate soldier in the War Between the States, and I did find an A. C. Finch, Corporal, in Company C, 38th Tennessee Infantry.
9. Pelina B. Finch: b. 15 August 1833, Weakley County, Tennessee. After her parents' sudden death in 1846 and until her marriage in 1852, Pelina lived at various times with her siblings Emily Medlin, Monroe Finch, and Calvin Finch (#s 3, 5, 6 supra).
   m. 6 April 1852, James Green Montgomery (b. 1828/9, d. September 1859), oldest child of William B. Montgomery and Matilda Caroline Bobbitt, and the older brother of Melissa Jane Montgomery who married James Monroe Finch (#5 supra). Pelina and "J.G." were married only 7 years when he died in 1859, leaving her a widow with young children.
   d. 186—, and buried in Mt. Zion Cemetery. Upon her death, Pelina's children were brought up by J.G.'s parents, William and Matilda (Bobbitt) Montgomery.
   Children (more information given in "William B. Montgomery" chapter):
   (1) Frances Montgomery: b. 1854; d. ante-1870
   (2) *Ada* Caroline Montgomery: b. 15 January 1856; d. 6 November 1926
   (3) Alonzo Green *Watson* Montgomery: b. 20 July 1858; m. 7 March 1886, Martha Susan ("Susie") Williams (b. 1865, d. 1935). d. 3 February 1893. Six years after Watson's death, Susie m. Luther Roney and had sons Robert and Will.
      Children:
      1. Ada *Lula* Montgomery: b. 10 April 1887; m. 1911, Van A. Bradley. Lula and Van taught school together at several places in Tennessee and Alabama. d. 24 August 1960
         Children: Van Allen, Leonard K., and the author's friend Watson Montgomery Bradley
      2. Alta Stella Montgomery: b. 1890; d. 1892
      3. Mattie Green Montgomery: b. 1891; m. Debro Freeman; d. 1977
         Child: Mary Helen Freeman
      4. Watson Montgomery: b. 1892; m. Clarence Cravens. They lived in Martin, Tennessee. d. 1944
         Child: Clarence Cravens III

[See "James Monroe Finch"—son]

18. P. 414, #366.
19. Weakley County Book R, p. 45.
20. P. 509, #1379.

JAMES MONROE FINCH
(1824–1899)



JAMES MONROE FINCH was born 15 February 1824 in Granville County, North Carolina. He was the middle child of the nine children of Judith Hockaday and John Wesley Finch and the third of their five sons. Although in the family he was called Monroe, on legal records he was always referred to as J. M. or James M. No doubt he was named for James Monroe, who in 1824 was just completing his second term as President of the United States during what is called "the era of good feeling." His administration is known everywhere for his enunciation in 1823 of the Monroe Doctrine. In the United States this was a period of great material prosperity and little internal strife. For the first time, the Republic seemed safely established and likely to grow into a great nation.

At the age of two, Monroe moved with his family from the Beaver Dam District of Granville County, North Carolina, to Weakley County in northwestern Tennessee. Monroe first lived on a farm a mile and a half west of Dresden, the county seat, and then by 1833 the family lived just a few miles due south of Dresden near where Spring Creek crosses the Meridian Road. Weakley County was a new county, created in 1823 in the frontier area of Tennessee that until 1819 had

belonged to the Indians. The Chickasaws had moved out after selling their land to the government, and there were no Indian disturbances. Monroe's oldest brother, Kelly, was only nine when the family moved, and their father would have had a hard time farming his land without the slave or two that he owned those first years. Besides farming, their energetic father, John Wesley Finch, was also a building contractor who built bridges, surveyed roads, erected the first jail and assisted in erecting the first courthouse (both buildings in brick) in Weakley County. Monroe's parents were both killed 21 August 1846 when they were returning from a trip to North Carolina and their carryall (cariole) was overturned by the horse. The accident happened a few miles west of Abingdon, Virginia. Monroe was twenty-two years old and the oldest of the five Finch children who were single.

The first record I found that actually mentioned Monroe as an adult was dated a little over two years before the death of his parents. In the minutes of the April 1844 session of the county court, twenty-seven men were named to work with Moses D. Swaim "to open and keep in repair the road from David Winston's intersecting the [Meridian] Ridge Road near M. T. C. Finch's." All the men were neighbors, and some were related to Monroe: M. T. C. and D. P. C. Finch were his first cousins (sons of John W. Finch's half-brother Cliff), W. O. K. Finch was Monroe's oldest brother, and W. P. M. Bobbitt would be related to him by marriage in a few years, as he was the uncle of Melissa Jane Montgomery.

In November 1848 James Monroe Finch married Melissa Jane Montgomery, daughter of Matilda Caroline Bobbitt and William B. Montgomery (q.v.). The Montgomerys had moved to Weakley County from North Carolina about 1830, four years after the Finches' arrival there. When he married, Monroe Finch was twenty-four and Melissa Montgomery (born 7 April 1831) was seventeen. They lived all their married life in Weakley County (except two years) and had ten children, eight of whom lived to adulthood. Monroe Finch was a farmer. He also taught school, and this was given as his occupation in the 1850 Weakley County census[1] when J. M. and Melissa were enumerated in District 11 with their first child, Alpheus.

In 1852 Monroe bought three tracts of land in Weakley County. From Archibald Montgomery he bought land in Surveyor's District 12, Range 1, Section 5,[2] first 117 acres for $220 on 12 February, and then 17 more acres for $51 on 25 December. On 6 August Monroe bought 60 acres for $300 from George W. Fields of Fulton County, Kentucky (just across the state line from Weakley County), land adjoining Field's own Weakley County land and C. C. King's.[3] On 9 October 1854 Monroe disposed of the 117-acre tract by selling it to J. W. Swim (*sic*, should be Swaim) for $650. The land description[4] is the same (i.e., adjoining the southeast corner of the Micajah Thomas tract, etc.), although the acreage is given as 118 1/2 acres instead of 117. Monroe kept the 60-acre tract and the 17-acre tract.

J. W. Swim (*sic*) sold Monroe 124 acres of land on 18 December 1855 for $893.75.[5] (J. W. Swaim's wife, Melissa [Bobbitt], was Monroe's first cousin, and she was also the aunt of twenty-two year old Melissa, Monroe's wife.) Three and a half years later, 3 May 1859, Monroe sold the 124 acres to John Brawner for $1200.[6] The land description states that the tract is on the north side of Spring Creek and adjoins the land of the heirs of Caleb Taylor, and the rest of the description just names

---

1. P. 375B, #150.
2. Weakley County, Tennessee, Book H, p. 562, Book K, p. 455.
3. Weakley County Book K, pp. 216, 217.
4. Weakley County Book M, pp. 161, 162.
5. Weakley County Book P, p. 260.
6. Ibid., pp. 368, 369.

WEAKLEY COUNTY, TENNESSEE

Others who had farms in close proximity to James Monroe Finch and William B. Montgomery were W. P. M. Bobbitt, Pelina (Finch) Montgomery, and Jeremiah W. Swaim. In 1882 Monroe and Melissa (Montgomery) Finch moved a short distance to the town of Gleason. The 1989 *Tennessee Atlas and Gazetteer* (DeLorme Mapping Co.), p. 31, shows Finch Road goes west from Gleason toward Liberty.

trees as "pointers." Knowing where the Finches lived in Civil District 10, however, we know the 124 acres were in the lower part of District 10 as it was "north of Spring Creek." We are talking about the area approximately four or five miles south of Dresden and a bit east of the Meridian Road. Trees used as pointers in this area included red oak, white oak, black oak, post oak, elm, hickory, poplar, ironwood, black gum, dogwood, and persimmon.

On 7 April 1856 Monroe was one of nine men who went on an $8,000 bond for W. B. Montgomery, his father-in-law, who had been elected Constable of Weakley County for District 10. For some reason William B. Montgomery resigned a year and a half later and his son, John W. Montgomery, was elected in his place. On 2 November 1857 Monroe Finch ("J. M." in the County Court Minutes) went on his brother-in-law's bond with eleven different men from the previous bond, some with the familiar names of W. P. M. Bobbitt, Melissa's uncle, J. G. (James Green) Montgomery, the husband of Monroe's youngest sister Pelina, Moses D. Swaim,[7] and Jeremiah W. Swaim, husband of Melissa (Montgomery) Finch's Aunt Melissa.

According to Goodspeed's *History of Tennessee* (p. 833), in 1860 the population of Weakley County was 13,985 white and 4,231 colored. Monroe and Melissa (Bobbitt) Finch lived surrounded by relatives, and all were in Civil District 10 with their post office designation being Winston, a little community on the Meridian Road a few miles below the county seat of Dresden. The 1860 Weakley County Census clearly gives the picture.

1860 Weakley County, Tennessee, Census, pp. 414–416

#365	J. H. Finch	J. Hite was Monroe Finch's brother.
#366	Elizabeth Casey	Monroe Finch's widowed sister.
#370	W. P. M. Bobbitt	Oldest son of Barbara (Finch) and Green Bobbitt; Monroe's first cousin and Melissa's uncle.
#371	W. B. Montgomery	Monroe's father-in-law; also, Wm. B.'s wife, Matilda C. (Bobbitt), was Monroe's first cousin on his father's side.
#372	Pelina B. Montgomery	Monroe's widowed sister, whose deceased husband was the first child of W. B. Montgomery and Matilda Bobbitt.
#373 and #374	J. W. Swaim	Jerry Swaim's wife, Melissa (Bobbitt) was Monroe's first cousin on his father's side. Also, she was the aunt of Monroe's wife, for whom she had been named.
#375	J. M. FINCH	This is Monroe Finch (this chapter), son of John Wesley Finch who married William B. Montgomery's daughter, Melissa.
#379	D. P. C. Finch	He was the son of Cliff Finch (half-brother of John Wesley Finch) and therefore Monroe's half-first cousin.
#380	W. O. K. Finch	Kelly was Monroe's oldest brother.
#394	Calvin F. Finch	Calvin was Monroe's next-younger brother.

An 1860 Agriculture Census for Weakley County shows that thirty-six year old Monroe valued his farming implements at $30 and his livestock at $420 (two horses, one mule, two milk cows, seventy-five sheep, twenty swine). He had "hay–15,

7. Moses D. Swaim, born in North Carolina, was seven years younger than his brother Jeremiah W. Swaim.

corn–300, beans–5, sweet potatoes–85," bushels probably. A decade later, after the Civil War, the 1870 agricultural census showed Monroe had 20 acres of improved land and 60 acres unimproved, total value $1000. He had disposed of all his sheep, and his livestock was valued at $400. His crops were "winter wheat–37, corn–375, cotton–3 bales, butter–200 pounds."

All their lives, except for two years right after the Civil War, Monroe and Melissa lived in Weakley County.[8] In 1866–1867 the family was in Haywood County sixty miles southwest of Dresden, and I have not been able to find out what took Monroe there, unless it was a land venture.[9] Possibly Monroe had heard good reports on land in Haywood County, and he and his older brother, John Hite Finch, bought land as an investment and Monroe moved his family there. Tax records for 1866 show that in District 6 J. M. Finch had 61 acres valued at $488 and J. H. Finch had 175 acres valued at $1400. The same tax list showed Lucinda Tugwell in adjoining District 7 with 310 acres of land valued at $2200, and 1 carriage taxed. In 1867 J. M. Finch was listed, but not J. H. Finch. The next list, that of 1869, listed neither of the Finch brothers.

It has not been possible to locate the deeds showing exactly when and where J. M. and J. H. Finch bought land in Haywood County. The master deed indices, as well as the individual deed volumes, do not list any deeds (grantor or grantee) for them. The Haywood County Court Minutes 1865–1869 are not indexed but in a brief scanning do not appear to mention deed transfers anyway, as is sometimes the case in early minute books.

Because of the two-year stay in Haywood County of Monroe and Melissa's family, their oldest daughter, my grandmother Benanna Alice Finch, met and married Robert Rufus Tugwell, son of Lucinda Ball Tugwell and the late John L. Tugwell of District 7, and lived in Haywood County the rest of her life. By 1868 Monroe and Melissa and the rest of their children had moved back to Weakley County.

In the 1870 Weakley County Census, District 10 (p. 159), James M. Finch, forty-six, and Melissa, thirty-nine, are listed with their children Alpheus, John *Bruce*, Cornelia E., Martha *Ella*, Lillie May, Zula, and two black domestic servants. Monroe's place of birth is given incorrectly as Tennessee, when it was actually North Carolina. The Agriculture Census of that year showed Monroe owned 80 acres of land valued at $1000, livestock worth $400, and farm products totaling $800. Enumerated next to the Finch farm was Haywood Bobbitt's household. He was Melissa's uncle, eighteen years younger than her mother and actually a year younger than Melissa herself. Next to Haywood's family was the Jeremiah W. Swaim household. As mentioned, Jerry's wife was Melissa (Bobbitt), sister of Matilda who was my Melissa (Montgomery) Finch's mother, therefore my Melissa's aunt. Also, Monroe's three brothers lived in the same neighborhood with their families: W. O. Kelly, John Hite, and Calvin Finch.

In 1878 Monroe was elected county court clerk of Weakley County and served in that capacity four years. He also had served as justice of the peace, notary public, and tax assessor for many years. By 1880 the total population of Weakley County was 24,538. The 1880 census, District 7,[10] showed fifty-six year old James M. and Melissa Finch with five children in their household: J. Bruce twenty-four, Ella

---

8. Actually, Monroe was two years old when his parents moved to Weakley County.
9. There was a George Finch, born in 1798 in Virginia, who was living in Haywood County, but I know of no business connection between George and Monroe. George may have been a son of James or Henry Finch, mentioned in the Note on p. 166 at the end of the "Henry Finch" chapter.
10. P. 220, #265.

fifteen, Lillie M. twelve, Zula ten, and Emma five. Monroe's occupation was given as Clerk of County Court and Bruce's as Deputy Court Clerk.

After living about fifty years a little south of Dresden (except for the brief two years in Haywood County), in 1882 Monroe and Melissa moved a few miles away to the town of Gleason, called Gleason Station at that time. This was the status of their eight living children, six daughters and two sons, when the move was made to locate close to the prospering town of Gleason. The oldest child, Alpheus, who would become a prominent doctor, was married and for two years had been operating a drugstore in Dresden. The second child, my ancestor Benanna, had been married fifteen years and was living in Haywood County. The third child, Cornelia, who was called "Nealie," was married, as was the fourth child and second son, Bruce, who would become a doctor. The four youngest children were daughters, and they were all living at home: Ella was seventeen and would marry the next year; Lillie May, called "Johnnie," was fifteen; Zula was twelve; and Emma Hite was seven.

Dresden had controlled the trade of a large territory ever since it was established, but when the Nashville and North Western Railroad was completed in the county in 1861 other towns developed along the line like Martin and Gleason, which before 1867 was the little community of "Oakwood," and they too became thriving towns. The number of "taxable polls" in all of Weakley County in 1887 was 4,036.

Nothing has been said about religion, but it was important in the Finch home. The Cumberland Presbyterian Church had been formed in 1810 near Dickson, Tennessee, by some dissenting Presbyterians who objected to a new rule requiring seminary, classically-trained ministers. This new Christian denomination adopted the old Presbyterian Confession of Faith except for the idea of fatality. They declared there were no eternal reprobates, that Christ died for all of mankind (not for only a part of mankind), and that dying infants were saved through Christ and the sanctification of the Spirit. The Cumberland Presbyterian Church was established in Weakley County the same year John Wesley Finch moved his family there from North Carolina, in 1826. The Finches had been Methodists, so Monroe grew up a Methodist. However, when he was fifteen he joined the Cumberland Presbyterian Church and was active in it the rest of his life, for many years being a ruling elder in the church. Monroe's obituary stated that he believed in literary, musical, and Christian education and gave to each of his children such advantages as was within his ability. "Many were the struggles and sacrifices he made for the education of his children....In religion he was not arbitrary, but was broad and liberal." Of Monroe and Melissa's eight children who lived to maturity, four had college educations, the two youngest daughters and the two sons who became doctors. The other four daughters,

JAMES MONROE FINCH

including my ancestor Benanna, had only the local schooling available at the time.

On 7 August 1893 Monroe wrote his will, signing it J. M. Finch. He left everything to his wife Melissa for her support and for the support of two daughters, Ella (Finch) Lasater during her widowhood and seventeen year old Emma Hite until she married. He appointed his two sons, Alpheus and Bruce, to be executors. Then Monroe added this: "In explanation of the foregoing clauses I desire to say that I am in debt to my sons A. D. and J. B. Finch for monies they have advanced me in the past, and I have requested them and they have agreed to look after my property and to supplement the income arising therefrom so as to support my family as above described [wife Melissa, daughters Ella and Emma], and if after my death my said sons should incur further expense in [their] support I desire them to be fully paid out of my estate." Monroe also left to Ella (Finch) Lasater all the part of his home lot that lay north of the center of an alley that ran between her lot and his.

Alpheus and Bruce, both well respected doctors, obviously were devoted sons. They were the only sons in the family, and their six sisters were very proud of them. I remember my mother several times speaking of her two Finch uncles, although they had died before I was born. The tone of Monroe Finch's will left the impression he was not in good health in 1893. However, as events unfolded, he lived six more years, dying 21 July 1899 at the age of seventy-five.

Melissa Jane Montgomery Finch was a widow only six months, dying 20 January 1900 at the age of sixty-eight (exactly one week before her oldest daughter, my grandmother Benanna, died in Haywood County). Ella (Lasater) Finch remained a widow, but before Monroe's death in July 1899 young Emma had married.

James Monroe Finch, born in Granville County, North Carolina, had lived in Weakley County, Tennessee, seventy-one years. (There were two years in Haywood County, and he had been two when he came to Weakley County.) There were obituaries in the Dresden and Gleason newspapers with many words of praise in tribute to Monroe. He was energetic, public spirited, and highly esteemed for his many good qualities. Just a few hours before Monroe's death that great agnostic, Robert C. Ingersoll, died. Joseph E. Jones, the forty-one year old lawyer and friend who wrote one of the obituaries for Monroe, contrasted Ingersoll with "this plain, humble, lovable, consistent Christian who was given to kind words, good deeds, and acts of charity...." Three preachers of Cumberland Presbyterian churches where Monroe had been a member spoke at his funeral, held at his home church in Gleason. It was mentioned that he had been a Mason fifty years and at the time of his death was a Royal Arch Mason. It seems to me it was a fine tribute to an ordinary citizen for the obituary to state, "The hearts of thousands of his friends in this and adjoining counties are touched in sympathy for the bereaved ones left behind."

We descendants can be proud of James Monroe Finch and Melissa Jane (Montgomery). The Bobbitts, Hockadays, Montgomerys, and Finches combined to set an example for us of hard work and Christian virtue that we would do well to emulate. Both Monroe and Melissa are buried in the cemetery by Mt. Zion Church, three miles west of Gleason, in the neighborhood where they lived so many years.

Children of James Monroe Finch and Melissa Jane Montgomery, all born near Dresden, Weakley County, Tennessee:

1. Alpheus D. Finch: b. September 1849; m. (1) November 1875, Laura A. Terrell, who died in September 1876, childless;
   m. (2) July 1878, Ezila Augusta Jones, sister of Henry Jones

ALPHEUS D. FINCH

BUILT CA. 1900 BY DR. ALPHEUS FINCH

Alpheus was educated at the Gleason Masonic Institute and was valedictorian in 1870. The 1870 census gave his occupation as teacher. He began the study of medicine in 1871 and attended the medical department of Nashville University in 1873 for one session. In 1874 he went to Howell County, Missouri, but returned in 1875. That year he married Laura Terrell and located in Obion County. Widowed in less than a year, he married Augusta Jones in 1878. Alpheus had a good medical practice in Obion County for six years. Due to ill health, he abandoned practice and came to Dresden in 1881 and opened a drugstore. In the fall of 1884 he returned to Vanderbilt Medical College in Nashville and received his M.D. in February 1885. He returned to Dresden and had a very successful practice. He was a Democrat, a Methodist, a member of the I.O.O.F.,[11] and a Mason.

[Information is from Goodspeed's *History of Tennessee*, p. 996.] The 1900 census[12] shows Alpheus, wife Augusta, his son Carl, and nephew (Benanna's son) William L. Tugwell, 27, from Haywood County, who was a druggist at W. R. Bobbitt's drugstore in Dresden.

The house shown at left was cited in the Dresden newspaper as "Landmark Destroyed by Fire February 7 [1968]."

d. post-1910

Child:

(1) Carl D.: b. December 1879. In 1901 he became a physician like his father.

2. BENANNA ALICE FINCH MY DIRECT LINE

Born: 27 October 1851

Married: 18 August 1867 in Haywood County, Robert Rufus Tugwell, son of John L. Tugwell (deceased) and Lucinda (Ball) of Haywood County,

Died: 27 January 1900, Brownsville, Haywood County, Tennessee

Children: Luella, John, William L., Robert Bruce, Albert Sidney, Stella May, Benanna Alice ("Ana"), Edna Gertrude (my line)

[See "Benanna Alice Finch" chapter]

---

11. The Independent Order of Odd Fellows is a fraternal benevolent society founded in England in the early 1700s and organized in the United States in 1819.
12. Weakley County, Tennessee, 1900 Census, p. 93, #170.

3. Cornelia E. ("Nealie") Finch: b. 1853; m. C. E. Alexander Davis; d. 1936, and buried in Sunset Cemetery near Dresden. Nealie was living in McKenzie, Carroll County, Tennessee, when her father died in 1899. (McKenzie, on the upper edge of Carroll County, is about seven miles southeast of Gleason, Weakley County.) Note: Monroe's obituary refers to her as Mrs. C. E. Davis. The book *Weakley County Tennessee, Cemeteries*, (1980), vol. 2, p. 319, Sunset Cemetery, shows "Mrs. Alexander Davis 1853–1936 née Cornella (*sic*) Finch." The 1910 Weakley County Census showed Cornelia Davis, widow, 56, as head of household with two of her three children, Mary 21, teacher, and Oscar Alexander 26, drugstore clerk, also boarder Oscar Bobbitt in her home. Oscar Bobbitt was a grandson of W. P. M. Bobbitt, Melissa (Montgomery) Finch's maternal uncle, therefore Cornelia's 2d cousin twice removed.
   Children (3, including):
   (1) J. Oscar Alexander: b. 1884; m. Mary Mitchell
   (2) Mary: b. 1889
4. John *Bruce* Finch: b. 24 January 1856; m. 1881, Mary E. ("Mollie") Parr (b. 8 December 1861, d. 1911). In the 1880 Weakley County Census, J. Bruce, 24, was a deputy clerk. In 1889 Bruce received his M.D. from Vanderbilt Medical College, Nashville. He and Mollie lived in Dresden, and Bruce was well loved in the county. In the 1900 census[13] he was living two houses from his older brother Alpheus and family.[14] In the 1910 census[15] this was the listing: Dr. Bruce Finch, 54; Mollie, 48, his wife of 29 years; his sister Ella (Finch) Lasater, 46, widow; and his mother-in-law Isabel Chiles, 70. The census showed that Isabel Chiles had had 7 children, 5 of whom were still living. (The 1880 census of adjacent Obion County[16] showed "Bell" Chiles,

DR. J. B. FINCH (HOLDING GRANDCHILD ANABEL HART)
WITH HIS SON HUBERT B. FINCH, CA. 1910

13. P. 93, #168.
14. A coincidence: A few doors away was Ed Maiden, lawyer, and his family. His father (Noah L., born in Virginia) was the youngest brother of my paternal great-grandfather, William Lee Maiden. See author's *The Maiden Family* (1991) book, p. 667. In 1910 Ed Maiden's widow and three adult children lived next door (#115) to Dr. Bruce Finch.
15. District 7, p. 141, #116.
16. Enumeration District 111, p. 13, #108.

40, in the household of her second husband Henry C. Chiles, 41; with their daughters Jennie, 13, and Minnie, 7; their son Hersh E., 11 months; a daughter of her 1st marriage, Mary E. Parr, 17; and Mary Pickard, 76, widow. It is possible Mary Pickard was Bell's mother, for whom she had named her daughter Mary E. "Mollie" Parr.) Bruce was an elder in the Cumberland Presbyterian Church, Dresden. There were no children in Mollie and Bruce's home in 1910, but that year's census showed that 4 children had been born to them and only 2 were still living. Next door on one side (#117) was another of Bruce's sisters, Cornelia Davis, widow, 56. Bruce Finch's obituary[17] indicates that after his wife's death he retired from practice and with his brother Alpheus went to Arkansas and invested in land. After returning to Weakley County ca. 1920, he spent his time with his sisters Ella and "Johnnie" and close friends in the county.
d. 19 May 1921 of a stroke, and buried in Sunset Cemetery near Dresden.

HUBERT B. FINCH, 1883–1935

Children (3 sons and 1 daughter, including):

(1) *Hubert* Bruce Finch: b. 1883, Dresden, Tennessee; m. 1919, Mary Alice Cochran (b. 1894, d. 1978), daughter of Mary Alice Shepherd and Owen L. Cochran, in Houston, Texas. B. A. Shepherd, Hubert's wife's grandfather, was a pioneer Houston businessman.
Hubert graduated from the University of Tennessee in 1903 and came to Houston in 1907, listed in the City Directory that year as a clerk at Merchants National Bank, which soon became Union National Bank. Before his marriage and during the summer of 1916, he attended one of the first army officer training camps at

17. The obituary in *The Dresden Enterprise* was sent to me by Jane (Dean) Sohm. It was found by her cousins Margaret (Gannaway) Telford and Bruce Finch Gannaway who have secured a lot of family information from sources in Dresden, Tennessee. Jane, Margaret, and Bruce are grandchildren of Zula Finch (p. 207 infra).

Leon Springs, north of San Antonio, and ended his army service in World War I as a decorated First Lieutenant.
Hubert was an outstanding banker, and at the time of his death on 2 November 1935 in Houston, Texas, he was Executive Vice President of The Union National Bank. The right-hand photo just above is from page five of the November–December 1935 issue of *Houston Banker* magazine. On that page is the following full-page tribute "To the Memory of Vice President Hubert B. Finch" by Mr. R. M. Farrar, President of The Union National Bank:

> In the death, on November 2, 1935, of Mr. Finch The Union National Bank lost an executive officer who rendered it faithful and efficient service for more than twenty-five years, an important reason for his effective usefulness as an executive being the utter absence in his make-up of the gambler and the speculator—he never expected something for nothing.
>
> In my intimate association with him for eleven of those years, I learned to honor and esteem him as, in some ways, an unusual man—he was always earnest, dependable, patient, unselfish, modest and courageous, clean and wholesome in his thoughts as well as in his words.
>
> He had no time for current shams, fallacies and vagaries—giving consideration only to the realities of life and little heed to forms and formalities, and yet his greatest virtue, perhaps, was the absence of harshness and severity in his judgment of men, notwithstanding which his faculty of discrimination—a most essential one—was excellent.
>
> In that unhappy and distressing period of our local banking crisis, 1931–33, his unfaltering and unwavering confidence, faith and hope were little less than sublime; his conduct and mental attitude in every emergency were singularly serene.
>
> His adult life had been spent in the banking business, perhaps the most exacting, severe and vexing of all human pursuits, and yet he preserved throughout and to the end of his career a demeanor of uniform gentleness and kindliness.
>
> We shall indeed miss him in the coming years, but the goodness and simplicity of his life, character and career will be a comfort and inspiration for all who knew and loved him.

Children:

1. Mary Alice Finch: b. 1923; m. (1) Dan Harrison and had 2 sons; m. (2) Walter Cardwell
2. Hubert *Bruce* Finch: b. 12 December 1929; m. 1957, Caroline Adriance in Houston, Texas. Bruce entered Rice University in Houston but left early in 1951 to enter the U.S. Air Force, and was on active duty until 1955. He graduated from Rice in 1956. He ended his Air Force association as a Captain in the active reserves in 1962. Bruce and Caroline live in Houston, where he is in the oil business with his brother and in personal investments.
   Child:
   [1] Lois C. Finch: b. 1958
3. Owen C. Finch: b. 1930; m. Betty Grey
   Children:
   [1] Owen Finch, Jr.: b. 1954
   [2] Elizabeth Grey Finch: b. 1958

5. Lycurgus Finch: b. 1859; died young
6. infant: b. ca. 1862; died young
7. Martha *Ella* Finch: b. April 1865; m. ca. 1883, James Lasater (b. 1852; d. ante-1893, Weakley County), son of Dr. J. B. Lasater. After James' death, Ella and her son lived with her parents. In the 1900 census she was shown in Gleason as head of her own household, with Chester, 16. She probably was in her parents' home, as Monroe had died in July 1899 and Melissa in January 1900. In 1910 she was living with her brother, Dr. Bruce Finch, and his wife Mollie (Parr). She never remarried.
   d. post-1921 in Long Beach, California
   Child:
   (1) Chester A. Lasater: b. May 1884
8. Lillie May ("Johnnie") Finch: b. ca. 1868; m. post-1885, Worley Jones, who apparently died between 1893 and 1899. d. post-1921 in Gleason, Tennessee. In 1885 "Miss Johnnie Finch" was a member of the Cumberland Presbyterian church at McKenzie, Carroll County, also John H. Finch; as was younger sister Emma in 1883.[18] When Monroe died in 1899, his obituary listed daughter Johnnie as "Mrs. Lillie May Jones, at Gleason."
9. *Zula* Lee Finch: b. 23 March 1870; m. 1889, the Rev. Isaac N. Yokley (b. 1860, d. 1942), Cumberland Presbyterian preacher

ISAAC AND ZULA (FINCH) YOKLEY IN INDIANA

Zula was my mother's favorite aunt, and they kept in touch until my mother's death. Zula was a fine musician, and excelled as a student at Bethel College, the Cumberland Presbyterian college in McKenzie, which is about seven miles southeast of Gleason. In 1899 Zula and Isaac were living in Bloomfield, Indiana, and later lived many years in Nesbit, Mississippi.
d. 17 August 1955, West Memphis, Arkansas

---

18. Sistler, *19th Century Tennessee Church Records*, (1979), vol. 2, p. 76.

Children:
(1) Kathleen Yokley: b. 3 June 1894; unmarried; d. 4 April 1984
(2) Dorris Yokley: b. 29 May 1897, Bloomfield, Indiana; m. 1 May 1917, Joseph Lundy Dean (b. 3 December 1879; d. 3 June 1978), in Nesbit, Mississippi; d. 5 July 1988 in Memphis, Tennessee
Children:
1. Joseph Lundy ("Joe") Dean: b. 2 March 1918; m. 21 October 1949, Celeste Yeteve ("Miki") Pickering (b. 27 November 1924, Baltimore, Maryland), daughter of Col. (U.S.A.) Woodell A. Pickering and Margaret Casteel, in San Antonio, Texas. Miki graduated from Thomas Jefferson High School in San Antonio and attended the University of Texas. Joe was in the Marine Corps Reserve 1942–1966 and retired as a Lt. Col. He served in World War II 1942–1945 (Pacific Theatre) and in the Korean War 1950–1952. He was a pilot with Braniff Airways 1946–1980. Joe and Miki live in Miami, Florida.
Children:
[1] Kathleen Dean: b. 28 October 1951; m. (2) 15 October 1977, James G. Atkins, in Portland, Oregon
Child:
1. Rebecca, b. 8 July 1982
[2] Richard Dean: b. 7 May 1955; m. 18 June 1977, Joey Edna Taras, in Atlanta, Georgia
Children:
1. Brian: b. 12 January 1983
2. Joseph: b. 23 February 1986

2. *Jane* Yokley Dean: b. 9 January 1920, Nesbit; m. 1940, John J. Sohm. Jane and John live in Memphis, Tennessee, where Jane is on the music faculty at Rhodes (formerly Southwestern) College and John is a physician.
Children:
[1] John J. Sohm: b. 17 January 1941; m. Julia Reese, in Jackson, Mississippi
Children:
1. John J. III
2. Jennifer
3. Jeffry
[2] Jane D. Sohm: b. 7 April 1942; m. 1961 George Underwood
Children:
1. David
2. Douglas
3. Donald
[3] Kathleen Sohm: b. 22 February 1944;
m. (1) Michael Stevens, div.
Children: Sarah, Paul
m. (2) Kent Allen
[4] Sarah Sohm: b. 27 July 1949; m. Brian Safian
Children:
1. Elizabeth Ann
2. David

3. Richard Dean: b. 19 December 1922; d. 21 June 1945; a World War II veteran

(3) Dorothy Margaret Yokley: b. 29 May 1899;
m. 1 May 1917, James Joyner Gannaway, in Nesbit, Mississippi;
d. 8 November 1962
Children:
1. Dorothy *Margaret* Gannaway: b. 8 February 1918; m. 25 September 1943, John Chamberlain Telford (d. 21 March 1972), in Nesbit, Mississippi. Margaret lives in Clarksville, Tennessee. [See footnote 17 supra]
Children:
[1] John C., Jr.: b. 28 February 1950
[2] James Monroe: b. 14 December 1951
[3] Clair Joyner: b. 13 July 1954;
m. 7 June 1986, Terrie Crouch
2. James Joyner ("Jim") Gannaway, Jr.: b. 11 May 1919;
m. 15 January 1944, Rebekah Cameron Deaton. They live in Nesbit, Mississippi.
Children:
[1] Celia Cameron: b. 8 February 1945;
m. Charles Thomas Wallace, Jr., in Nesbit, Mississippi
Children:
1. Caroline Cameron: b. 22 October 1968
2. Charles Thomas III: b. 20 April 1971
[2] James Joyner III: b. 8 December 1946;
m. 30 May 1970, Evelyn Castle Looney, in Leland, Mississippi
Children:
1. Marion Castle: b. 24 August 1975
2. James Joyner IV: b. 24 March 1977
3. Callie Christopher: b. 3 August 1981
[3] Stephen Deaton: b. 9 September 1948; m. 5 September 1970, Susan Noland, in Columbus, Mississippi; div. 1980
Children:
1. Stephen Deaton, Jr.: b. 14 May 1971
2. Caroline Kristen: b. 23 October 1974
3. Heather Michelle: b. 2 March 1976
[4] Jeff Montgomery: b. 25 June 1957; m. 8 August 1981, Sandra Gail Ferguson, in Tunica, Mississippi
Child:
1. Rebecca Franklin: b. 9 October 1985
3. John Yokley Gannaway: b. 24 November 1920;
m. (1) 4 October 1944, Ruth Kinney; div. 2 January 1972;
m. (2) 1 December 1973, Mildred Hodges Cone. They live in Albuquerque, New Mexico.
Children of 1st marriage:
[1] Julia Ann: b. 23 November 1945;
m. 1969, Ross Levett; div. 1984
[2] Christopher Kinney: b. 27 May 1948;
m. May 1970, Marilyn Biel
Children:
1. Ethan Bartley: b. 13 September 1974
2. Samuel James: b. 23 October 1976

4. *Bruce* Finch Gannaway: b. 5 February 1926; m. 3 September 1953, Ollie Johnson, at Starkville, Mississippi. The Rev. Bruce Finch Gannaway is a Presbyterian missionary and pastor. They live in Louisville, Kentucky. [See footnote 17 supra]
Children:
[1] Grace (adopted)
[2] William

(4) Eleanor *Ruth* Yokley: b. 8 August 1900; d. 17 May 1903, buried in Mt. Zion Cemetery next to her grandmother, Melissa J. (Montgomery) Finch

(5) Mary Yokley: died young

10. *Emma* Hite Finch: b. 13 October 1875. Grew up in Dresden. From 1883 until July 1899 her name was on the Carroll County Cumberland Presbyterian membership list at McKenzie, the town just across the line from Weakley County. Graduated from Lebanon (Tennessee) College for Young Ladies. m. June 1898, the Rev. James Vaughan ("Jim") Freeman, Methodist minister, son of Portia J. (Allen) and James Evans Freeman. After marrying she became a Methodist, living where Jim had charges: (in Tennessee) Trimble, Huntingdon, Henderson, Dyersburg, Millington, Highland Heights, Memphis, and (in Kentucky) Clinton and Fulton, very close to Weakley, Tennessee. Jim was a successful pastor and was at different times the Presiding Elder (District Superintendent) of the Jackson, Lexington, and Brownsville (Tennessee) Districts. When they lived in Brownsville, Emma's great-niece, Mary Tugwell, who was Benanna (Finch)'s granddaughter and the daughter of Robert Bruce Tugwell, came into town and stayed in their home to attend high school in Brownsville. In 1924 when Lambuth College in Jackson, Tennessee, opened its doors as a co-ed institution (under the same charter the Methodists received in 1843 when it was the Memphis Conference Female Institute), Jim Freeman helped in the planning and was involved with the College until his retirement in 1932 because of illness. Emma d. 10 September 1942, Fulton, Kentucky, and buried there beside her husband, who had died 13 June 1935. Her obituary states: "Miss Emma ...was an unusual woman. She was beautiful, stately and striking in appearance and very plainly showed the evidences of refinement and culture. She had an excellent mind, was well educated, a fine conversationalist, and could hold her own in any company. She was very attractive in personality and commanded attention wherever she was by her outstanding appearance, mental capacity, and charm of manners."

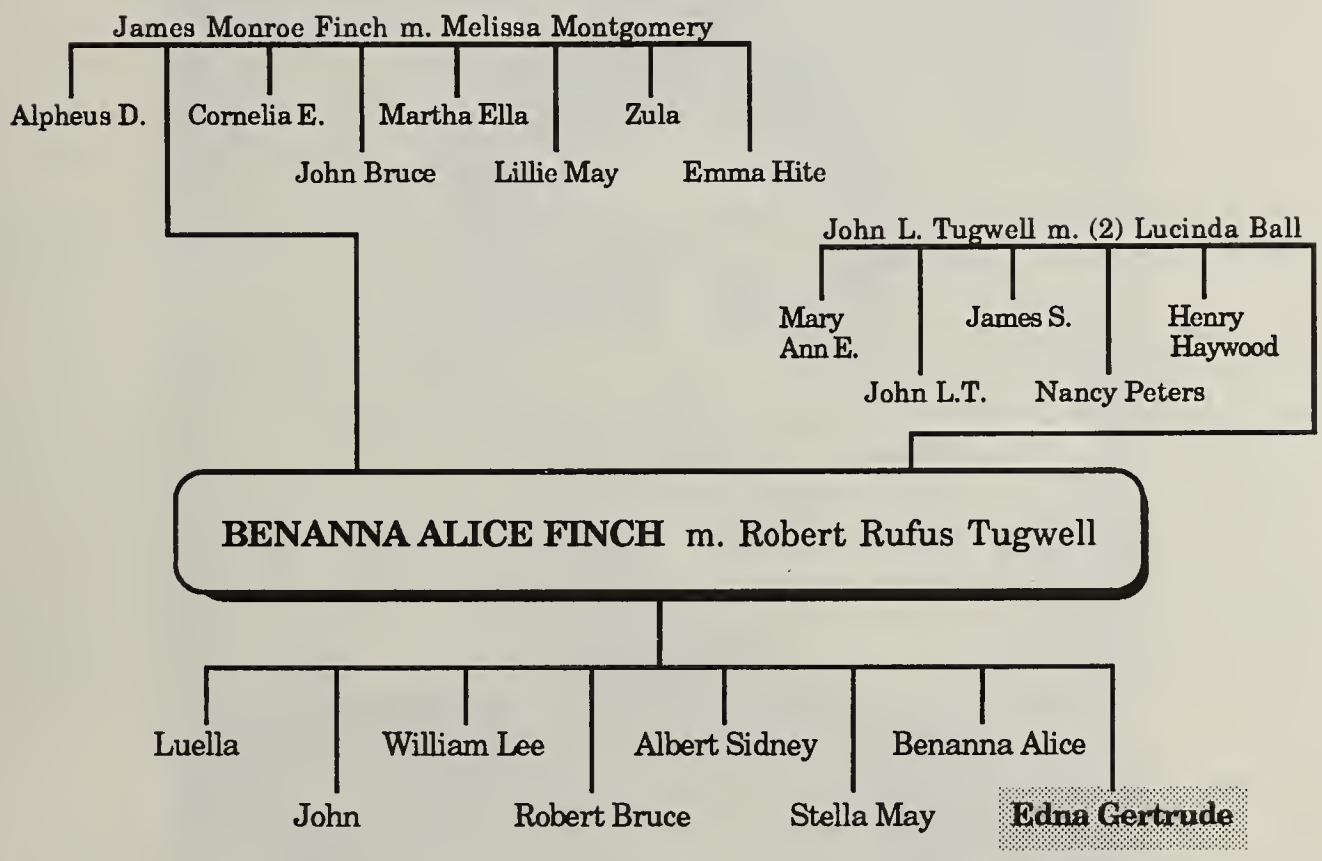
EMMA H. FINCH

Child:

(1) Herman: b. ca. 1917, adopted by Emma and Jim and remained with them until their deaths

[See "Benanna Alice Finch"—daughter]

BENANNA ALICE FINCH
(1851–1900)



BENANNA ALICE FINCH was the second child and oldest daughter of James Monroe Finch and Melissa Jane Montgomery. She was born 27 October 1851 in Weakley County, Tennessee. Why she was named Benanna Alice is not known. With two exceptions[1] all of Monroe and Melissa Finch's children were given what they considered mellisonant double names, and I can find no previous Ben, Anna, or Alice in the family for whom Benanna was named.[2]

Benanna grew up on the family farm about five miles south of Dresden and a few miles from Gleason. [See map on p. 198] Weakley County was the home of the Monroe Finch family except "during the two years of 1866–1867" (from Benanna's obituary) when the family lived in Haywood County. During that brief stay Benanna Finch met and fell in love with Robert Rufus Tugwell, son of John L. Tugwell, deceased,[3] and Lucinda (Ball) Tugwell.

---

1. Only two children had family names, but they were never called by those names: John *Bruce* and *Emma* Hite. John and Hite were names that came down on the Finch side.
2. And certainly, bananas, the delicious fruit so well known today, were unknown in the United States during Benanna's lifetime. Not until 1899, when the United Fruit Company was formed, were bananas brought to this country in sufficient quantities to be found in stores, and then only in seacoast towns where banana ships unloaded.
3. John L. Tugwell died in 1855.

A description of Benanna has come down in the family that she was considered beautiful, with black hair and large brown eyes, and very fair skin. Sad to say, the only extant picture of her is one made not long before her death, and she looks frail and tired. Too bad we cannot know the young, vibrant girl who married Rufus Tugwell two months before her sixteenth birthday. Rufus was then not quite twenty, had red hair and large blue eyes.

BENANNA A. FINCH, 1899

Brought up as a Cumberland Presbyterian in Weakley County, Benanna joined the Methodist church in 1866 in Haywood County, and the rest of her life "held her connection at Marvin's Chapel near her late country home and afterwards in Brownsville" (from her obituary). Although Benanna married at a young age, it must have been with her parents' blessing, as the Methodist minister who performed the ceremony on 18 August 1867 was her Aunt Emily (Finch)'s husband, Briant Medlin, who came especially for the occasion.

For the next twenty-three years, until her death in 1900, Benanna lived in Haywood County, Tennessee. She kept close contact—that is, as close as possible—with her Weakley County kin. Her son Will lived with her brother Dr. Alpheus Finch in Dresden, where Will worked as a pharmacist in his cousin Walter

Bobbitt's drugstore. My mother spoke of her two Finch uncles, both doctors, and her favorite aunt, Zula Finch, who was fifteen years her senior.

Through the circumstance of Rufus Tugwell's two sisters dying and leaving orphaned children, for several years one or more of these children lived with Rufus and Benanna. They joined an ever increasing family, for these were Benanna and Rufus' children:

Luella	Born June 1868
John	Born 1869, died within a year
Will	Born August 1870
Bob	Born March 1873
Albert	Born September 1875
Stella	Born September 1879
Anna (Ana)	Born May 1881
Edna	Born August 1885

Interesting information given me by my cousin Edna Earnest (Ana's daughter) is that her mother said half the children had brown eyes and red hair and half had brown or black hair and blue eyes.

Although when first married, Benanna and Rufus lived on the Tugwell land on Sugar Creek near the Hatchie River, in the course of the next quarter of a century they lived two or three different places in Haywood County, near but not in the town of Brownsville. In 1897 they moved into town and lived on East Main Street. As the street continued east out of town, it became the road to Jackson, in Madison County.

Benanna Alice (Finch) Tugwell died 27 January 1900, three months past her forty-eighth birthday, survived by her husband and seven children ranging in age from Luella who was thirty-one to my mother Edna who was fourteen. The author hopes the reader will not skip over the long obituary below, as it reveals from a contemporary's viewpoint some of Benanna's gentle traits.

> — Another death was recorded in our town last Saturday morning, in the demise of Mrs. Benana Tugwell wife of our esteemed fellow townsman Mr. R. R. Tugwell, which occurred at her home on East Main street about 11 o'clock of the above named day. Mrs. Tugwell had been ill for about one week and being of frail constitution proved a ready prey to the disease of pneumonia with the added trouble of a weak heart. Mrs. Tugwell was a most estimable woman and was well known to the people of Brownsville and Haywood county, by a residence in the last for something over twenty years. She was born in Weakly county, Tennessee on October 27th, 1851 and was hence at the time of her death a few months over forty-eight years of age. She was the daughter of the late James Monroe Finch, for many years a prominent citizen and official of that county and who will be remembered by some of the older residents as having resided here in Haywood county during the two years of 1866–1867. The parentage of Mrs. Tugwell was of the best and in the enumeration of a large number of their descendants integrity has been the disposition, which has prevented reproach from coming upon any of the members. It is a singular coincidence that Mrs. Tugwell's mother died at a ripe old age just one week to the day before her daughter. Mrs. Tugwell professed religion in the year 1866 and joined the Methodist church about the same time. She had since held her connection at Marvins Chapel near her late country home and afterwards in Brownsville. She took a deep interest in things spiritual and a delight in her connection with the church of God, to which she reared her children and which influence was made predominant in her household. She was married to Mr. Tugwell August 18th, 1867. They had eight children all of whom live except one boy who died in early infancy. The beneficent influence of this good mother has been no doubt a great factor in the success that has attended these children wherever they have cast their lot. Most of them have attained to their majority and three have removed from the parental roof

> but all have carried with them the fundamental attributes taught at the knee of a conscientious mother. They are: Mrs. Luella Richardson, wife of Dr. J. A. Richardson, of Dickson, Tenn., W. L. Tugwell, a prominent pharmacist, of Dresden, Albert Tugwell, of Dallas, Tex., Robt. Tugwell, of Brownsville, Misses Stella, Anna and Edna Tugwell, of Brownsville. The relations of the deceased to a large circle of friends and neighbors were unusually congenial, the warmth of a hospitable and loving disposition combining with a consecrated character to put young or old at ease in her presence and contributing toward esteem and respect for her. In her death, the community as well as her own household and relatives has sustained a painful loss. The funeral took place at two o'clock Sunday afternoon at the family residence. The services were conducted by Rev. Thos. J. Newell, of the Methodist church. Notwithstanding the inclement weather a large party of friends followed the remains to Oakwood Cemetery, where the interment took place.

In the above clipping from the Brownsville newspaper, the date of death was omitted, but it was 27 January 1900. I have one of the little, black-bordered death announcement cards that in those days it was customary to distribute to friends. The printed note is in its black-bordered envelope. An inscribed upright marble tombstone marks where Benanna was buried in Oakwood Cemetery in Brownsville, Tennessee.

Big changes followed within two years of Benanna's death. Son Albert had moved to Dallas, Texas, in 1897, and Benanna's last letter to Luella (which I have) had mentioned Will's having visited Albert. Will moved to Runnels County, Texas, in late 1900 or early 1901. Rufus decided to move to Dallas, and in 1902 he, Stella, Ana, and Edna left Haywood County, Tennessee. Bob decided to stay as he was married and had put down roots. The same year Luella and her husband Dr. John A. Richardson moved from Dickson, Tennessee, to Seymour, Texas. No doubt Albert and Will urged the move, and Rufus, whose health was not robust, agreed it was the best thing for him and the girls to do. This ends the story on my line of Tennessee Tugwells. All of the siblings who came to Texas lived there the rest of their lives except Ana (Anna) who lived the last forty years of her life in Shreveport, Louisiana. Bob Tugwell lived all his life in Haywood County, and only through his line has the Tugwell surname come down to the present.

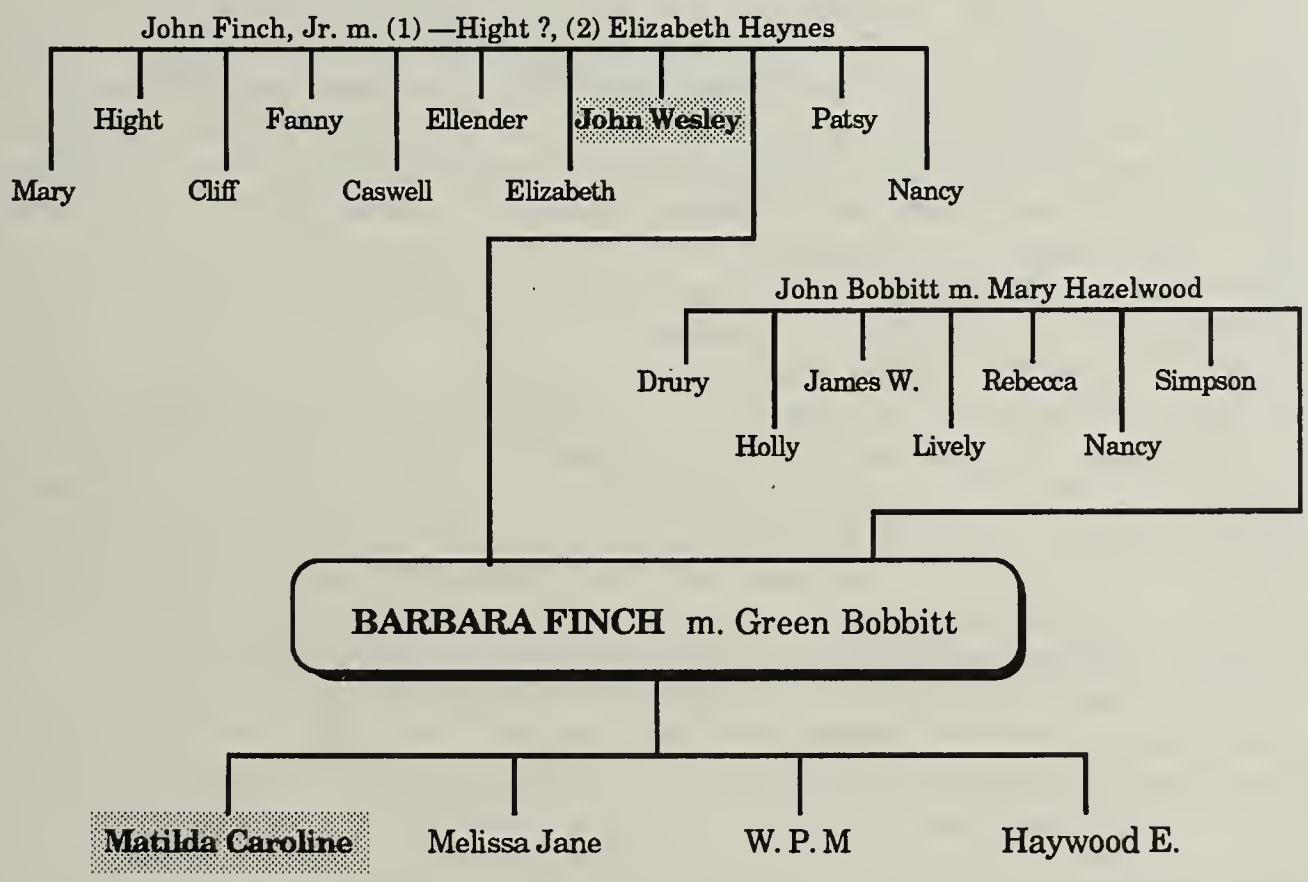
Benanna Alice (Finch) Tugwell's life is also treated in the chapter on her husband, Robert Rufus Tugwell, following which there are separate chapters on their seven children who reached adulthood.

[See "Robert Rufus Tugwell"—husband]
[See "Luella Tugwell," daughter—pp. 89–90]
[See "John Tugwell," son—p. 91]
[See "William L. Tugwell," son—pp. 92–93]
[See "Robert Bruce Tugwell," son—pp. 94–101]
[See "Albert Sidney Tugwell," son—pp. 102–106]
[See "Stella May Tugwell," daughter—pp. 107–109]
[See "Benanna Alice ('Ana') Tugwell," daughter—pp. 110–115]
*[See "Edna Gertrude Tugwell," daughter **(my line)**—pp. 116–133]*

NOTE: James Monroe Finch and Benanna Alice Finch descend from John Finch, Jr.,'s eighth child, John Wesley Finch. The next chapter, out of sequence by *dates*, is about John Wesley Finch's sister, Barbara, from whom our line also descends.

BARBARA FINCH
(1795–1859)

(NINTH CHILD OF JOHN FINCH, JR., AND ELIZABETH HAYNES)



BARBARA FINCH was born 20 March 1795 in Granville County, North Carolina. She was the ninth of John Finch, Jr.'s eleven children (four sons and seven daughters). Her mother was Elizabeth Haynes, John's second wife, and Barbara was the third of the five children of that marriage.

When she was eighteen Barbara Finch married Green Bobbitt, youngest son of John Bobbitt [see p. 289 infra] and Mary Hazelwood. The date of the marriage bond was 8 June 1813, and it was recorded in Granville County, North Carolina. There were Bobbitts in Granville, Warren, and Franklin counties. Although Green's parents were living on Ben's Creek in Warren County in 1813, apparently Green was living with and working for relatives north of Raleigh in Wake County. This was the area bordering the lower part of Granville and Franklin counties where many Bobbitts and Finches lived.

Barbara's father had bought land in 1805 from Turner Bobbitt on Smith's Creek in southeastern Granville County. Turner was a large landowner and a cousin of Green Bobbitt's. The connection: Green's great-great-great-grandfather, John Bobbitt "of Chowan," was a brother of Turner's great-grandfather, William Bobbitt,

Jr., the brothers being sons of William Bobbitt the Immigrant of 1673. They would have known that all the North Carolina Bobbitts were related—but exactly in what way might have been a little hard for them to explain.

John Finch, Jr., first owned land in Granville County a little above the Tar River east of Tabbs Creek and going east to the Franklin County line, but had sold it in November 1800. Barbara was only a little girl when John and Elizabeth (Haynes) Finch moved their large family to the Beaver Dam District in the southern part of Granville County where Newlight, Beaver Dam, and Smith creeks begin their southerly flow into the Neuse River in Wake County. This was not a big move, no more than fifteen miles, and it placed the Finches in the area near where Granville, Franklin, and Wake counties join. It is hard for us to know just exactly how and where Barbara Finch met Green Bobbitt. Finches and Bobbitts were well acquainted, and if Green was working for Bobbitt relatives in the area, somehow their paths crossed and introductions would not have been difficult. The courtship and wedding ritual was still simple in the early 1800s. Wedding customs today have evolved into often elaborate affairs, but this was not always the case. Weddings were usually held in the bride's home, and women did not always wear white. They simply wore their best dress. The marriage of Barbara Finch and Green Bobbitt took place 18 June 1813, probably in her parents' home, in southeastern Granville County, North Carolina.

By 1817 Barbara and Green had two daughters, Matilda Caroline (my ancestor) and Melissa Jane. In the summer of 1822 Barbara's father, John Finch, Jr., died, and pursuant to the terms of his will, she and all her siblings were to receive their legacies only after the death of their stepmother, John's third wife Mary (Polly Bradford) Finch. In 1823 Barbara and Green's son William Powell Mitchell (called W.P.M. or Willie) was born, and in 1832 another son was born, named Haywood. Censuses indicate there may have been two other children born between 1813 and 1832, but if so, they died young and there are no records for them.

Barbara and Green lived in three or four locations during their married life. It is not known where (ca. 1838) Green died, but it may have been in Weakley County, Tennessee, because that is certainly where Barbara lived the last approximately twenty years of her life. Barbara and Green's two married daughters had been living in Weakley County since the early 1830s, and the 1840 census shows the widowed Barbara living with the family of her second daughter, Melissa Swaim, whose husband Jerry, according to census records, was quite prosperous. Barbara's two sons lived in Weakley County also.

Barbara (Finch) Bobbitt died 30 July 1859 in Weakley County, Tennessee, at the age of sixty-four. In addition to about twenty grandchildren, she was survived by her four children:

1. Matilda Caroline (my line), wife of William B. Montgomery
2. Melissa Jane, wife of Jeremiah W. Swaim
3. William Powell Mitchell (W. P. M.), who married Eliza Ann —
4. Haywood Edison, who married Elizabeth C. Jenkins

Additional information on the married life of Barbara Finch and her children may be found in the chapter on her husband, Green Bobbitt [p. 292].

It might not be amiss at this point to include some general background information to aid the reader in understanding a little better the interweaving of the Finch–Bobbitt–Montgomery–Swaim families. When I got into this research, I found the relationships very confusing, and I am sure the reader will too, but at least I will attempt to explain.

The 1813 marriage of Barbara Finch and Green Bobbitt ultimately resulted in what Watson Bradley of Nashville so aptly called "that great westward leap" to

Weakley County, Tennessee, of many Finches and Bobbitts. Those two families were part of the very substantial migration from the Granville and Franklin County area of North Carolina to the frontier lands of western Tennessee in the 1820s and 1830s.

The Finch and Bobbitt families had actually followed a somewhat similar history. Their immigrant ancestors had come from Great Britain within a decade of one another about a hundred and fifty years before Barbara and Green married, and both immigrant "first-comers" had settled in Tidewater Virginia. Some of their descendants had pushed southwestward to and across the Roanoke River to the large Granville grant in North Carolina, and both families had owned hundreds of acres of land and sometimes a few slaves.

The first Finch–Bobbitt marriage in our line was in 1803 when Fanny Finch, an older half-sister of Barbara (and of John Wesley Finch too), married Britton Bobbitt, son of William M. and Martha (Turner) Bobbitt. Next was in 1813 when Barbara Finch (subject of this chapter) married Green Bobbitt. Fanny's marriage was recorded in Franklin County, North Carolina, and Barbara's in adjoining Granville County. Fanny, Barbara, and John Wesley were three of John Finch, Jr.,'s eleven children.

The merger of the Bobbitt and Montgomery lines began with the 1828 marriage of my ancestor Matilda Caroline, oldest child of Barbara (Finch) and Green Bobbitt, to William B. Montgomery (born in Knox County, Tennessee, and thought to be the son of George W. Montgomery). There were a few Montgomerys in Franklin and Warren counties (both formed from old Bute County), adjoining Granville County, but none I can tie to William B., and the circumstances that led to Matilda and William's meeting are not known. It should be noted that their marriage added the Finch connection too, as Matilda (Bobbitt) Montgomery's mother, Barbara, was a Finch.

The plot thickened when Matilda (Bobbitt) and William B. Montgomery's two oldest children married two of the children of John Wesley Finch, who was the older brother of Matilda's mother, Barbara (Finch) Bobbitt: James Green Montgomery married Pelina B. Finch (Watson Bradley's ancestors) and Melissa Jane Montgomery married James Monroe Finch (my ancestors). This means these lines have a double Finch connection. In my line it is because J. Monroe Finch's paternal grandfather was John Finch, Jr., and because the maternal great-grandmother of J. Monroe Finch's wife Melissa Jane Montgomery was the same John Finch, Jr.

To explain the Swaim connection: William B. Montgomery's wife Matilda (Bobbitt) was the older sister of Jeremiah W. Swaim's wife Melissa Jane (Bobbitt),[1] and four of the Montgomery–Swaim children married. Also, the Swaims' daughter Martha married John Houston Finch, son of John Hite Finch and grandson of John Wesley Finch. Although it may not be clear on first reading, it is obvious that the Finches, Bobbitts, Montgomerys, and Swaims were quite intertwined in Weakley County, Tennessee.

[See "Green Bobbitt"—husband]
[See "Matilda Caroline Bobbitt"—daughter]

1. This is Lou Herrington's line [see p. 298].

HOCKADAY BACKGROUND

THE SURNAME HOCKADAY comes from the Anglo-Saxon words for "high day." Hockaday (the first *a* is intrusive) was an ecclesiastical high day or festival commencing the second Tuesday after Easter. It was commemorative of the driving out of the Danes in the days of Ethelred and was celebrated up until the Reformation. A child would be baptized, for example, as "the child of Hock Day," so named for being born or baptized during the holiday.[1]

In early York County, Virginia, there was a William Hockaday who was a Burgess;[2] the first record I found for him was July 1636.[3] By 1646 he was already acquiring, through headrights, eight square miles of land bordering the south side of the York River and Ware Creek. New Kent County was formed from the upriver part of York County and part of James City County in 1654, and this William's land fell into Blisland (Blissland) Parish of New Kent County. [See map on p. 163]

In 1699 a John Hockaday and Warwick (note first name) Mohun of New Kent County were two of twelve men elected "Regarding the Building of the Capital City of Williamsburg by an Act of the General Assembly at James City, 27th April 1699." On 8 September 1699 the committee gave its report, and we all know that the capital was moved from Jamestown to Williamsburg.

The sons and grandsons of the above-mentioned Hockadays of the 1600s were named William, John, Samuel, Philip, James, and possibly Warwick. I say "and possibly Warwick" because my ancestor who died in 1758 was Warwick Hockaday, but I have not been able to prove he was related to the Hockadays of New Kent County. The first record for our Warwick Hockaday is in 1738 in Charles City County, Virginia, whose common border with New Kent County is the Chickahominy River.

The Hockadays had disposed of almost all of the 8,820 acres in New Kent County before 1704 when a William Hockaday of another generation was on the New Kent County rent roll for 300 acres.[4] In 1748 and 1749 still another William Hockaday was a Burgess from New Kent County.[5] Later two well documented Revolutionary soldiers from New Kent County were Lt. Philip Hockaday (killed at Brandywine, unmarried) and a Col. John Hockaday.

Information about these Hockaday soldiers is recorded in data relating to the Revolutionary War awards made to the heirs of Col. John Hockaday of New Kent County on 14 May 1838. The family of *our* Revolutionary War ancestor, William Hockaday (1763–1829), had already left Virginia and was in Halifax County, North Carolina, when the War began.

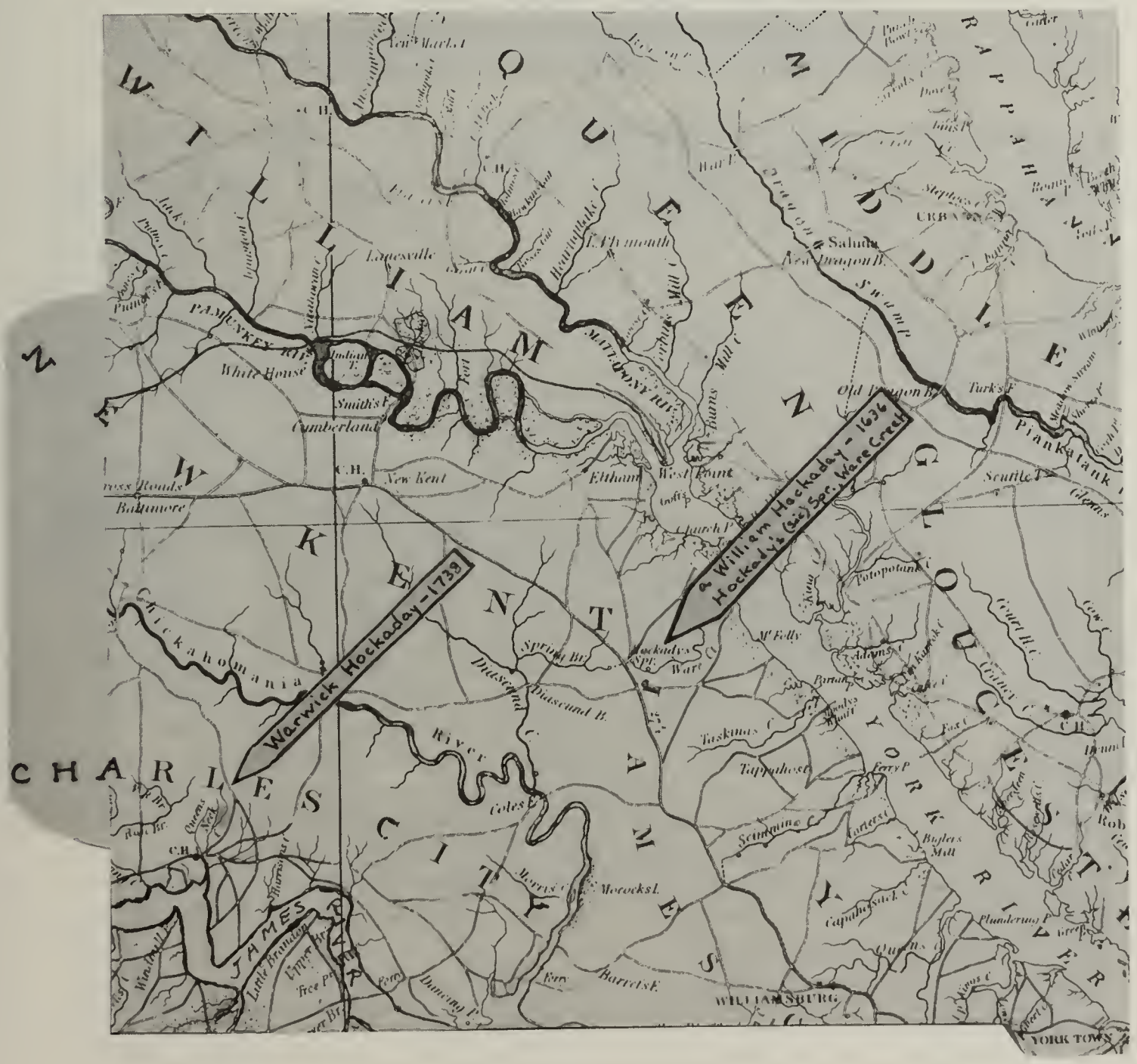
Reference is made to "The Genesis of the Hockaday Family in America," written by Hugh F. Hockaday, 1912. This family history, treasured by the Hockadays who for so many generations have lived in Halifax County, North Carolina, does not mention the New Kent County Hockadays at all, nor the fact that our

---

1. Charles Waring Bardsley, *English Surnames*, 1968, p. 64; Henry Harrison, *Surnames of the United Kingdom*, 1911, vol. 1, p. 207.
2. William G. and Mary Newton Stanard, *The Colonial Virginia Register*, 1902, p. 70.
3. York County, Virginia, Deed Book 1, p. 35.
4. Louis de Cognets, Jr., *English Duplicates of Lost Virginia Records*, 1958, p. 166.
5. Op.cit., footnote 2, pp. 123, 125.

Halifax County Hockadays had moved there (i.e. Halifax County) from Charles City County, Virginia. Hugh F. Hockaday's history begins with Warwick Hockaday (next chapter), who is said to have emigrated from Wales. I believe, however, that Hockaday is an English name and, although I have not been able to prove it, I feel there is a connection between the New Kent County Hockadays (who were from England) and the Charles City County Hockadays. The counties adjoin, the surname is unusual, and the same given names were used.

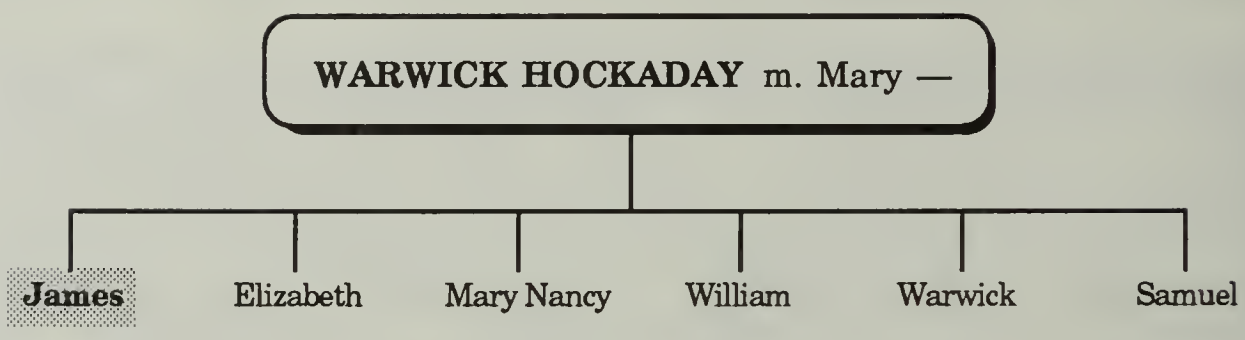
We are getting ahead of our story, and now we should go back to *our* William's grandfather, the first ancestor we can prove in our Hockaday line.



THE HOCKADAYS OF VIRGINIA

The author believes Warwick Hockaday, who was in Charles City County, Virginia, in 1738, was related to the Hockadays of New Kent County.

WARWICK HOCKADAY
(ca. 1699?–1758)



MY RESEARCH leads to the conclusion that a forebear of Warwick Hockaday came to the colony of Virginia from England.[1] Warwick, our earliest identified Hockaday ancestor, lived in Charles City County, Virginia, the county south and across the Chickahominy River from New Kent County. Charles City County was one of eight original shires along the James River in the colony of Virginia. Although at first much larger, since 1720 its boundaries have remained unaltered. Its southern boundary is the James River, and the other three borders are the counties of Henrico (west), New Kent (north), and James City (east). As the Chickahominy River bends, it separates Charles City County from the latter two counties.

The Charles City County Court Order Book for 1737–1751,[2] p. 38, records the transaction by which Samuel Harwood, Jr., "Gentleman of WyanOak,"[3] sold land to Warwick Hockaday. It was recorded for April Court 1738, and no description, acreage, or price was given.[4] Scant as this 1738 information is, I am grateful to have found it inasmuch as Charles City County has lost so many records that it is considered one of the "burned counties." [See Note at end of this chapter]

A second record for Warwick Hockaday from the same court order book (p. 595) shows that in March Court 1750 Warwick Hockaday, Robert Brooks, James Bell, and Edward Minge[5] appraised the estate of Richard Cocke, deceased.

Exactly where Warwick Hockaday's land was located in Charles City County is unknown, except that it was on Old Tree Run (otherwise called Queen's Creek

---

1. The source of "The Genesis of the Hockaday Family in America," a family history written by Hugh F. Hockaday of Halifax County, North Carolina, 19 January 1912, is information given by his grandfather, Thomas Hockaday, who died 26 February of that year. Jimmie E. Hockaday, Hugh's son, generously sent me a copy. Our common ancestor from Warwick is his oldest son, James. Jimmie E. Hockaday's line has resided in Halifax County, North Carolina, 220 years. This line feels Warwick Hockaday came from Wales.
2. A letter attached at the end of the Charles City County Court Order Book 1737–1751 says that the book was sent back to Virginia in 1875, having been "picked up" by Union troops in the Civil War.
3. *Tyler's Quarterly Historical and Genealogical Magazine*, vol. XVI, p. 87, October 1934. In 1739 Harwood was appointed Justice of Charles City County.
4. For reasons noted later in this chapter, we assume Warwick purchased 200 acres of land.
5. Hockadays and Minges had been associated before this in the adjoining county of New Kent. On 13 November 1713 Valentine Minge returned a survey for 363 acres for Thomas Barbar in Blisland Parish, New Kent County, and one of Barbar's adjoining neighbors was — Hockaday (no first name given). Also, op. cit. footnote 3, *Tyler*, p. 88.

Run)[6] and adjoined land of William Wilcox, Isaac Hill, Edward Cockes, gent., and John Brooks. [See Queen's Neck on p. 219 map] Witnesses to the 1769 deed that describes his land were Philip Edmondson, Mordeciah Debnam, and John Dudley. I checked abstracts for these seven men, plus Edward Minge, John Minge, James Bell, Jr., and John Riddlehurst, as they witnessed deeds for one another and had adjoining lands. I hoped to get a better clue as to where in Charles City County the land of Warwick Hockaday was situated. Here are streams that flow into one another or into the James River that the abstracts mention: Old Tree Run (Queen's Creek Run), Tar Kiln Branch, Moises (Moyses/Mosses/Moses) Run, Fishing Run, Coopers Run, Bridge Branch, Drinking Branch, Match Coats Run, Horse Bridge Branch. These are in the lower central part of Charles City County, and I have pinpointed on this 1787 Jefferson map "Weynoke" (Wyanoake), as Warwick Hock-

CHARLES CITY COUNTY, VIRGINIA

In 1738 Warwick Hockaday bought land from Samuel Harwood, Jr., "Gentleman of WyanOak."

6. Nell Marion Nugent, *Cavaliers and Pioneers*, vol. 2, p. 377; vol. 3, p. 103.

aday bought his land from Samuel Harwood, Jr., "Gentleman of WyanOak" in 1738. Warwick Hockaday's land was in that general area, in that part of Wyanoke Parish that was north of the James River.

Warwick Hockaday wrote his will 10 September 1757, and it was probated 5 June 1758 in Charles City County. The will is not extant but details of it are mentioned in a deed dated 2 January 1769. [See footnote 10, infra] Warwick left his wife Mary all his estate, both real and personal, for her to dispose of as she thought proper among his children, whom he named:

James Hockaday (my line)
Elizabeth Hockaday
Mary Hockaday, wife of Thompson/Thomson Bristow
William Hockaday
Warwick Hockaday
Samuel Hockaday

At the 5 July 1758 Court Session[7] the will of Warwick Hockaday was presented by his widow Mary Hockaday, the executrix, and proved by the oath of John Brooks and William Riddlehurst. John Riddlehurst and William Finch[8] were securities on Mary's bond for 500 pounds. Again, I feel lucky to have found this piece of information, as the next two pages (pp. 25 and 26) are missing from the court order book. At November Court 1760[9] an inventory and appraisement of Warwick Hockaday's estate was returned and ordered to be recorded.

A Charles City County deed of 2 January 1769[10] attests to the above information. Eleven years after Warwick's death his heirs sold John Minge of Charles City County "one certain tract or parcel of land and plantation in the County of Charles City of 200 acres more or less, formerly the property of the deceased Warwick Hockaday, whereon he lived." The price was 100 pounds. This John Minge was of a large and distinguished family. When he died, his will showed that in addition to land in Charles City County he also owned land in Granville and Halifax counties, North Carolina.

The transfer of Warwick's land to John Minge took place in two stages. First, on 29 October 1765 the widow Mary Hockaday and the four older children, James, Elizabeth, Mary (now Mrs. Thomson Bristow), and William, conveyed the 200 acres "for the valuable consideration of 100 pounds"; second, on 2 January 1769, for a token 5 shillings, younger sons Warwick and Samuel quitclaimed the land. All had inherited the land and conveyed it to John Minge.

If Warwick Hockaday were related to the early Hockadays of that part of York County which became New Kent County—and I definitely believe he was—then it is established that he had left New Kent County and moved across the Chickahominy River to Charles City County by 1738, and lived there the last twenty years of his life. A decade later Warwick's sons left Virginia and moved to Halifax County, North Carolina. The place and date of death of Warwick Hockaday's widow, Mary, is not known.

---

7. Charles City County, Virginia, Court Orders 1758–1762, p. 24.
8. There is a real possibility that this William Finch was the oldest son of Henry Finch of St. Peter's Parish, New Kent County, Virginia, whose estate (Henry's) was probated in Charles City County court in 1754. [See p. 165]
9. Op.cit., footnote 7, p. 232.
10. Charles City County Deeds and Wills, 1766–1774, pp. 174, 175. The fact that Warwick's will is not extant was double-checked for me by William Lindsay Hopkins of Richmond, Virginia, author of *Some Wills From the Burned Counties of Virginia* , 1987. Reputedly, Warwick's will gave the surname of his wife; however, the 1769 deed that gives details of the will merely says "...his wife Mary."

Children of Warwick Hockaday and Mary — :

1. JAMES HOCKADAY MY DIRECT LINE
   Born: ca. 1735?, Virginia (Charles City County or maybe New Kent County)
   Married: Judith —, probably Charles City County, Virginia
   Died: between 1813 and 1819, Granville County, North Carolina
   Children: Warwick, William (my line), Elizabeth
   [See "James Hockaday" chapter]

2. Elizabeth Hockaday
3. *Mary* Nancy Hockaday: b. ca. 1740
   m. ca. 1767/68, Thomson Bristow (d. 1818, Greenville, South Carolina), the only child of Jedediah Bristow and Catherine Thomson of Middlesex County, Virginia.[11] Thomson Bristow's mother died when he was born (1741), and his father took his small son from Middlesex County to New Kent County where his sister, Mary Bristow Ammon, lived, and undoubtedly helped him with the child. Later Thomson moved to Charles City County, where he met and married Mary Hockaday.
   We know Thomson and Mary were living in Buckingham County in 1782 as he, his father, and a half-brother appeared on a 1782 tax list there. By 1786 Mary and Thomson had left Virginia and moved to Greenville District, South Carolina.
   After Mary's death, Thomson is thought to have married Charity —.
   After Mary and Thomson's children migrated to Mississippi (and Louisiana), the surname changed to Brister.
   Children (possibly not all in correct order):
   (1) Warwick: b. ca. 1769/70 in Virginia; moved to Yalobusha County, Mississippi, in 1816; d. in DeKalb County, Alabama
   (2) Thomson, Jr.: b. in Virginia; d. 1853 in Deasonville, Mississippi
   (3) Benjamin
   (4) Martha: b. ca. 1778; m. William Chandler and settled in Pike County, Mississippi
   (5) Hockaday: b. 1781; m. 1805, Anna Hodges in Greenville District, South Carolina; d. 1858
   (6) William: m. Susanna — and settled in Lawrence County, Mississippi.
   Children:
   One of their sons, Jedediah, married Susanna Brister (*sic*), daughter of (10) below, in 1819, and they moved to Rapides Parish, Louisiana.[12]
   (7) George: m. Ann Sullivan in Amite County, Mississippi. George was a soldier in the War of 1812. d. 1828 in Texas
   (8) John: moved to Yalobusha County, Mississippi, in 1816
   (9) Catherine: m. A. M. Hogg and settled in Pike County, Mississippi
   (10) Samuel: m. Rosanna — and settled in Lawrence County, Mississippi
   Children:
   One of their children, Susanna, m. Jedediah Brister [see (6) supra]

---

11. The information on Thomson Bristow and some of the information on his and Mary's children is from Paul Miller Goodloe II, *Goodloe Genealogy*, 1982, part B, pp. 25–30. [Re the Middlesex County Bristows, see also p. 31 (footnote 3) and p. 36 (footnote 2) supra]
12. Maxine Alcorn, who is Librarian in charge of Clayton Library, Center for Genealogical Research, Houston, Texas, is a descendant of Susanna and Jedediah Brister and is currently involved in Brister research.

4. William Hockaday: He moved from Charles City County, Virginia, to Halifax County, North Carolina, and one record shows he sold land on the south side of Cypress Creek to Michael Smally.[13]
   The family history (see footnote 1) states that William, like his younger brother Warwick, served in the American Revolution. Thomas Hockaday, elderly Civil War veteran, related this story in 1912, the month before his death:

> William Hockaday is remembered by a good many of the oldest inhabitants in Halifax County, North Carolina, because of a joke told about an incident during the Revolutionary War. During the War William Hockaday was a boatman on Roanoke River at the Halifax ferry. A Captain Powell [American] was being ferried across Roanoke River from the Northampton County side when in midstream a company of [British] soldiers came up on the north bank of the river and began firing on the boat, which besides boatman William Hockaday and Captain Powell was carrying a quantity of bacon. When the British began firing on the boat, William covered Captain Powell with the bacon. And it is said that every time the British fired that Powell would yell, "More bacon, Hockaday!"[14]

   A 1782 Halifax County tax list for District 16 lists William and his older brother James. The first federal census in 1790 (pp. 102, 103) showed William and Samuel Hockaday (#6 below) in Hillsborough District of Wake County, North Carolina. Later other Hockadays would move to Granville County, that part near Wake County.
5. Warwick Hockaday: There are two records for him in Charles City County, Virginia, before the family moved to Halifax County, North Carolina: In November 1767 Warwick and his brother James witnessed a deed[15] and in January 1769 Warwick and brother Samuel quitclaimed their share of their deceased father's land to John Minge.
   The family history (see footnote 1) states Warwick was in the Revolutionary War and died while a prisoner of the British.
6. Samuel Hockaday: Like his brothers, he moved to Halifax County, North Carolina, from Virginia. The family history (see footnote 1) states that Samuel married a Miss Day and they moved to Alabama, but there are records for Samuel first in Wake County, North Carolina, in 1781, 1783, 1790 (federal census), and 1797. Also, there was a Samuel Hockaday "45 and up" (unidentified) in the 1810 Mecklenburg County, North Carolina, Census (p. 466) with family and six slaves.

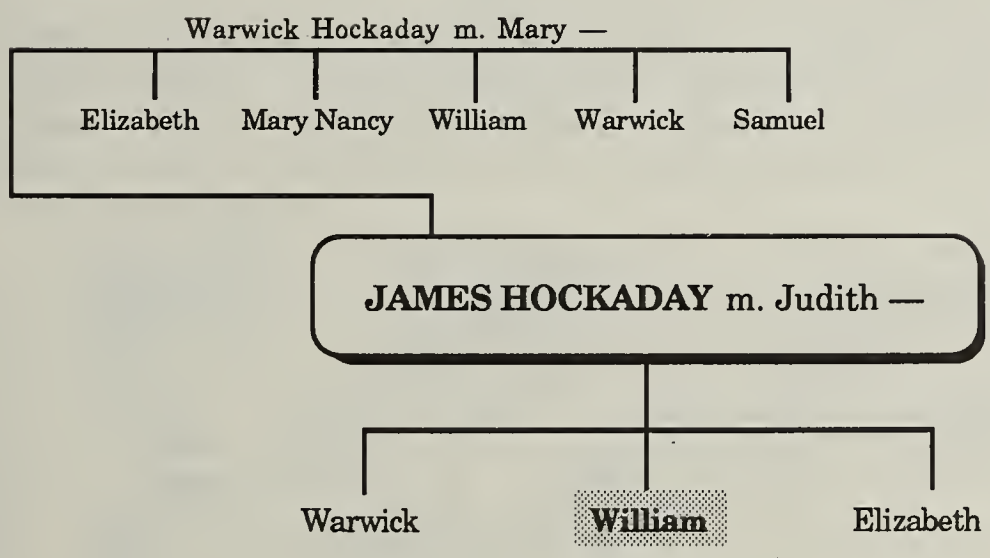
NOTE: The extant early court records of Charles City County were largely destroyed by Union forces in 1862 when Union General George McClellan advanced his army up the Peninsula during his "On to Richmond" drive. Many court records were destroyed except for fragments retrieved by Union soldiers and local citizens. This fact accounts for the gaps in recordation.

[See "James Hockaday"—son]

---

13. Mentioned in Smally's 3 October 1769 will, Halifax County, North Carolina, Will Book 1, p. 254.
14. We wish we knew *which* Captain Powell was a protagonist in this amusing story. In 1789 the Hockaday and Powell families were united [p. 253, infra].
15. Charles City County, Virginia, Will and Deed Book 1766–1774, p. 41.

JAMES HOCKADAY
(ca. 1735?–ca. 1815)



BECAUSE JAMES HOCKADAY was named first in his father's will, he is assumed to be the oldest child of his parents, Mary — and Warwick Hockaday. James' birth date is not known, but has tentatively been placed at ca. 1735. This Hockaday ancestor in our line was the one who moved his family from Virginia to North Carolina, living half his long life in each place. He may have been born in Charles City County, Virginia, but the author thinks there is an even greater possibility he was born in the adjoining county of New Kent.

James Hockaday, who was about forty-five years old when the Revolutionary War started, was a young man when Anglo-French rivalry in North America erupted. He was part of the Charles City County militia[1] drafted on 21 May 1756 to serve in what is called the French and Indian War of 1754–1763. Other men in Maj. Anderson Stith's Company who reported to Henry Gaines along with James Hockaday were William Thompson, John Craddock, William and John Borman, Nance Hitchcock, James Benge (Minge), and William Fear. The Hockaday family history[2] states that James was wounded in the French and Indian War. We can be proud that this early ancestor served in the French and Indian War, and that his son William was in the Revolutionary War a generation later.

Records are scarce for early years in Charles City County, Virginia, and there is no record of James' marriage to Judith — (last name unknown).[3] The first record in Charles City County that I found for James is from a Will and Deed Book for 1766–1774. A notation states, "This book was taken by a Union Soldier from a lot about to be burned by Union troops in Virginia." We can be grateful it was later returned. Sixteen pages are missing, but p. 41 shows that on 2 November 1767

---

1. List given in Lloyd DeWitt Bockstruck, *Virginia's Colonial Soldiers*, 1988, p. 60.
2. Hugh F. Hockaday, "The Genesis of the Hockaday Family in America," 1912.
3. Both of their sons named a daughter Judith. [Re scarcity of records, see Note, p. 224]

James Hockaday and his brother Warwick, along with Jacob and John Brooks, were witnesses to the deed whereby John Brooks of Orange County, North Carolina, sold 100 acres of land for 2500 pounds of tobacco to John Brooks of Northampton, North Carolina. Unusual that there are three different "John Brooks" mentioned. Very common, however, was the fact that tobacco was used as payment in colonial times, as "hard money" was often non-existent.[4]

We know from the 1769 Charles City County deed mentioned in the previous chapter that James Hockaday's father died in 1758, and that his mother and five of James' siblings were living in 1769, the year his father's 200-acre homeplace in Charles City County, Virginia, was sold to John Minge.

James and Judith Hockaday had two sons, Warwick and my ancestor William, and one daughter, Elizabeth, who was called Betsey. In 1769 or the early 1770s James Hockaday and his siblings left Charles City County, Virginia. James and Judith moved their family to Halifax County, North Carolina. Mary Nancy

JAMES HOCKADAY AND FAMILY MOVED FROM CHARLES CITY COUNTY, VIRGINIA, TO HALIFAX COUNTY, NORTH CAROLINA, NEAR THE ROANOKE RIVER CA. 1770

On this 1787 Thomas Jefferson map, short arrows point to "Weynoke" (upper arrow) and to "Chocolate [Chockoyotte] Creek" area (lower arrow).

---

4. Annie Lash Jester, *Adventures of Purse and Person* , 2d ed. 1964, p. xxiv, explains that other early media of exchange besides tobacco were capons, merchantable Indian corn, and beaver skins.

and Thomson Bristow went to Buckingham County, Virginia, and then to South Carolina. Records indicate that William went to Halifax County, North Carolina (and later to Wake County), and Samuel to Wake County, North Carolina (and later to Mecklenburg County, and then to Alabama).

The James Hockaday family may have gone up the James River ten or fifteen miles to where the Appomattox flows in, and then taken the well traveled road through present day Petersburg, going due south across Stony and Sappony creeks and the Nottaway and Meherrin rivers to cross the border into North Carolina. About ten miles more, and after crossing the Roanoke River, they were in Halifax County, North Carolina.

One reason we know James Hockaday and his family were in Halifax County, North Carolina, by the time of the American Revolution is that testimony in pension papers for his son William[5] states that William enlisted from that county. Also, the family history states that the brothers were in Halifax County before the Revolution.[6]

There are three Halifax County records for James Hockaday in the decade in which the Revolution ended. A 1782 county tax list shows the names of James and William Hockaday in District 16. (William is his brother, not his son William.) James was taxed for 250 acres of land and three Negroes.[7] The North Carolina State Census for Halifax County in 1786 shows James Hockaday and his older son, Warwick. James' household consists of one male 21–50, one female, and three blacks. Warwick's household consists of one male 21–50, one female, and two males under twenty-one.[8] The third record was dated 3 December 1788 and shows James and his son William as witnesses to Ephriam Merritt's will.[9]

The mention of Hockadays in connection with Ephriam Merritt is one of several clues gleaned from various records that help locate James Hockaday's land in Halifax County. The Powell family (in 1789 Ann Powell would marry James' son William) had land adjoining the Merritts a number of years before the Hockadays did. [See "Powell Excursus"] The Hockaday and Powell land was on the south side of the Roanoke River, probably about six miles above the county seat town of Halifax[10] and just a little northwest of the town of Weldon. Some Powell land was on Chockoyotte Creek that flows near Weldon and east into the Roanoke River. James Hockaday's son Warwick mentioned in his will that his land adjoined the Halifax Road and Moore's Ferry Road to the Roanoke River.

In the 1790 first federal census James and both his sons were listed in their three separate households in Halifax District of Halifax County, North Carolina.[11] James' enumeration showed one white male and one white female, which would be James and his wife Judith, but also a "white male under 16," whose identity is unknown. In addition, five slaves were enumerated. Older son Warwick's household showed him, his wife, three sons under sixteen, a daughter, and no slaves. My ancestor, younger son William (married to Ann Powell in 1789), was shown with his wife and one slave.

---

5. National Archives No. R4405, filed at Military Service Branch, National Archives and Records Administration, Washington, D.C.
6. Op.cit., footnote 2.
7. Mrs. Leon W. Anderson, *Records Halifax County North Carolina—Tax Lists for 1782 and 1790, Census 1786 and 1800*, no date (but probably 1940s), p. 22.
8. Ibid., p. 62.
9. Halifax County, North Carolina, Will Book 3, p. 160.
10. The town of Halifax was founded in 1760 on the south bank of the Roanoke River. At that site the river is 120 yards from bank to bank, with high tide measurement at 85 yards and low tide 65 yards.
11. *Heads of Families First Census of the United States—1790, North Carolina*, Government Printing Office, 1908, p. 65; also, microcopy, vol. 1, pp. 480, 481.

The August 1790 Halifax County tax list for District 16 showed James Hockaday taxed for 120 acres, one white poll, and two blacks. Warwick was taxed for 165 acres and one white poll; William was taxed for 147 acres and one white poll. There are several familiar names in this district on the tax list: Powell, Smith, Shaw, and Norwood, among others.[12]

By means of a Halifax County deed dated 20 January 1791 "James Hockaday and Judith his wife" sold their son William 150 acres of land on the south side of Morattock (Roanoke) River for 90 pounds.[13] It is odd that James had been taxed the previous year for only 120 acres. The land was described as on the river on the Halifax side, and one of its other boundaries was "by course of Long Branch."

The Halifax County Census for 1800 (p. 310) showed James and Judith Hockaday were both in the "over 45" category, and seven slaves were in the household. Warwick (p. 312) and William (p. 310) were listed with their families. On the county tax list that year (1800) James Hockaday was taxed for 373 acres of land and four blacks. Again in 1802 he was still in District 16, and taxed just as in 1800.[14] He was taxed for 120 acres in 1790, sold William 150 acres in 1791, and in 1800 was taxed for 373 acres. Obviously I do not have all the land records for James.

Although James was not young, possibly about seventy years old, he decided to move from Halifax County, North Carolina, to Granville County, North Carolina, when his son William and William's wife Ann (Powell) moved there with their children. This was sometime between 1803 and 1807. His other son, Warwick, chose to stay in Halifax County, and there are many records for him and his sons, some of whose descendants still live there. In southeastern Granville County James and William Hockaday settled close to the county borders of Granville, Wake, and Franklin. James set up a separate household, but whether Judith was still living when the move to Granville County was made is not known. When the Granville County 1810 Census (p. 863) was enumerated, he was alone in his household except for ten slaves. His son William, my ancestor, was nearby.

Between 1807 and 1813 Granville County records show that James gave four of his Negro slaves to his family. On 16 June 1807[15] there is a gift to his grandson and namesake James, my William's son. On 30 July 1808[16] James gave a Negro girl to his granddaughter Elizabeth, William's daughter. James made two similar gifts in 1813 to his sons Warwick and William[17] on 12 February and 1 March.

These are the last records for James Hockaday, as he does not appear in the 1820 census. He died sometime between 1813 and 1819 at a venerable age.

When he was nearly forty years old, James Hockaday had moved his family from north of the James River in Charles City County to near the Roanoke River in upper east Halifax County, North Carolina. After about thirty years there he accompanied his son William when William moved his family to the southeastern part of Granville County. James Hockaday lived there approximately ten years, dying in Granville County, North Carolina, in the middle of the second decade of the 1800s.

---

12. Op. cit., footnote 7, p. 34.
13. Halifax County, North Carolina, Deed Book 17, pp. 269, 270.
14. David Gammon, *Halifax County NC Tax Lists, Vol. IV 1788, 1790, 1800, 1802*, 1990, pp. 37, 50.
15. Granville County, North Carolina, Deed Book T, p. 146.
16. Granville Deed Book V, p. 1.
17. Granville Deed Book W, pp. 108, 134.

Children of James Hockaday and Judith (—):

1. Warwick Hockaday: b. Charles City County, Virginia, and named for his grandfather
   m. Mary ("Polly") E. Shaw, Halifax County, North Carolina
   d. ca. 1851, Halifax County, North Carolina; will written 26 October 1847 and probated in February Court 1851.[18]
   Many of Warwick's descendants still live in Halifax County, North Carolina.
   Children:
   (1) John: died unmarried
   (2) William: m. 28 December 1827, Bersheba ("Betsy") R. Jackson
      Children:
      1. Warwick: m. Mary Perkins
         d. 8 May 1864—killed in the Civil War battle of Spotsylvania Court House. His widow married his brother Thomas.
         Child:
         [1] Warwick: m. Ellen Vincent
            Children:
            1. Otley: d. young
            2. Nick: d. young
            3. Nat: m. Bessie Reynolds
               Child:
               (1) Leonard, who lives in Weldon, Halifax County, North Carolina (1993). It was he who suggested I contact his cousin Jimmie E. Hockaday in Roanoke Rapids, North Carolina.
            4. Glenn: m. Nan Taylor
               Children: Roland, Elsie, Warwick, Nancy, Mary, William
            5. Wreford: m. Mamie Hicks
               Children: Blanche, Alvin, Otley, Roy
            6. Attlee: m. Mae Harrison
               Children: Millard, Dinah, May, Ordene, Bud, Cliff
            7. Alice: m. Charlie Miller
               Child: Charles
      2. Thomas J. E.: m. (1) Mary Perkins Hockaday, widow;
         m. (2) Pattie Glasgow. Thomas came through the Civil War safely. In his old age Thomas told, and his grandson Hugh wrote down, the family history.
         d. 26 February 1912
         Children of 1st marriage:
         [1] After the Civil War he married his older brother's widow, Mary Perkins Hockaday; so Thomas' nephew, Warwick, became his stepson.
         [2] James ("Jim"): 4 years old when his mother died;
            m. Rebecca Johnston

18. Halifax County, North Carolina, Book 4, p. 322.

Children:
1. Hugh F.: m. Maggie V. Williams
   Children:
   (1) Mary
   (2) Dorothy
   (3) James E. ("Jimmie"). Jimmie lives in Roanoke Rapids in Halifax County, North Carolina (1993), and kindly sent me the information on the children of Warwick and Mary (Shaw) Hockaday.
2. Vernon I.: m. Mina Smoot
   Children: Baby Boy Hockaday, Wade
3. Annie: living in December 1992

Children of Thomas J. E.'s 2d marriage, to Pattie Glasgow:
[1] Hettie: m. Walter Smith
   Children: twins Barbara and Burnice
[2] Kate: died unmarried
[3] Samuel: m. Ethel Waters
   Children: Thomas, Lois
[4] Nell: died unmarried
[5] Rebecca: m. Henry Cullom
[6] Jerry: m. (1) Nellie Comstock; m. (2) Pattie Stansbury
   Children of 1st marriage: Justine, Francis, and Frederick

3. Susan: died unmarried 12 July 1901
(3) Warwick: m. Martha Judkins; moved to west Tennessee
(4) Frances ("Fanny"): m. (1) 18 December 1829, Thomas Green; m. (2) — Walker
(5) Judith ("Judy"): m. — Harding
(6) Temperance ("Tempy"): m. 26 March 1823, John ("Jimmie"?) Shaw. She later killed him because of his brutal treatment.

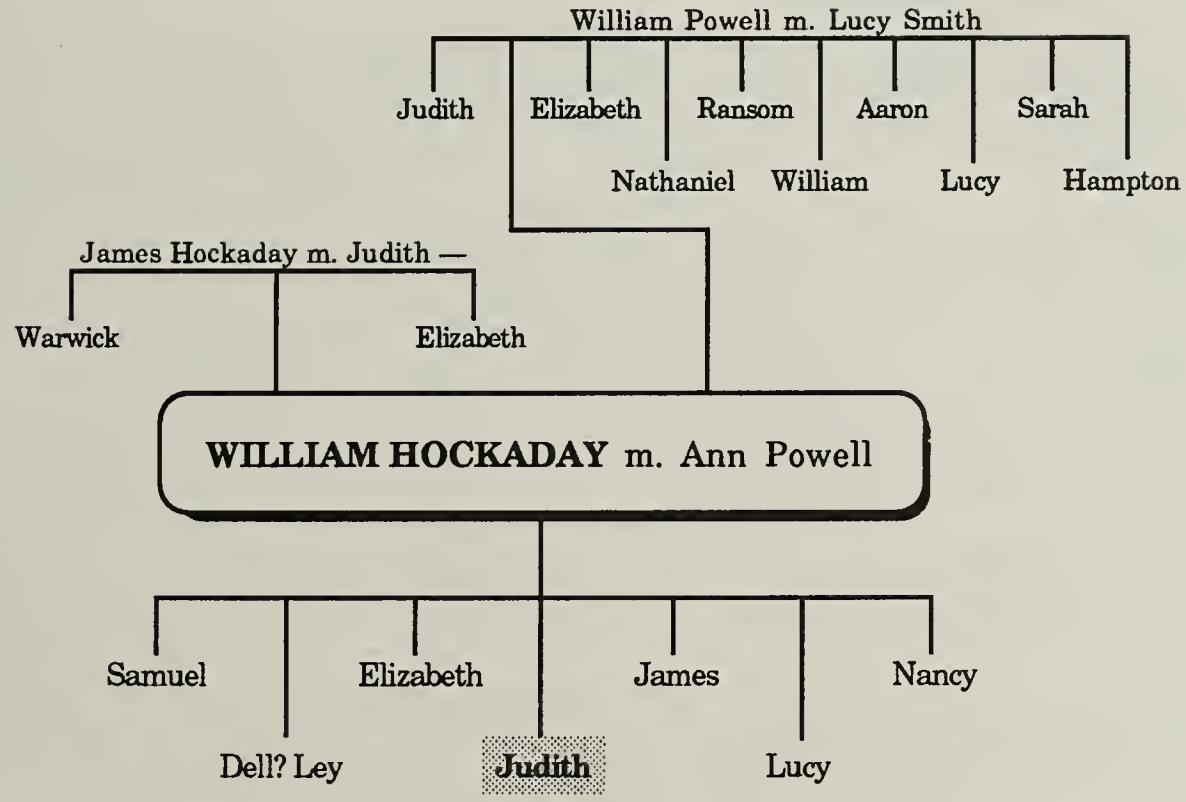
2. WILLIAM HOCKADAY MY DIRECT LINE
Born: 11 February 1763, Charles City County, Virginia
Married: 1789, Ann Powell, daughter of Lucy (Smith) and William Powell, Halifax County, North Carolina
Died: April/May 1829, Granville County, North Carolina
Children: Samuel, Dell Lay (difficult to decipher exact spelling of this name in family Bible), Judith (my line), Elizabeth, James, Lucy, Nancy

[See "William Hockaday" chapter]

3. Elizabeth ("Betsey/Betsy") Hockaday: b. Charles City County, Virginia; m. — Adams. They moved from Halifax County, North Carolina, to Wake County, North Carolina.

[See "William Hockaday"—son]

WILLIAM HOCKADAY
(1763–1829)



WILLIAM HOCKADAY was the son of James Hockaday and Judith (whose surname is unknown). A single extant page of William's old English prayer book reveals that he was born Friday, the 11th day of February 1763, and other information determines that his place of birth was Charles City County, Virginia.

The Charles City County land of William's grandfather, Warwick Hockaday, was sold in two transactions, 1765 and 1769. William never knew his grandfather, who had died in 1758. Sometime after 1765, possibly not until the 1770s, William's father James had moved his family from Charles City County, Virginia, to Halifax County, North Carolina. William was just a boy when the move to North Carolina was made.

During the Revolutionary War, William was drafted in Halifax County and entered the army as a private. In 1856, over a quarter of a century after his death, William's four surviving children applied—after the death of their mother, Ann (Powell) Hockaday—for the benefits of the provision made by an Act of Congress passed 7 July 1838 granting half pay and pensions to certain widows. William's youngest son, James, stated in the pension deposition[1] that although he did not know the date his father was drafted, he was in the company of Capt. William Hall of

1. National Archives No. R4405. The single extant page was removed from William's prayer book and filed with the deposition.

Halifax County and he often heard his father relate the particulars of the Guilford (North Carolina) battle in which he was engaged 15 March 1781. William Hockaday would have been eighteen years old at the Battle of Guilford Court House.

In Halifax District 16 where the Hockaday family lived, there were seven households of the Powell family listed on the 1783 county tax list. On the 1788 county tax list William Hockaday's name appeared for the first time.[2] He was taxed for 150 acres of land and one free poll (himself), and his father James was taxed for 100 acres, one free poll, and one black poll. William's brother Warwick was in District 13 just this one time, taxed for 115 acres and one free poll, as his sons were still too young to be counted.

There was another record for William Hockaday in 1788. The 3 December will of Ephriam Merritt[3] shows William and his father James were witnesses for the document. Neighbors in Halifax District 16 at this time included Merritts, Powells, Smiths, Harwells, Norsworthys, Norwoods, Easleys, Gills, and Shaws.

The Hockaday and the Powell families were united when William "W." Hockaday married Ann Powell, daughter of William and Lucy (Smith) Powell in 1789 (month unknown). This is recorded on a "List of Marriage Licenses for Halifax County, North Carolina, for year 1789, Certified by John Justice and W. Alston, Jr."[4] [See the "Powell *Excursus*," p. 244, for information on Ann Powell and her ancestors.] Ann was five years younger than William Hockaday.

According to the declaration that William's son James made many years later in the pension application, he said his father William married his mother Ann (Powell) in Halifax County "about the year of 1790." This is not in conflict with the 1789 date recorded in the marriage license of William "W." Hockaday and Ann Powell nor with the 1790 Halifax County Census (p. 65) in which William Hockaday is shown as head of a household with one female and one slave. No children are enumerated. However, the one extant leaf from the prayer book, mentioned earlier, confuses the issue. William's son's remarks concerning "the only leaf preserved containing the age of his father and mother and eldest brother and sister..." show that "Sammuel Hockaday the son of Wm. Hockaday and Anney his Wife was born on Tuesday the 3rd day of April 1792." What follows is perplexing: "Dell [sp?] Ley was born february the 24th Day 1785." First of all, it appears to be in another hand; second, the 1792 birth notation for Samuel precedes this 1785 one instead of following it; third, William Hockaday and Ann Powell did not marry until 1789. Since no children were enumerated in William's household in 1790, Dell Ley remains a mystery.

The 1790 Halifax County tax list showed William Hockaday in District 16 with 147 acres of land, Warwick with 165 acres, and their father James with 120 acres.[5] On the same list there were now three William Powells, with no distinguishing identification, one of whom was the father of newly married Ann (Powell) Hockaday, and another was her brother. They were taxed thus for acreage, white persons, and black persons.

Wm. Powell	160 acres	1 WP	3 BP
Wm. Powell	1165 acres	1 WP	5 BP
Wm. Powell	388 acres	3 WP	3 BP

---

2. David Gammon, *Halifax County, North Carolina, Tax Lists, Vol. IV, 1788, 1790, 1800, 1802*, (1990), pp. 10, 12.
3. Halifax County, North Carolina, Book 3, p. 160.
4. This record is kept in the Legislative Papers, and filed under miscellaneous records (C.R.047.928.2) in the State Archives at Raleigh.
5. Op. cit., footnote 2, Gammon, p. 24.

Within two years of his marriage to Ann Powell, William Hockaday acquired more land, in addition to the 147 acres he was taxed for in 1790. On 20 January 1791 William paid 90 pounds for 150 acres of land that he bought from his parents, James and Judith Hockaday.[6] The tract was described as being on the south side of the Morattock [Roanoke] River, with the river as one border and another border being Long Branch.

In the first decade of their marriage William and Ann (Powell) Hockaday had four chilren. A court record found for this decade showed William and his brother-in-law Aaron Powell were witnesses for neighbor James Easley's will in May 1799.[7]

The 1800 tax list for Halifax County shows William Hockaday taxed for 150 acres of land, one free poll, one black poll; brother Warwick taxed for 165 acres; and father James taxed for 373 acres, four black polls. The tax list for District 16 was enumerated by G. Harwell.[8]

The 1800 Halifax County Federal Census (pp. 310, 312) shows William and Ann (Powell) in the "26–45" age category with one son and three daughters under ten years of age, as well as two slaves in the household. William's brother Warwick and his wife had one son and three daughters under ten, two sons and a daughter "10 to 16" and two slaves. Their parents, James and Judith Hockaday, were both "over 45," and had seven slaves. That accounts for the three Hockaday households in Halifax County in 1800. That year's second federal census shows there were eleven Powell households in Halifax County.

The last time William, his father, and his brother were shown together in Halifax District 16 was on the 1802 county tax list.[9] All three were taxed for the same number of polls and same acreage as in the tax list of 1800, as mentioned two paragraphs supra.

Although William and his father were still living in Halifax County in 1802—as proved by the fact they were taxed for the land and slaves they owned there in 1802—they would soon move to Granville County, North Carolina.

On 19 February 1800 William had bought land in Granville County from Allen Wilkins of Wake County.[10] Wake adjoins Granville on the south, and Allen Wilkins owned land in both counties. For 600 Spanish milled dollars Wilkins sold William "H." Hockaday 205 1/2 acres of Granville County land "whereon William Estes now lives," on the north side of Smith's Creek with adjoining land owned by McCulloch, Cooper, Henry Kemp, Mansfield Jenkins, and Thomas Jenkins. Judging by a number of records, not only were the Wilkins Estes, and Jenkins families friendly, but the Hockadays would be involved with them too. Although land was bought, the move was not made immediately.

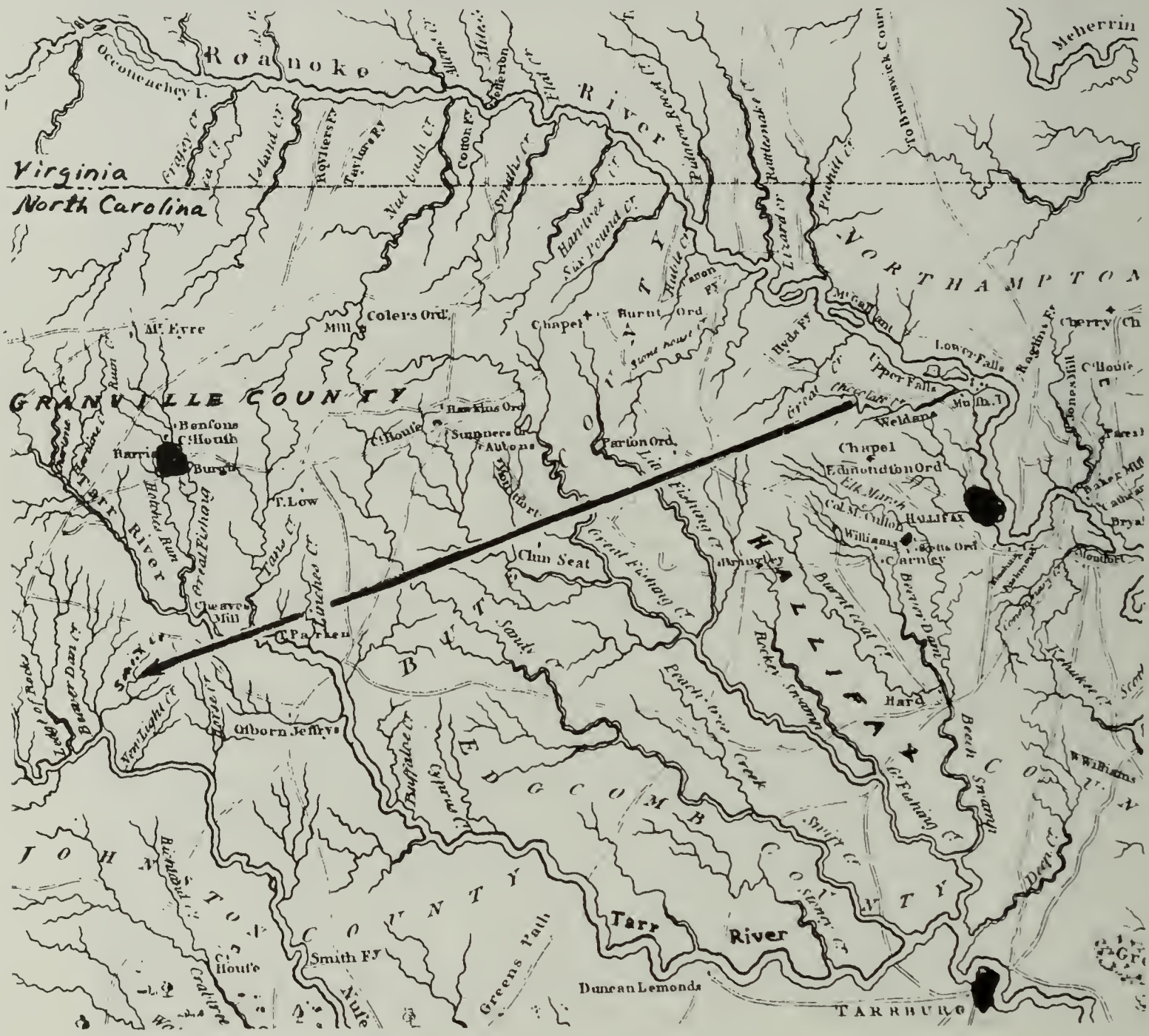
An unusual thing about the 1800 deed by which William Hockaday purchased his first Granville County land is that for only the second known time he used his middle initial, which is either *H* or *W*. When he and Ann Powell married in 1789 the record showed a *W*; when he bought his first Granville land an *H* was used. (One of these records apparently was miscopied about two hundred years ago.) In no other records have I found a middle initial used for William Hockaday.

In Granville County on Smith's Creek the Hockadays would come in contact with Finches, Bobbitts, and Cannadys. William and Ann (Powell) Hockaday, and William's father James, moved to Granville County's Beaver Dam District. This

---

6. Halifax County, North Carolina, Deed Book 17, pp. 269, 270.
7. Halifax County Book 3, p. 228.
8. Op. cit., Gammon, p. 37.
9. Op. cit., Gammon, pp. 49, 50.
10. Granville County, North Carolina, Book R, p. 215.

means that William Hockaday and John Finch, Jr., two of whose children (my ancestors) would marry fifteen years later, settled within just a few years of one another in the same area of Granville County, North Carolina. William Hockaday had moved from Halifax County, and John Finch had merely moved south about fifteen miles from where he had previously lived in Granville County, but both had chosen that triangle in the southeast corner of the county where Granville, Wake, and Franklin counties meet.



CAPTAIN COLLET'S 1770 MAP, PLATE VII

William Hockaday moved from "Chocolate" (*sic*) Creek area in Halifax County, North Carolina, to Smith Creek area in Granville County ca. 1805. This was near the Finches, who had moved there in 1800. See Granville maps, pp. 170, 177, 178.

Ann's father had died in 1790/1 and her mother in 1805. It is not known for sure if Judith Hockaday, William's mother, died in Halifax or in Granville County. Although the 1810 Granville Census (p. 863) shows James enumerated in his own household with no white female, just with ten slaves, it might be logical to

think Judith was still living when they moved between 1803 and 1807 or he would not have set up a separate household. Alternatively, if Judith had died in Halifax, he might have decided to move but still wanted his own place. Whatever the case, all of William and Ann (Powell) Hockaday's children would have grown up knowing this Hockaday grandfather well. Although all of William and Ann's children were born in Halifax County except possibly the youngest daughter, all grew up in Granville County.

On 9 December 1807 William Hockaday bought from William Sheppard a perfectly rectangular-shaped tract of land that adjoined land he already owned. This 113 acres, costing $200, was on the waters of Beaver Dam Creek and began "at a willow oak at Thomas Jenkins' corner." Witnesses were John and James Jenkins.[11]

GRANVILLE COUNTY, NORTH CAROLINA

1. NORTH CAROLINA–VIRGINIA LINE
2. TAR RIVER
3. NEUSE RIVER
4. BEAVER DAM CREEK AND SMITH CREEK

Between 1807 and 1813 William's father gave three of his slaves to his family whom he lived close to in Granville County: one to grandson James, one to granddaughter Elizabeth, and one to William himself.[12] Since William's elderly father was not accounted for in the 1820 census, it is assumed James Hockaday had died between 1813 and 1819.

In the February Court 1809, when the witnesses probated the will of John Estes, it was recorded that William Hockaday and Nathaniel Estes had been appointed executors by the deceased.[13] By his will John Estes left his wife Sally the land he lived on. Four years later William Hockaday bought this land from Sarah, shown by a deed dated 20 March 1813.[14] William paid Sarah and John Estes (Jr.) nearly

11. Granville County Book T, p. 172.
12. Granville County Deed Book T, p. 146; Book V, p. 1; Book W, p. 134.
13. Granville County Will Book 7, p. 11.
14. Granville County Deed Book W, p. 119.

62 pounds for this 90 acres that lay adjacent to his own land. Abutting landowners and neighbors mentioned were Turner Booth, Nutall, and (John) Neville. Witnesses were Frederick W. Nance, W.Y(?) Cannady, Willie Grisoom (*sic*), and Nathaniel Estes.

On 12 October 1812 William and Ann Hockaday of Granville County sold a 10-acre tract back in Halifax County to Mary Powell, the widow of Ann's brother Aaron.[15] The land adjoined Aaron's (i.e. Mary's) land. Six months later, on 21 April 1813, Ann's sister Judith (Powell) and her husband Samuel Bailey of Wake County sold Ann and Judith's brother, Ransom Powell, a 10-acre tract in Halifax County.[16] Choceott (Chocoyotte) Creek was mentioned in the description. In 1807 there had been a land division two years after Lucy Powell died, and these two married daughters of Lucy and William Powell, both of whom had moved away from Halifax County, wanted to sell their inherited land to family members.

The 1820 Granville County Census (pp. 15, 16) showed a group of our ancestors living as neighbors in the Beaver Dam District. John Finch, Jr., was 70, William Hockaday (of this chapter) was 57, Wyatt Cannady was 32, and John Wesley Finch was 27. The latter two were two of William Hockaday's sons-in-law. In the household of William Hockaday were a female 45 and up (Ann Powell Hockaday), a male 16–18 (James), a female 16–18 (Nancy), and sixteen slaves.

William Hockaday wrote his will "this fifth day of April in the year of Our Lord Christ 1829," with witnesses Robert Jeter, A. Lawrence, and John Nevill.[17] William was sixty-six years old. The usual bequest was left to his beloved wife Anny of all his property during her lifetime or widowhood, and all the money due him at his death. The property he had already given his children was to continue to be theirs. My ancestor Judith Finch, wife of John Wesley Finch, was to receive the Negro Eady, whom he had already loaned to her. Daughter Elizabeth, wife of Wyatt Cannady, was to receive the tract of land William had purchased from John W. Finch (Judith Hockaday's husband), "lying on the west or north side of the Beaverdam Creek, except ten acres of woodland...beginning on the creek opposite to my own and Jeter's corner, running in such a manner down the Creek as to make it a square, and...not to include the fresh field below the ten acres."

The next item in William's will was a bequest of $125 in cash to be paid daughter Nancy, wife of Jeptha Terrell, at the final division of his estate. He left to his son James all his land not otherwise disposed of after the death of his wife Ann. After Ann's death all the property left to her should be equally divided among his children, except what he had disposed of in his will. The stipulation was that his executors should sell the property and divide the profit "equally amongst my 5 children" if they could not agree among themselves to divide the property to the satisfaction of all.

The last item in William's will was to appoint "my sons James Hockaday, Wyatt Cannady, and John Adams" his executors. This man to whom had been born five daughters and two sons, Samuel (oldest son mentioned on the prayer book page) and James, with affection was calling two of his sons-in-law "sons." William and Ann's two oldest children apparently had died, Samuel and Dell Ley, the unknown daughter with the unexplained birth date. This left five children, but only four were left bequests in the will: Judith Finch, Elizabeth Cannady, Nancy Terrell, and James Hockaday. Lucy, wife of John Adams, had doubtless already separately received what William thought was a good share of his estate and had

---

15. Halifax County, vol. 24, pp. 210, 211. This was not recorded until February Court 1818.
16. Halifax County, vol. 22, p. 291.
17. Granville County Will Book 11, pp. 314–316.

not been named in the will although her husband was named to be one of the executors.

William had written his will 5 April 1829, declaring he was "in a low state of health but of perfect mind and memory." He must have died within the next couple of months, because in the May 1829 Granville County Court term Elizabeth's and Lucy's husbands contested the will. Wyatt Cannady and John Adams, the two sons-in-law, were unsuccessful in their suit, which was carried over in the August and November court terms, and the will was upheld and probated in February Court 1830.

Wills and inventories provide an abundance of information on worldly goods, daily affairs, and personal relationships. Lists of possessions and property bring the daily existence of our ancestors to life in a very realistic way. Because the will was contested, an administrator, James Wyche, was appointed to take an inventory of William's personal estate. The inventory was recorded in the August Court 1829,[18] and it is apparent that William Hockaday was quite comfortably well off. I was disappointed no "parcels of books" were mentioned, but herewith list the inventory items that were legible, because it probably gives a good idea of what in 1829 a prosperous middle class farmer and his wife owned. Also, among William's papers were eight notes due him on specified dates.

Total cash in hand $607.28
12 slaves [names given]
7 head of horses
38 cattle
35 sheep
127 hogs and pigs
8 geese
8 turkeys
a parcel of chickens
7 beds with furniture
3 tables
1 cupboard
18 chairs
2 clothes presses[19]
1 bureau
2 chests
1 clock
1 looking glass
1 settee
4 spinning wheels
5 pair cards[20]
flax hackle [comb for dressing flax]
1 loom
2 harnesses
2 bridles
2 saddles
1 wagon and gear
2 horse ploughs
12 plough hoes
2 grindstones
3 r— hides in tan
parcel of bacon and beef
1 cutting —
small parcel of cotton, wool, & flax
2 flat irons
2 pair sheep shears
suppose 150 barrels
90 bushels of rye
small parcel barley
5 stacks of blade fodder
1 stack of oats
about 15 bushels of wheat
parcels of cotton
1 wheat fan
parcel of barrels & stands
2 bee hives
1 reed basket
3 waiters [trays]
about 25 gallons of whiskey
2 stills ("one bursted")
1 shot glass
3 decanters
4 tumblers
8 pewter spoons
10 pewter plates
16 plates
12 cups and saucers
4 dishes and 3 —

18. Granville County Will Book 11, pp. 222, 223.
19. These are tall pieces of furniture with a compartment for hanging clothes, or with sliding trays for folded clothes.
20. Perforated boards in a loom for operating the successive combinations of wires that move the warp threads.

hoes, blades
1 pr. steelyards[21]
1 hand saw
2 chisels
3 augers
2 — knives
1 threshing machine
3 grubbing hoes
7 weeding hoes
1 set of blacksmith tools
yoke and chain
1 pr. wheels
about 1000 shingles
6 knives, 6 forks
3 jugs, quart jar
3 tubs
2 bread trays [dough bowls for mixing]
2 sifters
1 spice mortar
1 coffee mill
2 ovens
3 pots
3 kettles
1 skillet
1 frying pan

William was survived by his wife Ann and five children, all of whom were married. Judith, and possibly Nancy too, had already moved to Weakley County in northwest Tennessee. Elizabeth, Lucy, and James remained in Granville County, North Carolina.

The 1850 Granville County Census (p. 156) showed that the household of son James Hockaday contained three generations, that his estate valuation was $4596, and that he lived in Ledge-of-Rock District. In this household were James, farmer, 51 years; his wife Delila, 42; William, farmer, 21; Elizabeth, 20; Samuel, farmer, 18; Timothy, miller, 17; Candis, 15; and James' widowed mother Ann. Ann is listed as 80, but actually was 81, as her date of birth was given on the leaf from the prayer book as 10 December 1768.

William Hockaday had died in 1829, and Ann Powell Hockaday died 16 May 1851 at the age of eighty-two, having been a widow twenty-two years. Elizabeth Cannady, Lucy Adams, and Nancy Terrell were still alive in 1856 when their brother James applied for a pension he felt his mother had been eligible for. William and Ann's daughter Judith (who was my ancestor) had died in a buggy accident with her husband, John W. Finch, in August 1846 while returning to Tennessee after a visit with relatives in Granville County, North Carolina.

Children of William Hockaday and Ann (Powell):

1. Samuel Hockaday: b. 3 April 1792, Halifax County, North Carolina; d. ante-1856. In fact, he was not accounted for in the 1810 Granville County, N.C., Census (p. 863) when he would have been 18 years old, or thereafter.
2. Dell(sp?) Ley Hockaday: b. 24 February 1785 according to the prayer book page; presumed to have died young
3. Elizabeth Hockaday: b. 1795 (according to 1850 Granville County, North Carolina, Census)[22] in Halifax County, North Carolina; named for her mother's and her father's sisters; m. ca. 1809/1810, Wyatt Cannady (b. ca. 1788, d. 30 April 1855), son of Bahethelem (*sic*) and Wagstaff Cannady, in Granville County. The 1850 Granville County Census showed Wyatt with $8,194 real estate. They lived near the town of Wilton on the Tar River, where Wyatt operated Cannady's Mill, store, and still. The 1860 census showed Elizabeth head of household, 60 years old (incorrect), with $10,685 personal property and $17,000 real property, and one child at home, 24 year old Lucy. d. 4 January 1875, Granville County

---

21. A portable balance for weighing.
22. P. 116B, #92.

Children:

(1) Miranda Dobbs Cannady: b. 1810
m. 16 December 1835, James Edward Allen, son of Julia Brent and Edward Chambers Allen. They resided in Guilford County, North Carolina, and migrated west.

(2) Nathaniel Ellis Cannady: b. 1812; m. 17 December 1832 (date of bond), Ann ("Nancy") Pomfret Green, daughter of Elizabeth Butler and John Green. Nathaniel was in the North Carolina state legislature. d. 1894
Children:
1. Mary Elizabeth: m. John B. Winston
2. Isaac Green: b. 1836; m. Margaret Letha Coggin. Isaac, M.D., was Assistant Surgeon, Field and Staff 55th Regiment, Confederate Army. d. 1885
Children: 8 daughters, 1 son
Their 3d daughter, Alice Butler Cannady, married Wyatt Edward Cannady, daughter of William Hockaday Cannady [see (7) this page].
3. William Erastus: b. 1838; m. Lucy Satterwhite.
A Confederate major, he died in the Civil War in 1862.
4. John Pomfret: b. 1841; m. Corinna F. Bradsher;
Confederate sergeant; d. 1914
5. Albert B.
6. Annie Haseltine
7. Emma Frances
8. Maranda California
9. Nathaniel Boardman
10. Elizabeth ("Lizzie")
11. Paul Patterson
12. Albert Brown

(3) Ann Elizabeth Cannady: m. Jackson R. Bradford

(4) Amanda M. Cannady: m. Henry B. Bridges

(5) Samuel Hilman Cannady: m. (1) Mary A.;
m. (2) Margaret A. Williams

(6) Nancy E. Cannady: b. ca. 1820;
m. 1 November 1843 (date of bond), Samuel S. Hicks

(7) William Hockaday Cannady: b. 24 October 1822;
m. 8 April 1849 (date of bond), Elizabeth Jones H. Williams (b. 29 June 1830, d. 6 March 1910);
d. 3 September 1898
Children:
1. Johnny: b. 1851
2. Thomas Lawton: b. 1859; m. Sallie King Jones
They lived in Cannady's Mill, Rocky Mount, North Carolina, and Greensboro, North Carolina. d. 1943
3. Amelia A.: b. September 1855
4. Meta Catherine: b. 1855; d. 1920
5. Wyatt Edward Cannady: b. 19 March 1857;
m. 19 January 1887, Alice Butler Cannady (b. 1 October 1866, d. 23 December 1934), daughter of Margaret Letha Coggin and Isaac Green Cannady;
d. 25 September 1939

Children:
[1] Isaac Green; b. 1887; d. 1889
[2] William Thomas: b. 1889
m. 28 January 1915, Edith Watson Fagan
Children:
1. William Marshall
2. Armstrong Fagan
3. John Watson Cannady: b. 1924; m. 27 August 1946, Annice Blaine Mitchell[23] (b. 30 September 1925); d. 1954
Child:
(1) Annice Fagan Cannady:
b. 14 March 1952; m. 13 July 1974, Joel Thomas Cheatham III;
d. 25 September 1990
Children:
Fagan Cannady, b. 20 April 1978;
Joel Thomas IV, b. 28 January 1982
[3] Minnie Mae Cannady: b. 1891; d. 1965
[4] Marguerite Cannady: b. 1894
[5] Eloise Butler Cannady: b. 1895
[6] Lillie Belle Cannady: b. 1897
[7] Elizabeth Amelia Cannady: b. 1904
6. Samuel Courtney Cannady: b. 1859; d. 1924
7. Charles Williams Cannady: b. 1860; d. 1899
8. Mary Catherine Cannady: b. 1863; d. 1951
9. Nathaniel Macon Cannady: b. 1865; d. 1937
(8) Elizabeth Frances Cannady: m. A. R. Vann
(9) Wyatt Macon Cannady: b. 1827; m. Martha Harris
(10) Mary Catherine Cannady: b. 1832; m. Rufus D. Walters
(11) Susan E. Cannady: m. John T. McGehee
(12) Lucy B. Cannady: b. 1836; m. Calvin G. Strayhorn
(13) John Fulghum Cannady: b. 1838; m. Mary D. Crudup
(14) Hepsibah G. P. Cannady: b. 1841
(15) Erastus Cannady: d. age 3 by drowning

4. JUDITH HOCKADAY MY DIRECT LINE

Born: 22 September 1796, Halifax County, North Carolina; named for her paternal grandmother and her mother's older sister
Married: 8 July 1815 (marriage bond), John Wesley Finch, son of John Finch, Jr., and Elizabeth (Haynes); Granville County, North Carolina
Died: 21 August 1846, near Abingdon, Virginia
Children: William O. Kelly, Fannie M., Lucy Emily, John Hite, James Monroe (my line), Calvin F., Elizabeth C., Alfonso C., Pelina B.
[See "Judith Hockaday" chapter]

---

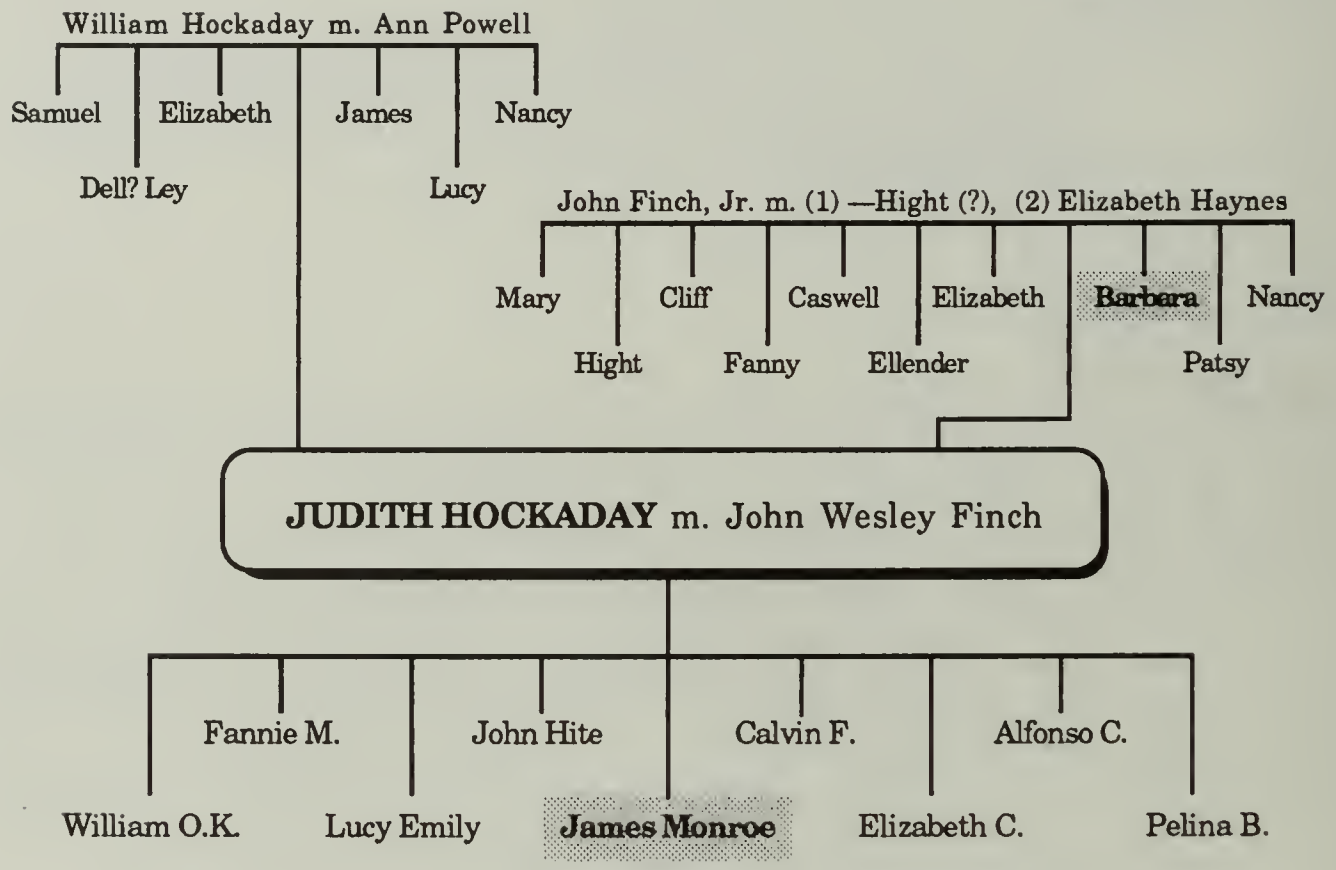
23. The information on some of Elizabeth Hockaday and Wyatt Cannady's children, in particular their seventh child William Hockaday Cannady, was kindly supplied to me by Annice M. Cannady of Henderson, North Carolina.

5. James Hockaday: b. 1800, based on his statement on the application for his mother's pension; named for his paternal grandfather
   m. 6 September 1836, Delila Bailey, Granville County, North Carolina. This date is from *Granville County North Carolina from Earliest Records Extant Through 1868, Computer Indexed Marriage Records*, Nicholas R. Murray, 1981, but it must have been entered in the computer incorrectly. Their first child was born in 1827, so their marriage date should probably be 1826, not 1836.
   d. post-1860
   Children:
   (1) James M.: b. 1827; m. (1) 20 January 1849, Elizabeth W. Morgan; m. (2) Iowa —. In the 1850 census he was listed in Beaver Dam District, Granville County, although his parents were in Ledge-of-Rock District.
   (2) William: m. 13 February 1855, Margaret Garner
   (3) Elizabeth
   (4) Samuel
   (5) Timothy
   (6) Candis
6. Lucy Hockaday: b. Halifax County, North Carolina; named for her maternal grandmother; m. 3 January 1817, John Adams, Granville County, North Carolina; d. post-1856
7. Nancy Hockaday: b. ca. 1804, Halifax County or Granville County, North Carolina; m. 24 December 1821, Jeptha Terrell, Granville County.
   The 1850 Weakley County Census[24] shows the Terrells in District 7 with these children still at home: Mary 17, Nancy 15, John 12; also "J. Adams 23, farmer, born in North Carolina," who may have been the son of Nancy's sister, Lucy Hockaday Adams.
   A 10 November 1855 deed[25] shows the Glass heirs of Weakley, Obion, and Lauderdale counties selling Jeptha Terrell 189 acres of land in District 13, Range 1, Section 1 in Weakley County for $500.
   d. post-1856, Weakley County, Tennessee

[See "Judith Hockaday"—daughter]

24. P. 475, #150.
25. Weakley County, Tennessee, Book O, pp. 25, 26.

JUDITH HOCKADAY
(1796–1846)



JUDITH HOCKADAY was the daughter of William Hockaday and Ann Powell and carried the name of her father's mother and her mother's older sister. She was born 22 September 1796 in Halifax County, North Carolina, were she lived on the south side of the Morattock (Roanoke) River, near Chockoyotte Creek. When she was about four years old the family moved to the Beaver Dam District in Granville County, North Carolina. Judith had an older brother, Samuel, a younger brother James, and several sisters.

The Hockadays lived in the southeastern corner of Granville County, as did the John Finch (Jr.) family. John Wesley Finch came back home after his service in the War of 1812, and five months later he and Judith married. The marriage bond is dated 8 July 1815. Judith was eighteen and John W. was twenty-two.

Judith and John Wesley Finch made their home in the Beaver Dam District where both had grown up. Land deeds of 1821 and 1822 indicate that Terrells and Cannadys were their neighbors; Judith's sister Elizabeth had married Wyatt Cannady, and sister Nancy married Jeptha Terrell.

In February 1826 Judith and John W. Finch moved to northwest Tennessee, to Weakley County. They had five children when they moved, ranging in age from nine down to two years: William O. Kelly, Fannie, Lucy Emily, John Hite, and my ancestor James Monroe. Between 1826 and 1833 they had four more children:

Calvin, Elizabeth, Alfonso, and Pelina. John W.'s father had died in 1822 before the family left Granville County, and Judith's father died in 1829, three years after they left, so only their oldest children would have remembered their grandfathers and Judith's mother Ann, who was a widow many years.

Judith and John W. Finch were early settlers in Weakley County, Tennessee, building their home on virgin farmland. The first settlement in the county had been in 1819 and the county was not officially created until October 1823, so Weakley County was less than three years old when Judith and John W. moved their family there. From the first they were not among strangers, because many families from Granville County moved in the 1820s and early 1830s. John W.'s niece Matilda (Bobbitt) and her husband William Montgomery moved to Weakley County about four years after he and Judith did, and Finches, Montgomerys, Bobbitts, and Swaims lived near one another and intermarried.

Judith's married life and death are considered more fully in the chapter on her husband. Judith Hockaday and John Wesley Finch made a trip to Granville County, North Carolina, in the summer of 1846. In making the long trip back to Weakley County, Tennessee, they spent the night about six miles west of Abingdon, Virginia. They had tethered the horse to the wheel of their carryall (cariole), and during the night the horse "took fright, turned the wagon bottom upwards," and Judith and John suffocated before they could be rescued. This freakish and unfortunate accident happened 21 August 1846. The newspaper account said a young nephew was traveling with them, but his name has not come down with the story. Possibly he was sleeping outside on the ground. At the time of their deaths John W. Finch was fifty-three years old and Judith Hockaday Finch lacked a month being fifty.

This concludes the information on the Hockadays that we have followed from Warwick, James, and William down to our Judith, who lived from 1796 to 1846.[1]

[See "John Wesley Finch"—husband]
[See "James Monroe Finch"—son]

1. The Hockaday name was and is an uncommon one. A John W. Hockaday was mentioned in 1847 in Gibson County, Tennessee, Will Book D, p. 34. (Gibson County adjoins Weakley County on the south.) The author does not know the connection between him and Judith Hockaday Finch.

POWELL *EXCURSUS*

SEPARATE CHAPTERS will not be included for the ancestors of Ann Powell, who married William Hockaday in 1789. This *excursus* includes only a brief precis concerning Ann's ancestors and a listing of their children.

The author was thrilled in late August 1992 to find a definitive book on Powells, and from it was able to trace her line back to the first immigrant. The commonality of the name Powell presented a formidable task. Before 1655 there were ten known and listed Thomas Powells in Virginia. In the early 1600s there were four Captain William Powells sailing ships in the Atlantic at one time.

The book the author found is *The Powell Families of Virginia and the South, Being an Encyclopedia of the Eight Major Powell Families of Virginia and the South in General*, edited, compiled, and published in 1969 by the Reverend Silas Emmett Lucas, Jr. Section III of the book deals exclusively with the Powells with whom we are concerned, the Powells of Isle of Wight County, Virginia. The reader will see why I was so grateful for the Powell book when Ann's lineage is read:

I. Thomas Powell the Immigrant: b. ca. 1614
II. William Powell: b. ca. 1642/3
III. William Powell: b. ca. 1675–8
IV. William Powell: b. ca. 1708
V. William Powell: b. ca. 1733
VI. Ann Powell: b. 1768; m. William Hockaday
VII. Judith Hockaday: b. 1796 [See "Judith Hockaday" chapter]

FIRST GENERATION

Thomas Powell was perhaps the Thomas Powell, age twenty-one, who came to the Colony of Virginia from England on the ship *Matthew* on 2 May 1635[1] and may have been a son of the Thomas Powell of Howlton, Sussex, England, who was brother and heir of Capt. Nathaniel Powell. The name Nathaniel is used repeatedly by Thomas' descendants. Then again, our Thomas may have been the son of Capt. William Powell, who came to Virginia in 1608. A discussion of these two possibilities, neither proven, was in the following article in *The Evening Telegram* of Rocky Mount, North Carolina, on 5 February 1957.[2]

NATHANIEL POWELL

Captain Nathaniel Powell was a seafaring man who sailed in and out of Virginia frequently in its first years. He bought a plantation in Virginia that he called "Powel Brooke" and there he was murdered with twelve others by the Indians on *March 22, 1621–2.* Prior to March 30, 1634–5, Thomas Powell, Yeoman, of Howlton, Suffolk, who was brother and heir of Captain Nathaniel Powell, sold the "Powel Brooke" property to John Taylor of London.

---

1. J. C. Hotten, *Emigrants*, p. 82.
2. Reprinted with permission of George Travis Powell, Jr., Macon, Georgia, author of *The Virginians Thomas Powell and John Hardman 1616–1985*, 1985, p. 15.

Captain Powell died without children, and *the family of his brother Thomas Powell of Suffolk has not yet been traced for possible American descendants.*

WILLIAM POWELL

Master William Powell, a craftsman, arrived in Virginia in the Second Supply in 1608. In 1609, he and Master Robert Behethland went among the Pamunkey Indians. He apparently returned to England, for he arrived on the "Sea Venture" with Governor Gates on May 21, 1610. In 1617, he was made Captain of the Governor's Guards and Lieutenant Governor and Commander of Jamestown, where he repelled the Indian attack on *March 22, 1622.* On July 30, 1618, Captain William Powell was a Burgess from James City in the first General Assembly of Virginia.

On February 2, 1620–1, Captain William Powell and John Smith presented a petition to the Virginia Company of London through "their brother, Provost Marshall of Middlesex," for a clear title to 400 acres south of the James River between Sunken Marsh and Chippokes Creek, and also land on Hog Island. It is said that Powell was a small shareholder in the Company. In 1622 a Militia Company under Captain Powell cut off the heads of three Indians and burned a village. Early in 1623 he and Captain Nathaniel Butler led eighty men against the Chickahominy Indians and despoiled everything they had, fled and left. About January 24, 1623–4, Captain Powell was killed while leading another expedition against the Chickahominies.

In June, 1625, there was a controversy between Captain Samuel Matthews and representatives of the children of Captain Powell, since Matthews "was trying to get possession of Powell's land south of the James River in the present Surry County, but the matter was settled by Matthews's relinquishing his claims to it. The Patents published at James City in 1626 indicate that Captain William Powell had planted 200 acres in one tract and 550 acres in another. Prior to March 4, 1626–7, the widow of Captain Powell had married Edward Blaney, a Member of the Virginia Council, but Blaney himself was dead by the following year and she herself disappears from the records.

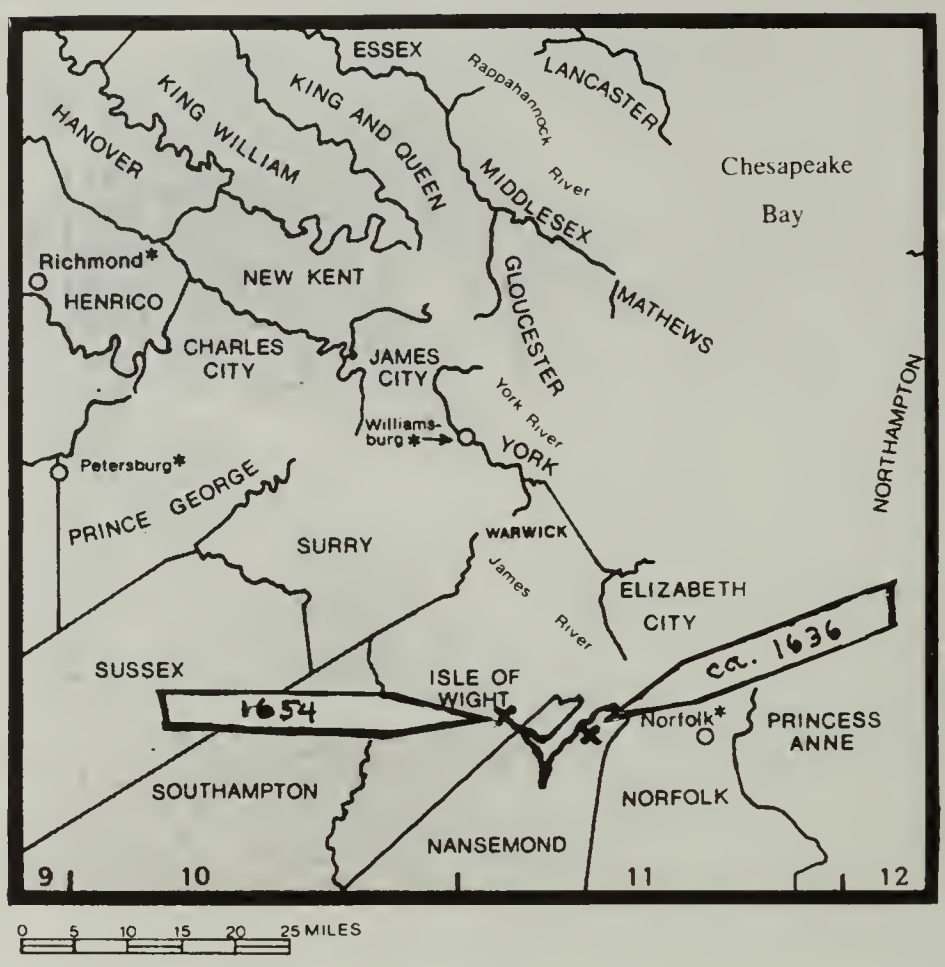
> The eldest son and heir of Captain William Powell was George Powell. It is presumed, in the absence of a search of the English records, that there were other children. Captain Powell died intestate, and the law of primogeniture excluded any younger sons from inheriting part of the landed estate.
>
> Children of Captain William Powell:
>
> 1. George Powell
> 2. Thomas Powell lived south of the James River near the dividing line between Nansemond and Isle of Wight Counties, and *the existing records indicate a strong possibility that he was a son of Captain William Powell. He was the founder of a considerable family of Powells in the Southeast.* (emphasis added)

Our Thomas Powell received 100 acres on the south side of the Nansemond River in the Upper County of New Norfolk on 10 June 1637 for his own personal adventure and a servant Robert Lloyd. This was described as a mile from the 200-acre plantation Thomas had *already* received for the transportation of four persons. The description mentioned "Powell's Neck to Powell's Point" southside of "Dumplin (*sic*) Island Creek," so we know Thomas owned land in the area by June 1637.[3] That year, 1637, the name of Upper Norfolk County was changed to Nansemond. [See the two maps on pages 247, 248] Neighbors were Abraham Peltree, William Parker, Samuel Stephens, Gent., John Geary, Francis Hutchins, and Thomas Dew. In 1638 Thomas Powell sold his 200-acre tract to Thomas Dew. On 13 February 1654 William Hunt conveyed 400 acres to Thomas Powell on Beaverdam Branch, a branch of the Western Branch of the Nansemond River in adjoining Isle of Wight County, plus 80 acres waste land. It was on "Edward Perkins' Path, formerly called Indian Path." The patent was not recorded until 20 April 1682.[4]

---

3. Nell M. Nugent, *Cavaliers and Pioneers*, vol. 1, p. 76, 95.
4. Isle of Wight County, Virginia, Patent Book 7, p. 136.

The land was "near Powell, Richard Hutchins, William Smalley, and Mrs. Denson."



APPROXIMATE LOCATION OF THOMAS POWELL'S LAND IN VIRGINIA

Thomas Powell wrote his will 12 July 1683 and it was probated 9 February 1687/8.[5] Longtime neighbor Francis Hutchins was one of the witnesses to Thomas' will. Thomas Powell the Immigrant had lived fifty years in the same general location (about eleven miles south of the James River near the dividing line between Nansemond and Isle of Wight counties), seventeen years on the Southern Branch of the Nansemond River in Nansemond County and thirty-three years on the Western Branch of the same river in Isle of Wight County.

I. THOMAS POWELL

Born: ca. 1614 in England
Married: name unknown; died ante-1687
Died: 1687/8, Isle of Wight County, Virginia
Children:

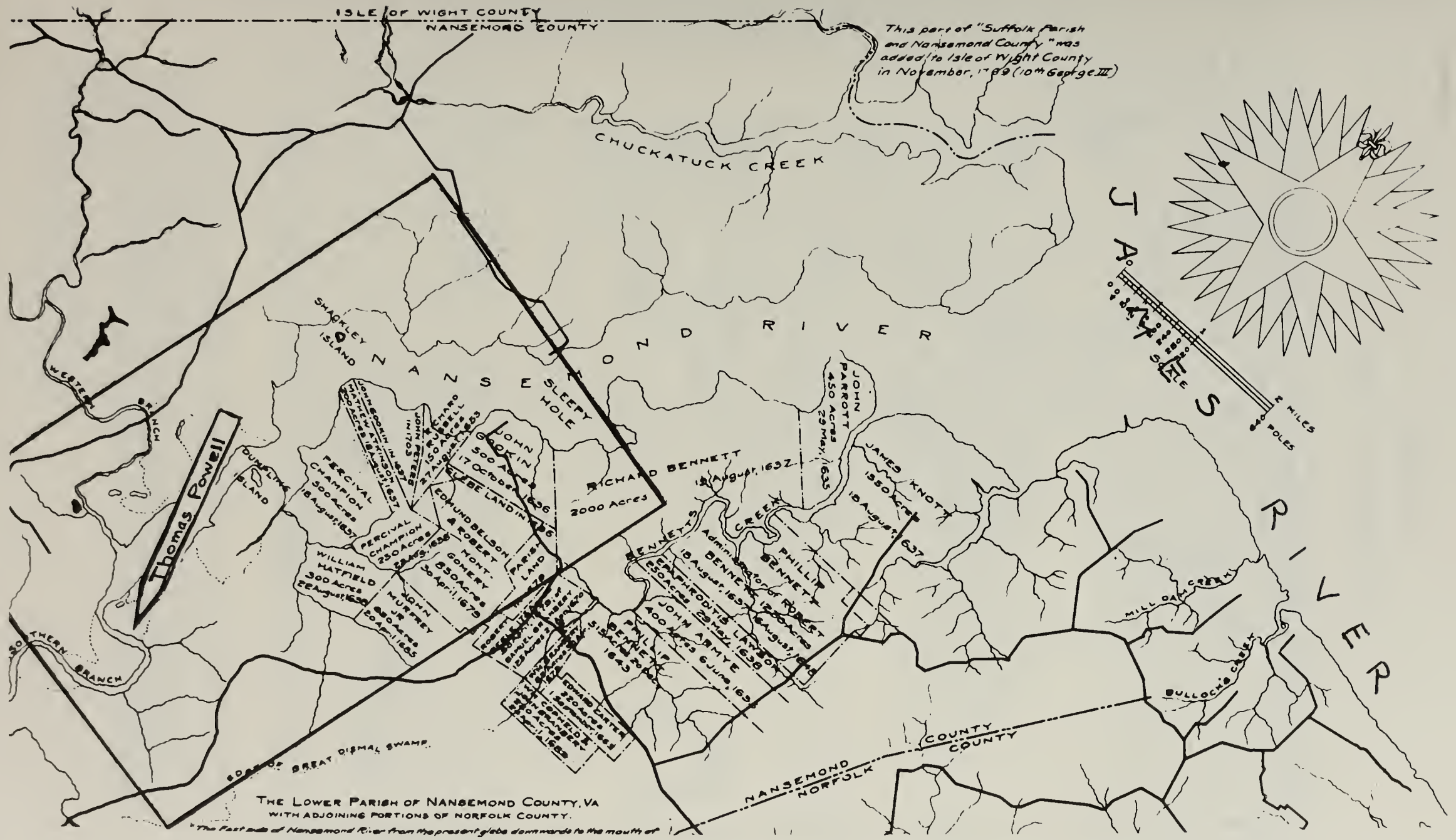
(1) Nathaniel Powell

Born: ca. 1640–45
Married: Lucretia — [she m. (2) John Corbett]
Died: 1678[6]
Children: Thomas, Nathaniel, William, John, Lucretia

(2) William Powell MY DIRECT LINE

[See Second Generation]

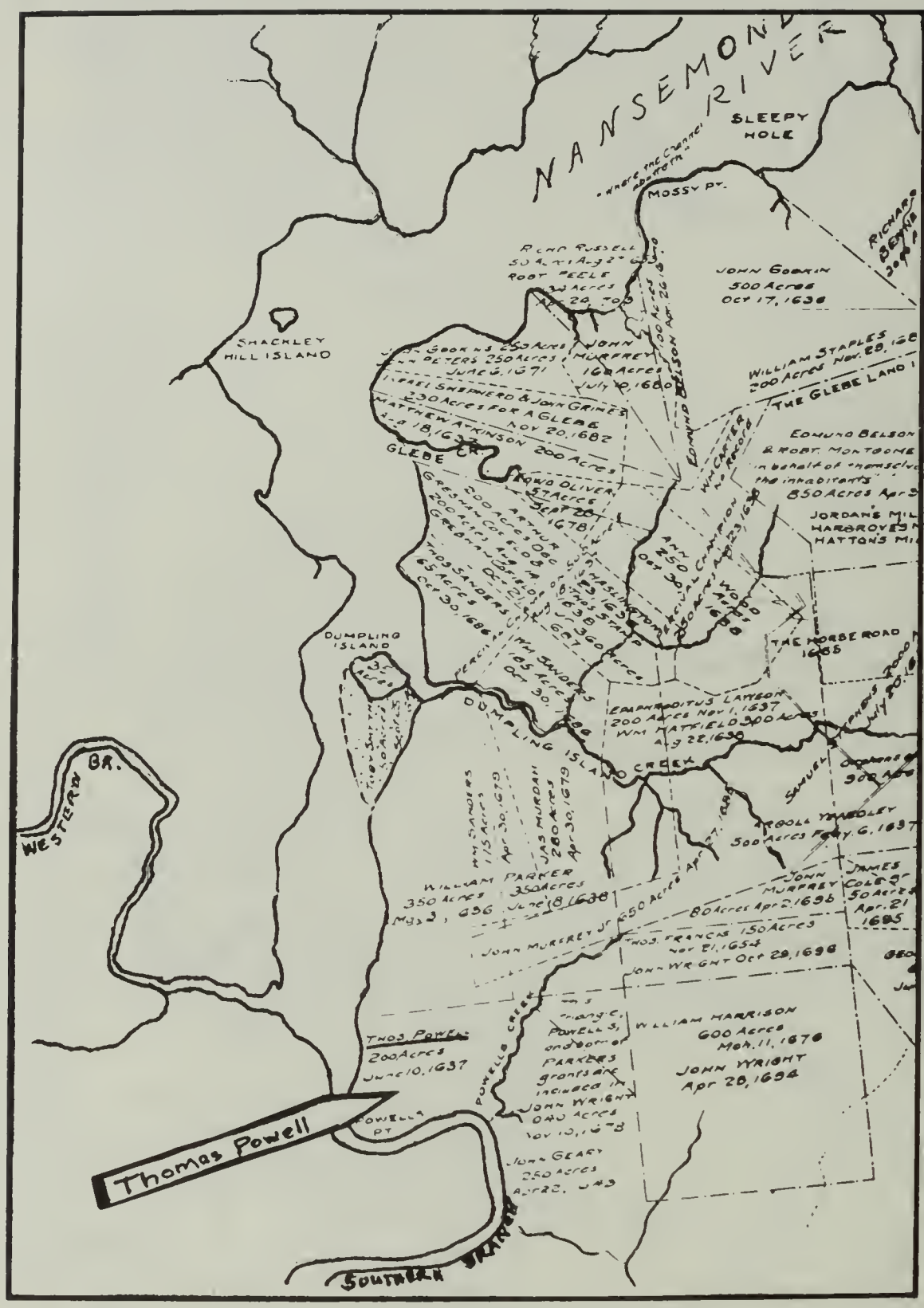
5. Isle of Wight County Deeds and Wills, no. 2, 1661–1719, p. 272.
6. Isle of Wight County, no. 2, p. 172.



THOMAS POWELL'S 1637 LAND IN NANSEMOND COUNTY, VIRGINIA

(Boxed Area Is Enlarged and Shown on Next Page)

In 1654 Thomas bought 480 acres on the Western Branch of Nansemond River in adjoining Isle of Wight County. The Powell family lived in Isle of Wight County 95 years, until 1749.



SECTION OF THE LOWER PARISH OF NANSEMOND COUNTY, VIRGINIA

Thomas Powell's 1637 land patent was south of Dumpling Island Creek, and included Powell's Point and Powell's Creek. (In 1654 Thomas bought 480 acres on the Western Branch of Nansemond River in adjoining Isle of Wight County where the family lived 95 years, until 1749.)

SECOND GENERATION

William Powell received half of his father's land, in addition to what he had already received (on Beaverdam Branch, Isle of Wight County, 20 January 1680), and like his father, William Powell grew tobacco. By his will (father) Thomas had left the other half of his land to the four sons of his older son Nathaniel, deceased, and they and their heirs were not to sell it unless "from one to the other." On 20 November 1679 William was granted 257 acres on the branches of the Eastern Branch of the Nansemond River in Isle of Wight County near Thomas Pitt and Francis Bridle.[7] On 23 April 1681 William was granted 400 acres on the Blackwater Branch near John Watkins[8] for transporting eight persons to the Colony of Virginia.

II. WILLIAM POWELL

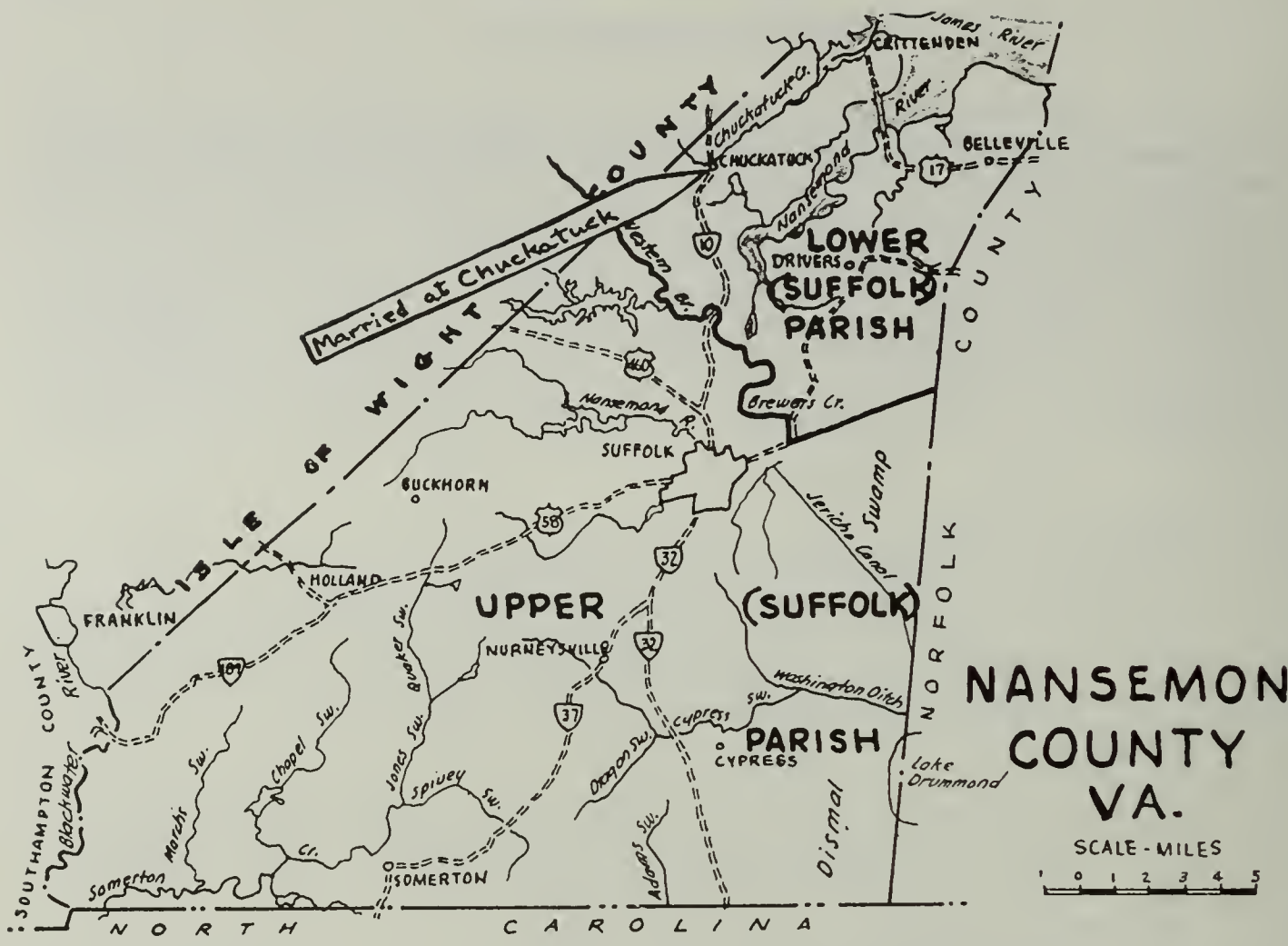
Born: ca. 1642/3, Isle of Wight County, Virginia
Married: ca. 1665, Elizabeth — (who was still alive in 1704)
Died: 11 December 1695 (date of will; no probate date shown), in Isle of Wight County, Virginia. In William's inventory was a "Lott of shoemakers tools, carpenter tools and coopers tools."
Children:
(1) John Powell
(2) Nathaniel Powell: In the late 1700s his great-grandson Ptolemy was in District 16, Halifax County, North Carolina, as was the family of my ancestor Ann Powell (Generation VI).
(3) Thomas Powell
(4) William Powell, Jr. MY DIRECT LINE
[See Third Generation]
(5) Jacob Powell
(6) Rebecca Powell
(7) Elizabeth Powell: m. John Cooper

THIRD GENERATION

William Powell was the last in my Powell line to live all of his life in Isle of Wight County, Virginia. He was a Quaker, and married at the Chuckatuck Meeting House in nearby Nansemond County,[9] as did his daughter Rebecca twenty-three years later.[10] The 1704 Quit Rent Roll showed William Powell had 200 acres of land in Isle of Wight County.[11] On 9 June 1708 William bought 170 acres of Currawaugh Swamp (creek) from Thomas Page, land adjoining Robert Carr and Thomas Mann.[12] He acquired another 125 acres in Isle of Wight on 18 February 1722 on the north side of the Main Blackwater Swamp;[13] on 16 March 1723 he received from William Stricklin 150 acres of a land grant (dated 1680) of Matthew Stricklin.[14]

---

7. Isle of Wight County Patent Book 7, p. 16.
8. Ibid., p. 68.
9. Many years later, in 1769, land west of Chuckatuck Creek was taken from Nansemond County and added to Isle of Wight County.
10. William Wade Hinshaw, *Encyclopedia of American Quaker Genealogy*, vol. VI, Virginia, p. 34.
11. 29 V 342.
12. Isle of Wight County Deed Book 2, p. 156.
13. Virginia Patent Book 11, p. 175.
14. Great Book, Isle of Wight County, p. 745.



WILLIAM POWELL, THE THIRD GENERATION

Although he married at the Chuckatuck Meeting House in Nansemond County, Virginia, William lived all his life in the adjoining county of Isle of Wight.

III. WILLIAM ("WILL") POWELL, JR.

Born: ca. 1675–8, Isle of Wight County, Virginia

Married: 14 February 1700, Mary Page, daughter of Thomas and Alice Page of Isle of Wight County, at Chuckatuck (Quaker) Meeting House, Nansemond County. Mary was alive in 1734.

Died: 1735, Isle of Wight County, Virginia. He wrote his will 3 October 1734 and it was probated 24 March 1735.[15]

Children:

(1) William Powell — MY DIRECT LINE

[See Fourth Generation]

(2) Joseph Powell: moved to Northampton County, North Carolina
(3) Benjamin Powell: had 12 children
(4) daughter: m. Samuel Redlebush (*sic*)
(5) Martha Powell
(6) Rebecca Powell: m. William Wilkinson
(7) Mary Powell: m. — Holland
(8) Rachel Powell
(9) Alice Powell
(10) Lydia Powell

---

15. Isle of Wight County Will Book 4, p. 46.

FOURTH GENERATION

William Powell, like his brothers, left Isle of Wight County, Virginia, and moved across the line into North Carolina. William moved to Edgecombe County, to that part that in 1758 became Halifax County. Therefore, the first North Carolina record for William shows he received a land grant from John Earl Granville, Viscount, for 820 acres in Edgecombe (now Halifax) County, 25 March 1749, adjacent to the widow Merritt, John Greensley, William Smith, a road, and Chockoyotte (*sic*) Creek.[16] [See map on p. 226, lower arrow, and map on p. 234, top end of long arrow] This became William's homeplace. (Two of William's sons married daughters of neighbor William Smith.) On 8 November 1756 William "of Edgecombe" received another land grant from Earl Granville, this tract being 172 acres on Wolf Trap Branch on the south side of the Roanoke River.[17] In February 1770 William Powell "of Halifax" bought 200 acres in Edgecombe County from Francis Spivey on the south bank of Fishing Creek.[18] On 14 March 1771 William and Elizabeth "of Halifax" sold Thomas Green 580 acres on the Wolf Trap Branch of Chocoyotte Creek adjoining John Powell and William's own land.[19] For the cause of our American Independence, William Powell rendered material aid.[20]

IV. WILLIAM POWELL

Born: ca. 1708–1711, Isle of Wight County, Virginia

Married: (1) ca. 1732, Elizabeth — (b. ca. 1712, d. ca. 1773)

(2) Nancy — (d. 1809), in Edgecombe County, North Carolina. No issue from this marriage.

Died: 1793, Halifax County, North Carolina. His will was dated 12 June 1792 and probated November 1793 in Edgecombe County, North Carolina.[21]

Children:

(1) William Powell MY DIRECT LINE

[See Fifth Generation]

(2) Zachariah Powell: m. Mary Smith, sister of his brother William's wife Lucy. Zachariah settled in Halifax County too. His 1806 will, naming his children, is recorded in vol. 3, pp. 450, 451.

(3) John Powell: m. Susanna —

(4) Mary Powell: m. — Jones

(5) Elizabeth Powell: m. — Robertson

(6) Sarah Powell: m. — Coleman

(7) Christian Powell (female): m. — Roane

(8) George Powell: m. Sarah —; d. ante-June 1792

(9) Jesse Powell: d. ante-June 1792

(10) Candice Powell: m. — Parker; d. ante-June 1792

(11) Percy Powell: d. ante-June 1792

---

16. Halifax County, North Carolina, Deed Book 6, pp. 216, 217.
17. Ibid., p. 216.
18. Halifax County, North Carolina, Book D, p. 223.
19. Halifax County Deed Book 12, pp. 41–43.
20. Revolutionary Voucher no. 6414, dated 21 February 1782, in box containing the Powell vouchers, North Carolina Archives, Raleigh.
21. Edgecombe County, North Carolina, Unbound Wills, 1750–1945, State Archives.

FIFTH GENERATION

V. WILLIAM POWELL

Born: ca. 1733, Isle of Wight County, Virginia

Married: 1764, Lucy Smith.[22] Lucy was the daughter of William Smith, the Powells' neighbor in Halifax County, North Carolina. She died in 1791.[23] William Smith's will shows Lucy's siblings were Moses Smith, Catherine Harris, Elizabeth Edmondson, Judith Harris, Mary Powell (wife of Zachariah), and Ann Harris. Lucy Smith Powell was a widow 13 years. (Her estate division was in February 1807.)[24]

Died: Between late 1791 and June 1792 in Halifax County, North Carolina. In May 1793 sons Aaron and William asked for a division of his estate.

Children:

(1) Judith Powell: m. Samuel Bailey

(2) Ann Powell MY DIRECT LINE

[See Sixth Generation]

(3) Elizabeth Powell: m. John Fulgham

(4) Nathaniel Powell: d. 1807?

(5) Ransom Powell: still in Halifax County, North Carolina, in 1813.[25]

(6) William Powell: The land he inherited in 1807 included the family home.

(7) Aaron Powell: m. Mary Shaw, daughter of James Shaw.
Aaron died ante-1805, and his will is recorded in Halifax County Wills, vol. 3, p. 186.
Children: Henry, James, William, Ferabee, Holly, Sarah

(8) Lucy Powell: unmarried in 1805

(9) Sarah Powell: m. Jordan Lyal

(10) Hampton Powell: he and brother-in-law John Fulgham were executors of his mother's will.[26]

SIXTH GENERATION

Ann Powell was the sixth generation of my Powell line in America. Thomas the Immigrant came from England, and for several generations four of the most popular male given names in the Powell family were Thomas, Nathaniel, John, and William. Ann's father and on back through her great-great-grandfather all were named William. Our Powells lived in Virginia about a hundred and ten years, briefly in Nansemond County and many years in Isle of Wight County fairly near its border with Nansemond County. Not long after the death of Ann's great-grandfather, his sons moved across the border into Edgecombe County, North Carolina, into that part that became Halifax County. (The counties of Granville, Halifax, and Nash were soon created from parts of Edgecombe.) Ann was born in Halifax County and grew up in a family that was comfortably well off. Her father had a good amount of land and in 1790 was listed with seven slaves. Ann married

---

22. Halifax County, North Carolina, will probated November 1805, vol. 3, pp. 444, 445.
23. Halifax County Wills, vol. 3, p. 197.
24. Halifax County, vol. 21, pp. 73–75.
25. Halifax County, vol. 22, p. 291.
26. Op.cit., footnote 22, pp. 444, 445.

William Hockaday in Halifax County, and they lived there until the early 1800s, when they moved with their children to Granville County. Ann died in Granville County, North Carolina, and with her death the Powell surname passed from our line.

VI. ANN POWELL, daughter of William Powell and Lucy Smith
Born: 1768, Halifax County, North Carolina
Married: 1789, William Hockaday, son of James and Judith Hockaday, in Halifax County, North Carolina
Died: 16 May 1851, Granville County, North Carolina
Children:
(1) Samuel Hockaday
(2) Dell (?) Ley Hockaday
(3) Elizabeth Hockaday
(4) Judith Hockaday — MY DIRECT LINE
Married: John Wesley Finch
(5) James Hockaday
(6) Lucy Hockaday
(7) Nancy Hockaday

My mother and her siblings knew their maternal great-grandmother was Judith Hockaday, and that was all I knew about the Hockaday name. Through research I discovered Judith's parents were William and Ann Hockaday and I spent a lot of time researching the Hockadays, working back to William's grandfather, when a lucky discovery revealed that William's wife's surname was Powell.[27] Through deeds and wills I sent off for, and from abstracts and film I saw at Houston's Clayton Library, Center for Genealogical Research, I realized Ann Powell's parents were William Powell and Lucy Smith, daughter of William Smith. That seemed like a dead end. I did not have the courage to research the Smiths, and I could not sort out the three William Powells in Halifax County. As mentioned at the beginning of this *Excursus*, I found the Rev. Silas Emmett Lucas' book that dealt with the eight major Powell families of Virginia and the South. Voila! Section III mentioned Ann Powell who married William Hockaday in Halifax County, North Carolina, and the book went back to the immigrant Powell in her line. For detailed information on our Powells, Reverend Lucas' book is the one to read. The first thirty-three pages of a recent two-volume book[28] also discusses our Thomas Powell of Isle of Wight, but we part company after the second generation as that author is descended from John, oldest son of William (born ca. 1642), and our line is through John's younger brother William (born ca. 1675–78).

[See "William Hockaday"—husband]
[See "Judith Hockaday"—daughter]

---

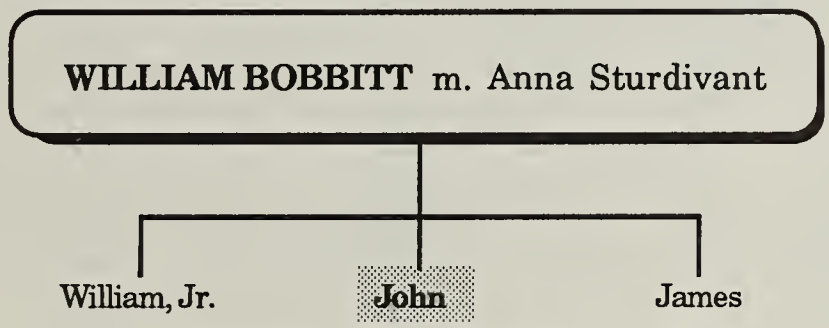
27. This began with a brief correspondence with William V. Norris III, 1487 South Edgewood Avenue, Jacksonville, Florida 32205.
28. Op.cit., footnote 2.

PART THREE

BOBBITT

MONTGOMERY

WILLIAM BOBBITT, EMIGRANT FROM WALES
(1649–1703)



THE AUTHOR HAS made no attempt at original research on the earliest Bobbitts because it has already been done so well. I refer to John W. Bobbitt's *The Bobbitt Family in America.* This 868 page book published in 1985 documents William Bobbitt, who immigrated to Charles City County, Virginia, in 1673, and his descendants who spread from Virginia to North Carolina and later to many other states.

The Bobbitts in America came from Glamorganshire, Wales. In Great Britain the Bobbitt name is found most frequently in Wales and in Somersetshire, which is in England just across the Bristol Channel from Glamorganshire. There were two early immigrations of Bobbitts to America. First, there was the arrival of Edward Bobet in Taunton, Massachusetts, in the Plymouth Colony in the 1640s from Glamorganshire, and he was the ancestor of the large northern branch of the family that by the fifth generation generally spelled its surname Babbitt, with an *a*. Second, in 1673 William Bobbitt, the first of that name to settle in Virginia and the eponymous ancestor of the large southern branch of the Bobbitt family, emigrated from Glamorganshire, Wales, [map, p. 260] and settled in Tidewater Virginia in Charles City County [map, p. 261]. It is this William Bobbitt who was our ancestor.

Having paid passage from Great Britain for his wife, Joanna ("Anna") Sturdivant, and himself, William claimed a 100-acre headright, but actually received only "96 acres three roods 24 poles." This original land grant to him, dated 27 October 1673, is recorded in the Virginia State Archives in Richmond in Grant Book 8, p. 481. It shows William Bobbitt's land in Charles City County to be situated about two miles south of the confluence of the Appomattox River and the James River. This is about sixty-five miles up the James River from Chesapeake Bay. His small plantation was located where the Arlington section of the independent city of Hopewell, Virginia, now is. The adjoining plantation belonged to John Sturdivant, who was probably Anna Bobbitt's brother. Hopewell is surrounded on three sides by Petersburg, on the fourth (north) side by the James River, and is not far from the well known eighteenth century great plantations of Shirley, Berkeley, and Westover. (Much of historic Hopewell was destroyed by a cyclone 6 August 1993.)

The Government of Great Britain offered fifty acres per person to all who went to the Virginia Colony. The land had to be lived on, and cultivated within three years of the grant. At this particular time they were also exempted from quitrents

for seven years. John W. Bobbitt, author of the 1985 *Bobbitt* book, in 1972 researched the archaic terminology because many of the words and phrases were abbreviated:

> To all (to whom these presents shall come, greeting in our Lord God everlasting); Whereas (it doth please our Sovereign Lord King Charles the Second); Now, know ye that, I Lord and Governor, William Berkeley, (appointed by the King, Governor of this commonwealth etc.); Give, and Grant unto the said WILLIAM BOBBITT, a dividend of land, containing ninety six acres, three roods, 24 poles, on the south side of the Appomattox River in Charles City County, extending as followeth. 1, beginning at a point of a hickory, near Mr. Whittington, (thence along) his line and running north along said line, by a line, 1/3 of the said line, 200 poles along Major Cooper, thence along his line to a corner continuing by the same course 40 poles to a small red oak near by Cattail branch, thence along the line 80 degrees: 80 poles to a head of a valley, to a white oak marked four ways, 80 degrees; 56 poles to Mr. Whittington, thence along his line then 20 poles along his line, northeast; by 80 degrees; 296 poles, north 6 poles, to the place aforementioned. The said land being due by transportation of two persons into this colony, to have and to hold etc. Dated on this day, the 27th day of October, 1673. Witnesses: John Leader, Richard Tonstall

William Bobbitt was born in 1649 in Glamorganshire, Wales. Not the need for religious freedom, but the desire for economic betterment led twenty-four year old William Bobbitt to leave his homeland and go to the Virginia colony in 1673. Jamestown was then the capital; in 1699 Williamsburg, named for King William III, was founded and it became the colony's capital. Now, of course, the capital is Richmond.

There are no other land records for William besides the original grant south of the James and Appomattox rivers where he settled in 1673 in Charles City County. [See Note re Charles City County records, p. 224] It may seem odd that he was on a list of tithables taken by William Browne on 10 June 1702 in Surry County.[1] William lived in Bristol Parish, but it should be remembered that parish boundaries did not always coincide with county lines. The four parishes in the early days were Westover, Weyanoke, Martins Brandon, and Bristol.

In 1702–1703 Charles City County was divided, with the land south of the James River becoming Prince George County, making William Bobbitt's land fall into the newly created county. (As late as 1793, Prince George County covered a large part of Lunenburg County as well as all of present day Dinwiddie and Brunswick counties.) Most of the Bobbitt history in Virginia is within the present-day boundaries of the counties of Prince George and Sussex (later created in 1753–1754 from Surry).

In 1702 Queen Anne began her twelve-year reign as sovereign of Great Britain and its dominions. In 1703, the year of William Bobbitt's death, a list of tithables (males over sixteen) for the combined counties of Charles City and Prince George numbered 1,406. This was for the area on both sides of the James River that had previously been Charles City County only. There were 4,045 "white souls" in all, 625 men in the militia, and there were only 203 horses. When William first came to the Virginia colony, Charles City County covered an area which extended south from New Kent County across the James River to the border of North Carolina and west to the Blue Ridge Mountains. To the east of this was Surry County (established in 1652) which extended along the James River down to the coast.

There is little known about our immigrant Bobbitt ancestor. He probably lived a hard life as one of those who helped carve Virginia out of the wilderness. William and Anna (Sturdivant) Bobbitt came to Virginia in 1673 and lived the rest

---

1. Deed Book 1694–1709, pp. 256–259.

1673 land Grant to William Bobbitt

481

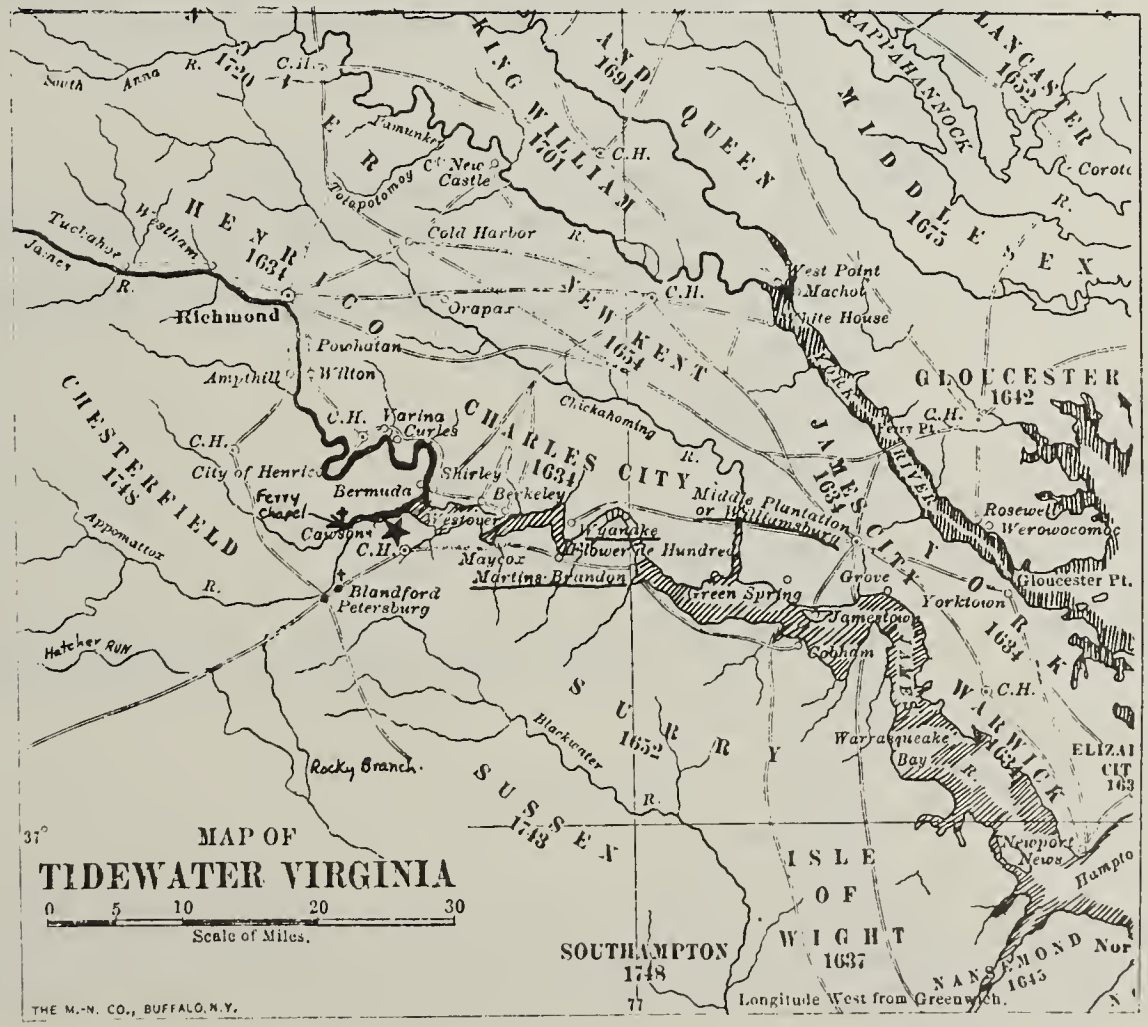
Dated 27th Day of October 1673

Bobbitt 96

To all &c: Whereas &c: Now know yee that I ye said Sr Wm Berkeley Knt Governor &c: Give and Graunt unto Wm Bobbitt a divident of Land Conteyning ninety six acres three roods 24 po: on ye south side of Appomattox River in Charles Citty County extending as followeth / beginning at a hickory neigh Mr Whittington his line and running no: Ea: by Ea: 1/3 Ea: 200 po: along Major Poes his line to a Corner continueing ye same course 40 po: to a small red oake neigh ye Cattle Stronke Ea: by So: 80 po: to ye head of a valley to a White Oake marked foure waies, So: 56 po: to Mr Whittington his line then up his line no: by So: 296 po: no: 6 po: to ye place aforementioned the said Land being due by transportation for two persons into this Colony to have and to hold &c: to be held &c: yielding and paying &c: provided &c: dated ye 27th day of October 1673. John Lead Richard Tunstall

WILLIAM BOBBITT EMIGRATED FROM GLAMORGANSHIRE, WALES, IN 1673

of their lives on the 96-plus acre plantation they received as a headright.[2] There they reared their sons and daughters, and in 1703 William died. The date of Anna's death is unknown. When William died in 1703 at the age of fifty-four he was, as he always had been, a member of the Church of England. He is believed to have been buried in the churchyard of the "Ferry Chapel" of Bristol Parish. His grave has been calculated to be under the old Norfolk and Western Railroad station (built before the Civil War) in the present-day city of Petersburg, Virginia.[3] The chapel was near the ferry used for crossing the Appomattox River, and is shown on all old maps as the "Ferry Chapel." [Added to map below, left of star] The names of William and Anna's daughters have been lost. Their oldest son, William, lived in Prince George (formerly Charles City) County all his life, and the other two sons left the area. John (my line) went south to Chowan Precinct in northeastern North Carolina, and James went to Hanover County, Virginia.



APPROXIMATE LOCATION OF WILLIAM BOBBITT'S 1673 LAND GRANT (SEE STAR*)

Children of William Bobbitt and Joanna (Sturdivant), all born in Charles City (now Prince George) County, Virginia:

1. William Bobbitt, Jr.: b. 1675; m. 1695, Mary Green, Charles City County.
   Her sister, Sarah, married William's younger brother (my ancestor), John

2. Thomas Jefferson Wertenbaker, *The Planters of Colonial Virginia*, 1922, p. 50, explains that contrary to popular thought there is conclusive evidence that colonial Virginia was divided, not into baronial estates of vast proportions, but into a large number of comparatively small farms. See his Appendix, Rent Rolls.
3. John W. Bobbitt, *The Bobbitt Family in America*, 1988, p. 15.

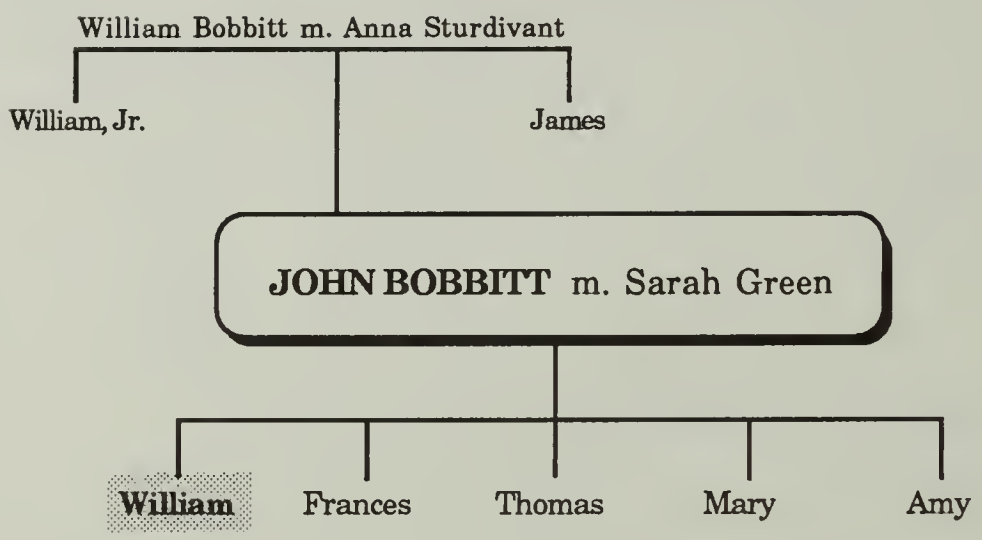
"of Chowan." William, Jr., was a member of Ferry Chapel, Bristol Parish, and lived all his life in (now) Prince George County, Virginia. He was a tobacco farmer. As eldest son and heir-at-law he inherited his father's land. He sold it 12 May 1711 to neighbor John Peterson, and then on 1 June 1712 purchased 90 acres of land on the south side of Jones Hole Swamp, and 245 acres on 6 December 1718 on the north side of Rocky Branch. The Rocky Branch tract, less than five miles southwest of Petersburg and only about twelve miles from his father's grant, is in present-day Dinwiddie County.
d. 1738
Children (also daughters, whose names are unknown):
(1) William Bobbitt III: b. 1700; d. 1778
He inherited his father's property on Rocky Run.
(2) Lewis Bobbitt, Sr.: b. 1704; m. Elizabeth Moore. They moved to North Carolina in 1753 near Lewis' double-cousin William, son of John Bobbitt "of Chowan" (#2 child of William and Joanna).
d. 1769
Children:
1. Miles: b. 1731; d. 1794
2. William M.: b. 1738; m. (1) Martha Turner;
m. (2) 18 June 1788, Lively Hight (d. 1820 in Franklin County, North Carolina);
d. 6 June 1825 in Raleigh, Wake County, North Carolina
Children of 1st marriage:
[1] Turner: b. 1764
[2] Charity
[3] Sion
[4] Solomon
[5] Amrilla
[6] William
[7] Britton: b. 1780; m. 21 November 1803, Fanny Finch [p. 181], daughter of John Finch, Jr., and his 1st wife
[8] Shadrack
[9] John
Children of 2d marriage:
[10] Allen
[11] Archibald
3. Lewis, Jr.: b. 1742; m. Mary Person; d. 1818; 4 sons, 2 daughters
(3) James Bobbitt: b. 1707. He purchased land in 1752 in that part of (then) Lunenburg County, Virginia, that is now Pittsylvania County.
d. 1761

2. JOHN BOBBITT "OF CHOWAN" MY DIRECT LINE
Born: 1678
Married: ca. 1700?, Sarah Green, Charles City County, Virginia
Died: 1736, Occoneechee Neck, (then) Bertie County, North Carolina
Children:
(1) William Bobbitt (my line)
(2) Frances Bobbitt
(3) Thomas Bobbitt
(4) Mary Bobbitt
(5) Amy Bobbitt
[See "John Bobbitt 'of Chowan'" chapter]

3. James Bobbitt "of Hanover": b. 1680
   m. ante-1708. They moved to St. Paul's Parish, Hanover County, Virginia; d. 1740, Hanover County, Virginia
   Children:
   (1) Randolph Bobbitt: b. 1708; d. 1777
   (2) William Bobbitt: b. 1712; d. 1775

[See "John Bobbitt 'of Chowan' "—son]

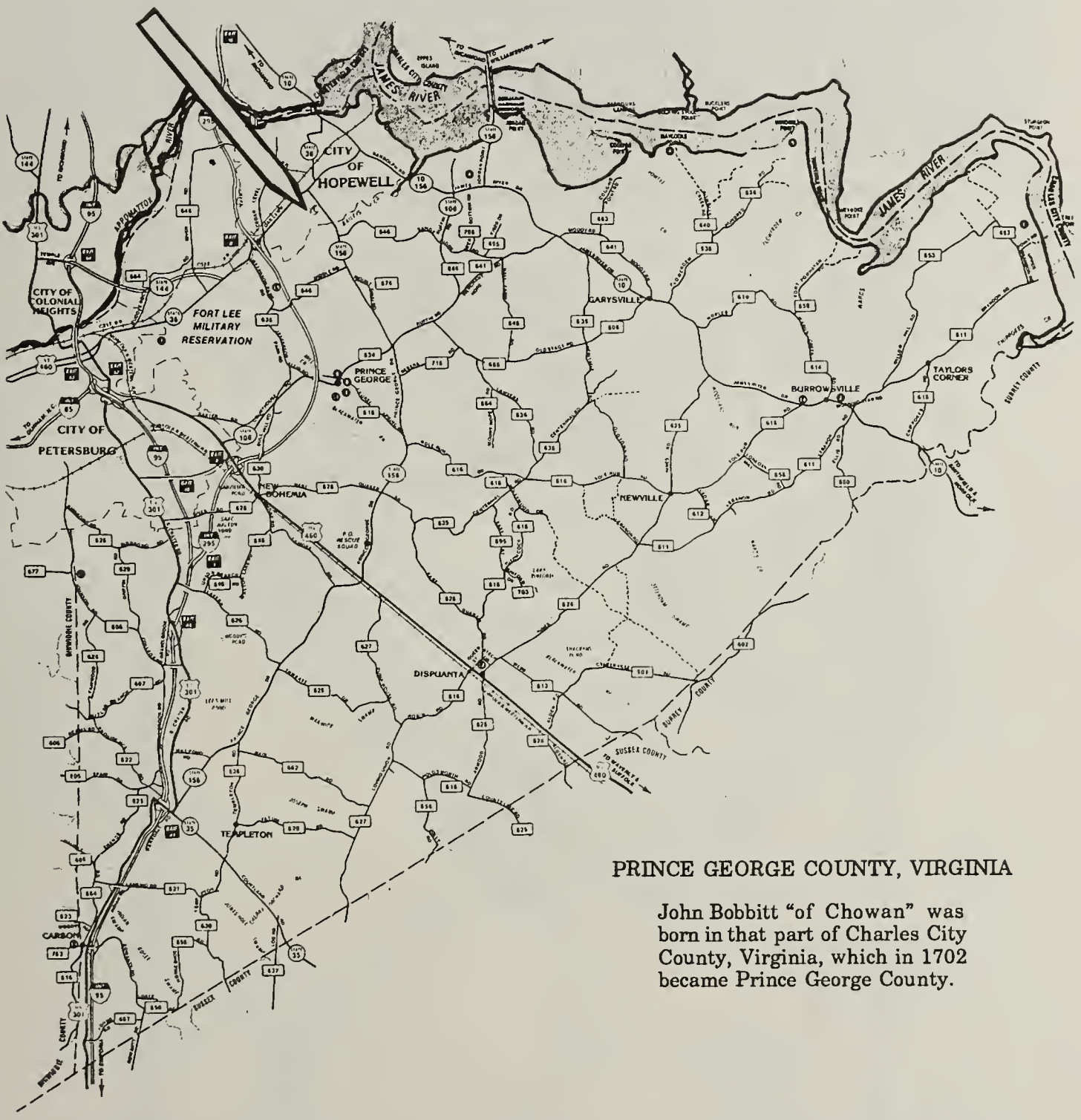
JOHN BOBBITT "OF CHOWAN"
(1678–1736)



TO DISTINGUISH THIS John from others of the same name, in all chapters I refer to the second son of the immigrant Bobbitt as John Bobbitt "of Chowan," as he was the very first of the Bobbitt family to live in the colony of North Carolina and he settled in (then) Chowan Precinct. John was born in Charles City (now Prince George) County, Virginia, in 1678 on the 96-acre plantation of his parents, William Bobbitt and Jo*anna* Sturdivant. That land is now part of the Arlington section of the city of Hopewell, Virginia.

In 1700 the boundary line between Virginia and North Carolina was unknown to the early settlers, and not until the line was run in 1728 would the government have a clear idea of where Virginia ended and North Carolina began. It was of little importance to the pioneers who were interested in obtaining land grants, establishing their homes, and rearing their families, and both colonies were ruled by the same king. Groups of relatives, friends, and neighbors moved from one location to another in search of the most fertile land. The family names from the Bobbitt settlement in Virginia are the same surnames to be found near the Bobbitt settlements of North Carolina, such names as Alston, Bennett, Williams, Green, Jones, Drury, Wynne, Moore, Shearin, Massey, Lancaster, Harris and Sturdivant.

John Bobbitt had grown up on land near one of the notable colonial paths used for moving from Virginia to North Carolina. He married Sarah Green, probably between 1700 and 1703. In 1702–1703 Prince George County was created out of Charles City County, and the family land of William Bobbitt fell into the new county. William Bobbitt, Jr., my ancestor's older brother, sold the 96-acre plantation he inherited from his father, and bought land southwest of Petersburg in Prince George (now Dinwiddie) County. The other two sons, my John (of this chapter) and his brother James, also soon moved away from the area where they had grown up.



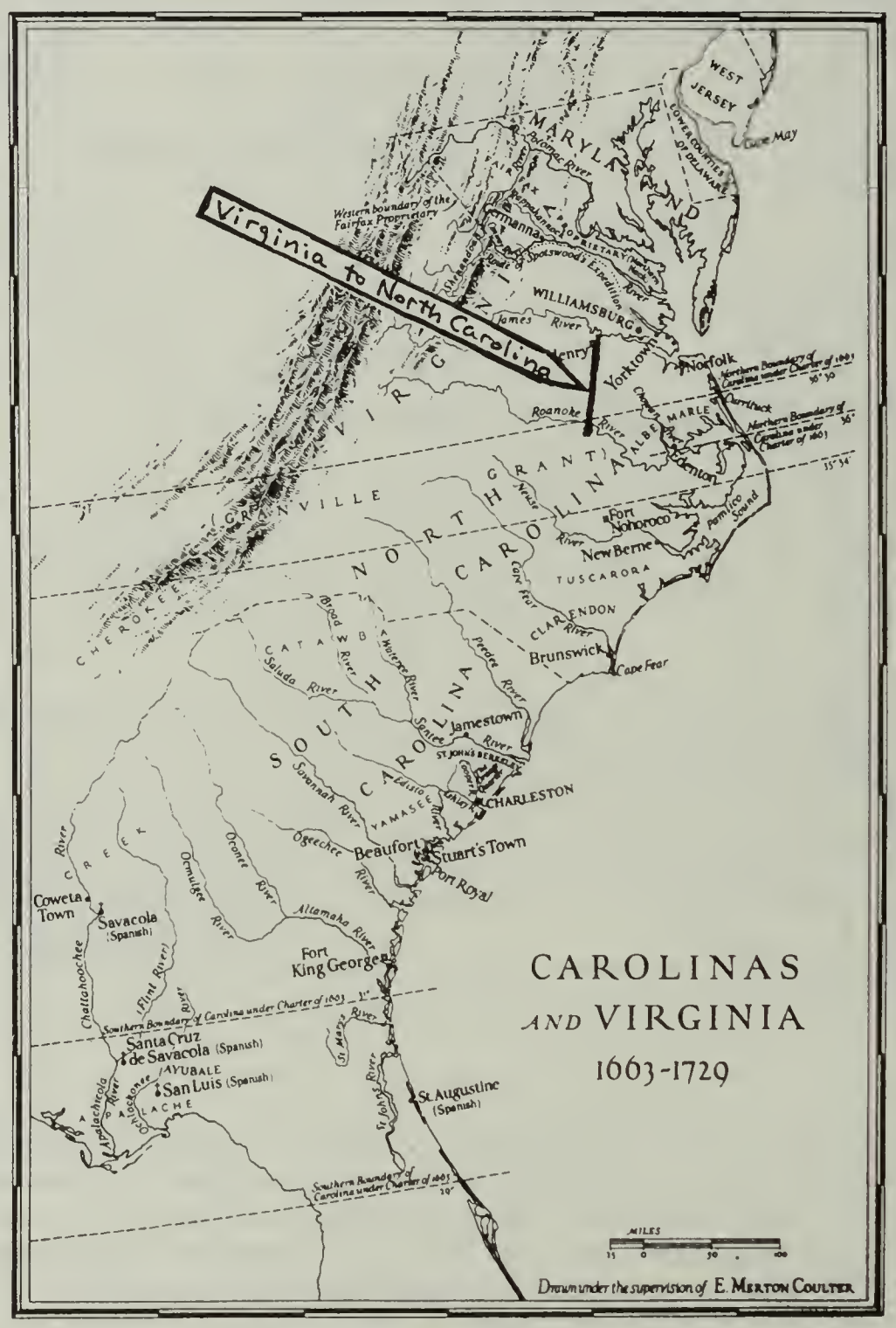
PRINCE GEORGE COUNTY, VIRGINIA

John Bobbitt "of Chowan" was born in that part of Charles City County, Virginia, which in 1702 became Prince George County.

The exact year John and Sarah (Green) Bobbitt moved to North Carolina is not known, but the first North Carolina record for a Bobbitt[1] shows that he was witness to a deed. The second record for John in North Carolina[2] shows that on 21 October 1718 Sarah's brother, John Green, "for the love and affection I bear my brother-in-law," gave John Bobbitt of Chowan Precinct, Planter, 100 acres of land joining his (Green's) land and the Shokeko Meadow. This reads as though John already owned land before receiving this generous gift, so we know John was living in Chowan Precinct before 1718. The land was situated in Chowan Precinct on the north side of the Morattock (Roanoke) River on the Camion Meadows, and is near the border between present-day Halifax and Northampton counties, North Carolina. On 1 March 1719 John Bobbitt received a grant for more land in the same area.[3] This was a 600-acre tract in Chowan Precinct "lying on the north side of the

1. Chowan County, North Carolina, Book 1, p. 697.
2. Chowan County Book 1, p. 643, #1182.
3. North Carolina Patent Book 8, p. 176.

Morattock [Roanoke] River on the west side of Occoneechee Swamp," adjoining Robert Lang, Philip Jones, William Reeves, and the meanders of the stream. A record dated 13 August 1721 shows John Bobbitt and Thomas Smith were witnesses when John Green conveyed 150 acres of land on the south side of the Morattock River to Thomas Charles.[4]



A SHORT MOVE

By 1718 John Bobbitt had moved from Prince George (was Charles City) County, Virginia, to Chowan (now Halifax) County, North Carolina.

Bertie County was created from Chowan in 1722, and John's land fell into the new county. Records for him the last fourteen years of his life are, therefore, all recorded in Bertie. In 1723, the names of John Bobbitt and his brother-in-law John

4. Chowan County Book C, no. 1.

Green appeared next to each other on the Juryman List of 137 male inhabitants of Bertie County who were eligible for jury duty.[5] Records[6] show that on 8 November 1725 John and Sarah Bobbitt sold Hezekiah Massey 300 acres of land on the west side of Occoneechee Swamp for ten pounds. This is on the present-day Halifax County side of the Neck or Swamp. This land would be owned by the Masseys until 1858, when John Massey sold just one-third of the tract for 50 pounds gold and silver.

JOHN BOBBITT'S LAND NEAR OCCONEECHEE NECK
OF THE ROANOKE RIVER (SEE ARROW)

When John Pace, Sr., wrote his will 21 March 1727, John Bobbitt was one of the witnesses.[7] In Bertie County Court in 1732 George Eubank sued John and his brother-in-law John Green. No further information is given on the suit in "miscellaneous records" that are filed in Edenton, North Carolina. At the Bertie County Court held 10 May 1732 at the courthouse on Timber Branch, two men were

5. Walter Clark, ed., *The State Records of North Carolina*, 1906, vol. 25, p. 189.
6. Bertie County, North Carolina, vol. 1, Book B, p. 46.
7. Wills held by the Secretary of State, North Carolina, p. 161.

authorized to run a ferry across the Roanoke River from Gideon Gibson's Landing on the south side of the River, and John Bobbitt was one of a dozen men authorized to lay out a road from the ferry landing on the north side of the River to the main road leading to the county line. Inhabitants of Occoneechee Neck were to keep the road in repair. Again at a 12 November 1734 Bertie court, John Bobbitt was on a panel to take care of a road, which may be the same road from the ferry landing inasmuch as eight of the men appeared on both lists. From various records we can assume some of John's neighbors included William and John Pace, Francis and Henry Jones, Jr. and Sr., Robert Lang, Philip Jones, William Reeves, John Cotton, George Smith, the Masseys mentioned above, and the Meltons.

On 1 May 1736 John Bobbitt sold his neighbor Barnaby Melton the remaining 300 acres of the (Chowan) land he had received in 1719. Bertie County records show the tract sold for thirty pounds and adjoined the 300 acres on the north side of the Roanoke (Morattock) River that John sold Hezekiah Massey in 1725. At this point, 1736, John Bobbitt retained only 200 acres of land: 100 acres being the land he lived on that his brother-in-law had given him in 1718, and the other 100 acres John had bought from John Landers. I searched Chowan and Bertie records and could not find the Landers deed, but the transaction is specifically mentioned in John Bobbitt's will. It is probable it was acquired before 1718, as in that early Chowan deed from John Green he (Bobbitt) was already referred to as "Planter."

Six days after selling the 300 acres of land to Barnaby Melton, and just a few months before he died, John Bobbitt wrote his will on 7 May 1736.[8] He did not mention his wife Sarah (Green), and it is presumed she had predeceased him. John named his five living children, and left land to his two sons. To the oldest, my ancestor William, he left the 100 acres in the Occoneechee Neck where he (John) was living. To Thomas he left the 100 acres in Occoneechee Neck that he had bought from John Landers. To both his sons and his three daughters John left all his personal goods to be divided equally: money, plate, beds and furniture, pewter, iron, brass, horses, mares, cattle, etc. The will was probated 6 November 1736 in Bertie Precinct, witnessed by Richard and Francis Massey. Although John Bobbitt had appointed four executors, only Robert Green (first cousin) and John Massey "qualified themselves according to law," and William Bobbitt and James Brogdon did not. The inventory of John's estate was presented in court 7 February 1737 by Robert Green.

A deed dated 19 February 1738[9] shows that when George Smith of Bertie Precinct sold Robert Mims 100 acres in Edgecombe Precinct, it was described as on Great Quankey Swamp (stream), joining John Cotton, John Bobbitt, deceased (of this chapter), and "son Bobbitt." Great Quankey Swamp, in present-day Halifax County, flows into the Morattock (Roanoke) River near Halifax, the county seat of Halifax County.

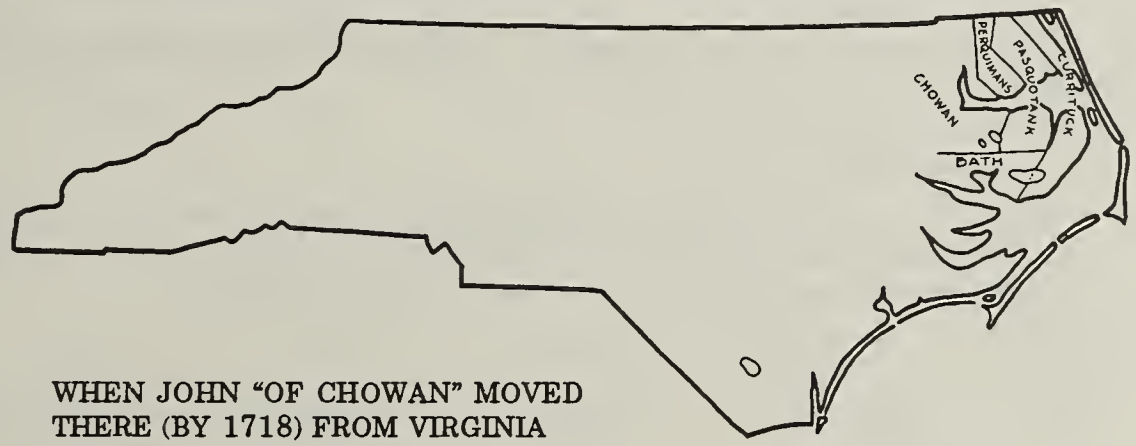
On the map on p. 267, it may confuse the reader to see where the location of John Bobbitt's land has been marked. It is not a misnomer to call this first Bobbitt ancestor who lived in North Carolina John Bobbitt "of Chowan." When he moved there it was the Chowan Precinct of Albemarle County, in one of the three original counties in the colony of North Carolina. Chowan Precinct extended west indefinitely. During John's lifetime settlers continued to come there, mostly from Virginia, and in 1722 where John lived became Bertie Precinct, with Chowan Precinct's boundary line farther east. With each precinct having a court, the settlers did not have to travel so far to record deeds, etc. Changes continued after John's death, of course. Edgecombe and Northampton counties were created out of

---

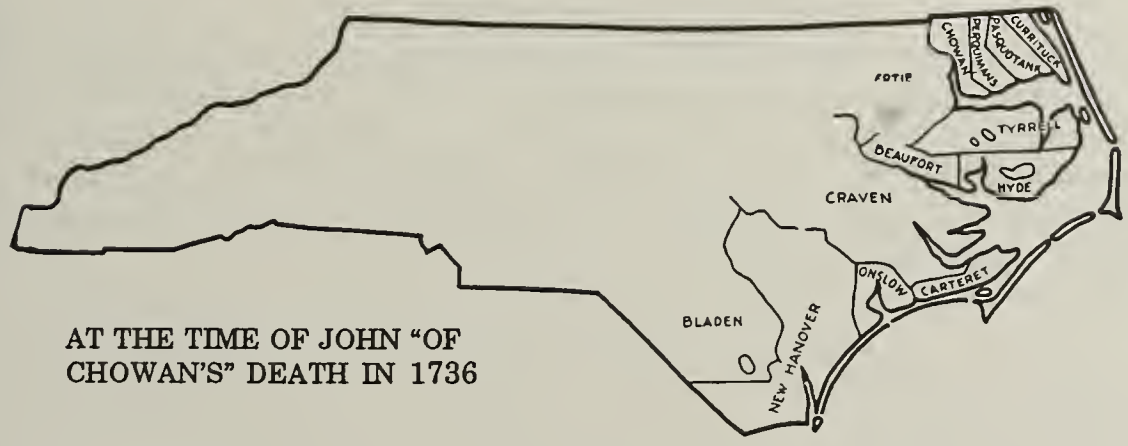
8. Secretary of State 840, North Carolina Original Wills 1663–1789.
9. This deed is recorded in Halifax County, North Carolina, Book 1, pp. 248, 249.

Bertie in 1741, and Halifax County was created out of Edgecombe in 1754. The big Roanoke River divides Halifax and Northampton counties. If the reader will notice on a modern map the big bulge of Northampton land that pushes into Halifax County, the Occoneechee Neck area, he will see where John Bobbitt "of Chowan" lived until his death in 1736 at the age of fifty-eight. John Bobbitt lived on the side of Occoneechee Neck that is in present-day Halifax County, near Great Quankey Swamp (stream). John never moved, nor did he ever live in present-day Chowan County; however, the North Carolina counties changed names several times.

NORTH CAROLINA'S RAPID GROWTH OF SETTLEMENTS



WHEN JOHN "OF CHOWAN" MOVED THERE (BY 1718) FROM VIRGINIA



AT THE TIME OF JOHN "OF CHOWAN'S" DEATH IN 1736

After John Bobbitt's death in 1736, the youngest four children returned to Virginia to live near their relatives who had not moved to North Carolina. The oldest son, William (my line), stayed in North Carolina. If a Bobbitt was mentioned in North Carolina records between the early 1700s and 1736, it was John ("of Chowan"), and thereafter until 1754 it was his son William.

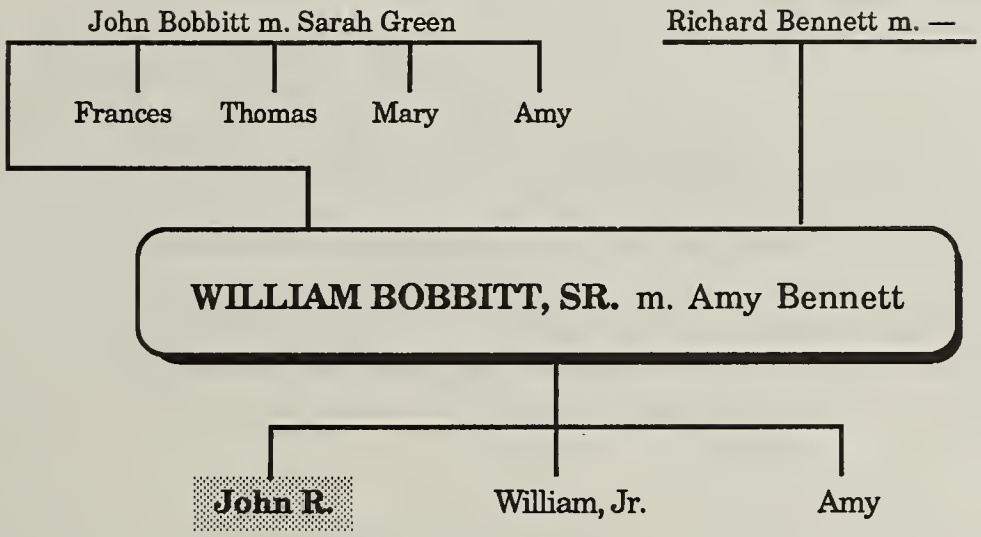
Children of John Bobbitt and Sarah (Green):

1. WILLIAM BOBBITT — MY DIRECT LINE
   Born: 1704, Prince George (was Charles City) County, Virginia
   Married: ca. 1724, Amy Bennett, daughter of Richard Bennett, Bertie (now Halifax) County, North Carolina
   Died: 1768, Granville or Orange County, North Carolina
   Children: John Richard (my line), William, Jr., Amy
   [See "William Bobbitt, Sr." chapter]

2. Frances Bobbitt: m. 1728/29, John Massey, son of neighbor Hezekiah Massey. John was an executor of his father-in-law's 1736 will.
   Children:
   (1) Amy
   (2) Frances
   (3) Elizabeth
   (4) Sarah
   (5) William
   (6) John, Jr.
3. Thomas Bobbitt: b. 1712
   m. (1) Mary Hill
   m. (2) Lucy Jones
   d. 1759, Sussex County, Virginia. Thomas left North Carolina and returned to Virginia to live when he was 24.
   Child of 2nd marriage:
   (1) John William
4. Mary Bobbitt: m. — Sturdivant. Mary and her sister Amy were mentioned several times in the Albemarle Parish register, Sussex County, Virginia, as godparents in the 1740s.
5. Amy Bobbitt: m. Peter Threewits (Thweatt) of Sussex County, Virginia
   Children (including):
   (1) John: b. May 1749; for whom Amy's brother Thomas was one of the godparents

[See "William Bobbitt, Sr."—son]

WILLIAM BOBBITT (SR.)
(1704–1768)



WILLIAM BOBBITT was the oldest son of John Bobbitt "of Chowan" and Sarah Green. He was born in 1704 in newly formed Prince George County, Virginia, formerly Charles City County, and moved in childhood with his parents to Chowan Precinct in eastern North Carolina. He was the first William Bobbitt to live in North Carolina, and the state has not been without a William Bobbitt since then. William is the most common Christian name throughout the Bobbitt family in the United States. Intentionally or accidentally, descendants have honored William Bobbitt the Immigrant, who emigrated from Wales in 1673.

Judging by when their first child was born, William Bobbitt and Amy Bennett, daughter of Richard Bennett, married ca. 1724 in what was by then Bertie Precinct (County). In 1722 Occoneechee Neck, where the Bobbitt family lived, was no longer in Chowan Precinct, but in Bertie Precinct. Upon his father's death in 1736 William inherited this 100 acres at Occoneechee Neck that had been given as a gift to his father by William's maternal uncle, John Green, in 1718. As mentioned in the previous chapter, Occoneechee Neck is in present Halifax County near the big "bulge" of the Roanoke (then called Morattock) River that curves into Halifax County.

The recital of land transactions which follows will not be clear without having this reminder that big counties continually had portions of land taken from them to create smaller counties and the process was repeated as the settlers moved and population increased. William, Sr. (subject of this chapter), never moved far from the Roanoke River, but he did eventually live both in Granville County and Orange (now Person) County. A little geography class here: Originally, everything in northeast North Carolina was called Albemarle Precinct. The great expanse of Chowan was created from it in 1670, Bertie from Chowan in 1722, Edgecombe and Northampton from Bertie in 1741, Granville from Edgecombe in 1746,

part of Granville was taken to form Orange County in 1752, Halifax from Edgecombe in 1754, Bute from Granville in 1764; Bute was abolished in 1779 when Warren and Franklin were formed from it. In 1786 part of Granville was added to Warren and in 1787 part of Wake was added to Franklin. (In 1881 Vance was formed from parts of Granville, Warren, and Franklin, but keep in mind that there was no Vance County in the time period we are interested in here.) Granted that it is confusing, look at a modern map and try to visualize the progression of changes. The names of the counties changed, but, after moving from now-Halifax County in 1744, the cradle of the Bobbitt family became old Granville County (which would later have counties created from it.)

In 1741 Edgecombe County, North Carolina, was created from Bertie County, and the first extant records are some in 1744. An Edgecombe County Court Minute[1] dated 19 February shows that a deed of sale from Frances Young to William Bobbitt was proved by the oath of Richard Bennett and ordered to be recorded. On 2 August 1744 both William Bobbitt, Sr., and his father-in-law Richard Bennett, both "of Edgecombe County," bought adjoining land. Richard Bennett bought 180 acres of land on the north prong of Buffalo Branch for 18 pounds current money "of Virginia,"[2] and William Bobbitt,Sr., bought 192 acres of adjoining land on Buffalo Branch for 7 pounds.[3] Both purchased their land from men who had moved to South Carolina. Unless our William got a bargain, we can assume his land was less valuable than Richard Bennett's.

On 19 February 1745 William, Sr., sold 100 acres of his 192-acre tract to John Smart.[4] When he died, William, Sr., would leave the remainder to his oldest son, my ancestor John Richard Bobbitt. The 100 acres William sold was described as being in the fork of Buffalo on the branch side of Seeley's Meadow on the north side of the main Buffalo branch. This (Edgecombe) land in 1746 fell into Granville County.

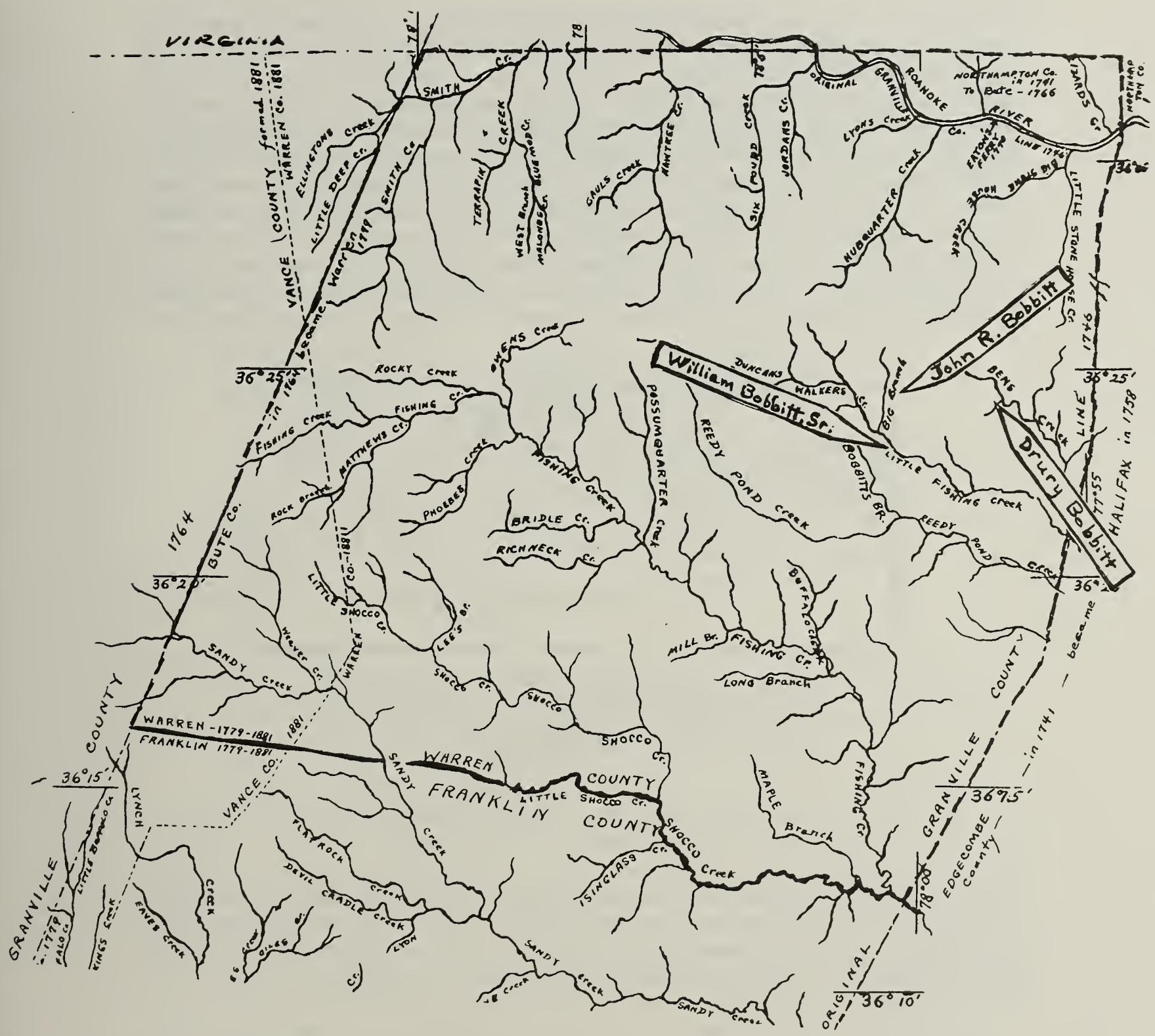
Granville County was formed in 1746 from Edgecombe County.[5] It was named for John Carteret, Earl of Granville, who was owner of the land and King George II's Prime Minister. A record in the newly formed Granville County[6] shows that on 22 December 1747 William Bobbitt was one of sixteen men summoned to be jurors for the March 1748 term of court to be held in William Eaton's home a few miles from the town of Henderson. The earliest Granville County courts were held in Henderson, later at Harrisburg, and finally (and to the present time) at Oxford.

On 25 March 1749, for three shillings proclamation money, William Bobbitt was granted 600 acres of land in Granville County[7] in St. John Parish on the south side of and adjoining Little Fishing Creek. This land is in present-day Warren County.

About three years after William was granted his 600 acres of land, his double first cousin, Lewis Bobbitt (Sr.), moved from Virginia to Granville (present-day Warren) County too, doubtless having heard about the good land prices. Lewis' father was John "of Chowan's" brother, both of whom had married sisters (Sarah

---

1. Edgecombe County, North Carolina, Minute Book 1, p. 2.
2. Edgecombe County Book 5, p. 334.
3. Ibid., p. 339.
4. Ibid., p. 406.
5. Frances B. Hays of Oxford, North Carolina, made "a very rare list of early Granville County families" that was included in Worth S. Ray's 1947 *The Lost Tribes of North Carolina*, p. 304. Besides Bobbitt, Finch, and Hockaday, other familiar names that appear are Alston, Bradford, Bristow, Bruce, Burwell, Cannady, Carnall, Currin, Dickerson, Drewry, Green, Harris, Jenkins, Kittrell, Langston, Lassiter, Merritt, Norwood, Parker, Robertson, Rogers, Searcy, Smith, Stamper, Traylor, Vincent, Ward, Weathers, Winston, and York.
6. Granville County, North Carolina, Will Book 29, p. 81.
7. Granville County, Book C, p. 51.



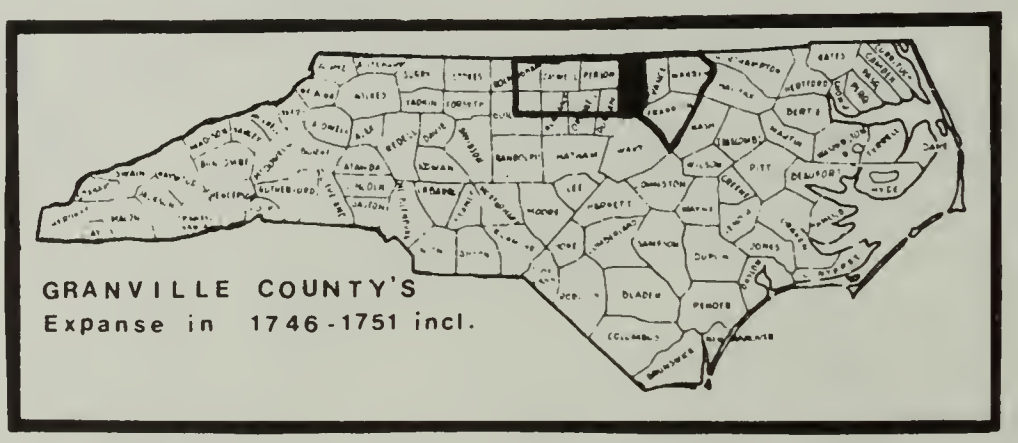
WARREN COUNTY, NORTH CAROLINA

When William Bobbitt, Sr., owned this land 1749–1754, it was in Granville County. Bute County was created from Granville County in 1764, and Warren County was created from the upper half of Bute County in 1779.

and Mary Green), and so Lewis and my William (of this chapter) were double first cousins. A word about Lewis: Lewis' land, surveyed for him in 1749, was granted to him 24 April 1753 and was located near Reedy Creek not far from the present Grove Hill Community, and less than fifteen miles below the Virginia border. In 1763 Lewis sold the land to his son William who in turn sold it to John Emerson, and then he moved to Franklin County and bought land from William Smith and Jonathan Kittrell. (His oldest son, Turner Bobbitt, bought 75 acres "on the Great Branch, in Person's line" in 1787. This was near the border of Franklin and

Granville counties and was the first deed recorded for a member of the Bobbitt family since Franklin County was formed in 1779. The land is now located in lower Vance County.)

In 1752 part of Granville County was taken to form Orange County. Son John was a witness when on 4 July 1754 William Bobbitt of Orange County sold 550 acres of his land "on the south side of Fishing Creek on Reedy Creek" (also called Little Catfish Creek) in Granville (now Warren) County to Thomas Williams of Granville County, and on 20 August he sold 50 acres "on the southside of Little Fishing Creek" to Daniel Harris. This was all of the 600 acres granted to William Bobbitt in 1749, Reedy Creek and Little Fishing Creek being so close together that the names were sometimes used interchangeably. Although William sold his land, his double first cousin Lewis Bobbitt, Sr., continued to live in the Reedy Creek area.



The 1746–1752 boundaries of Granville County are shown on the map inset. (Granville in 1755 is shaded.) In 1752 Orange County's creation removed from Granville all the land to the west of its present county line.

In 1755 Granville County included all of the territory that is now located in Warren, Franklin, and Vance counties. In the original tax list of Granville County in 1755 the names of William Bobbitt, Sr., and his younger son William, Jr., are not shown because they were moving back from Orange County at that time. However, William, Sr.,'s older son, my ancestor John Richard Bobbitt, was on the tax list along with his cousins Lewis Bobbitt, Sr., and son Miles. William, Sr. and Jr., had lived just a short time in Orange County and were back in Granville County in 1755.

On 4 April 1755 William, Sr., of Granville County sold John Jones of Edgecombe County 100 acres of land in Granville County for 30 pounds. It was on the south side of Buffalo Creek on William's line. In October 1764 Dolling Jones sold this tract to Clement Arledge for 45 pounds.[8] After William, Sr., (of this chapter) died in 1768, William, Jr., was recorded as living in Orange County again, in 1771. Land records are missing in Orange County, but it seems likely that the land William, Sr., owned was inherited by William, Jr., and he lived on that land until 1780 when he moved to Granville County, very near the Franklin County border. (In 1779 Franklin and Warren counties were formed from Bute, and Bute County was abolished.) As had happened over fifteen years earlier, however, William, Jr.,'s older brother, my ancestor John Richard Bobbitt, was not with him. John R. had remained where he was, and he was on the Bute County tax list in 1771. (Bute County had been formed in its entirety from Granville County in 1764.)

8. Bute County, North Carolina, Book A, p. 96.

Keep in mind that in North Carolina our Bobbitt line is now gradually working its way from (present-day) Halifax County to (present-day) Warren County, to Moore County, to Wake County. (By 1830 the ancestor in our line, Matilda Carolyn [Bobbitt] Montgomery, was in Weakley County, Tennessee.) It is not known whether William, Sr., was in Granville (actually, Bute by then) or Orange County when he died in 1768, nor when his wife Amy (Bennett) died. When he died the two basic branches of immigrant William Bobbitt of Wales' descendants were in North Carolina. Our branch, John "of Chowan," had left Virginia and moved to North Carolina about 1715 (certainly by 1718), and the second branch, Lewis, Sr., moved to North Carolina ca. 1750–1753. Anyone with North Carolina Bobbitt ancestors dating back to colonial times will have one of the following in his lineage chart:

John Bobbitt "of Chowan"	1678–1736	Son of William from Wales
William, Sr. (my line)	1704–1768	Son of John "of Chowan"
John Richard (my line)	1725–1791	Son of William, Sr.
William, Jr.	1727–1787	Son of William, Sr.
Lewis Bobbitt, Sr.	1703–1769	Son of John "of Chowan's" older brother William, Jr. [p. 262]
Miles	1731–1794	Son of Lewis, Sr.
William M.	1738–1825	Son of Lewis, Sr.
Lewis, Jr.	1742–1818	Son of Lewis, Sr.

Children of William Bobbitt and Amy (Bennett):

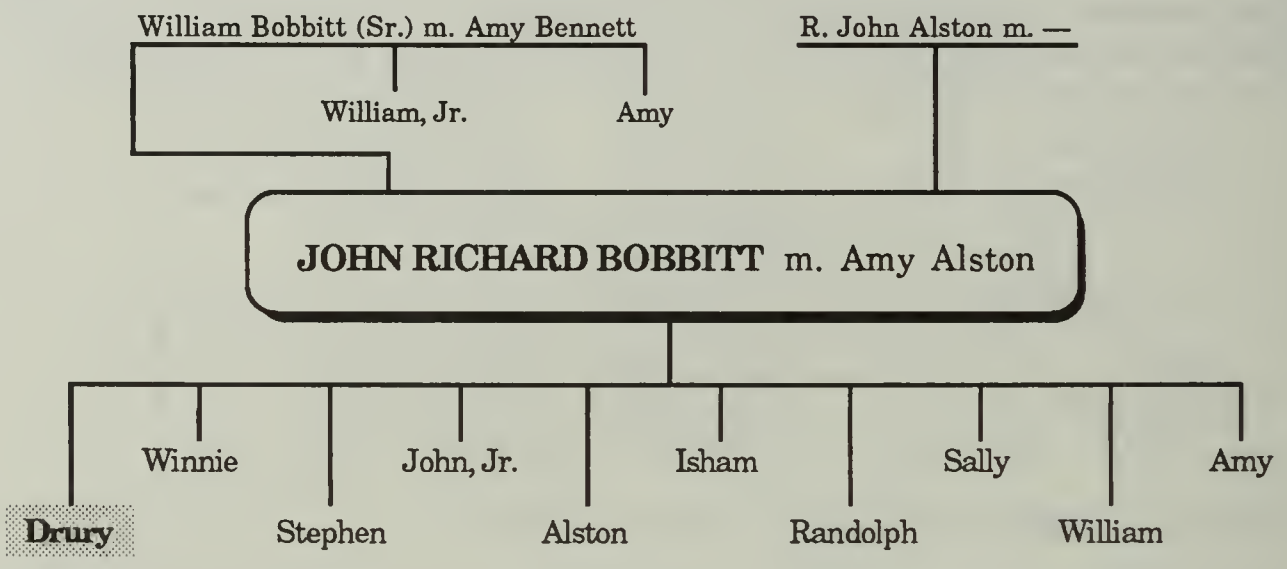
1. JOHN R. BOBBITT — MY DIRECT LINE
   Born: 1725, Bertie (now Halifax) County, North Carolina
   Married: 1742, Amy Alston, daughter of Richard John Alston, Edgecombe (now Halifax) County, North Carolina
   Died: 1791, Warren County, North Carolina
   Children: Drury (my line), Winnie, Stephen, John R., Jr., Alston, Isham, Sally, Randolph, William, Amy
   [See "John Richard Bobbitt" chapter]

2. William Bobbitt, Jr.: b. 1727; first mentioned in Edgecombe County records recorded in Halifax County, North Carolina;[9] lived with or near his father in Granville County and Orange County until his father died in 1768; apparently inherited the Orange County land and lived there until 1780 when he moved to Granville County, near the Franklin County border. d. 1798
   Children:
   (1) John: b. 1746
   (2) William III: b. 1747
   (3) James: b. 1749
   (4) Sarah: b. 1752
   (5) Arthur: b. 1754
   (6) Sion: b. 1755
   (7) Turner: b. 1757
3. Amy Bobbitt: m. Joseph Shearin
4. It is thought that there were other daughters, names now unknown.

[See "John Richard Bobbitt"—son]

9. Halifax County, North Carolina, Book 5, p. 334.

JOHN RICHARD BOBBITT
(1725–1791)



IT IS A TRADITION among the descendants of John Richard Bobbitt that his middle name was Richard, and several of his grandsons carried his full name. No legal papers, however, record his middle name. For the sake of distinguishing this John Bobbitt from the many others with the name of John, I will continue the tradition and refer to him as John Richard or John R.

John Richard Bobbitt was born in 1725 in Bertie County, North Carolina. Due to the creation of new counties, by the time he was fifty-five, John R.'s birthplace had become part of present-day Halifax County. He was the oldest son of William Bobbitt, Sr., and Amy Bennett, and was named for his grandfathers, John Bobbitt "of Chowan" and Richard Bennett.

John Richard Bobbitt married Amy Alston, daughter of John Alston, in 1743, and they had ten children who lived to maturity. Three of their children married Harrises, and three married Jameses.

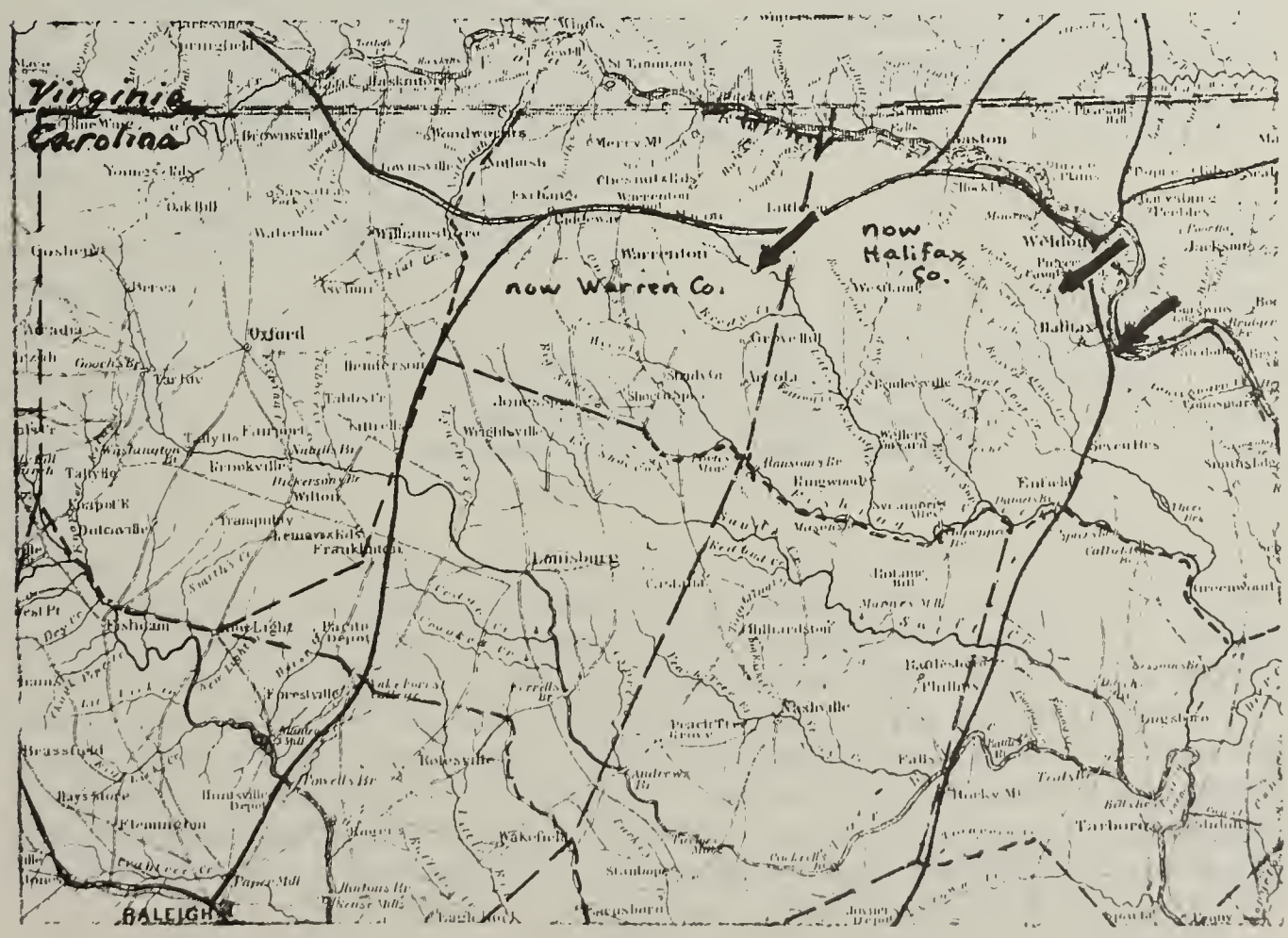
The first record for John [R.] Bobbitt was dated 11 November 1743 and shows that at a Council held in Edenton, North Carolina, a petition for a grant for a land patent was recorded thus: "John Bobbitt, 400 acres in Edgecombe County."[1] John received the land, but I cannot find the exact date. A 25 March 1749 grant to John Moreland[2] shows his 420 acres "joined John Bobbitt," Quankey Beaver Ponds, both sides of Quankey Creek, and Moses May. A 21 September 1751 deed[3] shows Montfort Elbeck sold John Corlew 637 acres of land "joining John Bobbitt." Other neighbors mentioned in connection with Quankey Creek are Charles Drury, Sherwood Haywood, John Tomson, John Alston, Alexander McCulloch, and James and Robert Williams.

---

1. William L. Saunders, ed., *The Colonial Records of North Carolina*, 1886, vol. 4, p. 641.
2. Edgecombe County, North Carolina, Grant Book 11, p. 225.
3. Edgecombe County Book 4, p. 207.

Two years before John R. and Amy married, Edgecombe County had been created from Bertie, and so his first (1743) land grant was in (then) Edgecombe County. Apparently John R. sold this land ca. 1750 and bought in Granville County, North Carolina. (In 1754 Halifax County was created out of Edgecombe County. Therefore when you look at a modern map you see that the land John R. had near Quankey Creek was in the eastern part of present-day Halifax County, near the town of Halifax and not far from the Roanoke River's Occoneechee Neck.) Included in the 1750 List of Taxables in Granville County (formed from Edgecombe in 1746) and enumerated by William Person, were John Bobbitt (of this chapter) and Negro Ochey; John's first cousin once removed, Lewis Bobbitt, Sr.; and Lewis' son Miles. The 1755 Granville tax list again showed John R., Lewis, Sr., and Miles.

On 11 September 1755, 175 acres of land in Granville County were surveyed for John R. on both sides of the Great Branch of Little Fishing Creek. This land (now in Warren County) adjoined the 550 acres "on Reedy Creek" that John R.'s father (who was living in Orange County) had sold Thomas Williams on 4 July 1754. [See map, p. 273] Not until 11 March 1760 was John R. legally granted his land, and the description added that the tract was on Thomas Williams' line in the Parish of St. John. Two days later Lewis Bobbitt (cousin) was granted 531 acres on the south side of Reedy Creek, not far from John R. but closer to the Grove Hill community. John R.'s father and brother, William Bobbitt, Sr., and Jr., did not live nearby but were in Orange County.

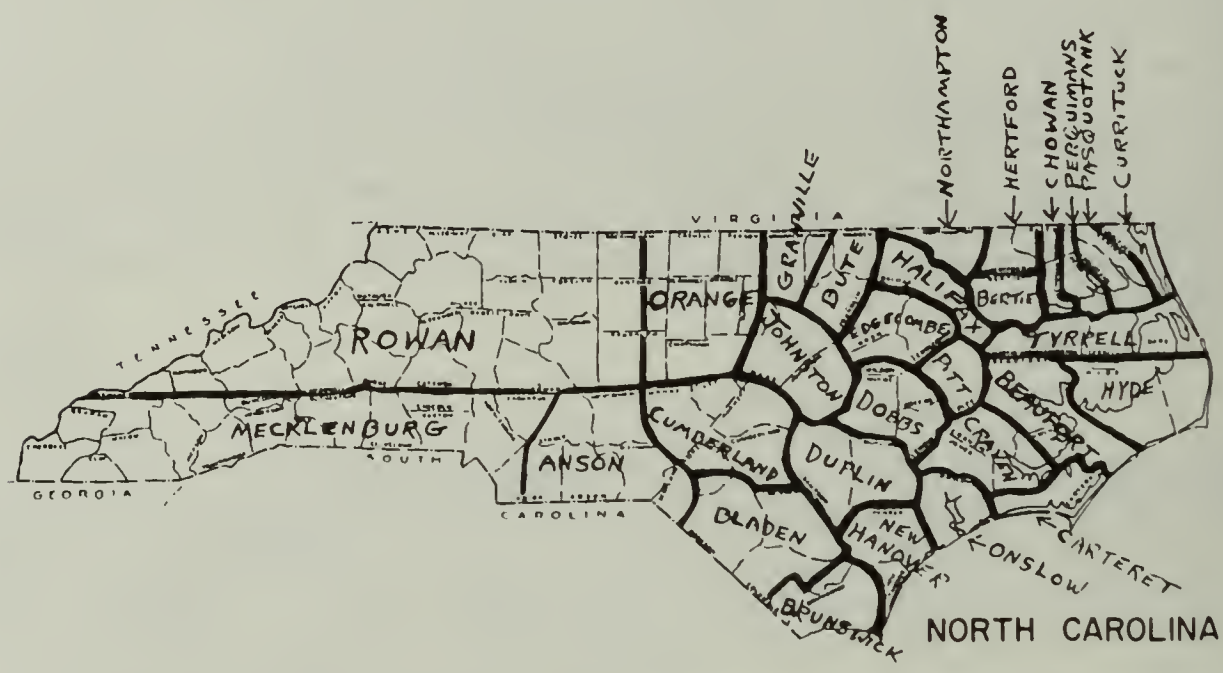


JOHN R. BOBBITT MOVED FROM QUANKEY CREEK AREA
TO LITTLE FISHING/REEDY CREEK AREA CA. 1750

Arrows (r. to l.) point to Occoneechee Neck of Roanoke River,
Quankey Creek, and Great Branch of Little Fishing Creek.

The French and Indian War that elsewhere in America stretched from 1754 to 1763 did not affect the Carolinas as much as the Cherokee War did. However, even the Indian disturbance did not adversely affect the Bobbitts, as their land was well to the east of the frontier.

On 23 May 1763 John R. Bobbitt sold Francis Capps 300 acres of land adjoining Jacob Self, Benjamin Gillam, (Thomas?) Judkins, and Daniel Harris. The same year on 9 August Lewis Bobbitt sold John R.'s brother, William, 160 acres on the south side of Reedy Creek. This was witnessed by William Person, neighbor and 1750 tax enumerator, who may be the same William Person who sold land on Buffalo Creek to John Finch, Sr. (The paths of my Bobbitt and Finch lines would eventually cross in Granville County.) References have been noticed for "Bobbitt's corner on the north side of Buffalo Branch at Alston's corner" as well as Bobbitt's line near Reedy/Fishing Creek.



APPROXIMATE BOUNDARIES OF THE TWENTY-NINE COUNTIES IN 1764

Halifax was created in 1758 from Edgecombe County.
Bute was created in 1764 from Granville County.

After 1764 land references to John R. are in Bute County records, because Bute was formed that year from Granville and John R.'s land belonged in the new county. On 20 March 1765 John R. Bobbitt was the highest bidder for 295 acres of land at a sale held by William Johnson, Bute County sheriff. Two years later, on 16 July 1767, John R. sold that land to Peter Smart, and it was described as being situated "on Reedy Creek and Great Rocky Branch, adjoining Joseph Green, Daniel and Francis Aycock, exclusive of two acres about the Baptist Meeting House and spring." One of the witnesses was John R.'s oldest son, my ancestor Drury. The buyer, Peter Smart, was probably the son of John Smart to whom John R.'s father had sold 100 acres of land "in the fork of the Buffaloe (*sic*)" in 1744.

In 1768 John R.'s father, William Bobbitt, died at the age of sixty-four. John R. was forty-three at this time. On 8 January 1772 John R. Bobbitt, Sr. (of this chapter) purchased 100 acres of land on the north side of Reedy Creek from William Davis, Jr. Apparently he gave the land to John, Jr., who was in his twenties, as the latter sold this tract on 11 May 1778. This was during the Revolutionary War. As far as

is known only two of John R. and Amy's sons, Isham and William, were soldiers in the War for Independence.

On 15 February 1772 John Bobbitt was one of four men the Bute County court ordered to go with the County Surveyor to "lay off one acre of Thomas Tharrington's land" and also to report in connection with Benjamin Groves' petition to rebuild a water grist mill on Linch's Creek. On 11 November 1772 John was appointed a road overseer. On 9 November 1774 he was a grand juror for the county. On 15 August 1777 John Bobbitt was one of six men appointed to assess the taxable property of the Bute County inhabitants who mustered under Capt. John Stone "on both sides of the road from Simms' Ford to the [Bute-Halifax] county line."

There are no records to indicate that John R. purchased any land after 1772. There are only two records of John's deeding land to his sons, but he may have furnished money to the others for that purpose. As mentioned at the bottom of the last page, John, Jr., received land. Then in 1786 "for twenty pounds specie but more especially for good will..." John, Sr., turned over 200 acres of land in Warren (was Bute) County to his youngest son, William, "near the road that leads to Warrenton and to Halifax, and on the Great Branch [of Little Fishing Creek] to Thomas Judkins' line." One of the witnesses to this deed was John's son Randolph. The sale of this 200 acres and the earlier 1763 sale of 300 acres to Francis Capps would appear to leave John Richard Bobbitt's land holdings at about 75 acres. John R. was sixty-one years old. There are definitely other land transactions involving John that I am not aware of, as in his will he disposed of 350 acres.

Bute County (formed from Granville in 1764) was abolished in 1779 when Warren and Franklin counties were formed from it. The Bobbitt families of Warren, Franklin, and Granville counties were so interrelated by now that records of the same family may be found in courthouses of each county. Census records are equally confusing, indicating the families lived near the borders of each county, and in the 1700s the borders were not as exact as they are now.

John Bobbitt wrote his will 7 December 1789.[4] The will was probated in November 1791, and John Bobbitt is said to have died in that year. In his will he left Randolph the land he (John) lived on, "supposed to be about three hundred acres and about fifty acres of pine woods." The will is a model of clarity in every way, giving names of daughters and their married names, and much other information.

In 1790, the year before John died, the first federal census was taken for the new United States, and North Carolina's is one of the few to survive. There were sixteen Bobbitts who were Heads of Households in six of North Carolina's fifty-four counties in 1790:[5]

8 – Warren County (Halifax District)
4 – Franklin County (Halifax District)
1 – Halifax County (Halifax District)
1 – Granville County (Epping Forest District)
1 – Orange County (Hillsborough District)
1 – Tyrrell County (Edenton District)

John Richard Bobbitt was a successful tobacco farmer. In the taxable year of 1790 John and his four older sons owned ten percent of the taxable property in their tax district. John, who had twelve slaves, was considered the fourth wealthiest planter in his district.

John Richard Bobbitt was sixty-six years old when he died in 1791 in Warren County, North Carolina. Amy (Alston) Bobbitt was a widow less than five years,

---

4. Warren County, North Carolina, Will Book 6, p. 54.
5. Department of Commerce and Labor, *Heads of Families at the First Census of the United States Taken in the Year 1790*, pub. 1908; also, film microcopy no. 637, roll 7 (1965).

dying in early 1796. Petition was made for the settlement of her estate[6] on 2 March 1796 by sons Drury and Stephen Bobbitt, the executors of the will of their father, John R. Bobbitt. All of John R. and Amy's children had married and reared large families of their own, and four of the seven sons remained in North Carolina. During the first 120 years in America the Bobbitt family had not branched out for more than 130 miles from the point of William Bobbitt of Wales' settlement in the Virginia colony.

Children of John Richard Bobbitt and Amy Alston:

1. DRURY BOBBITT MY DIRECT LINE
   Born: 1744, in Edgecombe (now Warren) County, North Carolina
   Married: 1761, Elizabeth Harris, daughter of Nathaniel Harris, in Granville (now Warren) County
   Died: 1826, Moore County, North Carolina
   Children: John (my line), Sherwood H., Charity, Polly, Nancy, Rebecca, Elizabeth, Amy, Drury, Jr., Thomas
   [See "Drury Bobbitt" chapter]

2. Winnie Bobbitt: b. 1746, Granville (now Warren) County, North Carolina; m. John Golightly. She and her family are believed to have migrated to Kentucky.
3. Stephen Erasmus Bobbitt: b. 1747, Granville (now Warren) County, North Carolina
   m. 1774, Celah Elizabeth Harris, daughter of James Harris, (now) Warren County
   d. 1824
   Children:
   (1) Harris: b. 1775; m. 1801, Partheny Harris
   (2) Arthur: b. 1776; m. 1809, Mary Smelley
   (3) Mary: b. 1780; m. 1804, Zachariah Shearin
   (4) Stephen, Jr.: b. 1785; m. 1814, Elizabeth Bradley
   Son: Drury, lived in Weakley County, Tennessee
   (5) Drury R.: b. 1786; m. 1818, Sarah Bradley
   (6) Nancy: b. 1790; m. 1818, Alexander Newell
   (7) Amy: b. 1792; m. 1812, Eldred Pippen
   (8) John R.: b. 1799; m. 1818, Elizabeth Robertson
   (9) Seley: b. 1801; m. 1822, Thomas Montford
   Arthur, Stephen, Jr., and Drury R. moved to Williamson County, Tennessee; Amy and Seley moved to Alabama.
4. John Bobbitt, Jr.: b. 1749, Granville (now Warren) County, North Carolina; m. Sarah (Jones) Williams, a widow with one son. John was a land trader and a slave trader. He did not live in the family compound in Warren County but on land located in Franklin County. In 1810 he and Sarah, and son Claiborne and his wife, moved to Warren County, Kentucky.
   d. 1824, Warren County, Kentucky
   Children:
   (1) Claiborne: b. 1774; m. Martha Gholson
   (2) daughter: m. Drury Bridges
   (3) Archibald: d. between 1792 and 1800

---

6. Warren County Book 9, p. 53.

5. Alston Bobbitt: b. 1752, Granville (now Warren) County, North Carolina;
   m. Mary Sauls; d. ante-1780
   Child: Mary Alston Bobbitt
6. Isham Bobbitt: b. 1754, Granville (now Warren) County, North Carolina;
   m. 1774, Elizabeth James, daughter of William and Nancy James. Isham was a sergeant in the American Revolutionary War. They lived in Halifax County until 1780; in Guilford County, North Carolina, for 8 years; in Spartanburg, South Carolina, for 14 years; in Christian County, Kentucky, for 24 years; and in Morgan County, Illinois, for 9 years.
   d. 1836, Morgan County, Illinois
   Children:
   (1) William James: b. 1775; m. 1808, Elizabeth Hail
   (2) Drury Allen: b. 1776; m. 1790, Nancy Smith
   (3) Winney: b. 1778; m. 1792, Edward Smith
   (4) Stephen: b. 1779; m. 1814, Barbara Chrisman
   (5) John William: b. 1782; m. (1) 1802, Hester Boney;
   m. (2) 1846, Lucy Jones
   (6) Amy: b. 1785; m. 1806, John Thompson
   (7) Frances: b. 1787; m. 1809, Lewis W. Jones
   (8) Elizabeth: b. 1788; m. 1812, Thomas Jones
   (9) Isham Drury: b. 1790; m. 1824, Cynthia Haggard
   (10) Sarah: b. 1794; m. 1811, Michael Chrisman
   (11) Nancy: b. 1796; m. 1811, John Chrisman
7. Randolph Bobbitt: b. 1755, Granville (now Warren) County, North Carolina;
   m. 1774, Elizabeth Harris, daughter of Charles Harris and Rachel (Edgerton), whose plantation adjoined that of Randolph's parents.
   d. 1804. Elizabeth lived to be 90, dying in 1850.
   Children:
   (1) John Richard: b. 1775; d. 1823
   (2) Rebecca: b. 1776; m. — Yarborough
   (3) Lewis Charles: b. 1784; d. 1836
   (4) Sarah: b. 1790; m. — Woods
   (5) William: b. 1791
   (6) Anthony: b. 1796
   (7) Frederick Harris: b. 1800; lived and died in Franklin County, North Carolina, where his descendants are today
8. Sally Bobbitt: b. 1758, Granville (now Warren) County, North Carolina;
   m. James Deardon. It is thought they migrated to South Carolina.
9. William Bobbitt: b. 1761, Granville (now Warren) County, North Carolina;
   m. 1784, Susannah James, daughter of Charles James. Her brother George married Amy Bobbitt (#10 infra). Susannah and her brother George were 1st cousins to Elizabeth who married Isham (see #6 supra).
   William served in the Revolutionary War. Afterwards he worked as a plantation overseer and foreman and moved from place to place. They lived briefly in Anson County, North Carolina, then moved to Chester County, South Carolina.
   d. 1839, Chester County, South Carolina. Susannah died in 1844.
   Children:
   (1) Temperance: b. 1785
   (2) James: b. 1786. James left South Carolina in 1827 and joined his 1st cousin Arthur (Stephen's son) in Madison County, Tennessee.

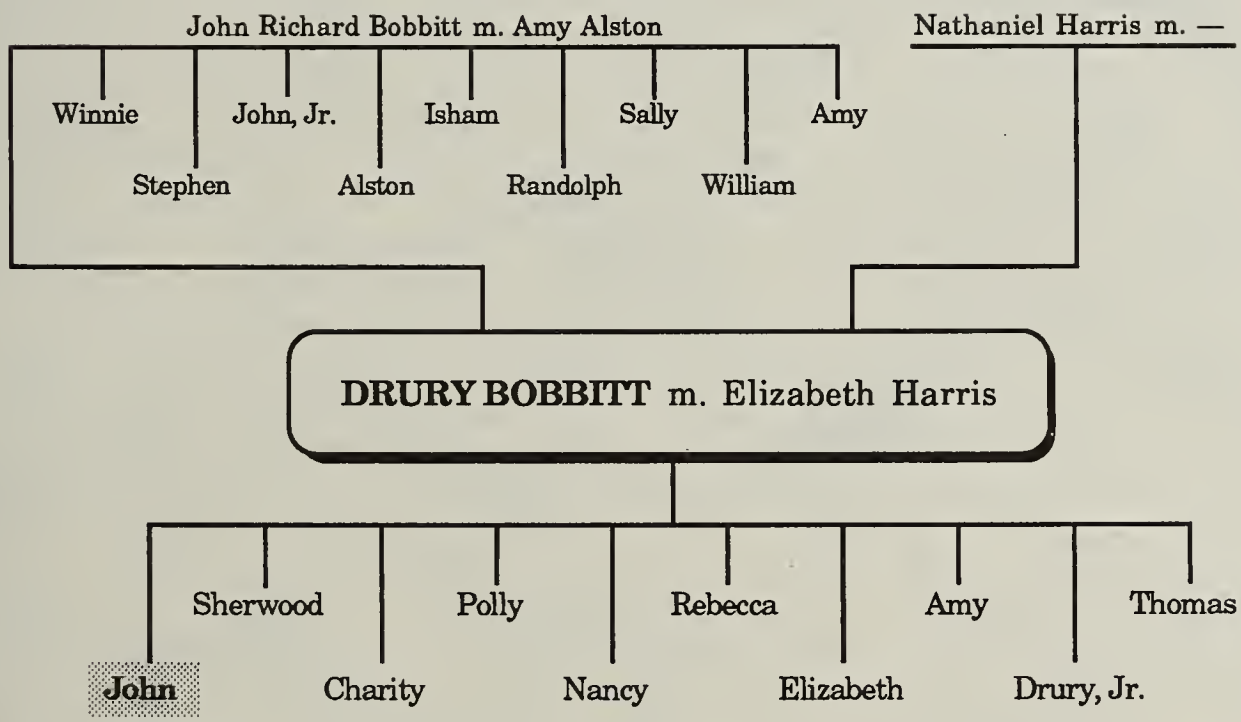
About 1845 both families moved to nearby Gibson County, Tennessee, adjoining Weakley County.

(3) Lemuel: b. 1787
(4) Susannah: b. 1789
(5) John: b. 1790
(6) Thomas: b. 1791
(7) William: b. 1794
(8) Sarah: b. 1795
(9) Martha; b. 1798
(10) Stephen: b. 1806

10. Amy Bobbitt: b. 1763, Granville (now Warren) County, North Carolina; m. George James, son of Charles James and brother of Susannah who married #9 supra. They are believed to have moved to South Carolina.

[See "Drury Bobbitt"—son]

DRURY BOBBITT
(1744–1826)



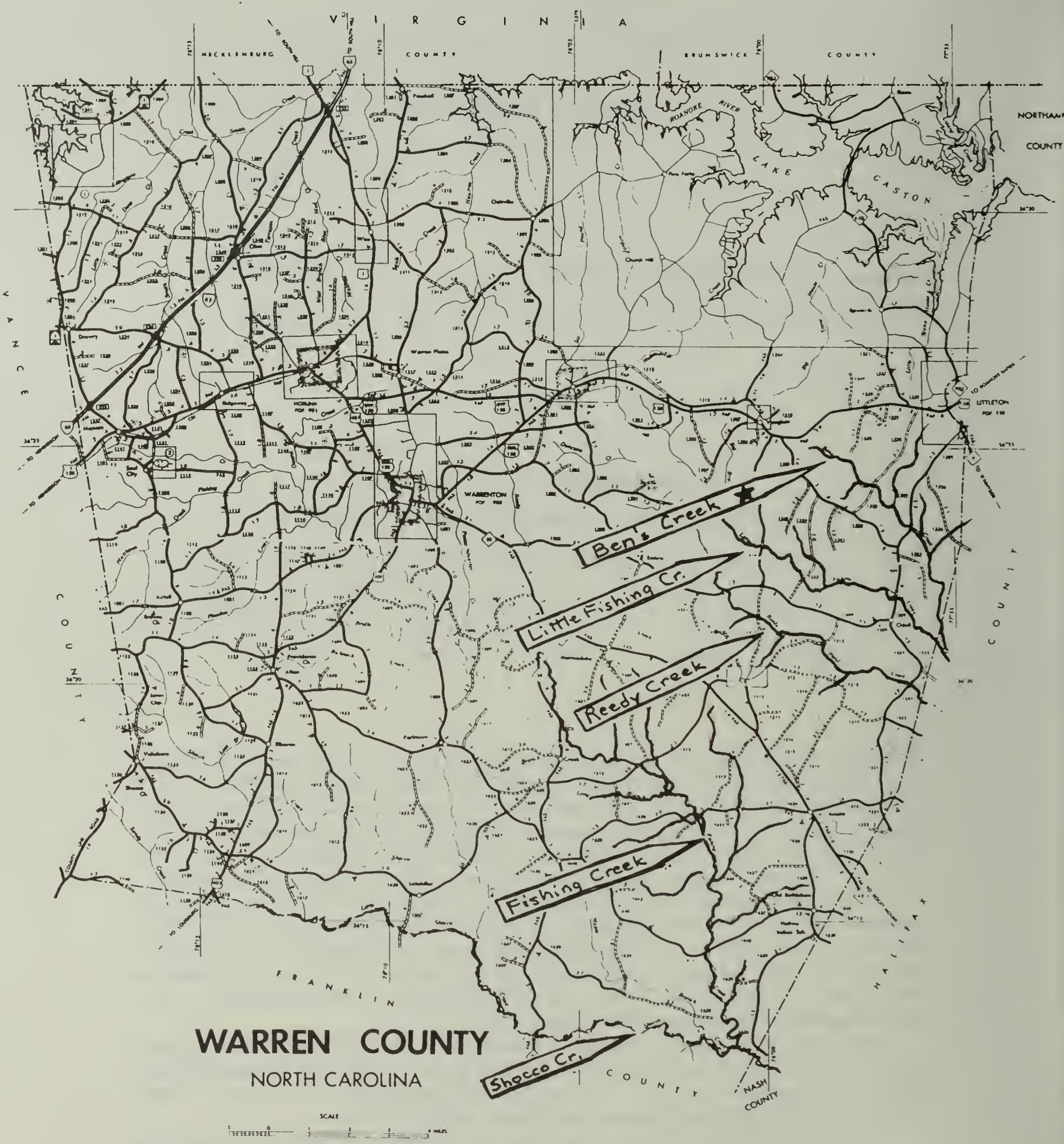
DRURY BOBBITT was the oldest of the ten children of John Richard Bobbitt and Amy Alston. He was born in 1744 in Edgecombe County, North Carolina, on land that became Granville, then Bute, and now is in the eastern part of present-day Warren County. He was the first of numerous Bobbitts to be named Drury. In 1761, at the age of seventeen, he married Elizabeth Harris, daughter of Nathaniel Harris. They were married over fifty years and had four sons and six daughters.

Drury Bobbitt was first mentioned in the records of Bute County in a deed recorded 16 July 1767[1] when his father John Bobbitt, Sr. (i.e., John Richard Bobbitt) sold Peter Smart 295 acres of land on Reedy Branch and Rocky Branch except for two acres around the Baptist Meeting House and spring. Drury was a witness, as was neighbor Joseph Green. On 13 May 1768 and again 15 November 1769, he was one of twelve petit jurymen in Bute County court.

The 1771 Bute County tax list enumerated by Col. William Person showed Drury as head of his own household with one slave. Drury and Elizabeth's sons were too young to be counted. Also on Colonel Person's list were Drury's father, John R. Bobbitt, with sons Stephen and Isham, and four slaves.

The next record for Drury is the first of two that show him acquiring land on Ben's Creek. Ben's Creek is the uppermost of the five creeks in present-day Warren County that flow southeast and eventually join and flow into the Tar River

1. Bute County, North Carolina, Book 2, p. 42.



DRURY BOBBITT OWNED OVER 600 ACRES
ON BOTH SIDES OF BEN'S CREEK FROM 1773–1814

and on to the coast. Looking at the modern highway map you see Ben's Creek, Little Fishing Creek, Reedy Creek, Fishing Creek, and Shocco Creek (that divides Warren and Franklin counties). On 27 January 1773 Lewis Harris of Southampton County, Virginia, sold Drury 479 acres of land in the Parish of St. John, Bute County (now Warren County),[2] on the south side of Ben's Creek for 200 pounds proclamation money. [See map, p. 273] Nathaniel Harris, Drury's father-in-law, was one of the witnesses. A month later Drury added to his holdings on Ben's Creek, this tract being 110 acres on the north side of the creek. The deed, dated 15 February 1773, was virtually a gift. John Alston, his maternal grandfather in Halifax County (North Carolina), in consideration of two pounds specie, gave Drury the land, "it being in an area granted by the order of the court for the use and profit of a mill, with all woods, water courses, timbers, trees, and low lands." Now Drury had increased his taxable land by 589 acres. Soon one of Drury's brothers bought land nearby: on 1 December 1773, Stephen Bobbitt purchased 250 acres on Piney Branch of Ben's Creek, beginning on Thomas Person's line to Michael Harris' line. Drury was one of the witnesses.

In May Court 1774 Drury was one of the road overseers appointed, and his crew was to clear the road "from Youngs Ordinary [inn] to the [then Bute/Halifax] County Line." In the last court session of 1779, before Bute was abolished and Warren and Franklin counties created from it, Drury Bobbitt was on the grand jury. In 1786 the North Carolina State census of Warren County was enumerated and showed three males in Drury's family in addition to himself, seven females, and twenty-five slaves. At this time we can assume Drury was a prosperous planter. One son, Sherwood, had served in the American Revolution and was head of his own household in adjoining Halifax County. In the first federal census, taken in 1790, Drury had one son under sixteen at home (Thomas), three females, and nine slaves. Three of his sons and three of his daughters were married and away from home by 1790, and he probably had given slaves to them.

John Richard Bobbitt, the father of Drury (Sr., of this chapter), died in 1791. Drury, Sr., and his wife Elizabeth (Harris) continued to live on Ben's Creek in the eastern part of Warren County, not far from the western line of Halifax County. They were enumerated in the 1800 Warren County Census, and son Drury, Jr., and his wife Lavina with their oldest son William lived in their household too. In 1810 the census showed Drury (Sr.) and Elizabeth's oldest son, John (my line), and penultimate son, Drury, Jr., were living with their families on Ben's Creek. An 1812 tax list for Warren County showed eleven male Bobbitts of various relationships—father, son, brother, cousin—recorded just in Captain Snow's district that included Ben's Creek.

Despite the comparative wealth and success the Bobbitts had enjoyed in the 1700s, the early 1800s were difficult years. After the War of 1812 there is much evidence that the sons of John Richard Bobbitt encountered economic difficulties. This was certainly true for Drury and Elizabeth (Harris) Bobbitt. The nation was suffering from an economic depression. This, aggravated by the increased tax burden imposed by the various governmental entities, and no doubt complicated by problems we are unaware of today, was too much for the Drury Bobbitt, Sr., family to weather.

On 29 February 1813 Drury sold two slaves to Xanthus Snow in order to help pay taxes and debts. John Bobbitt, my ancestor who was Drury's oldest son, was in debt and Drury tried to help him. Drury was seventy years old, and John fifty-two. Two instruments executed in Warren County on 20 October 1814—one by Drury, Sr., and

---

2. Bute County, North Carolina, Book 5, p. 126.

one by John—tell the story.[3] Drury conveyed to son John his 579 (*sic*) acres of land on the south side of Ben's Creek for $2,500 paid "or secured to be paid," and in a separate instrument, which was in effect a mortgage, John pledged the land (with James Harris of Halifax County being trustee) to secure a debt of $1220.67 to Richard Jones of Halifax. Witnesses to both deeds were John and Willis Alston, David Brodie, and Richard Carter. These 579 acres were where the families of Drury Bobbitt, Sr., and his sons John and Drury, Jr., all lived. Apparently there was a foreclosure, because these were the last records of the Drury Bobbitt family recorded in Warren County, North Carolina.

A record in adjoining Halifax County on 16 May 1815[4] shows that Drury Bobbitt of Warren County gave to his son Sherwood Bobbitt of Halifax County 100 acres of land "adjoining the mouth of Lick Branch, the road, and the former lands of Moseley on Ben's Creek." Witnesses were Drury's son John (my ancestor) and Sherwood's son William. This appears to be the only land Drury still owned after losing the 579-acre homestead tract in Warren County. In disposing of it too, he was free to make a late-in-life attempt to begin a new life elsewhere.

There is no mention of a Bobbitt in the Cross Index for Deeds in Moore County, but sometime between 1815 and 1819 Drury Bobbitt, Sr., and his oldest son, my ancestor John, moved with their families ca. 135 miles southwest to settle in Moore County, North Carolina.[5] By 1816 there was a much traveled wagon road going south from Warrenton through Louisburg and Raleigh to Fayetteville and on beyond. Half way between Raleigh and Fayetteville the Bobbitts went west twenty or thirty miles into Moore County.[6]

WARREN COUNTY TO MOORE COUNTY, NORTH CAROLINA
CA. 1817

The Moore County 1820 Census shows the households of Drury Bobbitt, Sr. (of this chapter), his son John Bobbitt, his grandson Drury Bobbitt who recently remarried, and Thomas Bobbitt, who was Sherwood's son and therefore another of Drury, Sr.,'s grandsons. (Thomas' wife was Lucy H. Moss of Halifax County.) Supposedly the family of Green Bobbitt (my line), who was John's youngest child and therefore another of Drury's grandsons, was enumerated in John's household in 1820. There is also enumerated the household of another Green Bobbitt, who was a son of Sherwood's.

---

3. Warren County, North Carolina, Book 19, pp. 398, 399.
4. Halifax County, North Carolina, Book 23, p. 215.
5. My John's oldest son Drury, a thirty-eight year old widower, married Frances Moss of Halifax County in 1817. It is possible Drury, Sr., and John did not move to Moore County until after John's son remarried, as the newlyweds went to Moore County too and were enumerated in the 1820 census there.
6. Modern Interstate 95 and U.S. 301 replaced the old road.

Drury, Sr.,'s two younger sons, Drury, Jr., and Thomas, did not move to Moore County as their father, brother John, and the others did. Drury, Jr., a widower, moved to Orange County, North Carolina, (and later to Maury County, Tennessee), and Thomas and his family moved to Twiggs County, Georgia.

It is believed that Drury, Sr., was a widower when he moved to Moore County in his early seventies, Elizabeth (Harris) Bobbitt having died in 1814 while the family was still on Ben's Creek in eastern Warren County. Drury Bobbitt, who had a substantial amount of material wealth and lost it all, died in the spring of 1826 in Moore County at the age of eighty-two. Drury Bobbitt, Jr., was appointed administrator of his father's estate, and on 13 May 1826 he submitted to the court an inventory and account of sales.[7] Unfortunately, this is not the kind of account that included the buyers' names, which would have added information as to who his neighbors were in Moore County, but those records reassure us that Drury, Sr., did have a respectable amount of personal property at the time of his death, including one slave and "1 lot of Old Books." Drury Bobbitt's and Thomas Jefferson's life spans almost coincided. It would have been no comfort to Drury, but Jefferson, who died 4 July 1826 at the age of eighty-three, was $107,273.63 in debt.

We descendants know so little about Drury and Elizabeth (Harris) Bobbitt, who I somehow believe were two of our ancestors who would have a wonderfully interesting story to tell about their lives and ten children. We regret we have only the barest facts, as deeds and dates do not reveal the character, values, aspirations, religious beliefs, decisions, and struggles of Drury Bobbitt and his family.

Children of Drury Bobbitt and Elizabeth (Harris):

1. JOHN BOBBITT — MY DIRECT LINE
   Born: 1762, Granville (now Warren) County, North Carolina
   Married: ca. 1779, Mary Hazelwood, the daughter of Ann and Randolph Hazelwood
   Died: 1828 or 1829, Moore County, North Carolina
   Children: Drury, Holly, James W., Lively, Rebecca, Nancy, Simpson, Green (my line)
   [See "John Bobbitt" chapter]

2. Sherwood Haywood Bobbitt: b. 1763, Granville (now Warren) County, North Carolina, and named for Sherwood Haywood who surveyed land for William, John Richard, and Lewis Bobbitt, and is thought (no proof) to have married an aunt of Sherwood's father;
   m. 1779, Sarah Burrows of Halifax County, North Carolina;
   d. November 1827, Halifax County, North Carolina. In his will Sherwood mentioned a claim on the estate of his deceased father (Drury) in Moore County, North Carolina.
   Children:
   (1) Green: b. 1781
   (2) William: b. 1785; m. Sarah Allen, 1805
   (3) Thomas: b. 1788; m. Lucy H. Moss. Lucy was probably the younger sister of Frances Moss, the 2d wife of Thomas' 1st cousin Drury (son of John Bobbitt, #1 supra). Both couples lived near their grandfather Drury (of this chapter) in Moore County by 1820.
   (4) Martha: b. 1790; m. 1807, Richard Moss, Jr.

---

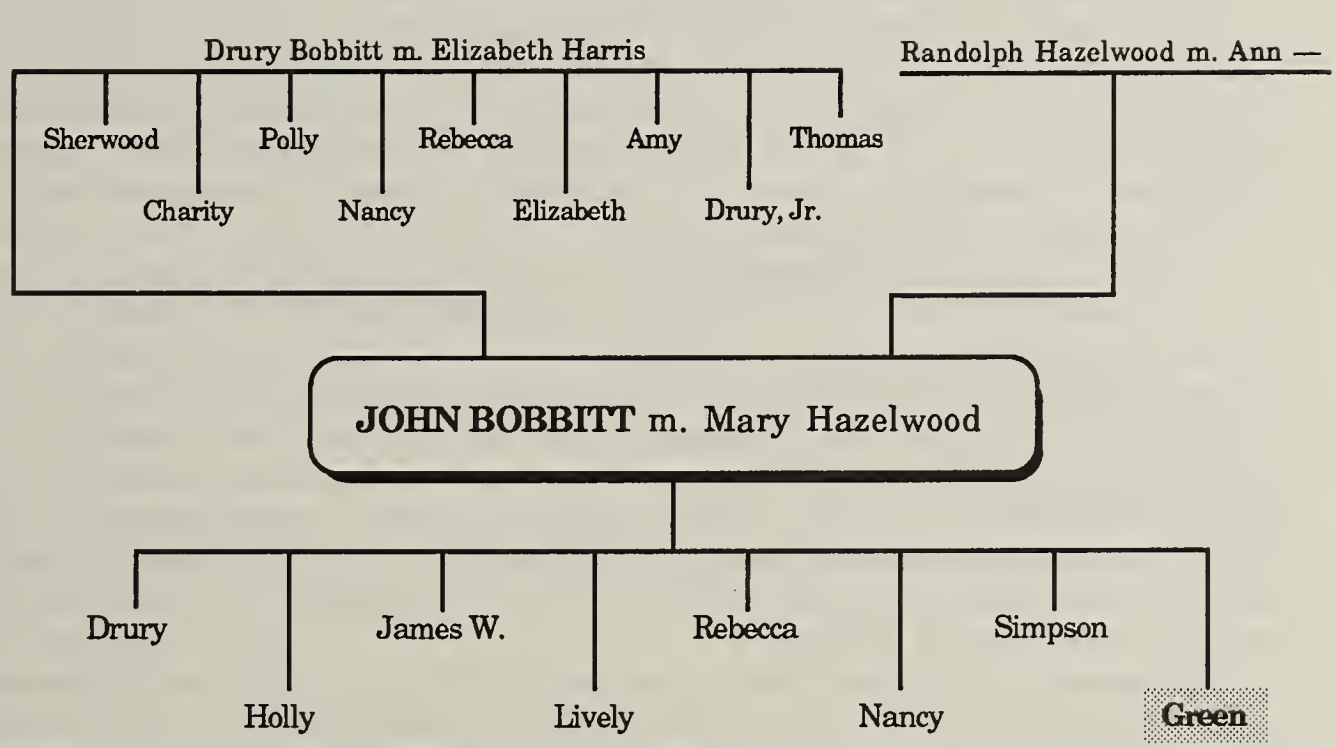
7. Moore County, North Carolina, Inventory Book B, pp. 107, 108. (This was found in Moore County, as there is no Book B at North Carolina State Archives.)

(5) Rebecca: b. 1794; m. 1818, Gideon C. Moss
(6) Betsy: b. 1797; m. unknown
(7) Mary: b. 1805; m. 1825, James Browning
(8) S. Haywood, Jr.: b. 1806; m. 1825, Eliza Ann Pierce

3. Charity Bobbitt: b. 1764, Bute (now Warren) County, North Carolina
4. Polly Bobbitt: b. 1766, Bute (now Warren) County, North Carolina
5. Nancy Bobbitt: b. 1768, Bute (now Warren) County, North Carolina
6. Rebecca Bobbitt: b. 1770, Bute (now Warren) County, North Carolina
7. Elizabeth Bobbitt: b. 1771, Bute (now Warren) County, North Carolina
8. Amy Bobbitt: b. 1772, Bute (now Warren) County, North Carolina
9. Drury Bobbitt, Jr.: b. 1773, Bute (now Warren) County, North Carolina;
   m. 1796, Lavina Park, daughter of William Park of Warren County, North Carolina. They lived with his father, Drury, Sr.
   Lavina died in 1804 and Drury, Jr., did not remarry, but by 1820 had moved to Orange County, North Carolina, with his children and one of his sisters, and later was in Maury County, Tennessee.
   d. 1838, Maury County, Tennessee
   Children:
   (1) William: b. 1797;
      m. ante-1820, Sarah Woody. They lived in Orange County, North Carolina, then in 1823 moved to Maury County, Tennessee, and after 1838 to Mississippi.
   (2) Sarah: b. 1802;
      m. (1) 1823, Richard B. Hight (of North Carolina) in Maury County, Tennessee;
      m. (2) 1838, John Atkinson in Maury County
   (3) Emily: b. 1804;
      m. 1829, Jacob Robison in Maury County, Tennessee
10. Thomas Bobbitt: b. 1776, Bute (now Warren) County, North Carolina;
    m. ante-1800, Louise —. They moved to Twiggs County, Georgia.

[See "John Bobbitt"—son]

JOHN BOBBITT
(1762–1828/29)



JOHN BOBBITT was the son of Drury Bobbitt and Elizabeth Harris, and like his father before him, he was the oldest of ten children. He was born in 1762 in Granville County, North Carolina, on his father's plantation on Ben's Creek. This land, which fell into Bute County two years after John was born, has been part of present day Warren County since 1779.

John Bobbitt married Mary Hazelwood, daughter of Ann — and Randolph Hazelwood, and their first child was born in 1779 and named Drury for John's father. John had a brother just a year younger, Sherwood, who married in 1779 also and then had service in the Revolutionary Army. There is no record that my John was a soldier, and he apparently helped his father run the Ben's Creek plantation that was over 600 acres. When Sherwood finished his War service, he settled in adjoining Halifax County. In addition to Sherwood, John had eight other siblings, six sisters and two young brothers, Drury, Jr., and Thomas, who were six and three years old respectively when John and Mary Hazelwood married.

The first federal census in 1790 lists eight Bobbitts who were Heads of Households in Warren County, North Carolina,[1] one of whom was Drury (John's father) and three of whom were Stephen, John [Jr.], and Randolph (John's uncles). If our twenty-eight year old John is the other John who was enumerated along with them, the information on "males under 16" and "females" is incorrect. If he is not

1. Before relating them to John (of this chapter), it should be made clear that there were omissions in the enumerations and they were not without error.

that John, he cannot be accounted for in 1790. In other words, if he and his family were not living on his father's land on Ben's Creek in Warren County, his whereabouts 1790–1800 are unknown.[2]

Several of John and Mary's children were married and away from home by the time the 1810 Warren County census was taken. John is shown on Captain Snow's 1812 tax list. In 1814 Holly, who was John and Mary's oldest daughter and a widow, remarried. Two of the children of her first marriage were listed as orphans, and their grandfather, John, was appointed their guardian until Holly's first husband's estate was settled in 1823.

The specific circumstances are not known, but the economic situation of John Bobbitt and his father Drury rapidly deteriorated in the second decade of the 1800s. John was in debt to Richard Jones of Halifax County, and in 1814 Drury deeded the family plantation over to John. John mortgaged the property and it was foreclosed on and sold to satisfy the debt. The specific records for this are mentioned in the previous chapter on Drury.

After the loss of the 579-acre plantation, in 1815 John's father gave his remaining 100 acres to his son Sherwood who lived in adjoining Halifax County. Within a year or two John and Mary, son Drury, John's father Drury (now a widower), and two sons of his brother Sherwood all moved to Moore County, North Carolina. [See map, p. 286] John and Mary's youngest child, my ancestor Green, joined the others in 1818 or 1819 with his wife Barbara (Finch) and their two little daughters. All were enumerated in the 1820 census of Moore County, living near one another. Drury, the family patriarch, was in his early seventies, but had chosen to make the move with the younger generation from the area where he had lived all his life in eastern (now) Warren County.

Because families lived together and only the name of the head of the household was given, little is known of John Bobbitt's daughters. There may have been more children who lived to maturity than those listed below, but their names are unknown. John's father, Drury, died in 1826 in Moore County at the age of eighty-two. It is thought that John Bobbitt died not long thereafter, in 1828 or 1829, at the approximate age of sixty-six. According to the *Bobbitt* book, Mary (Hazelwood) Bobbitt survived John and lived with a married daughter in Moore County. The other married children migrated to Tennessee (mine), Kentucky, Illinois, and Alabama.

Children of John Bobbitt and Mary (Hazelwood):

1. Drury Bobbitt: b. 1779, Bute (now Warren) County, North Carolina
   m. (1) 1804, Rebecca Burrows, daughter of James Burrows;
   m. (2) 1817, Frances Moss, daughter of Richard Moss of Halifax County, North Carolina; Drury and Frances moved to Moore County, North Carolina, probably in 1817 after their marriage. About 1827/28 they moved to Montgomery County, Tennessee, and to Butler County, Kentucky, in 1835.
   d. 1842, Butler County, Kentucky.
   Children of 1st marriage:
   (1) Rebecca: b. 1805 in North Carolina
   (2) John James: b. 1807

---

2. The author sees no basis for saying John Bobbitt was in Sampson County, North Carolina, a statement made but not documented by John W. Bobbitt in his *The Bobbitt Family in America*, 1985, pp. 155, 355. He states John was incorrectly identified as "David" Bobbitt. However, the microfilm for North Carolina counties (vol. 2, pp. 114–133) shows there was no Bobbitt enumerated in Sampson County, although there was a David in Tyrrell County (vol. 1, p. 375.)

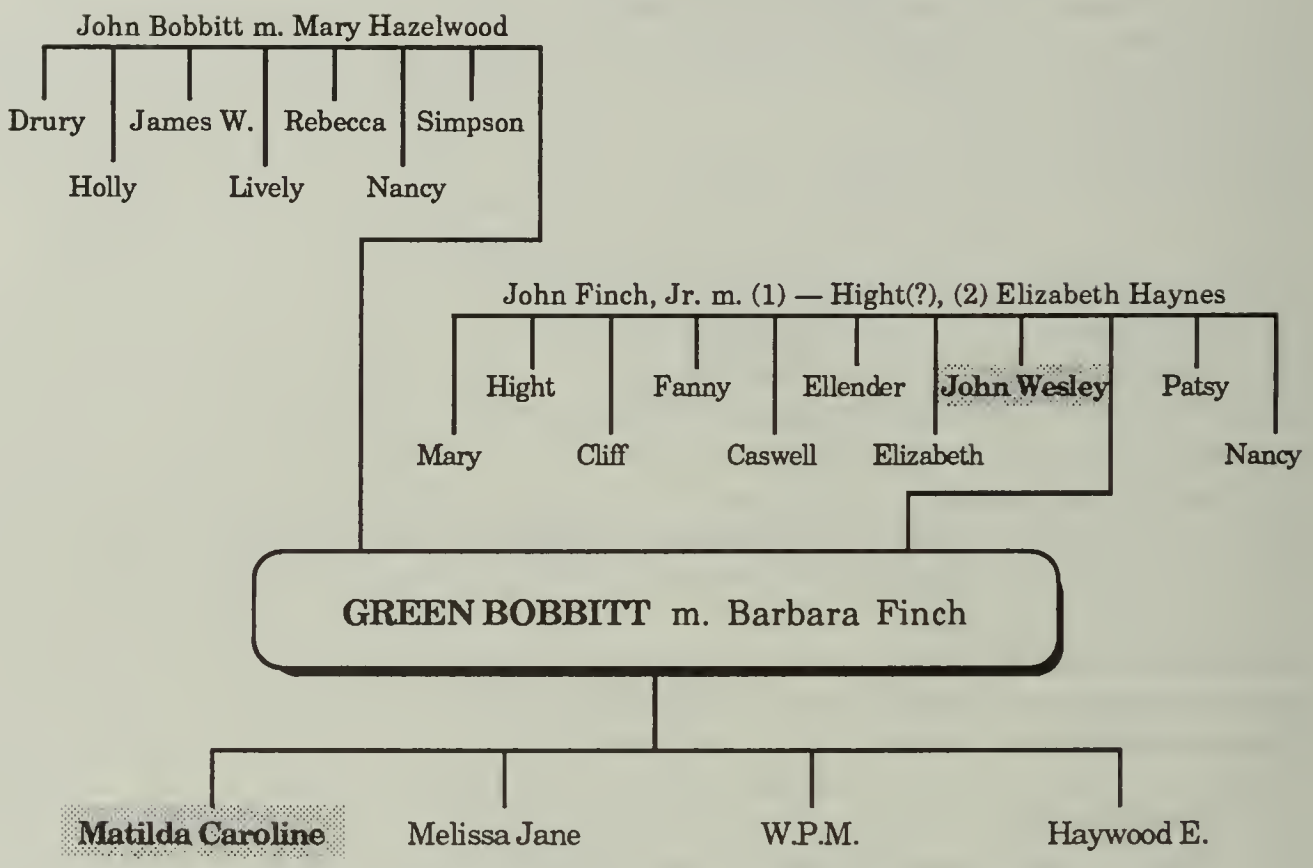
(3) Green W.: b. 1811
Children of 2d marriage:
(4) Drury Richard: b. 1818
(5) Joseph J.: b. 1819
(6) John: b. 1820
(7) Frances: b. 1821
(8) Elizabeth: b. 1824
(9) Edward William: b. 1825
(10) Dr. Nicholas: b. 1827
(11) Thomas M.: b. 1828 in Tennessee
(12) Green D.: b. 1830 in Kentucky
(13) Richard: b. 1831
(14) Julie: b. 1832
(15) Samuel and Lemuel: b. 1834

2. Holly Bobbitt: b. 1780, Warren County, North Carolina
m. (1) 1798, William Burrow, Jr., who died 1808
m. (2) 1814, Augustine Balthrop
Children:
(1) Archibald D. Burrow: b. 1799
(2) Jim W. Burrow
(3) Sabrina Burrow
(4) Maria Burrow
(5) Holly W. Burrow: m. Pleasant Ellington, Warren County
3. James W. Bobbitt: b. 1781
4. Lively Bobbitt: b. 1782
5. Rebecca Bobbitt: b. 1783
6. Nancy Bobbitt: b. 1786
7. Simpson Bobbitt: b. 1788

8. GREEN BOBBITT MY DIRECT LINE
Born: 1791, probably Warren County, North Carolina
Married: 18 June 1813, Barbara Finch, daughter of John Finch, Jr., and his 2d wife Elizabeth (Haynes); Granville County, North Carolina
Died: 1838 in North Carolina or Tennessee
Children: Matilda Caroline (my line), Melissa Jane, William P. M., Haywood Edison

[See "Green Bobbitt"—son]

GREEN BOBBITT
(1791–1838)



GREEN BOBBITT was the youngest child of John Bobbitt and Mary Hazelwood. His parents' "home base" was Ben's Creek in Warren County, North Carolina, and that is probably where Green Bobbitt was born in 1791. His father has not been located in the 1790 or 1800 census, but it is assumed Green grew up in Warren County, North Carolina.[1]

Anyone who has studied the Bobbitt family is struck by the frequent use of the name Green. The Greens and Bobbitts were early neighbors in Charles City County, Virginia, and by 1700 two sons of our immigrant ancestor William Bobbitt of Wales (1649–1703) had married Green sisters. Both of these lines, William, Jr., and our John "of Chowan" line, passed down the name Green through the generations.

In the 1810 Warren County Census that showed the household of Green's father, there was no male enumerated who was Green's age. Green was nineteen and apparently was moving around in North Carolina, generally working for plantation owners. Being the youngest of eight children of a man who through unfortunate circumstances was about to lose the family plantation, Green certainly inherited no land. By 1813 Green was in the upper part of Wake County near where it adjoins

1. See footnote 2 in previous chapter.

Granville County, living with relatives. There were a number of Bobbitts there, including some in Raleigh.

In 1813 twenty-two year old Green Bobbitt met and married eighteen year old Barbara Finch, daughter of John Finch, Jr., and his second wife Elizabeth Haynes, in Granville County, North Carolina [see "John Finch, Jr." chapter]. In 1788 Barbara's father had been listed in the Epping Forest District of Granville County; in 1805, having moved south about fifteen miles, he was listed as "of Franklin County" when he bought land on Smith's Creek in Granville County from Turner Bobbitt; in 1813 he was listed in the Beaver Dam District of Granville County. It is not beyond reason that Green might have been working on his forty-nine year old cousin Turner's plantation. Turner was a very large landowner, and the Finches lived nearby. Turner's younger brother Britton had married John Finch, Jr.,'s daughter Fanny in 1803, and in 1805 Turner had sold land to John Finch, Jr. Turner's oldest son, John B. Bobbitt (later a graduate of the University of North Carolina) and John Finch, Jr.,'s son Caswell had both enlisted from Franklin County in the War of 1812. John Finch, Jr., had land in the general area where the counties of Granville, Wake, and Franklin converge, with New Light, Beaver Dam, and Smith creeks mentioned on deeds. Turner Bobbitt had land in the same area. This does not prove that Green Bobbitt met his future wife, Barbara Finch, when he was working for Turner Bobbitt—but it is possible, and in 1813 Green was definitely where Bobbitt relatives and Finches were living.

The date of Green Bobbitt and Barbara Finch's marriage bond was 8 June 1813, and it was recorded in Granville County, North Carolina, with William Bowen (Bowers?) the bondsman. They married ten days later, 18 June 1813. Their first child, my ancestor Matilda Caroline, was born in 1814 in Raleigh. Barbara's parents, John and Elizabeth (Haynes) Finch, as well as Green's cousin Turner Bobbitt, lived less than twenty miles north of Raleigh.

It was just at this time, 1814, that Green's father was having financial difficulties. Green's parents (John and Mary Hazelwood Bobbitt), his married siblings, and his grandfather Drury lived on the south side of Ben's Creek in the mid- or upper-eastern part of Warren County. They lost the 579-acre plantation, and grandfather Drury gave Green's Uncle Sherwood, who lived across the line in Halifax County, a final 100-acre tract. Green's oldest brother Drury, Jr., whose first wife had died, married a Halifax County girl in 1817. It was probably in 1817 or 1818 that a number of these relatives of Green's moved to Moore County, North Carolina.

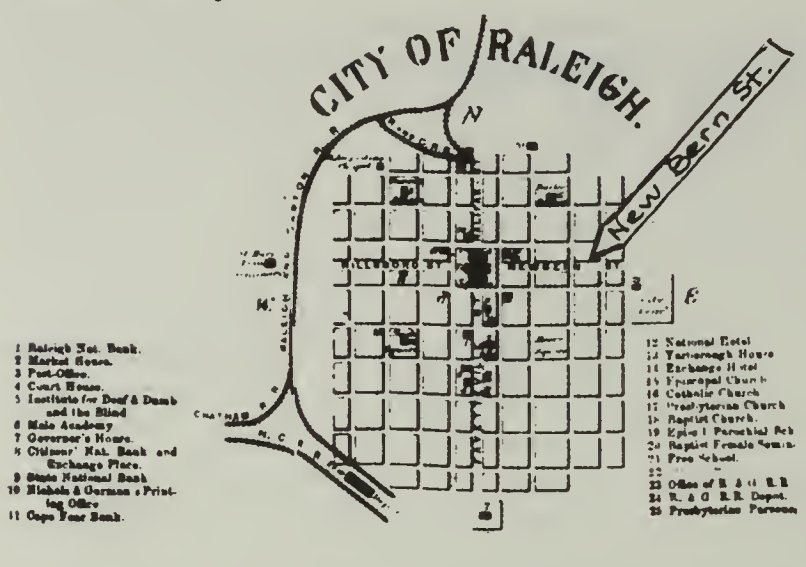
It was sometime between 1817 (when their second daughter Melissa Jane was born in or near Raleigh) and 1820 that Green and Barbara (Finch) Bobbitt went to Moore County too, probably in 1819. The 1820 Moore County Census shows several separate Bobbitt households located near one another: Drury, Green's grandfather; John, Green's father; Drury, Jr., Green's oldest brother; and Thomas and Green,[2] Green's first cousins who were his Uncle Sherwood's sons. Our Green Bobbitt and his wife Barbara (Finch) and their children apparently were enumerated in Green's parents' household.

In 1820 Green was twenty-nine, Barbara twenty-five, and they had three daughters under ten years of age. My ancestor Matilda Caroline was six, a now unknown daughter was next, and Melissa Jane was three. In 1823 William P. M. was born in North Carolina, probably in Moore or Wake County. He was Green and Barbara's first son, or at least the first son there is a record for who lived to

---

2. This may have been the Green Bobbitt (b. 1781) who, along with Franklin Hight and a William Montgomery (b. ca. 1775), bought items at an estate sale 1 December 1812 (Warren County Abstracts to Will Books, #17, p. 187).

maturity. The family had not made Moore County their home, but moved back to Wake County.



Their residing in Raleigh is known because Matilda Caroline went to school at the Raleigh Academy. Watson Bradley of Nashville, Tennessee, sent me a copy of a certificate the Academy awarded Matilda for "punctual attendance, good recitations, and correct behavior." Part of the time Green Bobbitt and his family lived on New Bern Street "at the East side of the City of Raleigh." (New Bern Street ran east from the center of Union [Capitol] Square.) On 29 July 1826 Green bought "a quarter of an acre lot" from Maria Stuart for $100.[3] Adjoining neighbors mentioned were — Poole and Temperance Natt.[4]

Slightly over six months later[5] on 3 February 1827 Green sold a quarter of an acre lot in Raleigh, adjoining William H. Haywood "and others," to Alice Price for $70. Since there is no description in this second deed, we cannot positively say it was the same lot he bought from Maria Stuart for $100, but both lots were "a quarter of an acre" in size and were in Raleigh. There may be no connection, but five years later Green and Barbara named their youngest son Haywood, the same name as their adjoining neighbor, William H. Haywood. (In 1842 William H. Haywood of Raleigh was elected a United States Senator.)

There are two pieces of information I can only guess have any relevance to Green Bobbitt, but mention them as they add to the Finch-Bobbitt connections in Granville, Franklin, and Wake counties. The *Raleigh Minerva* reported on 26 November 1819: "In this [Wake] County died on Saturday last [20 November 1819] Mr. Henry Finch, a respectable farmer,...interred on Sunday with masonic honors...." I do not know how he was related to Barbara (Finch) Bobbitt's father, John Finch, Jr. Henry was living in Wake County before 1805. Also, Lively (Hight), second wife of Turner Bobbitt's father, William M. Bobbitt, died in Franklin County in 1820, and in 1821 William went to Raleigh to live with a married daughter until his death, 6 June 1825, at the age of eighty-seven. I wonder if Green and Matilda and their children lived anywhere near these relatives.

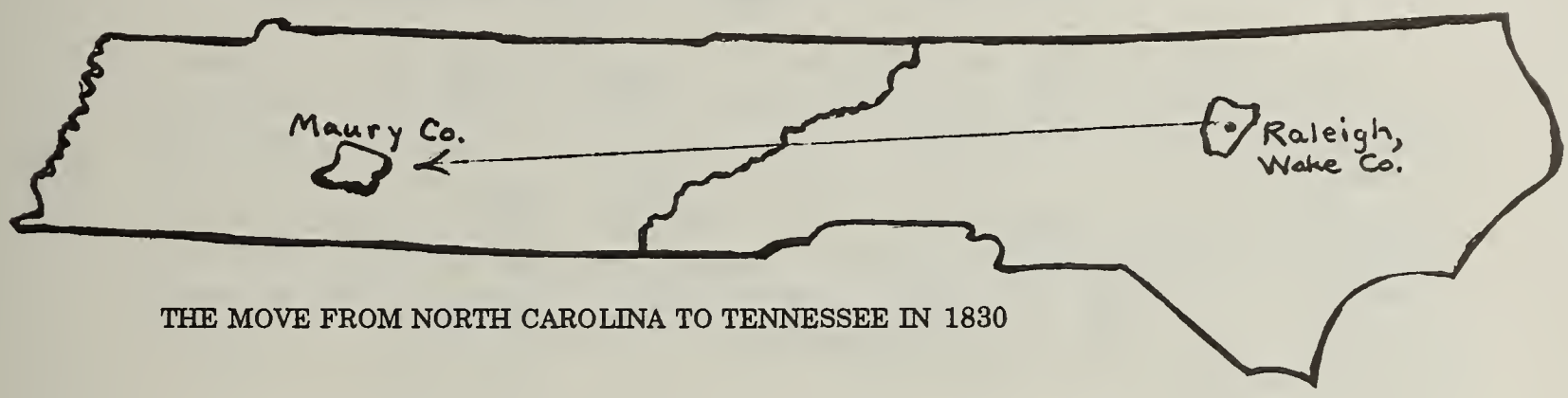
Green Bobbitt was a bondsman twice while living in Raleigh. The Wake County marriage records show him as Grim (*sic*) Bobbitt on the marriage bond of Jesse Manuel and Eliza Harris on 15 August 1825; he was also on the marriage bond of Absalom Mangum and Polly Hall 16 June 1827. Bobbitts had close associations with the Harrises and the Mangums, and, in fact, the wife of Turner Bobbitt (mentioned at the top of p. 293) was Elizabeth Mangum.

Green's grandfather, Drury, died in Moore County in 1826. On 31 January 1828 Green and Barbara's oldest daughter, Matilda Caroline, married William B. Montgomery in Raleigh, with George W. Montgomery the bondsman. [See "George W. Montgomery *Excursus*" chapter] In 1828 or 1829 Green's father, John,

---

3. Wake County, North Carolina, Deed Book 9, p. 199.
4. An indication of how lots quickly appreciated in value is shown by the fact that in 1819 lots on the east side had averaged about $50 for a whole acre.
5. Wake County Deed Book 7, pp. 371, 372.

died in Moore County. In 1830 Green and his family left North Carolina and moved to Maury County, Tennessee, with some relatives and were enumerated in the 1830 census of that middle-Tennessee county in their own household.[6] Matilda had already moved (1829/30) to northwest Tennessee with her husband William B. Montgomery in time to be enumerated there in the 1830 census of Weakley County.



THE MOVE FROM NORTH CAROLINA TO TENNESSEE IN 1830

The 1830 Maury County, Tennessee, Census (p. 391) reads:

1 male	30–40 years	Green Bobbitt
1 male	5–10 years	[William P. M.]
1 female	30–40 years	[Green's wife Barbara]
1 female	15–20 years	[the unknown daughter, ca. 15, as daughter Matilda was married and in Weakley County, Tennessee]
2 females	10–15 years	[Melissa Jane and another unknown female]

Green and Barbara's second known daughter, Melissa Jane, married Jeremiah W. ("Jerry") Swaim on 23 October 1831. Their marriage probably took place in Maury County, Tennessee, where some Bobbitts, Swaims, and Hights were living. Melissa and J. W. Swaim moved northwest to Weakley County, Tennessee, where Melissa's sister Matilda and her husband William Montgomery had moved by 1830. Melissa and Jerry's first child was born in Weakley County in late 1833.

In the meantime Green and Barbara had left Maury County after a brief time and returned to North Carolina, where their last child, Haywood Edison, was born in 1832 (as recorded in some censuses and on his 1916 death certificate). The years 1832 through 1839 are a nebulous time concerning the whereabouts of Green and Barbara and their sons, W. P. M. (born 1823) and Haywood (born 1832), and it is not known just where they lived. They may have been in North Carolina, but where or near whom is not known. They may have gone to Weakley County where their two married daughters, Matilda Montgomery and Melissa Swaim, were living.

It is not known exactly when Green Bobbitt died, but it is thought to be ca. 1838, when he was forty-seven. It is not known whether he died in North Carolina or in Tennessee, and no guardian papers have been found in either state for W. P. M. or Haywood.

As stated, although it is not known whether Green, Barbara, and the two boys were in Weakley County when Green died, after his death there is every indication Barbara and the boys were definitely there. They were living with the family of the second daughter, Melissa, and her family. The 1840 Weakley County Census (p. 304) shows the household of J. W. Swaim thus:

---

6. Green's Uncle Drury (brother of John Bobbitt) and his family had moved to Maury County, Tennessee. Green's first cousins were William Bobbitt, Sarah Bobbitt (wife of Richard B. Hight), and Emily Bobbitt (wife of Jacob Robison).

Males:	1	30–40 years	Jerry W. Swaim
	1	20–30 years	[?]
	1	15–20 years	[W. P. M. Bobbitt]
	2	5–10 years	[Andrew Swaim and Haywood Bobbitt]
	2	under 5 years	[Houston Swaim and Wm. Green Swaim]
Females:	1	20–30 years	[Jerry's wife, Melissa Bobbitt Swaim]
	1	40–50 years	[Melissa's mother, Barbara (Finch) Bobbitt]

In the 1850 census (p. 755, #36) Barbara is again undoubtedly the older female enumerated with Melissa (Bobbitt) and her husband J. W. Swaim and their eight children. She is listed phonetically incorrectly as "E. Roberts [instead of B. Bobbitts] 55 years, [born 1795 in] North Carolina," and immediately followed in the family listing by "Haywood 18 years," born 1832. Next door (#37) is the household of Barbara and Green's older daughter, my ancestor Matilda, with her husband W. B. Montgomery and their seven children. Skipping a farm, the next household (#39) was the home of Barbara and Green's son W. P. M., now 27, born in North Carolina, with his wife Eliza 25, born in Tennessee, and their first child, Alonso 2 years old.

Green Bobbitt had preceded Barbara (Finch) Bobbitt in death by a score of years. Barbara Bobbitt died 30 July 1859 at the age of sixty-four, and the 1860 Tennessee Mortality Schedule shows consumption as the cause of death. (Consumption is the old-fashioned and untechnical name for lung disease.) It is logical to think she was buried at Mt. Zion Cemetery in Weakley County where her children were later buried, and although her family could well afford a tombstone, no evidence of one is extant a hundred and thirty-four years later.

The move was complete. Our lines of Bobbitts, Montgomerys, Finches, and Swaims had forsaken North Carolina to make Tennessee their home. Our immigrant ancestor, William Bobbitt, had come from Great Britain to Virginia in 1673. His son in our line, John "of Chowan" and his family, went from Virginia to North Carolina by or before 1718, and by 1830 his descendants in our line were in northwest Tennessee.

Children of Green Bobbitt and Barbara (Finch):

1. MATILDA CAROLINE BOBBITT — MY DIRECT LINE
   Born: 1814, Raleigh, Wake County, North Carolina
   Married: 31 January 1828 (date of bond), William B. Montgomery, in Raleigh, North Carolina
   Died: 1881–1885, Weakley County, Tennessee
   Children: James Green, Melissa Jane (my line), John W., Elizabeth B., Eliza H., George W., Jeremiah Elbert, Joseph B.
   [See "Matilda Caroline Bobbitt" chapter]

2. Melissa Jane Bobbitt: b. 1 March 1817, in or near Raleigh, North Carolina;
   m. 23 October 1831, Jeremiah Weatherly Swaim (b. 20 May 1809 in Greensboro, North Carolina; d. 2 November 1880 in Gleason, Tennessee), son of William Jeremiah Swaim and Mary ("Polly") Weatherly; probably married in Maury County, Tennessee;
   d. 2 November 1884, Gleason, Weakley County, Tennessee. Both buried in Mt. Zion Cemetery.
   Children (all born and married near Gleason, Weakley County, Tennessee):

(1) *Andrew* Jackson Swaim: b. 11 December 1833;
m. (1) 21 March 1855, Elizabeth B. Montgomery (b. 1836, d. 1856), daughter of Matilda C. (Bobbitt) and W. B. Montgomery;
m. (2) 22 March 1857, Lou M. Dollahite (b. 1837, d. 1895);
d. 29 October 1884, buried in Mt. Zion Cemetery
Children of 2d marriage:
1. Ida: b. 1859
2. Jodie?: b. 1863
3. Guy: b. 1866
4. Laura: b. 1869
5. Buford: b. 1870

(2) Samuel *Houston* Swaim: b. 17 April 1836; m. 20 April 1858, Eliza Hawkins Montgomery (b. 9 October 1840, d. 10 April 1891), daughter of Matilda C. (Bobbitt) and W. B. Montgomery;
d. 4 January 1895, buried Mt. Zion Cemetery
Children:
1. Sarah E.: b. 1859
2. Edgar: b. 1860
3. William: b. 1861
4. Byron: b. 1867
5. Stella: b. 1870
6. Mayme: b. 1879

(3) William Green ("Wiley G." or "Pos") Swaim: b. 1839; unmarried. He was a Confederate lieutenant in Company A, 31st Tennessee Regiment, and killed in the Battle of Kennesaw Mt. d. 23 June 1864

(4) Byron M. (Montgomery?) Swaim: b. November 1842; m. 8 October 1865, Maggie (Maryje?) Mobley (b. 1844); d. 9 April 1903
Children (from 1880 Gibson County, Tennessee, Census):[7]
1. Ollie: male, b. 1867
2. Avie: male, b. 1870
3. Lundel: male, b. 1872
4. Leila: b. 1878

(5) Matilda Caroline ("Callie") Swaim: b. 1844, named for her mother's sister; m. 29 May 1864, Myles L. Thornton; d. ante-1887

(6) Mary Eliza Swaim: b. 5 February 1847; m. 5 March 1863, William Jabez Faust (Foust) (b. 1841, son of Jesse Foust and Martha Rial of Henry County, Tennessee; chaplain, Confederate States of America; d. 1917). Mary Eliza died 10 July 1884.
Children:
1. Alice: b. 1865
2. Ella: b. 1868
3. Ira: b. 1870
4. Edna: b. 1870 (adopted)
5. Lora: b. 1873
6. Walter: b. 1876
7. Burrow: b. 1878
8. Eula: b. 1882

(7) Thomas Hendricks ("Henry") Swaim: b. 28 May 1849; m. 28 May 1884, (Mrs.) Carrie Brasfield Boswell (b. 1856), daughter of George R. Brasfield. Henry was a physician. d. 5 January 1898

---

7. Enumeration District 38, p. 5.

Children:
1. *Grover* Cleveland: a physician and killed in World War I
2. Thomas Hendricks, Jr.
3. Carlisle: a successful New York lawyer
4. Tomesia

(8) Martha J. Swaim: b. 28 February 1852; m. 10 December 1868, John Houston Finch (b. 1848, d. 1916), son of John Hite Finch, the 2d son of John Wesley Finch; d. 11 February 1930; both buried Mt. Zion Cemetery
Children [see p. 193]:
1. Walter L.: b. 1870
2. Jerry O.: b. 1872
3. Hite E.: b. 1873
4. James L.: b. 1875
5. Ernest A.: b. 1877
6. Beulah M. ("Lela"): b. 1879

(9) Emily Cornelia ("Neely") Swaim: b. 17 September 1854; m. 18 September 1873, Addison Brasfield; d. 1 January 1897

(10) Clinton Atkins Swaim: b. 28 November 1857; m. 8 January 1886, Luna Melissa Davis (b. 1859, d. 1945), daughter of the Rev. John M. Davis and Frances J. (Zarecor); d. 6 November 1914
Children:
1. Bonnie: b. 1886; m. Charlie W. Bullock; d. 1971
2. Neville P. ("Pete"): b. 1887; m. Lu Eunice Bennett; d. 1950
   Children:
   [1] Frances: m. J. C. Crabtree
   Children: Jay, Larry, Sandra Wheeler, Mike
   [2] Jack
   Children: Tommy, Patrick, Richard
   [3] Neville (female): m. Earney Saylor
   Children: Cheryl Javarian, Nita Hayes, Allen, Jackie [dec'd], Jeanne
   [4] Lucile Melissa ("Lou"): b. 12 October 1925; m. 21 December 1946, Otis H. Herrington, Jr. (b. 8 May 1927). Lou Herrington, who lives in DeSoto, Texas, has done extensive research on Swaims and related families, and generously helped me, especially on Melissa Jane Bobbitt Swaim's descendants.
   Children:
   1. Dian Lynn: b. 4 November 1950
      m. 22 May 1971, Stephen Shields
      Children:
      (1) June Leeann: b. 27 August 1973
      (2) Sally Roseann: b. 26 November 1980
      (3) Katrina Luann: b. 3 January 1983
   2. Donna Claire: b. 15 June 1953
      m. 19 May 1972, William L. Boutwell
      Children:
      (1) Sarah Lynn: b. 23 September 1974
      (2) Bennett Lee: b. 24 July 1977
   3. Daniel Wade: b. 4 April 1958
      m. October 1978, Sherry Lynn Sitz
      Children:

(1) Grace Ellen: b. 7 January 1981
(2) Jake Spencer: 23 December1981

4. Julie Ann: b. 31 July 1965
m. 28 December 1990, Jason Norman Moore
Child: Melissa Fern, b. 12 February 1993

[5] Jeanne: m. Bob M. Davis
Children: Bobby, Chris, Terry

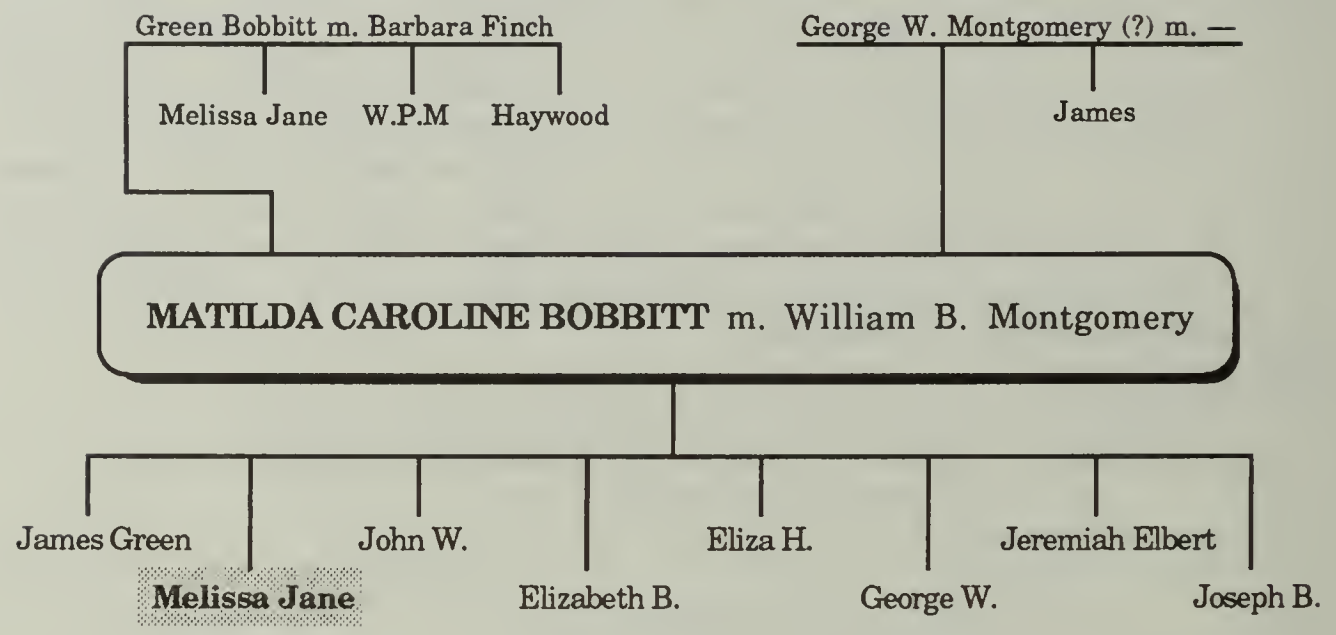
3. Pansy: b. 1890; m. Hiram P. Nanney
4. Don Cevera: b. 1898; m. (1) Maggie; m. (2) Isabel Pate; d. 1983

3. William Powell Mitchell ("W.P.M." or "Willie") Bobbitt: b. 9 July 1823, probably Moore County, North Carolina; m. (The *Bobbitt* book states it is thought but not confirmed that he married first a cousin by the name of Martha Bobbitt and they had two children, then he married Eliza A.) Eliza Ann — (b. 1825, d. 1886); d. 25 March 1868, Weakley County, Tennessee. His estate inventory was made by J. Monroe Finch, whose wife was W. P. M.'s niece. The 1880 Weakley County Census[8] shows Eliza A. Bobbitt as head of household with the youngest three children at home. W.P.M. and Eliza were buried in Mt. Zion Cemetery.
Children:
(1) Alonso D.: b. 1848; m. S. E. — (b. 1854, d. 1884); d. 1897
(2) William H.: b. 1851 or 1852; m. (1) Theodora Bell (b. 1856, d. 1887);
m. (2) T. B. Brasfield; d. 1926
Children:
1. Alasa May: b. 1878
2. Oscar Lee: b. 1883; d. 1955
3. Lottie L.: b. 1893 or 1894
(3) Almus: b. 1854; died young
(4) Emma P.: b. 1856
(5) Walter R.: b. 1859
(6) Mattie P.: b. 1861
4. Haywood Edison Bobbitt: b. 10 July 1832 (In some census records he is listed as Haywood H., and his full name may have been Haywood Hawkins Edison Bobbitt); m. 20 February 1863, Elizabeth E. Jenkins (b. January 1835), whose parents were born in North Carolina); J. M. (Monroe) Finch was listed as Justice of the Peace of Weakley County on the marriage record. In 1880 Weakley County Census they were in District 11.
d. 9 May 1916, buried Mt. Zion Cemetery
Children (6, all living in 1900, including):
(1) Nancy F.: b. 1864
(2) John W.: b. 1866
(3) Thomas H.: b. May 1867; m. Fannie — (b. 1871 in Kentucky)
Children, including:
1. Florence R.: b. August 1891
2. Zula M.: b. August 1894
(4) Willie A.: b. 1871
(5) Ida E.: b. 1875

[See "Matilda Caroline Bobbitt"—daughter]
[See "Barbara Finch"—wife]

8. Enumeration District 174, p. 25, #185.

MATILDA CAROLINE BOBBITT
(1814–1881/85)



MATILDA CAROLINE BOBBITT, sometimes called Matilda and other times Carrie, was the oldest child of Green Bobbitt and Barbara Finch. Matilda was born in 1814 in Raleigh, Wake County, North Carolina. At that time the town of Raleigh was only twenty-two years old. Matilda's sister Melissa Jane was born in (or near) Raleigh too, in 1817, and then the family lived in Moore County briefly. In the 1820s the family was back in Raleigh, as evidenced by the fact that Matilda attended the Raleigh Academy for a time and her father owned land there in 1826.

In February of 1828 in Raleigh, Matilda married William B. Montgomery, the 31 January bond being signed by George W. Montgomery who is thought to be William's father. William (W. B.) was born in Knox County, Tennessee, ca. 1805 and was therefore about nine years older than Matilda, who was not yet fourteen when they married. We do not know how the Montgomery and Bobbitt families knew one another before Matilda and William met, but it is thought there was a connection. Somehow, in the late 1820s, William B. and George W. Montgomery were in that area of North Carolina where the counties of Granville, Franklin, and Wake converge. It is probable that although William B. was born in Tennessee, the Montgomerys had relatives in North Carolina.[1]

Within two years of their marriage W. B. had taken his bride Matilda back to Tennessee. The 1830 census of Weakley County shows William with his wife and their first child, James Green Montgomery (born 1828 or possibly 1829).

---

1. Warren County, North Carolina, records need to be rechecked. See footnote 2 of the previous chapter, and remember that Franklin and Warren counties were created from what at one time was Granville County. Lou Swaim Herrington, Watson Montgomery Bradley, and the author have even wondered if William B. Montgomery's middle initial stood for Bobbitt.

MATILDA CAROLINE MONTGOMERY, CA. 1880

It is interesting to reflect for a moment on how young Matilda was when she married. She must have been a pretty girl and mature for her age to attract a husband William's age. She had her first child by the age of fifteen and set up housekeeping in a sparsely settled county where a few years earlier Indians had roamed. Apparently Matilda was a good helpmeet and the marriage was successful. Over a period of twenty-five years they had five sons and three daughters that we know of and were comfortably well off their forty-five years together before William died.

In Weakley County, they lived in Civil District 10, a few miles south of Dresden, the county seat, and east of Meridian Road that ran north and south through Dresden. Their farm was surrounded by the farms of Finches and Swaims, and five of their children later married into those families.

Watson Bradley (d. 1991) of Nashville, Tennessee, a descendant of William and Matilda's oldest child, told me of a few precious mementoes that have been passed down in his line from Matilda (Bobbitt) Montgomery. There is a beautiful wool coverlet which Matilda is supposed to have brought with her from her family when she married in 1828. There is a pair of beautifully beaded child-size moccasins passed down, probably made by the Chickasaw Indians who recently and peaceably had vacated the western area of Tennessee seven years before William brought his young wife Matilda there. Six silver teaspoons which were buried under the smokehouse during the Civil War have been divided among Watson and his brothers. It was Watson who sent me a copy of Matilda's little certificate from the Raleigh Academy.

Exactly when Matilda died is not known, but it is thought to have been between 1881 and 1885. I regret that the picture I have of my great-great-grandmother was taken so late in life and in her "widow's weeds," but I am grateful to have it. We can imagine the spirited young girl she once was. William had died ca. 1873. Matilda Caroline (Bobbitt) Montgomery lived the first fourteen years of her life in North Carolina and the last fifty-plus years in Weakley County, Tennessee, where she was buried in the Mt. Zion Cemetery. More information on Matilda's married life and children can be found in the chapter about her husband.

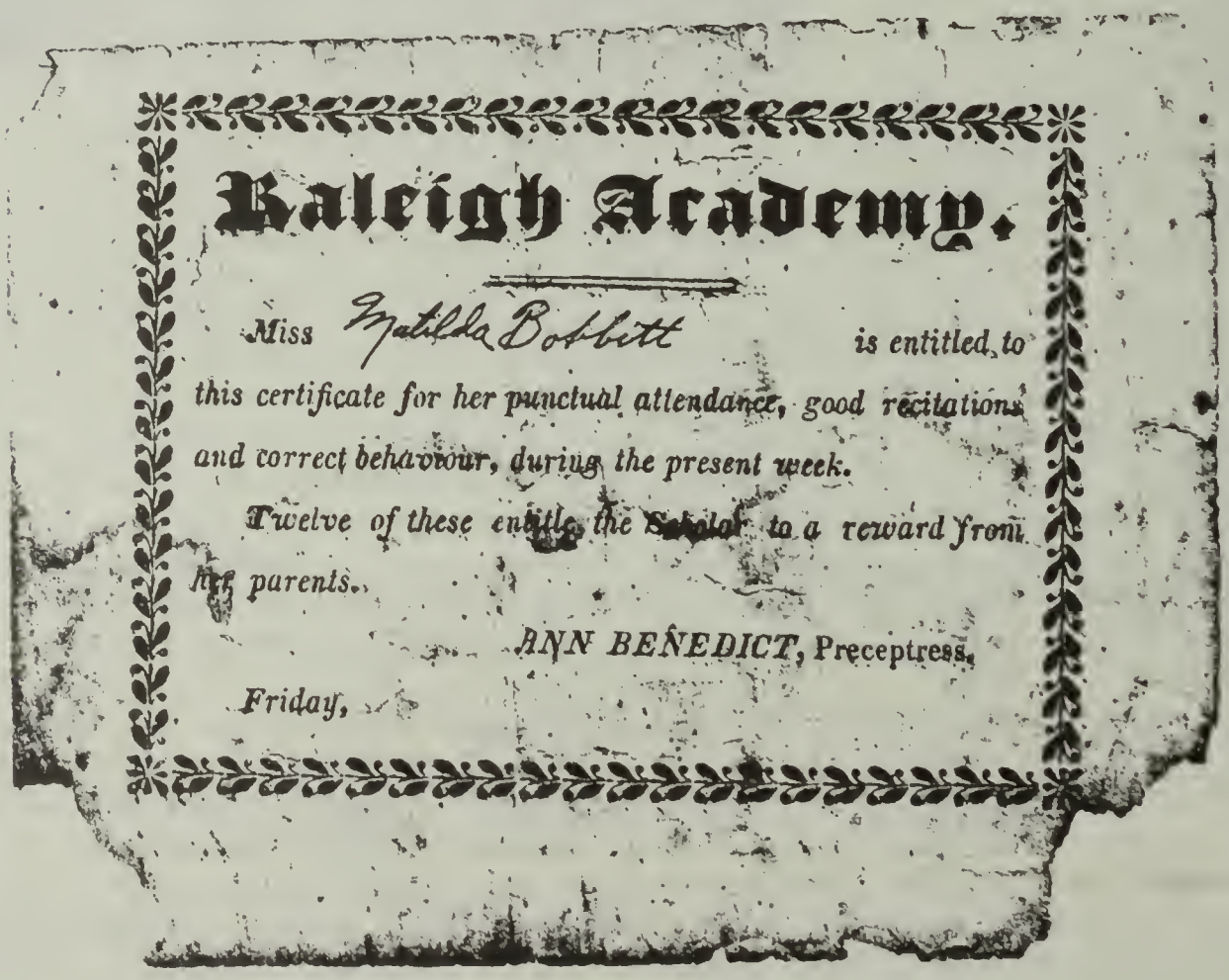
Children of William B. Montgomery and Matilda Caroline (Bobbitt):

1. James Green Montgomery: b. 1828/29; m. 6 April 1852, Pelina B. Finch; d. September 1859

2. MELISSA JANE MONTGOMERY — MY DIRECT LINE
   Born: 7 April 1831
   Married: November 1848, James Monroe Finch
   Died: 20 January 1900
   Children: Alpheus D., Benanna Alice (my line), Cornelia E., John Bruce, Martha Ella, Lillie May, Zula, Emma Hite
   [See "Melissa Jane Montgomery" chapter]

3. John W. Montgomery: b. March 1833; m. 23 August 1863, Unity E. Phillips; d. 1 December 1914
4. Elizabeth B. Montgomery: b. 8 January 1837; m. 21 July 1855, Andrew Jackson Swaim; d. 15 July 1856
5. Eliza Hawkins Montgomery: b. 9 October 1840; m. 20 April 1858, Samuel Houston Swaim; d. 10 April 1891
6. George W. Montgomery: b. 30 April 1845; m. 23 January 1886, Sallie W. Swaim; d. 6 April 1911
7. Jeremiah Elbert Montgomery: b. April 1850; m. 1874, Louisa J. —; d. post-1910
8. Joseph B. Montgomery: b. 1854; m. ca. 1878, Emma A. Rogers; d. 1935

[See "William B. Montgomery"—husband]
[See "Melissa Jane Montgomery"—daughter]



Raleigh Academy.

Miss Matilda Bobbitt is entitled to this certificate for her punctual attendance, good recitations and correct behaviour, during the present week.

Twelve of these entitle the Scholar to a reward from her parents.

ANN BENEDICT, Preceptress.

Friday,

A MEMENTO FROM THE 1820S

GEORGE W. MONTGOMERY *EXCURSUS*

THERE IS SCANT information on George W. Montgomery; however, three things involving him are important, as they indicate, but do not prove, that he was the father of William (W. B.) Montgomery of the following chapter. George W. Montgomery signed the marriage bond with William on 31 January 1828 in Raleigh, North Carolina, for William to marry Matilda Caroline Bobbitt. Also, George and William were the only two Montgomery heads of households in Weakley County, Tennessee, in the 1830 census (pp. 324, 338), both living south of Dresden, and George was the appropriate age to be William's father.

Although William Montgomery was born (according to family history) in 1805 in Knox County, Tennessee, many things lead to the assumption that his father was originally from North Carolina. Certainly the Montgomerys were closely associated with Bobbitts, Finches, and Swaims, families known to be from North Carolina, and may even have been distantly related to them.

The 1830 Weakley County Census (p. 338) enumerated 25 year old William Montgomery with his wife and first child. George W. Montgomery was enumerated (p. 324) in the "50 to 60 year" age bracket, meaning he was born between 1771 and 1780. (If his middle initial stood for Washington, he was probably born closer to 1780.) In George W.'s household were: a female 40 to 50 years old, five males under 30, and four females under 20. He had probably married ca. 1800. Whether George married in Tennessee or North Carolina is not known, but we know he was in Knox County, Tennessee, ca. 1805, because that is when and where William was born. In the 1810 Rutherford County, Tennessee, Census there was a Washington Montgomery and wife, both in the 26 to 45 age column, with a female 16 to 26 and a daughter and son (William?) under 10. This Washington cannot be found in a later census, and I wonder if he was our George W.[1] There are so many years in the early 1800s that cannot be accounted for with George W. and William Montgomery that it is useless to speculate.

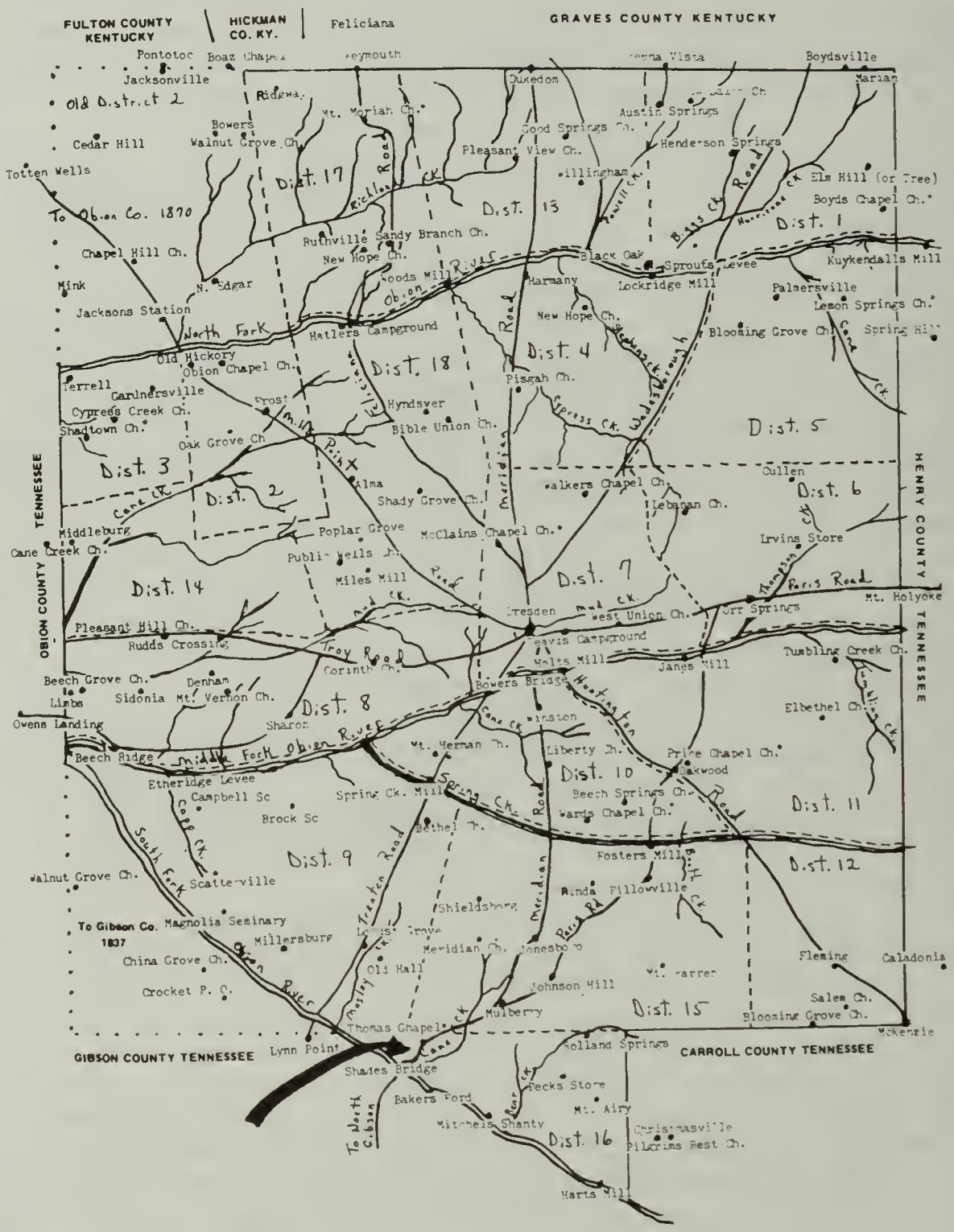
Watson Bradley of Nashville, Tennessee, (see Note at end of chapter) and I concluded that George W. Montgomery who signed William's marriage bond in 1828 in Raleigh, North Carolina, and in 1830 lived near him in Weakley County, Tennessee, was William's father. We found no concrete proof although we researched will records, tax lists, deed records, and followed all leads. Nor could we find information to prove who William's siblings were or who George W. Montgomery's parents were.[2] I won't summarize our voluminous research, but suffice it to say we checked what we considered to be all viable counties in Tennessee, Virginia, and North Carolina. I regret not putting the problem in the hands of a good Certified Genealogist early on. Someone else will have to do that. Watson

---

1. A much younger Washington Montgomery (born 1827) is enumerated in the 1850 Guilford County, North Carolina, Census, p. 384.
2. There were Montgomerys in several North Carolina counties during the years that interest us. Among the many was a William Montgomery (born ca. 1775), the age to be a sibling of George W. Montgomery, who was associated with Bobbitts and Hights in Warren County at an estate sale 1 December 1812 (Warren County Abstracts to Will Books, #17, p. 187). He lived in the upper Sandy Creek District at least 1810–1830 (1830 Warren County Census, p. 605). Warren and Franklin counties should both be rechecked. As for Tennessee, there were Montgomerys in sixteen counties in Middle Tennessee on the 1820 census lists.

and I were so involved in the search, and enjoying it, that we felt surely one of us would uncover some answers and that we needed no help. That was a mistake.

There are a few Weakley County, Tennessee, records for George W. Montgomery in addition to the 1828 Raleigh marriage bond and the 1830 Weakley County Census. In 1831 at the July Court Session in Weakley County, George Montgomery was one of twelve "good and lawful" jurymen in a case.[3] At the Octo-



WEAKLEY COUNTY, TENNESSEE, CA. 1800

..... Areas once part of Weakley County
– – – – Approximate [Civil] District Boundaries 1880
Ch. Churches established by 1880
* Churches no longer in existance

Map is not to scale.
All locations are approximate.
[Oakwood is now Gleason]

3. Court Minutes, vol. 1 (reel 5793F TN W46 pt. 1), p. 252 of original minutes.

A TENNESSEE LOG HOUSE

ber 1832 Court Session, George Montgomery and Bright Grooms were securities for George Ward, guardian for minor heirs of John Ward, deceased.[4]

On 5 January 1833 George W. Montgomery is mentioned in the Weakley County Occupant Entry Book for 1827–1833.[5] The record shows that by Entry #622 he was granted 42 acres of land in Surveyor's District 13, Range 1 West, Section 5 North, on the waters of the South Fork of the Obion River. George's land was bounded by land of Isaac Galey, John Gertner (*sic*) [John A. Gardner], J. Thomas, the Meridian line, Benjamin Crabtree, and Nicholas Shroom *(sic)*. It was noted that Montgomery and Shroom had agreed that Montgomery's Spring Branch would be a conditional line between their land. We know this 42 acres was not all the land George received as the index shows he is also mentioned on p. 175 of the original, but it was omitted in the compilation. (Other names on p. 175 of the original were Bright Grooms and Neal Delaney.) The same thing happened on p. 224 when the occupant number is omitted. George W. probably had land in Weakley County by 1830 when he was enumerated in the census.

After 1833 George W. Montgomery seems to disappear from the records. His wife and their children are unknown except for our William B. and James (see following chapter). All that is known of George W. Montgomery's background is that "our Montgomerys" had come to America from County Tyrone in Ulster, Northern Ireland.[6] This information, firmly entrenched in family history, was

---

4. Ibid., p. 349. On the same page the minutes show that the court appointed Bright and Stephen H. Grooms, Ransom Mobley, and John W. Finch "to settle between the new administrator [George Ward] and the former one." In the 1830 census, Stephen H. Grooms was enumerated in the household next to George Montgomery.
5. From the Entry Book was compiled *Neighbors in Weakley County, Tennessee, A Land Ownership Map 1827–1833*, by the Isaac Dawson Chapter, National Society of American Colonists, Martin, Tennessee, 1986.
6. I feel it was not George W. Montgomery who came from County Tyrone, but the preceding generation.

passed down by Watson Bradley's spinster great aunt, Ada Caroline Montgomery, who was orphaned as a child and was brought up by her paternal grandparents, William B. Montgomery and Matilda C. Bobbitt.

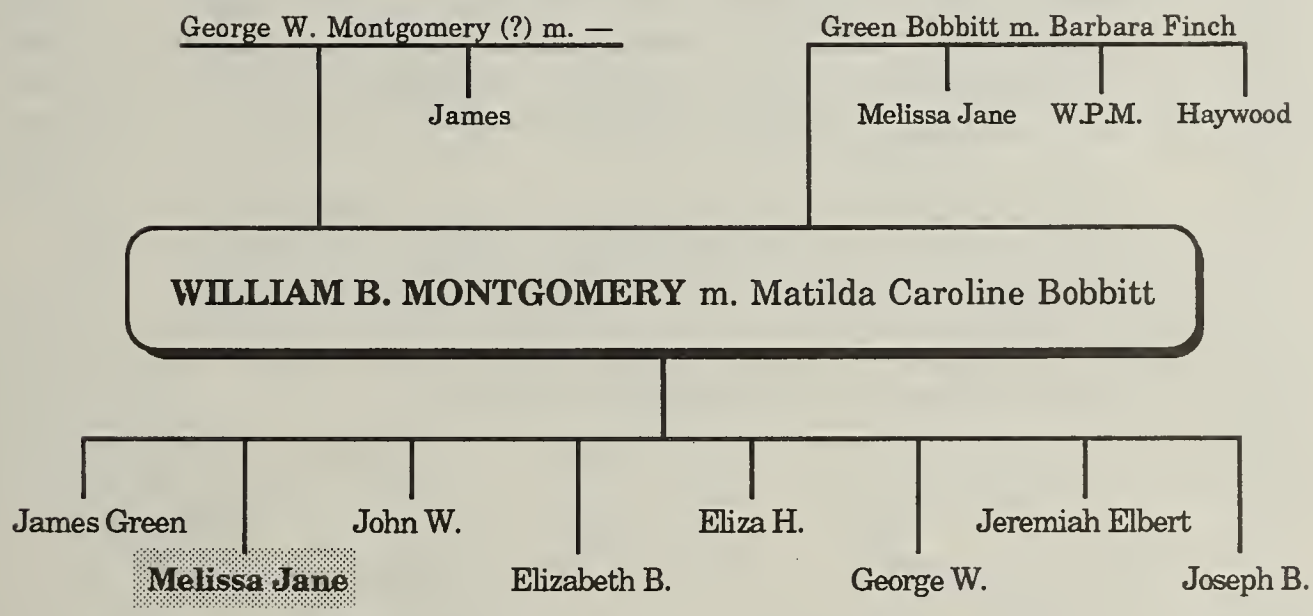
Ulster was colonized mainly from southern Scotland and northern England in the seventeenth century. These Protestants have been called Scotch-Irish for over two hundred years. The majority of them who settled in North America had entered through the port of Philadelphia, lived briefly in Pennsylvania, and then ultimately worked their way through Virginia to their destination. This is what many Montgomery families did, and much more research should be done on our own early Montgomerys to determine their path.

COUNTY TYRONE IN ULSTER

NOTE: Watson Montgomery Bradley and I never met, but we exchanged frequent letters and information for five years before his untimely death in 1991. Though very distant cousins, we were united at first by having four ancestors in common and by not knowing anyone else interested in researching them. They were William B. Montgomery and his wife Matilda C. Bobbitt, and John Wesley Finch and his wife Judith Hockaday. We both devoted a lot of time trying to get proof that George W. Montgomery was William B. Montgomery's father, and trying to find who George W.'s parents were. The year before Watson died, he sent me a summary entitled "The Earlier Montgomerys," saying he was putting his family notes in order. In tribute to him I want to show his particular line here:

William B. Montgomery m. Matilda C. Bobbitt		John W. Finch m. Judith Hockaday
|		|
James Green Montgomery	m.	Pelina B. Finch
|		|
A. Green Watson Montgomery	m.	M. Susan Williams
|		|
A. Lula Montgomery	m.	Van Allen Bradley
|		|
Watson Montgomery Bradley	m.	Bertha D. Smith

WILLIAM B. MONTGOMERY
(1805–ca. 1873)

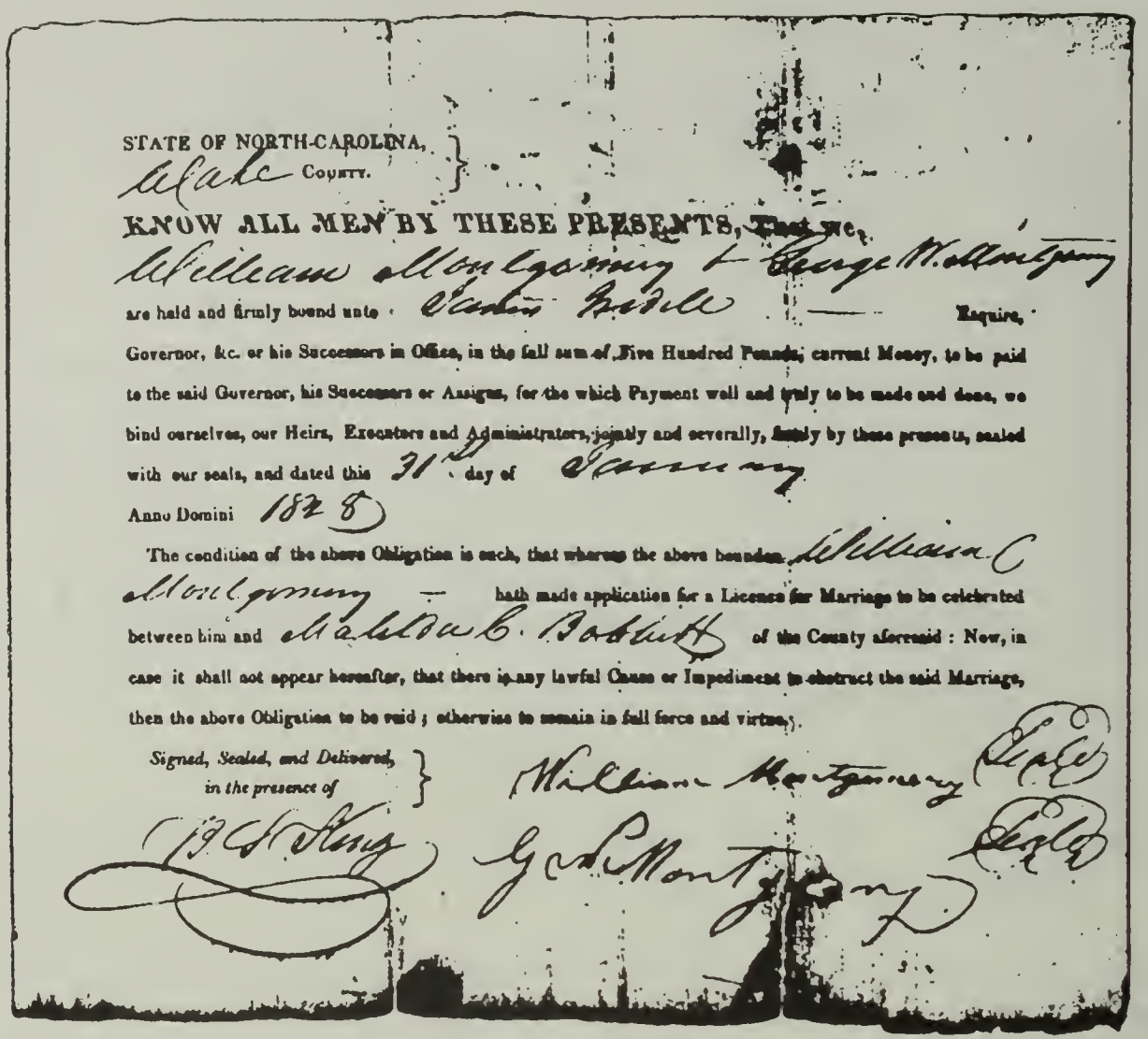


WILLIAM B. MONTGOMERY was born ca. 1805 in Knox County in East Tennessee. The name of his mother is unknown, and his father is thought to be George W. Montgomery, but it is not a proven fact. James Montgomery is thought to be one of William's siblings. Although William Montgomery was born in Knox County, Tennessee, it is very possible his parents were originally from North Carolina, either Guilford County, or the Granville-Franklin-Warren County area. Nothing is known about William's early years.

William (W.B.) Montgomery married Matilda Caroline ("Carrie") Bobbitt, oldest child of Green Bobbitt and Barbara Finch. Their marriage bond, dated 31 January 1828, was recorded in Raleigh, Wake County, North Carolina, and George W. Montgomery signed as bondsman. The marriage took place in February, as in the 1 March 1828 issue of the *National Banner and Nashville [Tennessee] Whig* newspaper an announcement appeared stating "Mr. William Montgomery of Tennessee married in Raleigh, N.C., Miss Matilda C. Bobbitt."

As mentioned in the previous chapter, it is not known how William and Matilda met. Certainly in 1827 William and his father (?) were both in that area of North Carolina where the counties of Granville, Franklin, and Wake converge, because on the last day of January 1828 George W. signed as bondsman on William's marriage bond in Raleigh, Wake County.

Watson Bradley of Nashville, Tennessee, a descendant of William and Matilda whom I mentioned in the previous chapter, had a great-aunt who was reared by William and Matilda (her grandparents) who passed down the family story that shortly after their marriage in Raleigh the newlyweds went to Knoxville, Tennessee, taking Matilda's piano by oxcart, and it was the first piano seen there.



STATE OF NORTH-CAROLINA,
Wake County.

KNOW ALL MEN BY THESE PRESENTS, That we,
William Montgomery & George W. Montgomery
are held and firmly bound unto James Iredell Esquire,
Governor, &c. or his Successors in Office, in the full sum of Five Hundred Pounds, current Money, to be paid
to the said Governor, his Successors or Assigns, for the which Payment well and truly to be made and done, we
bind ourselves, our Heirs, Executors and Administrators, jointly and severally, firmly by these presents, sealed
with our seals, and dated this 31st day of January
Anno Domini 1828

The condition of the above Obligation is such, that whereas the above bounden William C
Montgomery hath made application for a Licence for Marriage to be celebrated
between him and Matilda C. Bobbitt of the County aforesaid: Now, in
case it shall not appear hereafter, that there is any lawful Cause or Impediment to obstruct the said Marriage,
then the above Obligation to be void; otherwise to remain in full force and virtue.

Signed, Sealed, and Delivered, in the presence of
B. S. King
William Montgomery Seal
G. W. Montgomery Seal

WILLIAM AND MATILDA'S MARRIAGE BOND, 31 JANUARY 1828

Knoxville had a population approaching 1500 and was considered "a town of considerable resort." In late 1828 or in early 1829 William and Matilda's first child, James Green Montgomery, was born. William must have planned all along to go to west Tennessee, because he and his little family did not live long in Knox County. They moved to Weakley County, Tennesee, and in the 1830 census of Weakley County (p. 338) twenty-five year old William was enumerated as head of his own household that included his wife and son. George W. Montgomery (thought to be William's father) and his large family were in Weakley County in 1830 too, and were enumerated in their own household (p. 324), in the same general area.

In the meantime Matilda's parents, Green and Barbara (Finch) Bobbitt, had sold their home in Raleigh and moved to Maury County, Tennessee, where they were enumerated in the 1830 census. There, on 31 October 1831, Jeremiah W. Swaim (born 1808 in Guilford County, North Carolina) married Matilda's younger sister, Melissa Jane Bobbitt. Jerry and Melissa soon left Maury County and moved to Weakley County, Tennessee, where they settled close to William and Matilda (Bobbitt) Montgomery.

In the Weakley County Court Minutes (p. 266) for the October 1831 Session, "William and James Montgomery" (being paired together like that certainly suggests they were brothers) were shown on a repair crew headed by Stephen H. Grooms for the Meridian Road "from the six mile tree [down] to Spring Creek." At

the same time John W. Finch was on a crew just above there on the Meridian Road, "from the Middle Fork of the Obion River to the six mile tree." Maintenance of their neighborhood roads was a necessary civic duty of county taxpayers. On the 1831 and 1832[1] Weakley County Supplement Tax Lists William was listed as "1 free poll" as was James Montgomery one line below. The information for William showed his land totaled 100 acres, "entry, from John Terrell's 640" in Range 1, Section 6, District 12.

Incidentally, this was the same range, section, and district given in 1831 for John W. Finch. [See "John Wesley Finch" chapter] John W. Finch's youngest sister was Barbara (Finch) who married Green Bobbitt, and therefore John W. Finch was Matilda (Bobbitt) Montgomery's uncle.[2] In Weakley County the Finches, Montgomerys, Bobbitts, and Swaims were neighbors, and several intermarried. [See "Matilda Caroline Bobbitt" chapter; also, see map on p. 198] Later William and Matilda's two oldest children would marry two of John W. Finch's children, and three would marry into the Swaim family.

There was another William Montgomery family in Weakley County in those early years. That William was from Sumner County, Tennessee, and had a son John from Dickson County, Tennessee, and there were also Daniel and Jefferson Montgomery. There is no known connection to our William Montgomery who, possibly to avoid confusion with the other William, soon started using his middle initial and was often referred to as W.B. (By the time of the 1850 census, however, our W.B. was the only Montgomery still living in Weakley County who was listed as a head of household.)

The Weakley County Court Minutes for the July 1832 session (p. 351) showed that William Montgomery and brother-in-law Jeremiah W. Swaim were two of the men empaneled on a grand jury. At the October 1832 court session (just as in October 1831) William Montgomery was again assigned the Meridian Road from the six mile tree to Spring Creek, but this time was appointed overseer of the men. It was the same crew of neighbors that William had been assigned to the year before, including Stephen H. Grooms, Jesse Maxwell, Furney Arnold, James Span, Franklin Span, James Richie, James Herrod, John Ward, Jr., John Ward, Elijah Ward, Edward King, James Montgomery, Munsfield (*sic*) Jenkins, Washington Reddick, Joseph Powers, Jesse Crowley, and Nicholas Shrump (Shroom?). Six months later at the April 1833 session the court appointed George Ward to take his turn as overseer after William Montgomery.

Being neighbors, the men mentioned in the above paragraph were part of Captain Mathis' militia company. On 14 January 1833 Jeremiah W. Swaim was appointed constable for the company, and the next day William Montgomery, John W. Finch, and Neal Delaney (who lived near George W. Montgomery) were securities on Jerry Swaim's $8000 required bond.

The minutes of the Court of Pleas and Quarter Session show that in 1845 at the March and May courts (pp. 531, 545) that John Ward was appointed overseer for road repairs on the road leading from the Meridian Road to Robert Ury's Mill and from J. A. White's place to the bridge across Spring Creek below the mill. Neighbors assigned to give a certain number of days of work were William Ward, L. W., D. H., Madison, and James Reddick, John Liddle, William Montgomery, Willie Bobbitt (twenty-two year old W.P.M. Bobbitt), Joshua and John White, Peter and Peyton and Haywood Jenkins, James Blackley, John Porter Herrin, John W.

---

1. Salt Lake City, Utah, LDS reel 5742 W4A, pp. 91, 121.
2. It is very possible that reports sent back to North Carolina in 1827 or 1828 by John W. Finch had influenced his niece and William Montgomery in their decision to settle in Weakley County, Tennessee.

Dowden, John Mizell, William Ketchum, and Jeff Graham. (Willie Bobbitt, being Matilda's younger brother, was William Montgomery's brother-in-law.) I list all these men because they lived in the same area of Weakley County as William and Matilda.

During the February 1846 session the Court appointed William Montgomery, J. W. Swaim, and William Hamilton commissioners to "lay off and set apart" one year's provisions for the widow Mary J. Hisaw's family. (Her daughter Sarah was the wife of Calvin Finch, whose brother James *Monroe* Finch married William Montgomery's oldest daughter [my ancestor] Melissa.)

Throughout their married lives the familes of sisters Matilda and Melissa (Bobbitt) lived on adjoining farms, and the brothers-in-law had a close association. In the mid-1840s William B. Montgomery must have had some financial problems. He owed Jeremiah W. Swaim money and mortgaged personal property to secure the debt.[3] (In 1845 Andrew Maloan [Malone?] was the trustee, in 1846 William S. Drollinger, and in 1847 Willie P. M. Bobbitt.) In October 1847, W. B. signed a promissory note to William W. Gleeson for $20.10.[4] [See opposite page]

For some inexplicable reason I could not find our William Montgomery enumerated anywhere in the 6th federal census of 1840. He should have been near Finches and Jerry Swaim in Weakley County of course. W. B. Montgomery and J. W. Swaim are enumerated side by side in Weakley County in 1850, however, in District 10, where they had lived all the time. All their children were born in Tennessee.

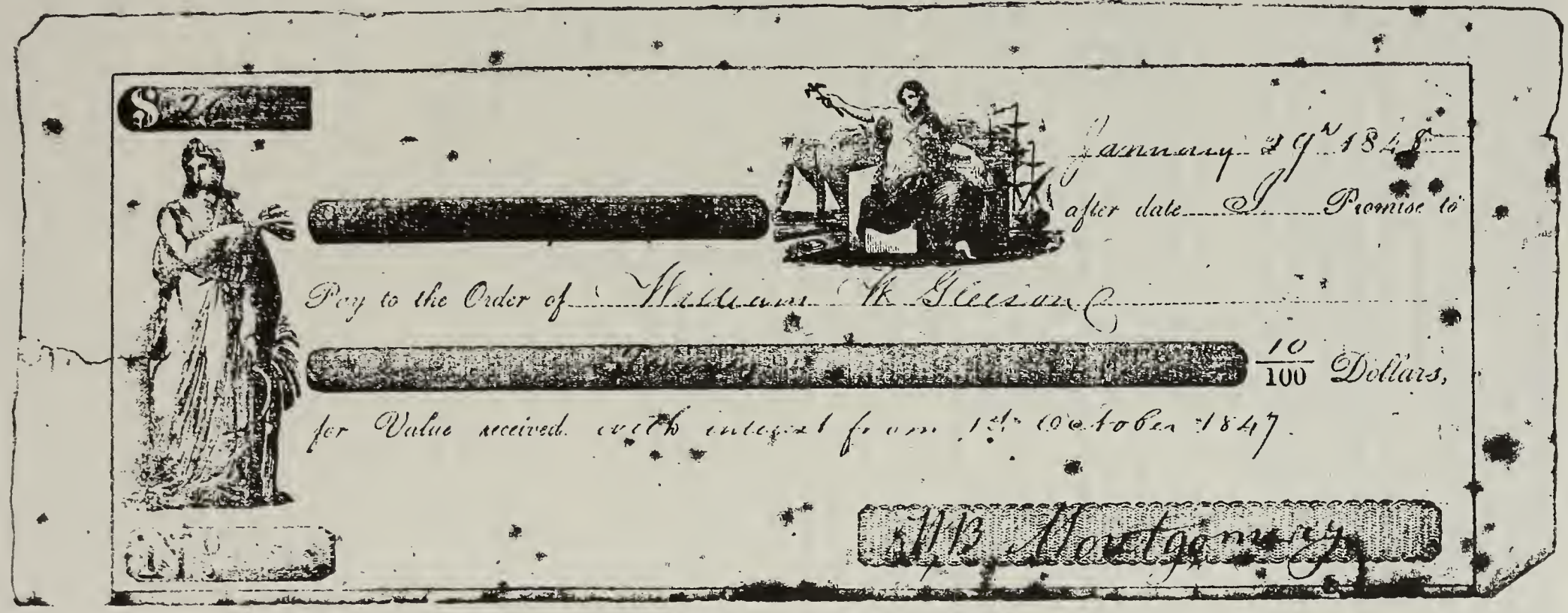
This is the (August) 1850 Weakley County Census listing (p. 379, #36):

W.B. Montgomery	44	Farmer, born in Tennessee
Matilda	37	Born in North Carolina
James [Green]	22	Born in Tennessee
Melissa	18	Born in Tennessee
John	17	Born in Tennessee
Elizabeth	14	Born in Tennessee
Eliza	12 (actually, 9)	Born in Tennessee
George	4	Born in Tennessee
Jeremiah	4 months	Born in Tennessee

It is odd my ancestor Melissa is listed, as she had married J. Monroe Finch in 1848 (and was listed in his household). The farm household enumerated next to W.B. Montgomery in 1850 (#37) was his brother-in-law and old friend, Jerry Swaim, listed thus:

J. W. Swim (*sic*)	41	Farmer, born in North Carolina
Frances	17	Born in North Carolina
[Melissa] Mississippi	33	Born in Tennessee
Andrew	17	Born in Tennessee
Houston	14	Born in Tennessee
[William Green] Wilie	11	Born in Tennessee
[Byron M.] Barren	9	Born in Tennessee
[M. Caroline] Matilda	6	Born in Tennessee
[M. Eliza] Mary	3	Born in Tennessee
[Thos. Hendricks] Henry	1	Born in Tennessee
[B. Bobbitt] E. Roberts	55	Born in North Carolina
Haywood [Bobbitt]	18	Born in Mississippi [North Carolina]

3. Weakley County Deed Book G, pp. 169, 450, 586. Apparently this was a case of the note being renewed, and $300 was paid off by 1 March 1848.
4. Copy of the note sent to me by Watson Bradley in 1989 is pictured here.



1848 NOTE SHOWING W. B. MONTGOMERY'S SIGNATURE

In the first place, "Swim" should be Swaim. I cannot identify seventeen year old Frances Swaim (J. W.'s niece?), who is listed out of chronological order. "Mississippi" is Jeremiah W. Swaim's thirty-three year old wife Melissa, the sister of Matilda (Bobbitt) Montgomery who lived on the adjoining farm (#36 supra). Could it have been that a hard-of-hearing enumerator stood down at the road, wrote what one of the children said, and spelled the names as they must have sounded to him? "E. Roberts" must be B. Bobbetts (Barbara Bobbitt), the fifty-five year old widowed mother of Melissa Swaim and Matilda Montgomery.[5] Haywood is Barbara Bobbitt's eighteen year old youngest child. It is not thought he was born in Mississippi, but rather in North Carolina, as stated on other census and on his death certificate.

The next family (#38) in the 1850 Weakley County Census enumeration was that of E. H. Weathers. It was to take care of business for several members of the Weathers family and others that John Wesley and Judith (Hockaday) Finch (q.v.) had made their fatal trip to North Carolina in the summer of 1846. [See p. 191 supra] Continuing with the 1850 census: in the next household (#39) was the family of W. P. M. Bobbitt, twenty-seven, farmer, born in North Carolina. This was the brother of Matilda, Melissa, and Haywood, all children of Green Bobbitt, deceased, and Barbara (Finch) Bobbitt. Other neighbors were (#40) Calvin and Sarah (Hisaw) Finch, possibly with Sarah's siblings in the household. Then (#45) C. and Burilla Finch, both born in North Carolina, with two daughters. I believe the *C* should be *K* for Kelly (W. O. K.) Finch, John Wesley Finch's oldest son. Old censuses are a gold mine of information, albeit some of it puzzling.

By 1850 there were seventeen civil districts in Weakley County, and William and Matilda lived in District 10, as did the Swaims and some of the Finches. The county seat was Dresden, in the approximate center of the county, and District 10 was just south and east of Dresden. The Meridian Road runs through the county north to south, going right through Dresden. In the April 1856 Court Session (Minutes, pp. 444, 450) William B. Montgomery was elected Constable of District 10. The next day, 7 April 1856, eight men went on the required $8000 bond with him. They were A. Weldon, J. H. Moore, S. E. Scates, J. J. Medlin, W. W. Rust, J. B. Lasater, J. Monroe Finch, and Thomas Glass. A year and a half later William (W. B.) resigned, and his twenty-four year old son John W. Montgomery was elected to replace him. On 2 November 1856 half of those who went on John's $8000 bond with him were relatives. The bondsmen were John Hamilton, J. R. Stallcup, W. P. H. (*sic*) Bobbitt, J. G. Montgomery (John's older brother James Green), J. G. Thomason, Jeremiah W. Swaim (husband of John's Aunt Melissa Bobbitt Swaim, Moses D. Swaim (Jeremiah's brother), J. Monroe Finch (husband of John's older sister Melissa), J. H. Cravens, and Frank and J. F. Moore.

Four of the children of William Montgomery and Matilda Caroline were married by the end of the 1850s, and their youngest child was six years old. My ancestor, their oldest daughter Melissa, had married J. Monroe Finch in 1848. In 1852 their oldest son James (or J. G., James Green) married Monroe Finch's youngest sister Pelina. In 1854 William and Matilda's youngest child, Joseph B. ("Joe"), was born. In 1855 the middle daughter, Elizabeth B., married Andrew

---

5. The 1850 Weakley County Census (p, 886, #147) shows a "70-year old male, B. Bobit, farmer, born in N.C.," living in the household of a 35 year old woman, H. Henley, in District 4. (He is not to be confused with our 55 year old Barbara Bobbitt, widow of Green Bobbitt, in District 10.) He may be Britton Bobbitt, born 1780 in Franklin County, North Carolina, who was John Wesley Finch's brother-in-law. Britton and Fanny (Finch) Bobbitt moved from Granville County, North Carolina, to Maury County in middle Tennessee, where the 1830 census shows Green Bobbitt and family, Hights; and Swaims lived. Many Maury County people went on to Weakley County in west Tennessee. [See *The Bobbitt Family in America* by John W. Bobbitt, 1985, pp. 387, 655.]

Jackson Swaim, and twelve months later Elizabeth died. In 1858 the youngest daughter, Eliza H., married Andrew's brother, Sam Houston Swaim. In 1859 there were two more deaths in the family: in July Matilda's mother, Barbara (Finch) Bobbitt, died, and in September Matilda and William Montgomery's oldest child, James Green, died.

When the 1860 Weakley County Census was taken, W. B. (William) Montgomery was in his mid-fifties and Matilda was forty-six. Four children were still in the household: John W. twenty-four, George W. fourteen, Jeremiah Elbert nine, and Joseph B. six. W.B. had real estate valued at $1500 and an equal evaluation for personal property. The 1860 Agricultural Census showed W.B. owned 120 acres of land, 65 acres of it improved. Farm implements were valued at $40, livestock at $700, home manufacture at $75, and slaughtered animals at $120. W.B. had five horses, one mule, two milk cows, two oxen, six other cattle, twenty sheep, and forty swine. That year he had sixty-five bushels of wheat, six hundred of corn, five of peas and beans, forty of potatoes, sixty of sweet potatoes, one hundred fifty pounds of butter, and four hundred forty pounds of tobacco.

The War Between the States, 1861–1865, touched everyone's lives. Although there were military encounters in the Weakley County area, far greater damage was caused by guerilla bands, called bushwhackers. These groups terrorized and looted, destroying fields while soldiers were away. Weakley County, an area approximately twenty-five miles square, supplied about 1500 troops during the War, 1100 of whom fought for the South. National Archive records (#8083 and #10.311) show that two of William and Matilda's sons were Confederate soldiers, and both were in poor health the rest of their lives as a consequence. John W. enlisted in 1861 at the age of twenty-eight and was a 2d Lieutenant in Company I, 31st Tennessee Regiment. In June 1863 he was captured and taken by the Federals to Columbus, Kentucky, and held until he took the oath. He went back to Weakley County and in August 1863 married Unity Phillips. He was discharged from the army in April 186– (year illegible); he had chronic dysentery and his health was ruined, "generally debilitated more than natural for a man his age." The other son who was a Confederate soldier was George W., who in 1862 at the age of seventeen enlisted in Company K, 16th Tennessee Cavalry. In his pension application he listed seven battles he was in (in Kentucky, Tennessee, Alabama, Mississippi) and said there were others. He was paroled at Gainesville, Alabama, in May 1865. When asked if he took the oath of allegiance to the United States, he said, "No sir, never in my life." His disabilities were attested to in 1908 by his nephew, Dr. J. Bruce Finch, the second son of William's daughter Melissa J. (Montgomery) and J. Monroe Finch.

Sometime in the 1860s William and Matilda's widowed daughter-in-law Pelina died. She was the wife of their oldest son, James Green, who had died in 1859. Pelina's own parents, Judith (Hockaday) and John Wesley Finch, had died in an accident in 1846, and so her in-laws, William and Matilda, took her young children, Ada Caroline and Watson (Alonzo Green Watson) Montgomery, into their home. (Their older sister, Frances, had died.) With the loss of Elizabeth in 1856, of James Green in 1859, and their daughter-in-law Pelina, and two sons away fighting in the Civil War, doubtless William and Matilda warmly welcomed these little grandchildren. Their youngest son, Joe, was about the age of Ada C., so William and Matilda were certainly used to a big family.

Watson ("Brad") Bradley of Nashville, a grandson of the orphaned Watson Montgomery, found out that our William (W.B.) Montgomery is listed in the Compiled Civil War Records (Roll 33, #1364) in the Tennessee State Archives at Nashville. He is also listed in the two-volume *Tennesseans in the Civil War.* One

would not expect to see a man in his mid-fifties volunteer, but he did. There was another William Montgomery, one who was listed in the 1860 Weakley County Census (p. 458, #69). Although nine years younger than our William B., he too was much older than most army privates. However, the war records do not show "William" but clearly show "W.B." which was the way our William B. signed his name.

W.B. Montgomery enlisted 10 December 1861 at Dresden for twelve months when Company H, 7th Regiment (Colonel Duckworth's) Tennessee Cavalry, was organized by Capt. H. C. McCutcheon. During the five and one half month period W.B. was serving, the outfit was engaged with the Federals at Union City in Obion County, Tennessee. They moved to Trenton (Gibson County), to Ripley (Lauderdale County), and back to Trenton, where on 1 May 1862 Major General Polk suggested that Col. W. H. Jackson be ordered to destroy Federal stores at Paducah, Kentucky. On 12 May the outfit was ordered to guard the line from Brownsville (Haywood County) to the Fork Deer River via Ripley, reporting to General Villepigue. On 22 May 1862 W.B. Montgomery was discharged at Trenton, with the remark on his papers "over 35 years of age." In fact, he was twenty years over 35, but Watson says this is our W.B. (William) Montgomery. I wonder if it was about this time that Pelina died and her children came to live with their grandmother, and W.B. felt he was needed more at home than serving as a Private with young soldiers.[6]

The 1870 Weakley County Census (pp. 158–161) shows familiar family names of Finch, Bobbitt, Swaim, and Montgomery in District 10. Household #44 is that of W.O.K. Finch (Judith and John Wesley Finch's oldest child) 53 years old; #50 is James *Monroe* Finch (W. O. K.'s brother) and his wife Melissa J. (oldest daughter of William [of this chapter] and Matilda [Bobbitt] Montgomery) 46 and 39 years old respectively; #51 is 38 year old Haywood Bobbitt (Matilda [Bobbitt] Montgomery's brother, eighteen years younger than she was), living next door to his niece Melissa J. (Bobbitt) Finch, who was practically his same age; #52 is Jerry W. Swaim and his wife Melissa (William Montgomery's sister-in-law), 61 and 53 years old. There are others, but skip to #77, and that is the household of our W.B. Montgomery, listed as 64 years old, and his wife Matilda (Bobbitt), listed as 56 years old. Their household in 1870 consisted of Jeremiah Elbert 19, Joseph B. 16, and their two grandchildren Ada C. 14 and Green Watson Montgomery 11. Household #80 was Samuel Houston Swaim 34 (son of Jerry W. and Melissa [Bobbitt] Swaim) and his wife Eliza H. 29 (daughter of W.B. and Matilda [Bobbitt] Montgomery), and there were other relatives in the county, too numerous to mention.

In just reading the Weakley County census indices from 1830 through 1900, one is struck by the number of surnames (besides relatives) similar to those seen earlier in the North Carolina counties we have been most concerned with—Granville, Franklin, Warren, and the upper part of Wake. These are just a very few of the familiar family names: Ward, Smith, Terrell, Vincent, Hawkins, Higgs, Smart, Price, Jenkins, Hazelwood, Canaday, Bradford, Duke, and Winston.

Information from the 1870 Agricultural Census of Weakley County leads to speculation that although William (W.B.) Montgomery had been quite comfortably well off, he was having a hard time economically; or, being in his mid-sixties and possibly in poor health, was retrenching and helping out his sons. Either

---

6. I enjoyed what Brad jokingly wrote me in September 1990: "The commander, W. H. Jackson, became one of Bedford Forrest's generals and the outfit was later a part of Forrest's command. So perhaps it won't be stretching the truth too much if we say that 'Grampa rode with Forrest.' In this part of the world that line gets you entree into the very best circles."

hypothesis or both could be true. Certainly the great majority of Southerners were worse off after the Civil War than before. Whatever the reasons, William's 120 acres of land in 1860 had shrunk to 32 acres by 1870. He had fewer horses, mules, oxen, other cattle, sheep, and swine, no sweet or Irish potatoes, no home manufacture, less wheat and corn, and less valuation on slaughtered animals. In 1870 there were a few changes on the plus side, however. William had processed twenty pounds of wool, produced three bales of cotton, and had increased butter production from one hundred fifty pounds to four hundred.

William Montgomery died shortly after 1870, but unfortunately the exact date is not known. There is probably more than one family Bible wherein his exact birth and death dates are recorded, and possibly even who (for certain) his parents were. Oh, to find that Bible! Finding an old family Bible is a researcher's dream. Being Cumberland Presbyterian, William was doubtless buried in Mt. Zion Cemetery in Weakley County, but his grave is now unmarked.

CHANGES IN SHAPE OF WEAKLEY COUNTY, TENNESSEE, BETWEEN 1830, WHEN WILLIAM B. MONTGOMERY WAS ENUMERATED IN THAT YEAR'S CENSUS, AND THE EARLY 1870S, WHEN HE DIED

The 1880 census for District 10 in Weakley County (p. 293, #199) showed Carrie (Matilda Carolyn Bobbitt) Montgomery to be the head of the household. Matilda is shown as 65, farmer, born in North Carolina, and with her are her son George W. 35, farmer, and her two grandchildren, Ada 23, keeping house, and Watt 21, farm worker. George had not married and must have been in charge of the farm after his father's death in the early 1870s. Ada and Watt (Green Watson) Montgomery were the orphaned children of Matilda's oldest child, James Green Montgomery, and Pelina (Finch). William and Matilda's son John W. had married during the Civil War, and the two youngest sons, Elbert and Joe, had married after William's death. In the 1880 Weakley County census Jeremiah Elbert (called Elbert) was listed in District 10 (E.D. 173, p. 20) as E. W. (*sic*) Montgomery 30, farmer, with his wife Lou 34, Mattie Lee 3, and Almus 1. In District 15, adjoining District 10, the youngest son Joe was enumerated (E. D. 175, p. 20) six days before Elbert was, listed as Joseph Montgomery 27, farmer, wife Emma 25, Carl B. 1, and Press C. Rogers 61, father-in-law.

Three farms away from the widowed Matilda in 1880 lived Calvin Finch 53, farmer, his wife Sarah 53, his sister-in-law Elizabeth Hisaw 45, and nephew Joshua Casey 24, farm worker. Calvin was a brother of James *Monroe* Finch, whose wife Melissa was William and Matilda's oldest daughter, and Calvin was also a sibling of Pelina (Finch), deceased, who had married Matilda's son James Green. In District 11 in 1880 William and Matilda's son John W. 47, lived with his family (E. D. 174, p. 25), and close by were Matilda's youngest brother Haywood 47,

and his family, and Eliza A. Bobbitt 58, the widow of Matilda's other brother, W.P.M. (Willie). Also, in District 11 was John Hite Finch, another brother of Calvin, Monroe, and Pelina, and his son John Houston Finch. (In 1870, p. 8, John Hite had been enumerated in District 10 next to Calvin.)

William B. Montgomery had died ca. 1873, and Matilda Caroline (Bobbitt) Montgomery was a widow about a decade, dying shortly after 1880 in her late sixties. She had lived in Weakley County over fifty years. We will follow the Montgomery family no further here except to say that William and Matilda's oldest daughter (my ancestor) Melissa Jane (Montgomery) Finch, died in 1900, and William and Matilda's sons John W., George W., Elbert, and Joe Montgomery were still living in 1900. (Faithful George did not marry until after his mother died.) William and Matilda had come to the western frontier of Tennessee in 1830 and they and their children lived there the rest of their lives, nearly all being buried in Mt. Zion Cemetery, Weakley County, near the Cumberland Presbyterian Church. We descendants wish we knew as much about William B. Montgomery's antecedents as we do about his wife's Bobbitt antecedents.

Children of William B. Montgomery and Matilda Caroline (Bobbitt):

1. James Green Montgomery:
   b. 1828 (possibly early 1829), Knox County, Tennessee;
   m. 6 April 1852, Pelina B. Finch (b. 1833, d. 186–), youngest child of John Wesley Finch and Judith Hockaday (both deceased), Weakley County, Tennessee [See "John Wesley Finch" chapter, 9th child Pelina];
   d. September 1859, of consumption (lung disease). James G. and Pelina were buried in Mt. Zion Cemetery, Weakley County, Tennessee.
   They are the ancestors of Watson M. Bradley, Nashville, Tennessee, who did so much good research on the Montgomerys and with whom I corresponded from 1985 until his death in 1991.
   Children:
   (1) Frances Montgomery: b. 1854
   d. in childhood
   (2) *Ada* Caroline Montgomery: b. 1856
   Ada never married, and after her parents' early deaths lived with her grandparents, William and Matilda Montgomery. After her brother Watt's death, Ada lived with her sister-in-law Susan.
   Ada brought continuity to the family story, as she understood all the connections, knowing her grandparents, her nieces and nephews, and their children.
   d. 1926
   (Information from Watson M. Bradley, a great-nephew)
   (3) Alonzo Green *Watson* ("Watt") Montgomery: b. 20 July 1858;
   m. Martha *Susan* Williams. After Watt's death, "Susie" married Luther Roney and had sons Robert and Will.
   d. 3 February 1893
   Children:
   1. Ada *Lula* Montgomery: b. 1887;
   m. 2 August 1911, Van Allen Bradley (b. 13 February 1877, d. 3 March 1960);
   Lula d. 1960

Children of Lula Montgomery and Van Allen Bradley:

[1] Van Allen Bradley, Jr.: b. 1913;
m. (1) 5 November 1939, Patricia Elaine Thompson; div.; m. (2) 3 December 1966, Sharon Lee Luedke; d. 1984
Children of 1st wife:
1. Van Allen III: b. 1941
2. Pamela Star: b. 1942
3. Susan Claudia: b. 1953
Child of 2d wife:
4. Gremlyn Angelica: b. 1968

[2] Leonard Keelon Bradley: b. 1916;
m. 25 December 1939, Mary Ann Bryan
Children:
1. Leonard Keelon, Jr.: b. 1940
2. Robert Bryan: b. 1942; d. 1965
3. John Allen: b. 1945
4. William David: b. 1947
5. Charles Thomas: b. 1951
6. Mary Elizabeth: b. 1955

[3] Watson Montgomery ("Brad") Bradley (mentioned p. 316):
b. 11 February 1923;
m. 3 June 1950, Bertha Dee ("Bert") Smith;
d. 23 April 1991
Children:

ALONZO GREEN *WATSON* MONTGOMERY
1858–1893

1. Isham ("Ike") Beasley Bradley: b. 22 September 1952;
m. 10 October 1981, Roberta Ann Baskette (b. 12 December 1953). They live in Nashville, Tennessee.
Children:
(1) Elizabeth Ann ("Beth"): b. 18 July 1985
(2) Caroline Joy: b. 10 January 1990
2. Rebecca ("Becky") Bradley: b. 15 January 1955;
m. 7 May 1977, Fletcher Douglas ("Doug") Shields, Jr. (b. 15 October 1953). They live in Oxford, Mississippi.
Children:
(1) Sarah Jane Shields: b. 1 May 1982
(2) Laura Anne Shields: b. 8 February 1985
(3) Bradley Douglas Shields: b. 18 February 1990

Continuing with children of Alonzo Green *Watson* Montgomery and Martha *Susan* Williams from p. 316:

2. Alta Stella Montgomery: b. 1890; d. 1892
3. Mattie Green Montgomery: b. 1891; m. Debro Freeman; d. 1977
   Child: Mary Helen
4. Watson Montgomery: b. 1892; m. Clarence Cravens; lived in Martin, Tenn., about 35 miles northwest of Dresden; d. 1944
   Child: Clarence III

Continuing with children of William B. Montgomery and Matilda Caroline (Bobbitt):

2. MELISSA JANE MONTGOMERY — MY DIRECT LINE
   Born: 7 April 1831, Weakley County, Tennessee
   Married: November 1848, James Monroe Finch (b. 1824, d. 1899), son of John Wesley Finch and Judith (Hockaday), in Weakley County, Tennessee
   Died: 20 January 1900. Both buried in Mt. Zion Cemetery, Weakley County, Tennessee
   Children: Alpheus D., Benanna Alice (my line), Cornelia E., John Bruce, Martha Ella, Lillie May, Zula, Emma Hite
   [See "Melissa Jane Montgomery" chapter]

3. John W. Montgomery: b. March 1833, Weakley County, Tennessee
   m. 23 August 1863, Unity E. Phillips (b. February 1836, Hickman County, Tennessee). The marriage record showed John's brother-in-law, Monroe Finch, was Justice of the Peace. A Confederate officer, John married during the Civil War. In the 1910 Weakley County Census[7] John W.'s household included his wife, his sons (both widowers), and 4 grandchildren.
   d. 1 December 1914, Weakley County, Tennessee
   Children:
   (1) Thomas H. Montgomery: b. December 1868
      m. 1894, Helen — (b. December 1877)
      Children:
      1. Tommie L.: female, b. March 1895
      2. Bruce: b. September 1897
      3. Stella: b. 1902
      4. Elbert G.: b. 1907
   (2) William B. Montgomery: b. October 1871; m. between 1901 and 1903, Myrtle F.(?); d. 1946?
      Child:
      1. Leonard E.: b. 1904
4. Elizabeth B. Montgomery: b. 8 January 1837, Weakley County, Tennessee; m. 22 July 1855, Andrew Jackson Swaim (b. 11 December 1833, d. 29 October1884), oldest son of Jeremiah Weatherly Swaim and Melissa J. Bobbitt, Weakley County; d. 15 July 1856. There were no children from their brief marriage. The following March, Andrew married Lou M. Dollarhite. [Children of Andrew's 2d marriage, p. 297]
5. Eliza Hawkins Montgomery: b. 9 October 1840, Weakley County, Tennessee; m. 20 April 1858, Samuel Houston Swaim (b. 17 April 1836, d. 4 January

---

7. District 10, Enumeration District 149, p. 220, #220.

1895), 2d son of Jeremiah Weatherly Swaim and Melissa J. (Bobbitt), Weakley County, Tennessee. (Elizabeth, #4 supra, and Eliza married their 1st cousins, as the girls' mother and the boys' mother were sisters.)
d. 10 April 1891. Eliza and her husband were buried in Mt. Zion Cemetery, Weakley County.
Children:
(1) Sarah E. Swaim: b. 1859
(2) Edgar: b. 1860
(3) William: b. 1861
(4) Byron: b. 1867
(5) Stella: b. 1870
(6) Mayne: female, b. 1879

6. George W. Montgomery: b. 30 April 1845, and named for George W. Montgomery who is thought to be William B. Montgomery's father; m. 23 January 1886, Sallie Willie Swaim (b. April 1861). They were married at John Houston Finch's by J. H. Finch, Jr. (*sic*), Justice of the Peace. George was a Confederate soldier; later, a farmer.
d. 6 April 1911. His nephew, Dr. Bruce Finch (son of Melissa J. Bobbitt and James Monroe Finch) reported George died of tuberculosis.
Children: 4, names unknown; all died prior to 1900
7. Jeremiah *Elbert* Montgomery: b. April 1850; first name is doubtless for his father's old friend and his Aunt Melissa's husband, Jeremiah W. Swaim of Weakley County, Tennessee; m. 1874, Louisa J. W—— (b. September 1845 in Missouri); d. after 1910; Elbert and Lou both buried in Mt. Zion Cemetery, Weakley County, Tennessee

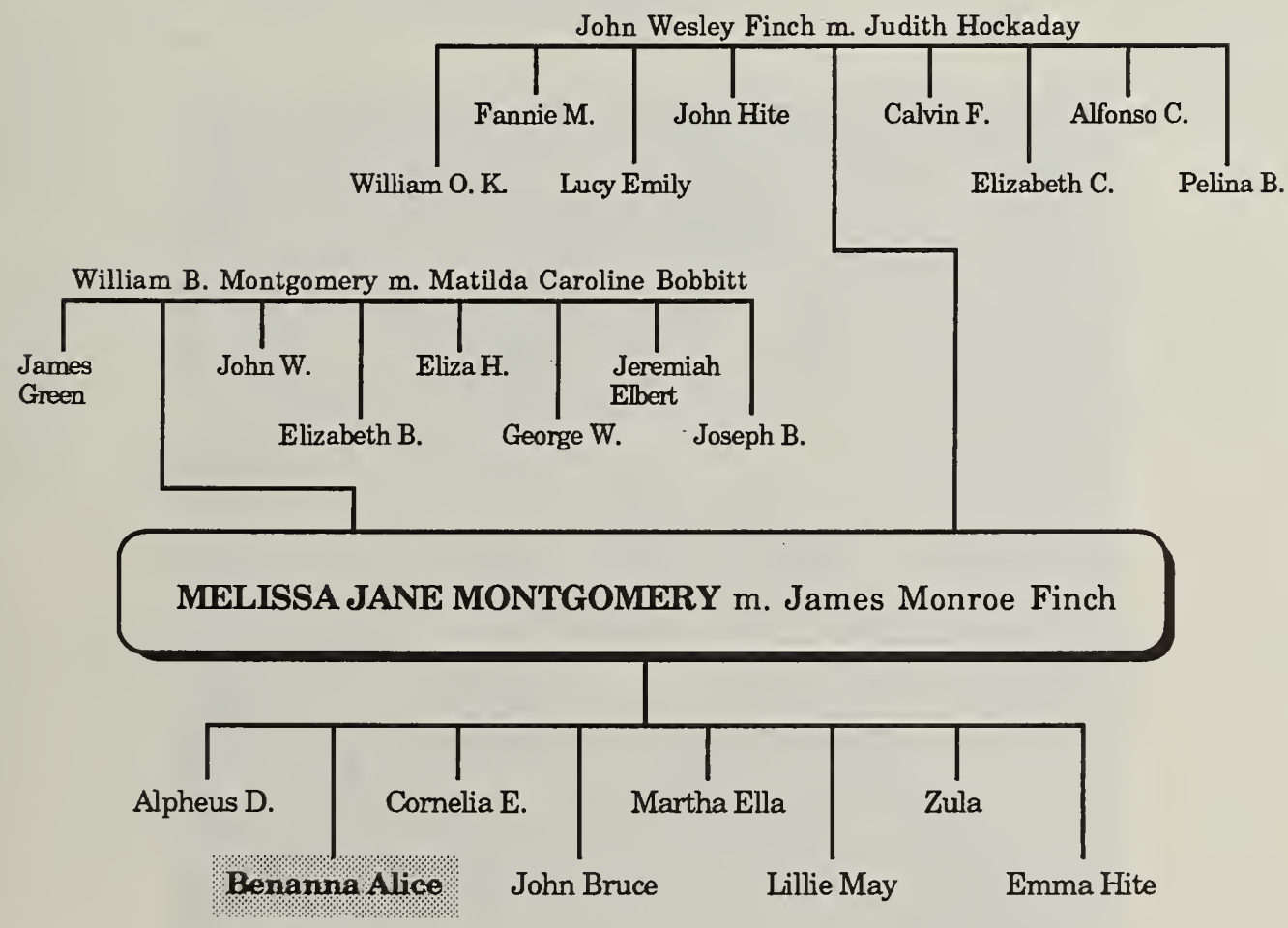
JEREMIAH *ELBERT* MONTGOMERY

Children: The 1900 Weakley County Census showed that of 6 children born, 3 were still living at that time.
(1) Mattie Lee Montgomery: b. March 1877;
m. William Mitchell (b. May 1871)
(2) Almus Montgomery: b. 12 August 1879;
d. 25 April 1881, buried in Mt. Zion Cemetery
(3) James A. Montgomery: b. March 1881
Children: In the 1910 Weakley County Census (Dist. 23, p. 111, #175) James was enumerated as a widower with his 22 month old son, Albert Watson Montgomery, in the household of his parents.
(4–5) unknown: d. ante-1900
(6) Thomas *Waldo* Montgomery: b. 6 August 1887;
m. post-1910 Claudie — (b. 1885, d. 1976);
d. 6 June 1949, buried in Mt. Zion Cemetery

8. Joseph B. ("Joe") Montgomery: b. 1854;
m. ca. 1878, Emma A. Rogers (b. 1853, d. 1937) daughter of Presley C. Rogers;
d. 1935; both buried in Mt. Zion Cemetery
Children (including):
(1) Carl B. Montgomery: b. 1879

[See "Matilda Caroline Bobbitt"—wife]
[See "Melissa Jane Montgomery"—daughter]

MELISSA JANE MONTGOMERY
(1831–1900)



MELISSA JANE MONTGOMERY was the oldest daughter and second child of William B. Montgomery and Matilda Caroline Bobbitt, and was named for her mother's only sister, Melissa Jane (Bobbitt) Swaim. Melissa was born 7 April 1831 and, like her two younger sisters and four younger brothers, was born in Weakley County, Tennessee. All the siblings grew up in Weakley County and were buried there.

Melissa was seventeen years old when in November 1848 she married James *Monroe* Finch, the fifth child of Judith (Hockaday) and John Wesley Finch, both recently deceased. Judith and John Finch had moved from Granville County, North Carolina, to Weakley County, Tennessee, in 1826 when Monroe was two years old. Melissa's parents settled in Weakley County in early 1830, the year before she was born. Apparently the Montgomerys, Bobbitts, and Finches knew one another before making the big move from North Carolina to the northwestern frontier of Tennessee. The following simplified chart shows how Melissa Montgomery and her husband, Monroe Finch, were related.

John Finch, Jr. (b. 1750)

8th child
John Wesley Finch (b. 1793)

James *Monroe* Finch (b. 1824)
m. Melissa

9th child
Barbara Finch (b. 1795) m. Green Bobbitt

Matilda C. Bobbitt (b. 1814) m. Wm. B. Montgomery

Melissa J. Montgomery (b. 1831)
m. James *Monroe*

MELISSA JANE MONTGOMERY
1831–1900

For most of their married life, Melissa, Monroe, and their family lived not far south of Dresden, the Weakley County seat, but in 1866 they moved to Haywood County, Tennessee, which was about sixty miles southwest of there. They did not sell their land in Weakley County, and I have not been able to find the reason for their moving. Monroe bought 61 acres of land in Haywood County and his older brother, John Hite Finch, bought 175 acres, but it is not known whether John H.

actually moved there. The land the brothers bought was in District 6, adjoining District 7 south of Brownsville, the county seat. Nothing is known about this brief "Haywood County period" of 1866 and 1867 except that Melissa and Monroe's oldest daughter, my ancestor Benanna Alice Finch, met and married Robert Rufus Tugwell, the youngest child of John L. Tugwell, deceased, and Lucinda (Ball) Tugwell, who lived nearby in District 7. Melissa, Monroe, and their other children moved back to Weakley County in late 1867. Melissa and Monroe's three youngest daughters, Lillie May, Zula, and Emma Hite, were born between 1868 and 1875. When Emma Hite was born, Melissa was forty-five years old.

By 1882 the four oldest children were married: Dr. Alpheus Finch, my grandmother Benanna (Finch) Tugwell, Cornelia (Finch) Davis, and Dr. Bruce Finch. In 1882 Melissa, Monroe, and their four unmarried daughters (Ella seventeen, Lillie May fifteen, Zula twelve, Emma seven) moved just a few miles from where the family farm was located near Dresden to the new little town of Gleason. This is where Melissa and Monroe lived the rest of their lives.

Melissa and Monroe Finch had a long life together—nearly fifty-one years. Monroe died 21 July 1899 and Melissa on 20 January 1900. Melissa was sixty-eight, and their oldest daughter Benanna, who died exactly seven days later in Haywood County, was only forty-eight. Melissa Jane (Montgomery) Finch was buried in Mt. Zion Cemetery, Weakley County, Tennessee, beside her husband Monroe. Melissa's married life and her children are treated more fully in the chapter on James Monroe Finch.

Children of Melissa Jane (Montgomery) and James Monroe Finch:

1.	Alpheus D.	See p. 202	
2.	BENANNA ALICE	See p. 203	MY DIRECT LINE
3.	Cornelia E.	See p. 204	
4.	John Bruce	See p. 204	
5.	Martha Ella	See p. 207	
6.	Lillie May	See p. 207	
7.	Zula	See p. 207	
8.	Emma Hite	See p. 210	

[See "James Monroe Finch"—husband]
[See "Benanna Alice Finch"—daughter]

APPENDIX

GENEALOGICAL TRIVIA

Oren F. Morton, *A History of Rockbridge County, Virginia,* (1920), p. 340:

> Posterity in the female line tends to grow in a more rapid ratio than in the male line. If a certain John Smith has two sons and two daughters, all of whom marry and have each two sons and two daughters, and if the same average rule holds for later generations, no cousin-marriages taking place within the connection, then out of the 256 great-great-grandchildren, only sixteen would be Smiths. The other 249 would be Browns, Whites, Joneses, etc.

The Holston Territory Genealogical Society, P. O. Box 433, Bristol, Va.-Tn., *The Holston Pastfinder,* vol. 9, no. 34, (March 1991), Ms. Shelby I. Edwards, Editor and Publisher. (Appeared in *Cracker Crumbs* 13:1):

2 Parents
4 Grandparents
8 Great Grandparents
16 Great Great Grandparents
32 Great Great Great Grandparents
64 Great Great Great Great Grandparents
128 Great Great Great Great Great Grandparents
256 Great Great Great Great Great Great Grandparents
512 Great Great Great Great Great Great Great Grandparents
1024 Great Great Great Great Great Great Great Great Grandparents
AFTER JUST 10 GENERATIONS! ! !

This, too, is from *The Holston Pastfinder,* 12, p. 48. (Appeared in the Warren County, Illinois, Genealogical Society's *Prairie Pioneer,* vol. 4, no. 4, p. 5.):

> The child of your parent's sibling is your first cousin,
> and his child is your first cousin once removed,
> and his child is your first cousin twice removed,
> and his child is your first cousin thrice removed.
>
> The child of your grandparent's sibling is your second cousin,
> and his child is your second cousin once removed,
> and his child is your second cousin twice removed,
> and his child is your second cousin thrice removed.
>
> The child of your great-grandparent's sibling is your third cousin,
> and his child is your third cousin once removed,
> and his child is your third cousin twice removed,
> and his child is your third cousin thrice removed.

Meredith B. Colket, Jr., *Founders of Early American Families: Emigrants from Europe 1607–1657,* (1975), p. xxix:

> Sometimes dates between January and March are given as, for example, 3 February 1657/8. In the seventeenth century, time was reckoned by both the civil year which began 1 January and by the ecclesiastical year which began on Lady's Day, 25 March. The double date shown above assures us that the reference is to 3 February 1658 as we would write it today.

1 pole = 1 perch = 1 rod = 25 links = 16 1/2 feet

1 rood = 1/4 acre (40 square rods)

ACKNOWLEDGMENTS FOR ILLUSTRATIONS

Page 7 Dumas Malone, *Jefferson the President, Second Term 1805–1809*, (1974), p. 418.

Page 8 Price–Strother 1808 map, W. P. Cumming, *North Carolina in Maps*, Plate IX, Raleigh: State Department of Archives and History, (1966).

Page 16 Miriam Haynie, *The Stronghold, Historic Northern Neck of Virginia*, (1959).

Page 57 Photograph of Robert Andrew Tugwell courtesy of James Jared ("Jimmy") Tugwell.

Page 64 MacRae–Brazier 1833 North Carolina map.

Page 85 Byron Sistler, *1830 Census West Tennessee*, (1971); Emily B. Walker, *North Carolina Land Grants in the Western District*, (1987).

Page 90 Baylor County, Texas, History Society, *Salt Pork to Sirloin, The History of Baylor County from 1878 to 1930*, (1972), p. 131.

Page 97 Haywood County, Tennessee, map courtesy of Frances Tugwell Fowler.

Page 104 Pictures of Highland Park United Methodist Church courtesy of H.C. Maiden, Jr.

Page 117 History and Archives Division, Dallas (Texas) Public Library.

Page 147 Northeast section of 1775 Henry Mouzon map of the Carolinas, W. P. Cumming, Plate VIII, Raleigh: State Department of Archives and History, (1966).

Page 162 Michael F. Doran, *Atlas of County Boundary Changes in Virginia 1634–1895*, (1987), p. 11.

Page 169 Bute County, North Carolina, map drawn by Panthea M. Twitty and Panthea Anne Twitty in 1967 for Mary Hinton Kerr, *Warren County, North Carolina, Records, vol. II Supplement, Abstracts of Bute County, North Carolina, Deeds Registered in Warren County Deed Books 1–7*, (1967).

Page 189 *North Carolina Genealogical Society Journal*, (November 1992), p. 312.

Page 203 Picture of Alpheus Finch home courtesy of Frances Tugwell Fowler.

Page 204 Picture of Dr. Bruce Finch and son Hubert B. courtesy of Hubert Bruce Finch.

Page 207 Picture of Zula (Finch) and Isaac Yokley courtesy of Jane Dean Sohm.

Page 234 Captain Collet's 1770 map, W. P. Cumming, *North Carolina in Maps*, Plate VII, Raleigh: State Department of Archives and History, (1966).

Page 246 Enlarged section of Virginia map, William Thorndale and William Dollarhide, *Map Guide to the U.S. Federal Censuses, 1790–1920*, (1987).

Page 247 The Lower Parish of Nansemond County map drawn by J. H. Granbery in 1948 from data in Patent Book in the Virginia State Land Office.

Page 248 Ibid.

Page 250 Charles Frances Cocke, *Parish Lines—Diocese of Southern Virginia*, (1964), p. 265.

Page 261 Section of Tidewater Virginia map, John W. Bobbitt, *The Bobbitt Family in America*, (1988), p. iii.

Page 269 Maps by L. Polk Denmark from Ronald V. Jackson and Gary R. Teeples, *North Carolina 1840 Census Index*, (1978).

Page 273 Map drawn by Panthea Anne and Panthea M. Twitty for Mary Hinton Kerr, *Warren County, North Carolina, Records vol. II Supplement*, (1967).

Page 278 Wallace R. Draughon, compiler and editor, *North Carolina Genealogical Reference*, Map no. 10.

Page 301 Photograph courtesy of Watson Montgomery Bradley.

Page 302 Ibid.

Page 304 Weakley County, Tennessee, map, Pansy Nanney Baker and Charlotte Stout Reynolds, *Weakley Remembered*, vol. III, p. iii.

Page 315 Map on left from MacRae–Brazier 1833 North Carolina map.

Page 317 Photograph courtesy of Watson Montgomery Bradley.

ADDENDUM

James Tugwell (1762–ca. 1807): see pp. 35–61
His 1st child William Tugwell (1796–1882): see p. 43
His 1st child Joseph Lyon Tugwell (1819–1888): see p. 44
His 2d child Benjamin S. Tugwell (1842–1885): p. 44
His 1st child Mary Ophelia Tugwell (1864–1947): below

Nearly one hundred pages of information on William Tugwell's descendants was sent to me by Leonard Joe McCown just prior to the publication of this book when it was too late to absorb it into the James Tugwell chapter. It is wonderfully informative and incredibly detailed, a small portion of which is below. Leonard has researched his family history since 1957 and will publish a book on his work.

Mary *Ophelia* Tugwell: b. 12 June 1864 in Farmerville, Union Parish, Louisiana; m. 25 August 1886, Simeon McCown (b. 19 October 1863, d. 20 April 1925), son of Simeon McCown and Margaret Elizabeth Thomas, in Lamar County, Texas. In 1912 Ophelia and Simeon moved from Lamar County in north Texas to Calhoun County in south Texas. Soon their married children and their families followed them to the community of Seadrift.
d. 16 May 1947, Calhoun County, Texas. Both buried in Seadrift Cemetery, Seadrift, Calhoun County, Texas.
Children:

(1) Benjamin Owen McCown: b. 2 August 1887 near Paris, Texas; m. Fannie Maude Beasley. In 1912 moved to Seadrift in south Texas, where his parents lived.
Children:
1. Elgah Lee: b. 29 January 1910
2. Glen Owen: b. 6 February 1912; d. 19 February 1993
3. Dorris Florene: b. 25 October 1915
4. Clarence Eugene ("C.E."): b. 20 September 1918; m. Hazel Lee Turner (b. 1923, d. 1983), daughter of John Mitchell Turner and Geneva Eveline Hunt; served one and a half years in the Navy in World War II; buried 6 December 1984 in Colonial Gardens, Port Lavaca, Texas.
Children:
[1] *Leonard* Joe McCown: b. 9 September 1942, Port Lavaca, Texas; m. 15 August 1964, Marjorie Ann Hoyle (b. 17 July 1942, Kansas), daughter of William Luther Hoyle and Inez Ruthmarye Carleen, in Irving, Texas. Leonard is a librarian and has worked in public and academic libraries.
Child:
1. Kristi Karleen: b. 19 October 1970; m. 15 May 1993, Walter Logan Betts, in Dallas, Texas

[2] Geneva Maude McCown: b. 24 October 1946, Port Lavaca, Texas; m. 23 July 1966, William Dean Garrett, in Port Lavaca, Texas
Children:
1. Charlotte Rena: b. 1 August 1967; m. (1) 6 February 1988, Harber Bradley Lampl, in Santa Anna, Texas; div.;
m. (2) 23 July 1993, Marshall Thad Springer, in Snyder, Texas
2. Cynthia Lynn: b. 27 May 1970; m. 20 October 1990, Wayne Reid Philpot, in Santa Anna, Texas
Child:
(1) Cassie Lea: b. 26 March 1992

5. Gerald Franklin: b. 4 May 1921
6. Hollis Lynch: b. 17 January 1923; d. 24 June 1923
7. Hollis Edward: 29 December 1923
8. Milton Sim: b. 1 March 1926; d. 9 September 1982
9. Billy Darrell: b. 8 July 1930; d. 10 June 1992

(2) Beulah Esta McCown: b. 1888; d. 1952
(3) Thressie McCown: b. 1891; d. 1904
(4) Brice William McCown: b. 1893; d. 1949
(5) Annie Lillian McCown: b. 1895; d. 1974
(6) Thelma Lee McCown: b. 1899; d. 1900
(7) Odus McCown: b. 1902; d. 1952
(8) Alma Dell McCown: b. 1904; d. 1957
(9) Maury McCown: b. 1906; d. 1965

NAME INDEX

AAGE, **Ellen**, 53
ABBOTT, **John**, 31
ADAMS, (lst name unkn) (m. Elizabeth Hockaday), 230; **J.**, (b. 1827), 241; **Joel B.**, 54; **Joel Barber**, 54; **John**, 236, 237, 241; **Thomas**, 189
ADDISON, **Ann**, 107
ADONIS, **Carolin**, 46
ADRIANCE, **Caroline**, 206
ALCORN, **Maxine**, 223
ALDEN, **John**, 20
ALDREDGE, **Sawnie R., Jr.**, 124
ALEXANDER, **Emily E.**, 59
ALFORD, **Louis Hyman**, 55
ALLEN, **Edward Chambers**, 239; **E. L.**, 82; **Jack**, 45; **James Edward**, 239; **Kent**, 208; **L. M.**, 82; **Portia J.**, 210; **Richard**, 20; **Sarah**, 287; **Mrs. W. H.**, 122
ALSTON, **Amy** (m. John R. Bobbitt), 275–277, 279, 280, 283; **John**, 145, 275, 276, 286; **Richard John**, *see* Alston, John; **Willis**, 286; **W., Jr.**, 232
AMES, **George**, 136; **(Mrs.) Susan**, 136, 138
AMMON, **Mary (Bristow)**, 223
AMMONS, **Dale Elizabeth**, 56; **Daphne (—)** (m. Neal), 56; **Neal**, 56
ANDERSON, **Thomas**, 25
ANDREW, **Rev. A. L.**, 121
ARLEDGE, **Clement**, 274
ARNOLD, **Furney**, 309
ASHLY, **William**, 140
ASHTON, **John**, 159
ATKINS, **James G.**, 208; **Rebecca**, 208
ATKINSON, **John**, 288
AUSET, **Johanna**, 133
AUSTIN, **Henry**, 43
AYCOCK, **Daniel**, 278; **Francis**, 278

BACON, **Betty**, 50; **Lydall**, 166
BAILEY, **Delila**, 238; **Samuel**, 236, 252; **Winey**, 56
BAKER, **James O.**, 56; **William**, 31, 35
BALDWIN, **Elizabeth** (dtr. of Wm. and Judith), 24; **Elizabeth,** *see* Browne, Eliz. Baldwin; **John**, 21; **Joseph**, 24; **Margaret** (Cook), 17, 18, 19; **Sarah**, 24; **William** (m. Judith Tuggle), 24; **William** (mother of Eliz.), 17, 18, 19; **William, Jr.**, 24
BALL, (1st name unkn) (m. Jessie Anna Tugwell), 60; **Anna**, 22; **Elizabeth**, 22; **Henry**, 22; **Lucinda**, 61, 62, 68, 70–77, 79–81, 89, 94, 200, 203, 211, 323; **John H.**, 67, 68; **Sarah (—)** (wife of John H.), 68
BALLARD, **Minta**, 44
BALTHROP, **Augustine, 291**
BANNERMAN, **Dr. Mark**, 20
BARBAR, **Thomas**, 220
BARNES, **Henry**, 20; **Nell**, 45; **Richard**, 144
BARRETT, **James**, 160
BASKETT, **Daniel**, 23; **Elizabeth**, 17, 18, 19; **Henry**, 20; **John**, 17, 18, 19; **Mary**, 17, 18, 19, 21
BASKETTE, **Roberta Ann**, 317
BATCHELDER, **Henry**, 29; **John**, 20; **Sarah**, 20
BAUER, **Wauneta Marie**, 61
BAXTER, **Mrs. Houston**, 81
BEASLEY, **Fannie Maude**, 328
BEATTIE, **Dorothy**, 54
BEHETHLAND, **Robert**, 245
BELL, **James**, 220; **James, Jr.**, 221; **Theodora**, 299
BELLIVEAU, **Cara Lynne**, 133
BELTZHOOVER, **Thomas**, 44
BENGE, **James**. *See* Minge, James
BENNETT, **Amy** (m. Wm. Bobbitt, Sr.), 269, 271, 275, 276; **Lu Eunice**, 298; **Richard**, 269, 271, 272, 276
BENTON, **Capt. Jesse**, 36, 40
BERGHOFF, **Carlyn Ann**, 106
BERRY, **Anne**, 22, 24, 26, 27; **(Mrs.) Frances**, 24; **Mary**, 24, 26–29, 33; **Thomas**, 24, 26, 27, 28
BETHAY, **James**, 147–149; **Jesse**, 140; **John**, 147–150
BETTS, **Walter Logan**, 328
BEVERLEY, **Harry**, 20
BIEL, **Marilyn**, 209
BINGHAM, **Melissa**, 55
BISHOP, **Loni**, 114
BLACKLEY, **James**, 309
BLAKEY, **Churchill, Jr.**, 24
BLANEY, **Edward**, 245
BLEDSOE, **Bertha (Campbell)** (m. James Tugwell b. 1959), 58; **Matalee**, 52

BOBBITT, **Alasa May**, 299; **Allen**, 262; **Almus**, 299; **Alonso** (son of W.P.M.), 296, 299; **Alston** (son of John Richard), 275, 276, 281, 283; **Amrilla**, 262; **Amy** (dtr. of Drury), 280, 283, 288, 289; **Amy** (dtr. of Isham), 281; **Amy** (dtr. of John "of Chowan"), 262, 264, 270, 271; **Amy** (dtr. of John Richard), 275, 276, 282, 283; **Amy** (dtr. of Stephen), 280; **Amy** (dtr. of Wm., Sr.), 269, 271, 275, 276; **Anthony**, 281; **Archibald**, 262; **Archibald** (son of John, Jr.), 280; **Arthur** (son of Stephen), 280, 281; **Arthur** (son of Wm., Jr.), 275; **B.**, *see* Finch, Barbara; **Betsy** (dtr. of Sherwood), 288; **Britton** (son of Wm. M.), 174, 178–180, 182, 217, 262, 293, 312; **Charity** (dtr. of Drury), 280, 283, 288, 289; **Charity** (dtr. of Wm. M.), 262; **Claiborne**, 280; **David**, 290; **Drury** (son of John and Mary), 215, 286, 287, 289, 290, 293; **Drury** (son of John Richard), 275, 276, 278, 280, 283–290, 293, 294; **Drury** (son of Stephen, Jr.), 280; **Drury Allen**, 281; **Drury, Jr.** (b. 1773), 280, 283, 285–290, 295; **Drury R.** (son of Stephen), 280; **Drury Richard**, 291; **Edward William**, 291; **Eliza Ann** (—) (wife of W.P.M.), 216, 296, 299, 316; **Elizabeth** (dtr. of Drury b. 1744), 280, 283, 288, 289; **Elizabeth** (dtr. of Drury b. 1779), 291; **Emma P.**, 299; **Emily** (dtr. of Drury, Jr.), 288, 295; **Fannie** (—) (m. Thomas H.), 299; **Florence R.**, 299; **Frances** (dtr. of Drury b. 1779), 291; **Frances** (dtr. of Isham), 281; **Frances** (dtr. of John "of Chowan"), 262, 264, 270, 271; **Frederick Harris**, 281; **Green** (son of John and Mary), 92, 179, 183, 199, 215–217, 286, 287, 289–296, 300, 307–309, 312, 322; **Green** (son of Sherwood), 286, 287, 293; **Green D.**, 291; **Green W.** (son of Drury b. 1779), 290; **Harris**, 280; **Haywood Edison**, 183, 200, 215, 216, 291, 295, 296, 299, 300, 307, 310, 312, 314, 315; **Haywood Hawkins Edison**, *see* Bobbitt, Haywood Edison; **Holly** (son of John and Mary), 215, 287, 289–292; **Ida E.**, 299; **Isham** (son of John Richard), 275, 276, 279, 281, 283; **Isham Drury**, 281; **James** (b. 1707), 262; **James** ("of Hanover"), 257, 261, 263, 264; **James** (b. 1747, son of Wm., Jr.), 275; **James** (son of Wm. and Susannah), 281; **James W.** (son of John and Mary), 215, 287, 289, 291, 292; **John "of Chowan"**, 180, 215, 257, 261, 262, 264–269, 271, 275, 276, 292, 296; **John** (son of Drury b. 1744), 183, 215, 280, 283, 285–287, 289, 290, 292–295; **John** (son of Drury b. 1779), 291; **John** (son of Wm., Jr.), 275; **John** (son of Wm. M.), 174, 180, 262; **John** (son of Wm. and Susannah), 282; **John B.**, 293; **John James**, 290; **John R.** (son of Stephen), 280; **John R., Jr.** (son of John Richard), 275, 276, 278–280, 283, 289; **John Richard** (son of Randolph), 281; **John Richard** (son of Wm., Sr. b. 1704), 269, 271, 272, 274–280, 283, 285, 287; **John W.** (author), 257, 258, 290; **John W.** (son of Haywood E.), 299; **John William** (son of Isham), 281; **John William** (son of Thomas), 270; **Joseph J.**, 291; **Julie**, 291; **Lavina** (—), 285; **Lemuel** (son of Drury b. 1779), 291; **Lemuel** (son of William b. 1761), 282; **Lewis** (b. 1704, son of Wm., Jr.), 262; **Lewis Charles**, 281; **Lewis, Jr.** (b. 1742), 262, 275; **Lewis, Sr.**, 175, 178, 180, 182, 272–275, 277, 278, 287; **Lively** (dtr. of John and Mary), 215, 287, 289, 291, 292; **Lottie L.**, 299; **Louise** (—), 288; **Martha** (dtr. of Sherwood), 287; **Martha** (dtr. of Wm. and Susannah), 282; **Martha** (m. W.P.M. Bobbitt?), 299; **Mary** (dtr. of John "of Chowan"), 262, 264, 270, 271; **Mary** (dtr. of Sherwood), 288; **Mary** (dtr. of Stephen), 280; **Mary Alston**, 281; **Matilda Caroline**, 92, 183, 194–197, 199, 215–217, 243, 275, 291–297, 300–303, 306–310, 312–316, 318, 320–322; **Mattie P.**, 299; **Melissa Jane** (m. Jeremiah Swaim), 183, 197, 199, 200, 215–217, 291–293, 295, 296, 300, 307, 308, 310, 312, 314, 318, 319, 321; **Miles** (b. 1731, son of Lewis, Sr.), 262, 275, 277; **Nancy** (dtr. of Drury), 280, 283, 288, 289; **Nancy** (dtr. of Isham), 281; **Nancy** (dtr. of John and Mary), 215, 287, 289, 291, 292; **Nancy** (dtr. of Stephen), 280; **Nancy F.**, 299; **Nicholas**, 291; **Oscar Lee**, 204, 299; **Polly** (dtr. of Drury), 280, 283, 288, 289; **Randolph** (son of James "of Hanover"), 263; **Randolph** (son of John Richard), 275, 276, 279, 281, 283, 289; **Rebecca** (dtr. of Drury b. 1744), 280, 283, 288, 289; **Rebecca** (dtr. of Drury b. 1779), 290; **Rebecca** (dtr. of John and Mary), 215, 287, 289, 291, 292; **Rebecca** (dtr. of Randolph), 281; **Rebecca** (dtr. of Sherwood), 287; **Richard** (son of Drury b. 1779), 291; **Sally** (dtr. of John Richard), 275, 276, 283; **Samuel**, 291; **Sarah** (dtr. of Drury, Jr.), 288, 295; **Sarah**, (dtr. of Isham), 281; **Sarah** (dtr. of Randolph), 281; **Sarah** (dtr. of Wm., Jr.), 275; **Sarah** (dtr. of Wm. and Susannah), 282; **Seley**, 280; **Shadrack**, 262; **Sherwood Haywood**, 280, 283, 285–287, 289, 290, 293; **S. Haywood, Jr.** (son of Sherwood), 288; **Simpson** (son of John and Mary), 215, 287, 289, 291, 292; **Sion** (son of Wm., Jr.), 275; **Sion** (son of Wm. M.), 262; **Solomon**, 262; **Stephen** (son of Isham),

281; **Stephen Erasmus** (son of John Richard); 275, 276, 280, 281, 283, 285, 289; **Stephen, Jr.**, 280; **Stephen** (son of Wm. and Susannah), 282; **Susannah** (dtr. of Wm. and Susannah), 282; **Temperance**, 281; **Thomas** (son of Drury), 280, 283, 285, 287–289; **Thomas** (son of John "of Chowan"), 262, 264, 268, 270, 271; **Thomas** (son of Sherwood), 286, 287, 293; **Thomas** (son of Wm. and Susannah), 282; **Thomas H.**, 299; **Thomas M.**, 291; **Turner** (son of Wm., Jr.), 275; **Turner** (son of Wm. M.), 174, 176, 178, 180–182, 215, 262, 272, 293, 294; **Walter R.**, 82, 92, 203, 212, 299; **William** (Emigrant from Wales), 174, 257–262, 264, 275, 280, 292, 296; **William** (son of Drury, Jr.), 285, 288, 295; **William** (son of James "of Hanover"), 263; **William** (son of John Richard), 275, 276, 279, 281, 283; **William** (son of Randolph), 281; **William** (son of Sherwood), 286, 287; **William** (son of Wm. M.), 262; **William** (son of Wm. and Susannah), 282; **William, Jr.** (son of Emigrant from Wales), 215, 257, 261, 262, 264, 292; **William, Jr.** (son of Wm., Sr.), 269, 271, 274–278; **William (Sr.)** (son of John "of Chowan"), 262, 264, 268, 269, 271–278; **William, III** (b. 1700), 262; **William, III** (b. 1747), 275; **William H.**, 299; **William James**, 281; **William M.**, 174, 175, 178, 180, 182, 217, 262, 273, 275, 287, 294; **W.P.M. (William P.M./"Willie")**, 92, 183, 197–199, 204, 215, 216, 291–293, 295, 296, 299, 300, 307, 309, 310, 312, 316; **Willie A.**, 299; **Winney**, 281; **Winnie** (dtr. of John Richard), 275, 276, 280, 283; **Zula M.**, 299

BOBET, **Edward**, 257

BOBIT, **B.** (Dist. 4, Weakley Co.). *See* Bobbitt, Britton

BOLES, **Claude C**, 100; **Claudia**, 100; **Harold Maurice**, 100; **Lester Davis**, 100; **Marilyn**, *see* Davis, Marilyn

BONDURANT, **Benjamin**, 189

BONEY, **Hester**, 281

BONNER, **Peggy**, 50

BOOTH, **Turner**, 236

BORMAN, **John**, 225; **William**, 225

BOSWELL, **Carrie**. *See* Brasfield, Carrie

BOUDREAUX, **Alan**, 115; **Clayton**, 115; **Elizabeth Bishop ("Beth")**, 115

BOUTWELL, **Bennett Lee**, 298; **Sarah Lynn**, 298; **William L.**, 298

BOWEN (BOWERS?), **William**, 293

BOWRITCH, **George**, 20;

BOWSEY, **John**, 159

BOYCE, **Peyton**, 56; **William H.**, 36

BOYD, **B. P.**, 83

BOYER, **Harry**, 51; **Mark Harry**, 51; **Noel Franklin**, 51; **Phyllis Kay**, 51; **Timmy Dewayne**, 51

BRADDY, **James, Sr.**, 31, 35; **Lewis**, 147; **Mary**, 36

BRADFORD, **David**, 179; **Jackson R.**, 239; **Mary**, 172, 179, 180, 216; **Philemon**, 179

BRADLEY, **Caroline Joy**, 317; **Charles Thomas**, 317; **Elizabeth**, 280; **Elizabeth Ann**, 317; **Gremlyn Angelica**, 317; **Isham Beasley ("Ike")**, 317; **John Allen**, 317; **Leonard Keelon**, 195, 317; **Leonard Keelon, Jr.**, 317; **Mary Elizabeth**, 317; **Pamela Star**, 317; **Rebecca ("Becky")**, 317; **Robert Bryan**, 317; **Sarah**, 280; **Van A.**, 195; **Van Allen**, 195, 306, 316, 317; **Van Allen, Jr.**, 317; **Van Allen, III**, 317; **Watson Montgomery**, 175, 195, 216, 217, 294, 300, 301, 303, 306, 307, 313, 316, 317, 327; **William David**, 317

BRADSHER, **Corinna F.**, 239

BRASFIELD, **Addison**, 298; **Carrie** (m. Henry Swaim), 297; **George R.**, 297; **T. B.**, 299

BRASHIER, **Henry**, 46

BRAUNER, **Evelyn (—)**, 114; **Nancy**, 114; **Randall**, 114

BRAWNER, **John**, 197

BRAXTON, **Bettie**, 48

BRAY, **Asher**, 25; **Frances (Thacker)**, 25; **James**, 25

BRENT, **Julia**, 239

BRIDGES, **Drury**, 280; **Henry B.**, 239; **Stephen**, 181; **Temperance**, 182

BRIDLE, **Francis**, 249

BRILEY, **Lloyd T.**, 50

BRISTER, **Jedediah** (son of Samuel), 223; **Susanna** (dtr. of Wm.), 223

BRISTOW, **Charity (—)**, 223; **James**, 36; **Jedediah** (father of Thomson), 223; **Josiah** (Middlesex Co.), 31; **Richard** (Middlesex Co.), 31, 36; **Thomson**, 31, 223, 227

BRISTOW/BRISTER, **Benjamin**, 223; **Catherine**, 223; **George**, 223; **Hockaday**, 223; **John**, 223; **Martha**, 223; **Rosanna (—)** (wife of Samuel), 223; **Samuel**, 223; **Susanna (—)** (wife of Wm.), 223; **Thomson, Jr.**, 223; **Warwick**, 223; **William**, 223

BRITT, **Dottie Fae**, 58; **Elijah**, 58

BROCK, **Mary Carol Foster**, 106; **Maureen Carroll Foster**, 106

BROGDON, **James**, 268

BROOKS, **Frances**, 22; **George**, 31, 35; **Henry**, 22; **Jacob**, 226; **John** (Charles City Co.), 221, 222, 226; **John** (Northampton Co. N.C.), 226; **John** (Orange Co.), 226; **Jonathan**, 22; **Jonathan, Jr.**, 22; **Lodowick**, 36;

Louise Aletha, 51; **Mary**, 22; **Mayo**, 22; **Robert**, 220; **Susanna**, 22; **William**, 22
BROUSSARD, **Alice**, 131
BROWN, **Beulah**, 125; **Blake**, 115; **Brian**, 115; **Cory**, 115; **Mary**, 122; **T.**, 72; **Tiffany**, 115
BROWNE, **Elizabeth (Baldwin)**, 17–19, 21, 22, 26, 48, 69; **James**, 19; **James, Jr.**, 22, 26, 27, 29; **Mary**, 26; **William**, 258
BROWNING, **James**, 288
BRUCE, **Constance Leigh**, 105; **Leonard Washington**, 105
BRYAN, **Mary Ann**, 317
BRYANT, **Eunice Joyce, 51**
BUCHANAN, **Benjamin K.**, 192
BULLOCK, **Charlie W.**, 298
BURKE, **Ann**, 17, 20; **James**, 17; **John, Jr.**, 17, 19
BURKE/BOURKE, **John**, 16, 17, 19, 21
BURNETT, **Bonnie**, *see* Maiden, Bonnie Lee; **Diane Elaine**, 130, 131; **Glenn**, 130; **Jerry William**, 130, 131; **Karen Anne**, 130, 131; **Steven Glenn**, 130, 131
BURROW, **Archibald D.**, 291; **Holly W.**, 291; **Jim W.**, 291; **Maria**, 291; **Sabrina**, 291; **William, Jr.**, 291
BURROWS, **James**, 290; **Rebecca**, 290; **Sarah**, 287
BUTLER, **Elizabeth**, 239; **Nathaniel**, 244
BYNUM, **Richard**, 71
BYRUM, **MaryElizabeth**, 100
BYRD, **Lea Gilbert**, 105

CAMMACK, **Mary Ann**, 180
CANNADY, **Albert B.**, 239; **Albert Brown**, 239; **Alice Butler**, 239; **Amanda M.**, 239; **Amelia A.**, 239; **Ann Elizabeth** 239, **Annice Fagan**, 240; **Annie Haseltine**, 239; **Armstrong Fagan**, 240; **Bahethelem (—)**, 238; **Charles Williams**, 240; **Elizabeth Amelia**, 240; **Elizabeth Frances**, 240; **Elizabeth ("Lizzie")**, 239; **Elizabeth**, *see* Hockaday, Elizabeth, 240; **Eloise Butler**, 240; **Emma Frances**, 239; **Erastus**, 240; **Hepsibah G. P.**, 240; **Isaac Green** (son of Nathaniel Ellis), 239; **Isaac Green** (son of Wyatt Edward), 240; **Johnny**, 239; **John Fulghum**, 240; **John Pomfret**, 239; **John Watson**, 240; **Lillie Belle**, 240; **Lucy B.**, 238, 240; **Maranda California**, 239; **Marguerite**, 240; **Mary A. (—)**, (1st wife of Samuel H.), 239; **Mary Catherine** (b. 1832), 240; **Mary Catherine** (b. 1863), 240; **Mary Elizabeth**, 239; **Meta Catherine**, 239; **Minnie Mae**, 240; **Miranda Dobbs**, 239; **Nancy E.**, 239; **Nathaniel Boardman**, 239; **Nathaniel Ellis**, 239; **Nathaniel Macon**, 240; **Paul Patterson**, 239; **Samuel Courtney**, 240; **Samuel Hilman**, 239; **Susan E.**, 240; **Thomas Lawton**, 239; **Wagstaff**, 190, 236, 238; **W. Y.**, 236; **William Marshall**, 240; **William Erastus**, 239; **William Hockaday**, 239; **William Thomas**, 240; **Wyatt**, 186, 189, 191, 236–238, 242; **Wyatt Edward**, 239; **Wyatt Macon**, 240
CANNON, **Robert**, 99
CAPERS, **Mary**, 122
CAPPS, **Allie M.**, 193; **Francis**, 278, 279
CARDWELL, **Walter**, 206
CARLEEN, **Inez Ruthmarye**, 328
CARPENTER, **Mary Ruth**, 59
CARR, **Bobby Gene**, 61; **Patsy June**, 61; **Robert**, 249; **Walter Jay**, 61; **Walter Jerry**, 61
CARRELL, **Grif**, 177
CARTER, **John**, 17; **Orville Merton**, 59
CARTERET, **John** (Earl Granville), 251, 272
CASEY, **Aaron P.**, 49; **Elizabeth**, *see* Finch, Elizabeth C.; **Joseph**, 315; **Joshua**, 194; **Lamar**, 193
CASTEEL, **Margaret**, 208
CAVANAUGH/CAVENER, **Bryant**, 176, 186
CHANDLER, **William**, 223
CHANEY, **Catherine**, 29
CHARLES, **Thomas**, 266
CHAVERS, **William**, 168
CHEATHAM, **Fagan Cannady**, 240; **Joel Thomas, III**, 240; **Joel Thomas, IV**, 240
CHESTNUT, **George**, 125
CHILES, **Henry C.**, 205; **Hersh C.**, 205; **Isabel**, 204; **Jennie**, 205; **Minnie**, 205
CHILTON, **John**, 81
CHOWNING, **Ann**, 23; **Anne**, 23, 24; **Elizabeth**, 23; **Francis**, 23; **George**, 20, 23; **George, Jr.**, 23; **James**, 27; **John**, (m. Rachel Tuggle), 24; **Martha**, 23; **Robert**, 23; **Thomas**, 24
CHRISMAN, **Barbara**, 281; **John**, 281; **Michael**, 281
CHRISTMAS, **Dictoris**, 158
CHURCHILL, **William**, 20
CLAPTON, **Margit**, 174
CLARK, **Hugh M.**, 75; **Ossie**, 45; **Sandy B.**, 193
CLARKE, **Edward**, 20; **John**, 20
COCHRAN, **Mary Alice**, 205; **Owen L.**, 205
COCKE, **Richard**, 220
COCKES, **Edward**, 221
COCKRAN, **Dennis**, 189
COFFEY, **William H.**, 84
COGGIN, **Margaret Letha**, 239
COLEMAN, **Allen**, 71
COLLIER, **Fred**, 45
COMSTOCK, **Nellie**, 230

CONE, **Mildred Hodges**, 209
CONOLY, **Bryant, Jr.**, 23; **Ellender**, 23
CONWELL, **Willie Fay**, 130
COOK, **Margaret**. *See* Baldwin
COOKE, **Cora May**, 181
COOPER, **John**, 249; **Major**, 258; **Mrs. David**, 119
COPELAND, **William**, 76
CORBIN, **Gowen**, 20
CORLEW, **John**, 276
COTTON, **John**, 268; **Nehemiah**, 13
CRABTREE, **Benjamin**, 305; **Jay**, 298; **J. C.**, 298; **Larry**, 298; **Mike**, 298; **Sandra Wheeler**, 298
CRADDOCK, **John**, 225
CRANK, , **Thomas**, 20
CRAVENS, **Clarence**, 195, 318; **Clarence, III**, 195, 318; **J. H.**, 312;
CROCKETT, **David**, 190
CROCKFORD, **John**, 22
CROSHAW, **Richard**, 158
CROSS, , **Abel**, 148; **John, Sr.**, 142; **Priscilla**, 149
CROUCH, **Terrie**, 209
CROWLEY, **Jesse**, 309
CRUDUP, **Mary D.**, 240
CULLOM, **Henry**, 230
CULPEPPER, **Jack**, 50
CUSTIS, **Daniel Parke**, 164; **James, Jr.**, 20; **John**, 13

DALEY, **Nancy Cornelia**, 54
DANIEL, **David**, 172; **John**, 31; **Richard**, 24; **William, Jr.**, 31
DASHIELL, **Mary Womack**, 105
DAUSELL, **Elizabeth**, 13
DAVIDSON, **Annie Carlene**, 49, 51; **Henry D.**, 50; **Irene**, 52; **Ora Mae**, 50; **Rev. Thomas**, 69
DAVIES, **Indiana Tuggle**, 13
DAVIS, **Benjamin**, 46, 49, 71; **Bob M.**, 299; **Bobby** (son of Bob M.), 299; **C. E. Alexander**, 204; **Chris**, 299; **Cornelia**, *see* Finch, Cornelia E.; **Delphia Caroline**, 46, 47; **Edward Lester**, 95, 99; **Elizabeth** (m. Benjamin Tugwell), 42, 49, 52, 71; **Ella**, 108; **Emily Isabelle Hight**, 181; **Henry B.**, 49; **John**, 20; **John M.**, 298; **John W.**, 99; **J. Oscar Alexander**, 204; **Josiah**, 71; **Lester Tugwell**,100; **Luna Melissa**, 298; **Marilyn**, 100; **Mary** (dtr. of Cornelia E. Finch Davis), 204; **Mary**, *see* Tugwell, Mary Benanna; **Mary (—)**, 71; **Robert Dunham**, 181; **Terry**, 299; **William Henry**, 180; **William, Jr.**, 278
DAY, **Miss (—)** (m. Samuel Hockaday), 224
DEAN, **Brian**, 208; **Jane Yokley**, 205, 208, 327; **Joseph** (b. 1986), 208; **Joseph Lundy**, 208; **Joseph Lundy ("Joe")**, 208; **Kathleen**, 208; **Laura Emma**, 46; **Richard** (b. 1922), 208; **Richard** (b. 1955), 208
DEARDON, **James**, 281
DEATON, **Rebekah Cameron**, 209
DEBNAM, **Mordeciah**, 221
DELANEY, **Neal**, 305, 309
DENTON, **John E.**, 181
DERRYBERRY, **Henry W.**, 181; **Melissa E. (J?)**, 181
DEVOLVE, **James**, 20
DEW, **Thomas**, 245
DEWBERRY, **Lemuel**, 40
DICKERSON, **John**, 168, 174
DICKSON, **Hallie Ruth**, 194
DILDAY, **Benjamin**, 40; **Jesse**, 40
DILDY, **Sarah**, 53
DOLLAHITE, **Lou M.**, 297, 318
DORSEY, **James Walter**, 130; **Natalie Mildred**, 127, 128, 130
DOUGLAS, **Rev. William**, 167
DOWDEN, **John W.**, 310
DROLLINGER, **William S.**, 310
DRURY, **Charles**, 276
DUAR, **James**, 180
DUDLEY, **John**, 221
DUKE, **Brittain**, 182; **Burwell**, 182; **Burwell, Jr.**, 182
DUNCAN, **Mary**, 58
DUNN, **Anna**, 24
DUTHERAGE, **Elizabeth**, 49, 52

EARNEST, **Edna**, *see* Hardin, Edna G.; **Elizabeth ("Betty")**, 115; **Jesse Clyde**, 114; **Jesse S.**, 114; **John Clyde**, 114, 115; **Shannon**, 115; **Shawn**, 115
EASLEY, **James**, 233
EATON, **William**, 272
EDGERTON, **Rachel**, 281
EDMONDSON, **Elizabeth (Smith)**, 252; **Philip**, 221
ELBECK, **Montfort**, 276
ELLINGTON, **Mary Hurst**, 101; **Pleasant**, 291
ELLIS, **Sarah**, 182; **Steven Douglas**, 55
EMERSON, **John**, 273
ESTEB, **Arlena Denise**, 58; **Dennis**, 58; **Matthew Bracy**, 58
ESTES, **John**, 235; **John, Jr.**, 235; **Nathaniel**, 235, 236; **Sarah/Sally (—)** (wife of John), 235; **William**, 233
EUBANK, **George**, 267
EUDO, **Count of Blois**, 157
EVANS, **Loretta**, 45

FAGAN, **Edith Watson**, 240
FAIREY, **Lynette**, 105
FARRAR, **R. M.**, 206
FAUST, **Alice**, 297; **Burrow**, 297; **Edna**, 297; **Ella**, 297; **Eula**, 297; **Ira**, 297; **Lora**, 297; **Walter**, 297
FAUST/FOUST, **William Jabez**, 297
FEAR, **William**, 225
FELSENTHAL, **Jacob**, 82
FELSENTHAL, **Joe**, 82
FERGUSON, **Sandra Gail**, 209
FIELDS, **Amanda**, 47; **George W.**, 189, 197; **Verona**, 47
FINCH, **Adaline**, 181; **Adam** (to Northampton), 159; **Alfonso C.**, 183, 184, 192, 195, 196, 240, 242, 243, 321; **Alice**, 194; **Alonzo**, 182; **Allen** (son of Wm. b. 1722), 166; **Alpheus D.**, 79, 92, 194, 196, 197, 200–205, 211, 212, 318, 321, 323; **Alton Earl**, 194; **Amanda** (dtr. of Cliff), 181; **Andrew J.**, 181; **Ann** (to Middlesex), 160; **Anna (—)** (2d wife of John Hite Finch), 193; **Anne** (to Lower Norfolk), 158; **Augusta H.**, 181; **Barbara**, 92, 172, 173, 175, 176, 179, 183, 184, 199, 214–217, 242, 290–296, 300, 307–310, 312, 313, 322; **Benanna Alice**, (m. R. Rufus Tugwell), 76, 78–85, 88, 89, 91, 92, 94, 95, 97, 102, 107, 109, 110, 116, 118, 193, 194, 196, 200–203, 210–213, 318, 321, 323; **Benjamin** (to Northampton), 159; **Benjamin**, (to Rappahannock), 159; **Beulah Mai**, 193, 298; **Buchanan**, 194; **Burilla** (dtr. of W. O. K.), 192; **Burilla R. (—)** (m. W. O. K.), 192, 312; **Calvin F.**, 183, 184, 191, 192, 194–196, 199, 240, 242, 243, 310, 312, 315, 316, 321; **Carl D.**, 203; **Carl J.**, 194; **Carl, Jr.**, 194; **Caswell** (son of John, Jr.), 172–174, 180, 182, 184, 185, 215, 242, 292, 293; **Caswell** (son of Williamson), 166; **Charles** (b. 1728), 164, 175; **Charles Ellis**, 182; **Chester Lee**, 194; **Chester Lee, Jr.**, 194; **Claiborne** (son of Wm. b. 1722), 166; **Cliff** (son of John, Jr.), 172–174, 180, 181, 184, 186, 188, 197, 199, 215, 242, 292; **Cordelia**, 193; **Cornelia E.**, 79, 194, 196, 200, 201, 204, 205, 211, 318, 321, 323; **Curren M.** (son of W. O. K.), 192; **Demosthenes P. C. ("D. P. C.")**, 181, 197, 199; **Edward** (son of Edward?), 163, 164; **Edward** (son of Henry), 164–167; **Edward** (son of John, Sr.), 166–168, 171–175; **Edward** (son of Thomas the immigrant), 161, 163–165; **Edward** (to Henrico), 159; **Elizabeth ("Betsy")** (dtr. of John, Jr.), 172, 173, 175, 176, 179, 183, 184, 188, 215, 242, 292; **Elizabeth** (dtr. of W. O. K., 192; **Elizabeth** (to New Kent), 159; **Elizabeth** (to New Kent), 160; **Elizabeth** (to York), 158; **Elizabeth C.** (dtr. of John Wesley), 183, 184, 192, 194–196, 199, 240, 242, 243, 321; **Elizabeth Grey**, 206; **Ellender**, 172–174, 182, 184, 215, 242, 292; **Emily**, *see* Finch, Lucy Emily; **Emily Bell**, 194; **Emily Hight**, (dtr. of Hight), 181; **Emma Hite**, 79, 194, 196, 201, 202, 207, 210, 211, 318, 321, 323; **Ernest A.**, 193, 298; **Esther Cecil**, 194; **Ethelbert**, 166; **Fannie M.** (dtr. of John Wesley), 183, 184, 186, 188, 190, 192, 196, 240, 242, 321; **Fanny** (dtr. of John, Jr.), 172–174, 178, 180, 182, 184, 215, 217, 242, 262, 292, 293, 312; **Frances** (to James City), 158; **Francis** (to Charles City), 159; **Francis** (to Finches Creek), 158; **Francis** (to James City), 158; **Francis** (to Lancaster), 158; **Francis** (to New Kent), 158, 161; **Francis** (to Rappahannock), 158; **George** (son of John, Sr.), 166, 167, 171–175, 177; **George** (from Virginia), 200; **George** (to Lancaster), 159; **Gilbert** (to Accomack), 159; **G. M. L.**, 182; **Henry** (son of Edward), 163–165, 175; **Henry** (son of Wm. b. 1722), 166, 168; **Henry** (unidentified), 166, 200; **Henry** (of Wake Co.), 294; **Henry B.**, 193; **Hight** (son of John, Jr.), 172–174, 177–180, 182, 184, 193, 215, 242, 292; **Hite E. (A?)** (son of John Houston), 193, 298; **Howard Lynn**, 194; **Hubert Bruce** (b. 1883), 204–206; **Hubert Bruce** (b. 1929), 206, 327; **Hugh** (to Northumberland), 158; **Ida Leona**, 194; **Irie Dell**, 194; **Isham** (b. 1761), 166, 188; **James** (unidentified, 1782), 166, 200; **James** (1820), 172; **James Lee**, 193, 298; **James Monroe** (son of Hight), 180; **James Monroe** (son of John Wesley), 76, 78–80, 83, 89, 183, 184, 188, 191, 192, 194–202, 204, 207, 211, 213, 214, 217, 240, 242, 299, 310, 312–316, 318, 319, 321–323; **Jerry O.**, 193, 298; **John** (son of Edward), 163–165; **John** (son of Isham), 166; **John, Jr.** (son of John, Sr.), 157, 166–168, 171–179, 182–184, 186, 214–217, 234, 236, 240, 242, 262, 291–293, 322; **John (Sr.)** (son of Henry), 164–168, 170, 171, 173–176, 278; **John** (to Henrico), 158, 160; **John** (to James City), 160; **John** (to Lower Norfolk), 158; **John** (to Northampton), 159; **John** (to Rappahannock), 158, **John** (to Rappahannock and Northumberland), 159; **John** (to York Co.), 158; **John Bruce**, 79, 95, 194, 196, 200–202, 204, 205, 207, 211, 313, 318, 319, 321, 323; **John C.** (son of G. M. L.), 182; **John Hite** (son of Henry B.), 193; **John Hite** (son of John Wesley), 183, 184, 188, 191–193, 195, 196, 199, 200, 217, 240, 242, 298, 316, 319, 321,

322; **John Houston**, 193, 298, 316, 319; **John Madison** (son of Hight), 180; **John W.** (son of W. O. K.), 192; **John Wesley**, 157, 166, 167, 172, 173, 175, 176, 178, 180, 181, 183–194, 196, 197, 199, 201, 214, 215, 217, 236, 238, 240, 242, 243, 292, 298, 305, 306, 308, 312–314, 316, 318, 321, 322; **Joseph** (to Rappahannock), 159; **Josiah John**, 182; **J. Tully**, 194; **Judith**, *see* Hockaday, Judith; **Judith Edvenah ("Juda")**, 193; **Lady Jane**, 157; **Legran**, 194; **Lillie May ("Johnnie")**, 79, 107, 194, 196, 200, 201, 205, 207, 211, 318, 321, 323; **Lois C.**, 206; **Lucy** (dtr. of John, Sr.), 166, 167, 172–175; **Lucy Emily** (dtr. of John Wesley), 80, 183, 184, 186, 188, 192, 193, 195, 196, 212, 240, 242, 321; **Lula**, 182; **Luther**, 193; **Lycurgus**, 207; **Margaret** (dtr. of John, Sr.), 166, 167, 172, 173; **Martha** (b. 1737), 164; **Martha** (dtr. of Edward), 163–165; **Martha (—)** (wife of Edward), 163–165; **Martha B.** (dtr. of John Hite), 193; **Martha E.** (dtr. of Josiah John), 182; **Martha Ella**, 79, 89, 194, 196, 200–202, 204, 205, 207, 211, 318, 321, 323; **Marvin**, 193; **Mary** (dtr. of Edward), 163–165; **Mary** (dtr. of Henry B.), 193; **Mary** (wife of John, Jr.), *see* Bradford, Mary; **Mary** (dtr. of W. O. K.), 192; **Mary Elizabeth**, 193; **Mary ("Polly")** (dtr. of John, Jr.), 172–174, 176, 180, 215, 242, 292; **Mary** (to Bristol), 158; **Mary** (to Nansemond), 158, 159; **Mary** (to Rappahannock and New Kent), 159; **Mary** (to York), 158; **Mary Alice**, 206; **Mary Emily**, 182; **Mary Louisa (—)**, 182; **Mary Wills**, 182; **Matilda M. A.**, 182; **Mattie**, 193; **Medorah C.**, 194; **M. E. E.**, 181; **Melissa**, *see* Montgomery, Melissa Jane; **Melissa Cliff** (dtr. of Hight), 180; **Millington**, 175; **Mollie**, *see* Parr, Mary E.; **Monroe**, *see* Finch, James Monroe; **M. T. Cicero ("M. T. C.")**, 181, 197; **Nancy** (dtr. of John, Jr.), 172, 173, 175, 176, 183–185, 188, 215, 242, 292; **Opal**, 193; **Owen C.**, 206; **Owen, Jr.**, 206; **Patsy** (dtr. of John, Jr.), 172, 173, 175, 176, 183, 184, 215, 242, 292; **Pelina B.**, 183, 184, 192, 195, 196, 198, 199, 217, 240, 242, 243, 306, 312, 313, 315, 316, 321; **Richard** (to Gloucest.), 159; **Richard** (to Isle of Wight), 159; **Richard** (to Stafford), 159; **Richard** (to York), 158; **Robert** (son of John, Sr.), 166, 167, 172, 173; **Robert Lee**, 194; **Ruth** (dtr. of Henry B.), 193; **Ruth** (dtr. of Carl J.), 194; **Ruth G.** (m. — Watkins), 194; **Sabra** (b. ca. 1758), 164; **Sallie H.**, 194; **Samuel** (to Westmoreland), 159; **Sarah** (dtr. of G. M. L.), 182; **Sarah H.** (dtr. of D. P. C.), 181; **Sir Thomas**, 157; **Stroud**, 164; **Susannah** (dtr. of Henry), 164, 165, 167; **Susannah** (dtr. of John, Sr.), 166, 167, 171–173; **Thomas** (immigrant), 157, 159, 161–163; **Thomas** (b. 1738), 164; **Walter L.** 193, 298; **William** (son of Henry), 164, 165, 167, 168, 222; **Wiley** (son of Isham), 166, 168; **William** (son of John Hite), 193; **William** (to Northumberland), 158; **William** (to Rappahannock), 159; **William** (to Westmoreland), 158; **William** (to York), 158; **William C.**, 182; **William H.**, 182; **Williamson** (son of Isham), 166, 188; **Williamson** (son of John, Sr.), 166–168, 171–173, 175, 177; **William O. Kelly ("W.O.K.")**, 181, 183, 184, 186, 188, 191, 192, 196, 197, 199, 200, 240, 242, 312, 313, 321; **Wright** (son of Isham), 166; **Zula Lee**, 79, 194, 196, 200, 201, 207, 211, 212, 318, 321, 323

FINDLEY, **Phoebe Ann**, 44
FITZHERBERT/FINCH, **Herbert**, 157
FITZPETER, **Herbert**, 157
FLOOD, **John**, 158
FLOWERS, **David**, 71, 81
FORD, **Jewel**, 100
FORREST, **Bedford**, 314; **B. F.**, 53
FOSTER, **Hannah**, 180; **Keith Casper**, 106
FOUST, **Jesse**, 297
FOWLER, **Frances (Tugwell)**. *See* Tugwell, Frances Amanda; **Sam Edward ("Ed")**, 97, 101; **Sam Edward** (father), 101
FOX, **John**, 29
FRANCIS, **Nettie Inez**, 133
FRASIER, **Lucinda Emaline**, 103, 105
FRAZIER, **Delbert**, 59; **Ernest Ilo**, 59; **Essie**, 59; **Iva**, 59; **Ludington**, 59; **Nancy Josephine**, 57; **Robbie**, 59; **Robert Andrew**, 57; **Sanford**, 59; **Willie**, 59
FREEMAN, **Debro**, 195, 318; **Herman**, 210; **James Evan**, 210; **James Vaughan**, 210; **Mary Helen**, 195, 318
FRIAR, **Allie A. V.**, 56
FRYER, **Thomas**, 39
FULBRIGHT, **Walter**, 49
FULGHAM, **John**, 252
FULLER, **Maggie**, 115; **Samuel**, 170, 171; **William**, 186

GADDIS, **Charles Raymond**, 133; **Edna**, *see* Rollins, Edna E.; **James Raymond**, 133; **Jennifer Nicole**, 133; **Raymond**, 133; **Sheila Joyce**, 133
GALE, **Gertrude**, 130
GAINES, **Henry**, 225
GALEY, **Isaac**, 305
GALLAGHER, **Catherine**, 54

GANNAWAY, **Bruce Finch**, 205, 210; **Callie Christopher**, 209; **Caroline Kristen**, 209; **Celia Cameron**, 209; **Christopher Kinney**, 209; **Dorothy Margaret**, 205, 209; **Ethan Bartley**, 209; **Grace**, 210; **Heather Michelle**, 209; **James Joyner**, 209; **James Joyner, Jr.**, 209; **James Joyner, III**, 209; **James Joyner, IV**, 209; **Jeff Montgomery**, 209; **John Yokley**, 209; **Julia Ann**, 209; **Marion Castle**, 209; **Rebecca Franklin**, 209; **Samuel James**, 209; **Stephen Deaton**, 209; **Stephen Deaton, Jr.**, 209; **William**, 210
GARDNER, **Col. John A.**, 188; **William**, 20
GARDNER/GERTNER, **John A.**, 305
GARRETT, **Charlotte Rena**, 329; **Cynthia Lynn**, 329; **William Dean**, 329
GARY, **Gina Allison**, 133; **Jeff Harrison**, 133; **Michael Harrison**, 133; **Sam Harrison**, 133
GAUSE, **Amanda**, (m. J. W. Waddell), 95, 100
GAY, **Joe**, 54; **Lou**, 54
GEARY, **John**, 245
GENETTE, **Anna**, 194
GEORGE, **David**, 20
GHOLSON, **Martha**, 280
GIBSON, **Carrie Adeline**, 44, 45
GILLAM, **Benjamin, 278**
GILLESPIE, **Gladys**, 122; **Julia**, 122
GILMORE, **Rhonda Marie**, 52
GLASGOW, **Pattie**, 229, 230; **Isaac**, 180
GLASS, **Dudley, Sr.**, 188; **Thomas**, 312
GLEESON, **William W.**, 310, 311
GOARE, **Ann**, 22; **Henry**, 22; **Josee**, 22; **Joseph**, 20, 22; **Joseph, Jr.**, 22; **Lucretia**, 22; **William**, 22
GODBEY, **Edward**, 23; **Frances**, 23; **Mary**, 23
GOLIGHTLY, **John**, 280
GOODLOE, **Henry**, 176; **John**, 176; **Robert**, 179
GOODMAN, **Henry**, 148, 150; **John**, 151; **Mary (—)**, 149; **William**, 140, 147–149, 151
GORDON, **Dr. E. S.**, 125; **Joel**, 147; **John**, 16
GOYNE, **Jane**, 45
GRAHAM, **Jeff**, 310
GRANT, **Kay**, 54
GRAVES, **Alexander**, 20
GRAY, **Elizabeth A.**, 57, 59; **Lafayette L.**, 50; **Liddie**, 192
GREEN, **Ann ("Nancy") Pomfret**, 239; **Annie V.**, 50; **Dinah**, 55; **(Capt.) John**, 185; **John**, 265, 267, 268, 271; **John** (father of Ann Pomfret Green), 239; **Joseph**, 278, 283; **Mary**, 261, 273; **Robert**, 268; **Sarah**, 261, 262, 264, 265, 267, 268, 271, 272; **Thomas** (m. Frances "Fanny" Hockaday), 230; **Thomas**, 251
GREENSLEY, **John**, 251
GREY, **Betty**, 206
GRIFFIN, **Henry**, 39
GRIMES, **John**, 20
GRISOOM, **Willie**, 236
GROOMS, **Bright**, 305; **Stephen H.**, 305, 308, 309
GROVES, **Benjamin**, 279
GRUBB, **Sarah Jane**, 121
GUNTER, **Charles**, 189, 191
GWYN, **J. J.**, 195

HADLEY, **John**, 20
HAGGARD, **Cynthia**, 281; **French**, 168
HAIL, **Elizabeth**, 281
HALEY, **Annie B.**, 193; **Sterling**, 180
HALL, **Lucy**, 53; **Martha ("Mattie")**, 46; **Mary (Bradford) Finch**, 180; **Nancy Ann**, 44; **Polly**, 294; **William**, 231; **Wilmer L.**, 138
HALSELL, **Fannie**, 49, 51, **John C.**, 49
HAM, **Goldie**, 50; **Nancy Lucinda**, 50
HAMILTON, **John**, 312; **Tommy Lee**, 181; **William**, 310
HANCKES/HAUKES, **Thomas**, 158
HARALSON, **Herndon**, 67, 69, 71; **Vincent**, 67; **William H.**, 69, 74, 75
HARDIN, **Ana**. *See* Tugwell, Benanna Alice ("Ana"); **Edna Gertrude**, 107, 108, 111, 112, 114, 122, 213; **James Horace**, 110; **J. Luke**, 111, 121; **Joe**, 112; **John Alexander**, 89, 109–113, 118–120, 122; **John Alexander, Jr.**, 108, 111–114, 119, 122; **Roy**, 111
HARDWICKE, **John**, 69
HARLESS, **C. M.**, 119
HARP, **John**, 175
HARPER, **Frances**, 99
HARRELL, **John Robert**, 100; **Nina Frances**, 100
HARRIS, **Ann (Smith)**, 252; **Catherine (Smith)**, 252; **Celah Elizabeth**, 280; **Charles**, 281; **Daniel**, 274, 278; **Edward**, 174; **Eliza**, 294; **Elizabeth** (dtr. of Charles), 281; **Elizabeth** (m. Drury Bobbitt b. 1744), 280, 283, 285, 287, 289; **Emily L.**, 193; **James** (Celah's father), 280; **James** (Halifax Co.), 286; **Judith (Smith)**, 252; **Lewis**, 285; **Margaret E.** (m. [2] Joseph Lyon Tugwell), 44; **Martha**, (m. Wyatt Macon Cannady), 240; **Michael**, 285; **Nathaniel**, 280, 283, 285; **Partheny**, 280; **(Capt.) William**, 36
HARRISON, **Dan**, 206; **Mae**, 229
HART, **Anabel**, 204; **David**, 72

HARWELL, **G.**, 233
HARWOOD, **Samuel, Jr.**, 220–222
HAWKINS, **Jeanette C.**, 60
HAWLEY, **Joseph**, 168
HAY, **John**, 20
HAYNES, **Elizabeth**, 172–176, 179, 183, 184, 240, 242, 291, 292, 215, 216, 293; **John**, 174, 176; **Nathaniel**, 175; **William**, 176
HAYWOOD, **Dr. John G.**, 81; **Sherwood**, 276, 287; **William H.**, 293
HAZELWOOD, **Ann (—)**, 287, 289; **Mary**, 183, 215, 287, 289, 290, 292, 293; **Randolph**, 287, 289
HENLEY, **H.** (Dist. 4, Weakley Co.), 312
HENSON, **Pamela Kaye**, 58; **Pennie**, 47
HERRIN, **James Porter**, 309
HERRINGTON, **Daniel Wade**, 298; **Dian Lynn**, 298; **Donna Claire**, 298; **Grace Ellen**, 299; **Jake Spencer**, 299; **Julie Ann**, 299; **Lou**, *see* Swaim, Lucile Melissa; **Otis H., Jr.**, 298
HERROD, **James**, 309
HIATT, **Thomas**, 147
HICKS, **Jeanette**, 133; **Mamie**, 229; **Samuel S.**, 239
HIGBEE, **Ballard VanHorn, 98**
HIGGS, **Zachariah**, 175
HIGHT, **Charnell**, 172, 174, 175; **Eleanor (—)**, 174, **Frances A.**, 181; **Franklin**, 293; **Herbert**, 177; **James Haggard**, 181, 182; **John, Sr.**, 171, 174; **Jonathan**, 176; **Lively**, 174, 262, 294; **Mary** (1st wife of John Finch, Jr.?), 174, 180, 184, 215, 242, 292; **Richard B.**, 288, 295; **William**, 171, 173
HILEMAN, **Mary Louise**, 130
HILL, **Carol Ann**, 99; **Edward**, 159; **Isaac**, 221; **Mary**, 270
HISAW, **Elizabeth**, 315; **Mary J.**, 310; **Sarah A.**, 194, 310, 312, 315
HITCHCOCK, **Nance**, 225
HIXON, **Gussie**, 50
HOCKADAY, **Alice**, 229; **Alvin**, 229; **Ann**, *see* Powell, Ann; **Annie** (dtr. of James and Rebecca), 230; **Attlee**, 229; **Baby Boy**, 230; **Blanche**, 229; **Bud**, 229; **Candis**, 238, 241; **Cliff**, 229; **Delila**, *see* Bailey, Delila; **Dell? Ley**, 184, 230–232, 236, 238, 242, 253; **Dinah**, 229; **Dorothy**, 230; **Ela**, 112, 123; **Elizabeth** (dtr. of 1st Warwick), 222, 223, 225; **Elizabeth** (dtr. of James and Delila), 238, 241; **Elizabeth** (dtr. of Wm.), 184, 186, 189, 228, 230, 231, 235, 236–238, 242, 253; **Elizabeth ("Betsey")** (dtr. of James b. ca. 1735), 223, 225, 226, 230, 231; **Elsie**, 229; **Frances ("Fanny")**, 230; **Francis**, 230; **Frederick**, 230; **Glenn**, 229; **Hettie**, 230; **Hugh F.**, 218, 220, 229, 230; **Iowa (—)**, 241; **James** (son of 1st Warwick), 222–229, 231–235, 243; **James** (New Kent Co.), 218; **James** (son of Wm.), 184, 228, 230–232, 235, 236, 238, 241, 242, 253; **James ("Jim")** (son of Thomas and Mary), 229; **James ("Jimmie") E.**, 220, 229, 230; **James M.**, 241; **Jerry**, 230; **John** (New Kent Co.), 218; **John** (Revol. soldier), 218; **John** (son of Warwick and Polly), 229; **Judith** (dtr. of Warwick and Polly), 230; **Judith** (dtr. of Wm.), 179, 183–186, 188, 189, 191, 192, 194, 196, 230, 231, 236, 238, 240–243, 306, 312, 313, 314, 316, 318, 321, 353; **Judith (—)** (wife of James b. ca. 1735), 223, 225–229, 231, 233–235; **Justine**, 230; **Kate**, 230; **Leonard**, 229; **Lois**, 230; **Lucy**, 184, 230, 231, 236–238, 241, 242, 253; **Mary (—)** (wife of 1st Warwick), 220, 222, 223, 225; **Mary** (dtr. of Glenn and Nan), 229; **Mary** (dtr. of Hugh F.), 230; **Mary Nancy** (dtr. of 1st Warwick), 31, 222, 223, 225, 226; **May**, 229; **Millard**, 229; **Nancy** (dtr. of Glenn and Nan), 229; **Nancy** (dtr. of Wm.), 184, 230, 231, 236, 238,241, 242, 253; **Nat**, 229; **Nell**, 230; **Nick**, 229; **Ordene**, 229; **Otley** (son of Warwick and Ellen), 229; **Otley** (son of Wreford), 229; **Philip** (New Kent Co.), 218; **Philip** (Revol. soldier), 218; **Rebecca**, 230; **Roland**, 229; **Roy**, 229; **Samuel** (son of 1st Warwick), 222, 224, 225, 227; **Samuel** (New Kent Co.), 318; **Samuel** (son of James and Delila), 238, 241; **Samuel** (son of Thomas and Pattie), 230; **Samuel** (son of Wm. and Ann), 184, 230–232, 236, 238, 242, 253; **Susan**, 230; **Temperance**, 230; **Thomas J. E.**, 220, 229; **Thomas** (son of Samuel and Ethel), 230; **Timothy** (son of James and Delila), 238, 241; **Vernon I.**, 230; **Wade**, 230; **Warwick** (1st in Charles City Co.), 218–223, 225, 231, 243; **Warwick** (son of 1st Warwick), 222, 224–226; **Warwick** (son of Glenn and Nan), 229; **Warwick** (son of James b. ca. 1735), 223, 225–233; **Warwick** (son of Warwick and Mary Perkins), 229; **Warwick** (son of Warwick and Polly), 230; **Warwick** (son of Wm. and Bersheba), 229; **William** (Burgess, New Kent Co., 1600s), 218; **William** (Burgess, New Kent Co., 1748), 218; **William** (New Kent Co.), 218; **William** (1704 New Kent rent roll), 218; **William** (son of 1st Warwick), 222, 224, 225, 227; **William** (son of Glenn and Nan), 229; **William** (son of James and Delila), 238, 241; **William** (son of James and Judith), 180, 183–186, 218, 223, 225–228, 230–238, 242–244, 253; **William** (son of Warwick and Polly), 229; **Wreford**, 229

HOCKBOTT, **J. R.**, 73
HODGES, **Anna**, 223; **Della**, 193
HOGG, **A. M.**, 223
HOLLOWAY, **Mrs. M. B.**, 82; **T. O.**, 82
HOOD, **J. W.**, 60
HOPKINS, **Thomas**, 20
HOUCHENS, **Mary**, 23
HOUDE, **Carol Mitchell**, 133
HOUSE, **Belinda Ann**, 55; **Bencie Leigh**, 55; **David Wayne**, 55; **Peyton Wayne**, 55; **Richard Bruce**, 55
HOUSER, **Ann Clark**, 101; **George Clifford, Jr.**, 101
HOWELL, **John**, 158
HOYLE, **Marjorie Ann**, 328; **William Luther**, 328
HUDSON, **Barry**, 99; **Chelsea**, 99; **Corey**, 99
HUGHES, **Beatrice Shipp**, 58; **Jared Woodard**, 58; **Rosalie Mae**, 105
HUNDLEY, **Dorothy**, 55
HUNT, **David**, 168; **Geneva Eveline**, 328; **Joe Neil**, 59; **Matthew**, 20; **Sarah**, 166; **Terry Dale**, 59; **William** (Granville Co.), 175; **William** (Isle of Wight Co.), 245
HUNTER, **Daniel**, 171
HUNTZMAN, **Adam**, 190
HUSKEY, **William**, 186
HUTCHINS, **Francis**, 245, 246; **Richard**, 246
HUTCHINSON, **Mildred Highley**, 131; **Beulah Fern**, 100
HYDE, **Frances**, 54

INGERSOLL, **Robert C.**, 202

JACKSON, **Andrew**, 186; **Bersheba ("Betsy") R.**, 229; **Lawrence**, 51; **Mary Frances**, 57; **W. H.**, 314; **Willis**, 183
JACOBS, **Joseph**, 20
JAMES, **Abner**, 46; **Charles**, 281, 282; **Elizabeth**, 281; **George**, 281, 282; **Nancy (—)**, 281; **Susannah**, 281, 282; **William**, 280
JARROTT, **Nathaniel**, 168
JEFFERSON, **Counsel**, 46; **Thomas**, 62, 287
JEFFRIES, **Elizabeth**, 24; **George**, 24; **William**, 25
JENKINS, **Elizabeth C.**, 216; **Elizabeth E.**, 299; **Haywood**, 309; **James**, 183, 185, 188; **James (Sr.)**, 235; **Jesse**, 179, 183, 186; **John**, 179, 235; **Mansfield**, 233, 309; **Peter**, 309; **Peyton**, 309; **Thomas** (Granville Co.), 233, 235; **Thomas** (Warren Co.), 175; **William M.**, 179, 183, 188
JETER, **Catherine**, 193; **Robert**, 236
JOHNS, **John**, 24
JOHNSON, **Benjamin**, 13; **Grace**, 50; **Henry**, 140; **Martha**, 71, 73; **Ollie**, 210; **William**, 278; **(Rev.) W. J.**, 122
JOHNSTON, **Rebecca**, 229
JONES, **Dolling**, 274; **Enoch**, 44; **Ezila Augusta**, 202, 203; **Francis**, 268; **Guy K.**, 47; **Henry**, 202; **Henry, Jr.**, 268; **Jacky Ann**, 75, 77; **John**, 274; **Joseph E.**, 202 **Josephine**, 45; **Lucy** (m. John Wm. Bobbitt), 281; **Lucy** (m. Thomas Bobbitt), 270; **Lura Josephine**, 55; **Margaret E.**, *see* Harris, Margaret E.; **Minnie Louise**, 47; **Philip**, 266, 268; **Richard**, 286, 290; **Rogers**, 170, 171; **Sallie King**, 239; **Samuel**, 174; **Thomas**, 281; **Worley**, 207
JORDAN, **James**, 17, 20; **Mary**, 139; **Richard**, 69, 71
JOYNER, **Lydia**, 47
JUDKINS, **Martha**, 230; **Thomas**, 278, 279
JUSTICE, **John**, 232

KANNAN, **Michael Moses**, 105; **Teresa Lynne**, 105
KATJE, **Donna Louise**, 52
KELLAR, **John David**, 50
KELLY, **Catherine**, 23; **Sarah**, 24
KEMP, **Henry**, 233
KETCHUM, **William**, 310
KIDD, **James**, 31; **Thomas**, 19, 20
KING, **Beverly**, 54; **C. C.**, 197; **Edward**, 309; **Solomon**, 151
KINNEY, **Ruth**, 209
KITTRELL, **Jonathan**, 168, 171, 173, 273; **Joshua**,175

LAMPL, **Harber Bradley**, 329
LANDERS, **John**, 268
LANG, **Chloe**, 35, 145, 146, 148, 150, 151; **Eleanor (—)**, 138; **James** (b. ca. 1706), 138–140, 142, 146; **James** (b. 1735, son of John, Jr.), 35, 37, 140, 142, 144–151; **James, Jr.**, 35, 37, 44, 145, 146, 148–151, 153; **Jemima (—)**, 37, 39, 145–149, 151; **John** (b. 1673/75), 137–142, 146; **John** (son of James), 35, 37, 39, 40, 42, 63, 145, 146, 148–151, 153; **John, Jr.** (b. ca. 1710), 138, 140–146, 148, 149, 151; **John of Hertford** (son of Joshua), 136, 141, 150; **Joshua** (b. ca. 1720-26), 138, 140–142, 146, 150; **Judith (—)**, 140, 142, 145, 146; **Mary** (m. James Tugwell), 33, 35, 37, 39, 42, 43, 44, 46, 61, 77, 136, 145–153; **Robert**, 71, 138, 266, 268; **William** (b. ca. 1708), 138, 140–142, 145, 146
LANGSTON, **Jesse**, 37, 150
LANTOR, **Thomas**, 20
LASATER, **Chester A.**, 207; **Ella**, *see* Finch, Martha Ella; **James**, 207; **J. B.**, 207,310
LAUX, **Henry**, 99; **Nancy**, 99

LAWRENCE, **A.** (Granville Co.), 236; **Elisha**, 147; **Ruby**, 122
LEADER, **John**, 258
LECH, **William**, 159
LEE, **Benjamin F.**, 75
LEDUC, **Mary**, 131
LEE, **Bonnie Brittany Michelle**, 131; **Dorothy**, 24; **Ernest Widenor**, 131; **Francis Stanger ("Frank")**, 131; **George**, 24; **Henry**, 149; **James William**, 131; **Mary (Buford)**, 24; **Nancy**, *see* Maiden, Nancy Louise; **Robert Andrew ("Bobby")**; **William**, 149
LEEMAN, **Joseph**, 170, 171, 174, 176, 177; **William**, 176, 177
LEGER, **Beth**, 45
LEONARD, **William Harvey**, 55
LEVETT, **Ross**, 209
LEVY, **Jacob**, 82; **Leopold**, 82
LEWIS, **Carole**, 115; **Elizabeth**, 29; **Frances**, 13; **George B.**, 115; **J. A.**, 189; **Jefferson Davis**, 181; **John** (of Middlesex), 20; **John, Jr.**, 21; **John**, 148; **Mrs. Mary B.**, 85; **Mary Lunelle**, 181; **Milt**, 148; **Philip**, 148; **Richard**, 13–15; **Thomas James**, 181
LIDDLE, **John**, 309
LILLY, **Robert**, 13
LINVILLE, **Raymond**, 53
LITTLE, **Benjamin**, 52; **Edmund**, 52; **Elizabeth**, 52; **John**, 52; **Joseph**, 52; **Nahum**, 42; **Robert**, 52; **Sallie**, 52; **Sally A.**, 52; **Thomas**, 52; **Vann**, 40; **William**, 52, 72; **William (Jr.)** (b. 1854), 52; **William, Jr.** (b. 1866), 52
LITTLEJOHN, **Rev. Alex**, 49
LONG, **Ales/Alice**, 136; **Elizabeth**, 136, 138; **James** (son of Thomas), 136; **James, Sr.** (father? of John Lang), 136–138; **Joshua** (son of Thomas), 136; **William** (son of Thomas), 136
LONG/LANG, **Giles**, 136; **James, Jr.**, 136, 137; **John** (youngest son of James, Sr.), 136, 137, *see* John Lang, p. 138; **Joshua**, 136; **Robert**,136, 138; **Thomas**, 136, 137; **William**, 136, 137
LOONEY, **Evelyn Castle**, 209
LOVE, **Luther Olen**, 59
LOVING, **Dr.**, 81
LOWERY, **Anderson**, 71
LUCAS, **Silas Emmett, Jr.**, 244
LUDFORD, **William**, 16
LUEDKE, **Sharon Lee**, 317
LUSTER, **Candice**, 95
LYAL, **Jordan**, 252
LYNN, **Alton**, 193; **Ethel**, 193; **Iva**, 193; **James P.**, 193; **Kate**, 193; **Robert Carl**, 193
LYONS, **Charlton Havard, Jr.**, 106
MAIDEN, **Bonnie Lee**, 129, 130, 131; **Brenda**, *see* Tucker, Brenda; **Dean Dorsey**, 130; **Dean Dorsey, Jr.**, 131; **Ed**, 204; **Edna**, *see* Tugwell, Edna Gertrude; **Hicks Carr**, 111, 121–130, 191; **Hicks Carr ("H.C."), Jr.**, 108, 124, 126–131, 327; **Hicks Carr ("H.C."), III**, 128–131; **James Dorsey**, 130; **Joanna Marie**, 131; **(Rev.) John Milton**, 121; **Marilyn Gale**, 129–131; **Marvin**, 122, 123; **Melissa Rochelle**, 131; **Nancy Louise**, 131; **Natalie**, *see* Dorsey, Natalie Mildred; **Noah L.**, 204; **Samantha Amber**, 130, 131; **Sarah Finch**, 125, 126, 128,129, 132, 133; **William Lee**, 204
MALONE, **Andrew**, 310
MANGUM, **Absolom**, 294; **Elizabeth**, 294
MANION/MAINWELL, **Patrick**, 20
MANN, **A. W.**, 71; **Thomas**, 249
MANNING, **Frank**, 47
MANSFIELD, **Mary**, 23; **William**, 23; **William, Jr.**, 23
MANUEL, **Jesse**, 294
MARCH, **John**, 149
MARSHALL, **Charles**, 49, 72
MASSEY, **Amy**, 270; **Elizabeth**, 270; **Frances**, 270; **Francis**, 268; **Hezekiah**, 267, 268, 270; **John** (1858), 267; **John** (m. Frances Bobbitt), 268, 270; **John, Jr.**, 270; **Richard**, 268; **Sarah**, 270; **William**, 270
MATHEWS, **Fanny**, 43
MATHIS, **Captain**, 309
MATTHEWS, **Benjamin E.**, 101; **Capt. Samuel**, 245; **Susan Marie**, 101
MAXEY, **Betsey**, 25; **Elisha**, 25; **Zenis**, 25
MAXWELL, **Jesse**, 309
MAY, **Benjamin** (son of Benj. T.), 47; **Benjamin T.**, 47, 48; **Dorothy**, 54; **Jane**, 47, 48; **Moses**, 276; **Susanna**, 43; **Valentine**, 17, 20, 21
MCCLELLAN, **Gen. George**, 224
MCCLURE, **Elizabeth Ray**, 106; **Emily Carol**, 106; **James Curtis ("Curt"), Jr.**, 106; **James Curtis ("Jim")**, 106; **James Curtis ("Jim"), III**, 106; **Marilyn Foster**, 106; **Nell Ray**, *see* Tugwell, Nell Ray; **Noah Walter**, 106; **Peggy**, 106
MCCONNICO, **Bernice**, 98; **Floy**, 98
MCCOWN, **Alma Dell**, 329; **Annie Lillian**, 329; **Benjamin Owen**, 328; **Beulah Esta**, 329; **Billy Darrell**, 329; **Brice William**, 329; **Clarence Eugene**, 328; **Dorris Florene**, 328; **Elgah Lee**, 328; **Geneva Maude**, 329; **Gerald Franklin**, 329; **Glen Owen**, 328; **Hollis Edward**, 329; **Hollis Lynch**, 329; **Kristi Karleen**, 328; **Leonard Joe**, 44, 328; **Maury**, 329; **Milton Sim**, 329; **Odus**, 329; **Simeon** (m. Mary Ophelia

Tugwell), 328; **Simeon** (m. Marg. E. Thomas), 328; **Thelma Lee**, 329; **Thressie**, 329
MCCOY, **Jean Smith**, 100
MCCULLOCH, **Alexander**, 276
MCCUTCHEON, **H. C.**, 314
MCDANIEL, **Lillian**, 47; **Turner**, 176
MCDERMOTT, **Ella Mae**, 106
MCGEE, **Machelle**, 101
MCGEHEE, **John T.**, 240
MCKENZIE, **Deborah Joyce Rochelle**, 55
MCLAUGHLIN, **Edward S.**, 119, 120; **Maude**, 122
MCMILLAN, **Sadie**, 59
MCMURRY, **Emma**, 99
MCROBERTS, **Andrew Ray**, 105; **Brian Porter**, 105; **Bruce Porter**, 105; **Charles Monroe, Sr.**, 105; **Mary Margaret**, 105; **Richard Lewis**, 105; **Scot Patrick**, 105
MCVICKER, **P. H.**, 44
MEACHUM, **James**, 20
MEDLIN, **Briant**, 80, 192, 193, 212; **Emily**, *see* Finch, Lucy Emily; **J. J.**, 312
MEEKS, **Elizabeth**, 53; **Nancy Eugenia**, 56
MEKEELE, **Adam**, 159
MELTON, **Barnaby**, 268
MERRITT, **Ephriam**, 227, 232; **John**, 170, 171
MICKELBURROUGH, **Edmund**, 16, 20; **Tobias**, 16
MICKLE, **Dr. Joe J.**, 113
MILLER, **Charles** (son of Charlie and Alice), 229; **Charlie**, 229; **Edwin Lowell**, 59; **Elaine Carol**, 133; **Ernest Francis**, 133; **Grover**, 193; **Lena**, 193; **(Mrs.) M. A.**, 118; **Maurine**, 193; **Martha Carolyn**, 59; **Robert**, 59; **Thomas**, 193
MILLIGAN, **Grace Audrey**, 57
MILLINGTON, **Margaret** (m. Henry Finch), 164, 165, 172, 175; **William, Jr.**, 164, 165, 175
MIMS, **Robert**, 268
MINGE, **Edward**, 220, 221; **James**, 225; **John**, 221, 222, 226; **Valentine**, 220
MITCHELL, **Annice Blaine**, 240; **Mary**, 204; **William**, 320
MIZELL, **John**, 310
MOBLEY, **Maggie/Maryje**, 297; **Ransom**, 189–191, 305
MOHUN, **Warwick**, 218
MONROE, **James**, 196
MONTAGUE, **Thomas**, 20
MONTFORD, **Thomas**, 280
MONTGOMERY, **Ada Caroline**, 195, 306, 313–316; **Ada Lula**, 195, 306, 316, 317; **Albert Watson**, 320; **Almus**, 315, 320; **Alonzo Green Watson**, 195, 306, 313–316, 318; **Alta Stella**, 195, 318; **Archibald**, 197; **Bruce**, 318; **Carl B.**, 315, 320; **Clarence Cravens**, 195; **Claudie** (—), 320; **Daniel**, 309; **Elbert G.**, 318; **Elizabeth B.**, 196, 296, 297, 300, 302, 307, 310, 312, 313, 318, 319, 321; **Elizabeth Norine**, 58; **Eliza Hawkins**, 196, 296, 297, 300, 302, 307, 310, 313, 314, 318, 319, 321; **Frances** (dtr. of James Green),195, 313, 316; **George W.** (father of Wm. B?), 217, 294, 300, 303–309, 319; **George W.** (son of Wm. B.), 196, 296, 300, 302, 307, 310, 313, 315, 316, 319, 321; **Helen** (—), 318; **James** (brother of Wm. B.), 300, 305, 307–309; **James A.**, 320; **James Green**, 195, 196, 199, 217, 296, 300, 302, 306–308, 310, 312, 313, 315, 316, 321; **Jefferson**, 309; **Jeremiah Elbert**, 84, 196, 296, 300, 302, 307, 310, 313–316, 319, 321; **John** (Dickson Co.), 309; **John W.** (son of Wm. B.), 196, 199, 296, 300, 302, 307, 310, 312, 313, 315, 316, 318, 321; **Joseph B.**, 196, 296, 300, 302, 307, 312, 313–316, 321; **Leonard E.**, 318; **Louisa J. W.**, 315, 319; **Mattie Green**, 195, 318; **Mattie Lee**, 315, 320; **Maude** (m. Grady L. Tugwell), 58; **Maude Maxine** (dtr. of Wm. Ellsworth), 58; **Melissa Jane** (m. James Monroe Finch), 76, 78, 79, 83, 84, 89, 194–197, 199–202, 204, 207, 210, 211, 217, 296, 300, 302, 307, 310, 312–316, 318, 319–323; **Myrtle** (—), 318; **Stella**, 318; **Thomas H.** 318; **Thomas Waldo**, 320; **Tommie L.** 318; **Washington**, 303; **Watson**, 195, 318; **William** (b. ca. 1775), 293, 303; **William** (not Wm. B.), 313; **William** (Sumner Co.), 309; **William B.** (m. Matilda C. Bobbitt), 194–199, 216, 217, 243, 294–297, 300–303, 306–316, 318, 319, 321, 322; **William B.** (son of John W.), 318; **William Ellsworth**, 58
MOORE, **Alfred**, 66, 71–73; **Alice L.**, 48; **Bryan Andrew**, 59; **Charles**, 175; **Elizabeth**, 262; **Frank**, 312; **Jason Norman**, 299; **John** (Granville Co.), 186; **J. F.**, 312; **J. H.**, 312; **John** (Haywood Co.), 66; **Larry K.**, 59; **Leon**, 44; **Mattie Jane**, 47; **Melissa Fern**, 299; **William David**, 47
MORAN, **James**, 190
MORELAND, **John, 276**
MORGAN, **Cora Bell**, 60; **Elizabeth W.**, 241; **William**, 13; **Adabelle**, 58
MORRIS, **Annie**, 83; **George**, 159, 161; **Jacquie**, 45; **John, Sr.**, 186; **Lyonell**, 159; **R. N.**, 83; **Shannon Ken**, 45
MOSELEY, **Carl Edward**, 50; **Carlyn Gay**, 50; **Catherine Lynn**, 50; **James**, 50; **Marvill**, 20; **Melanie Ann**, 50
MOSS, **Elizabeth**, 166; **Frances**, 286, 287, 290; **Gideon C.**, 287; **James**, 166; **Joyce**

(dtr. of Thomas), 164; **Lucy H.**, 286, 287; **Richard**, (father of Frances), 290; **Richard, Jr.**, 287; **Susannah**, 164; **Thomas**, 164
MOULSON, **Richard**, 20
MURPH, **Margaret**, 101
MURPHREY, **Ethel Rivers**, 55; **Loys Linwood**, 55
MURRAY, **Sally A. T.**, 46
MYERS, **Claudia**, *see* Boles, Claudia; **Jay Floyd**, 100; **Lauren Mary**, 100; **Megan Coleen**, 100; **Richard Jay**, 100

NANCE, **Frederick W.**, 236
NANNEY, **Hiram P.**, 299
NANOVSKY, **Ann Marie**, 45; **John**, 45; **Robert**, 45; **William Tugwell**, 45
NASH, **Nora**, 193
NATT, **Temperance**, 293
NEASBITT, **Vicki Reneé**, 133
NEVILL, **John** (1774), 168; **John** (Granville Co.), 186, 236
NEWBURN, **J. H.**, 82
NEWBURY, **Lee**, 118
NEWELL, **Alexander**, 280; **Fred William**, 98; **Jessie**, 98; **Rev. Thomas J.**, 214
NEWMAN, **Robert**, 158
NICHOLLS, **Henry**, 20
NILAUSEN, **Eric Aage**, 53; **Ole**, 53
NIXON, **Col. Richard**, 67
NOLAND, **Susan**, 209
NORVILLE, **Sarah E.**, 53; **W. J.**, 53
NUTTALL, **Carroll**, 55; **Peggy Carol**, 55

OBRISELL, **Thomas**, 19, 21
ODOM, **Uriah**, 151; **William**, 151
ORRILL, **Lawrence**, 20
OSBORNE, **Robert**, 13; **Thomas, Jr.**, 158
OUTHOUSE, **I. F.**, 189, 191, 192
OWENS, **Sue Smith**, 47

PACE, **John, Sr.**, 267, 268; **William**, 268
PAGE, **Mary**, 250; **Thomas**, 249, 250
PARIS, **Jack Leslie**, 130; **Jack Leslie ("Jay"), Jr.**, 130; **Jason Landon**, 130, 131; **Marilyn**, *see* Maiden, Marilyn Gale
PARK, **Lavina**, 288; **William**, 288
PARKER, **Catherine**, 33; **Dempsey** (son of Miles), 33; **Demsey/Dempsey**, 31, 36, 148; **Edith**, 39; **George W.**, 46, 72, 73; **Isaac**, 36, 37; **James**, 39, 43, 148; **James** (son of Miles), 33; **Joe**, 56; **John**, 71; **Jonathan**, 39; **Margaret Ella**, 47; **Mary** (1st wife of James Tugwell), 33, 72; **Mary** (dtr. of Miles), 33; **Mary** (m. Miles), *see* Tugwell, Mary (dtr. of Joseph, Jr.); **Miles**, 33, 36, 39, 72; **Miles, Jr.**, 33; **Nancy**, 33; **N. T. Perkins**, 74; **Penny**, 33; **Robert**, 139; **Robert** (son of Dempsey), 148; **Robert** (son of Miles), 33; **Robert S.**, 71; **William** (son of Miles), 33; **William** (Nansemond Co.), 245; **Zadok**, 47
PARKS, **Calvin**, 193; **Henry**, 189, 191
PARR, **Mary E. ("Mollie")**, 204, 205, 207
PARRISH, **Tina**, 54
PATE, **Isabel**, 299
PATTERSON, **Anna Cora**, 110; **Carolyn**, 60; **David**, 177; **Donald Ray**, 60; **Lewis**, 176; **Marilyn**, 60; **Raymond D.**, 60; **Walter**, 58
PATTON, **Hollis**, 100; **Jerry Hollis**, 100; **Lori Michelle**, 101; **Randal Scott**, 101
PAYNE, **Ella Alma**, 194
PEACE, **John**, 176; **Lelia**, 45
PEEBLES, **Earl**, 98
PEEL, **Tina Louise**, 59
PEETE, **Joseph**, 68
PELTREE, **Abraham**, 245
PENDER, **Margaret**, 53
PENICK, **Elizabeth**, 25; **Judith (Walker)**, 25; **Nancy**, 25; **William**, 25
PENLAND, **Paul**, 119
PERKINS, **Edward**, 245; **John**, 69, 71, 81; **Mary**, 229
PERSON, **Richard**, 174; **Thomas** (Granville Co.), 176; **Thomas** (Warren Co.), 285; **William**, 276, 278, 283
PERVIS, **Wilson N.**, 61
PETERSON, **April Beth**, 98; **Carlos**, 98; **Emily Rebecca**, 98; **Ginny Margaret**, 98; **Jeffrey Lee**, 105; **John**, 261
PHILLIPS, **Albert**, 59; **Betty**, 193; **Arthur**, 59; **Elizabeth** (m. Alfred Moore), 66, 71–73; **Ernest**, 59; **Florence Evelyn**, 59; **Isaac**, 40, 43, 61–63, 72, 73; **Laura**, 59; **Lottie Belle**, 59; **Mary** (m. John L. Tugwell), 43, 56,61–63, 65, 66, 68, 70–73, 77; **Raymond**, 59; **Roy**, 59; **Samuel**, 59; **Tommy**, 59; **Unity E.**, 313, 318; **William**, 159
PHILPOT, **Cassie Lea**, 329; **Wayne Reid**, 329
PICKARD, **Mary**, 205
PICKERING, **Celeste Yeteve**, 208; **Woodell A.**, 208
PIERCE, **Eliza Ann**, 288
PILURS, **Alexander**, 98; **Daniel Alexander**, 98; **James Alexander**, 98; **Jonathon Alexander**, 98; **Kathleen Alexis**, 98; **Laurel Alexis**, 98; **Thomas Alexander**, 98
PIPKIN, **Isaac**, 151
PIPPEN, **Edward**, 280
PITT, **Thelma**, 54; **Thomas**, 249
POLK, **James K.**, 67
POLSTON, **Ann**, 57
PORTER, **Clarence**, 131; **Frederick T.**, 105; **Frederick Thomas ("Fred"), Jr.**, 105;

Frederick Thomas ("Tom"), III, 105; **Frederick Thomas ("Rick"), IV**, 105; **Kelly**, 105; **Lucinda Ann**, 105; **Margaret**, *see* Tugwell, Margaret
POSEY, **Ruby Jean**, 52
POTTER, **Cuthbert**, 13, 15, 16
POTTS, **Gregory Wayne**, 59; **Lauren Andrea**, 59
POWELL, **Aaron**, 231, 233, 236, 252; **Alice**, 250; **Ann** (6th gen.), 183–186, 227, 228, 230–233, 235, 236, 238, 242, 243, 244, 249, 252, 253; **Benjamin**, 250; **Candice**, 251; **Captain (—)** (Revol. War), 224; **Christian** (m. — Roane), 251; **Elizabeth** (dtr. of Wm., 2d gen.), 249; **Elizabeth** (dtr. of Wm., 4th gen.), 251; **Elizabeth (—)** (wife of Wm., 2d gen.), 249; **Elizabeth (—)** (1st wife of Wm., 4th gen.), 251; **Elizabeth** (dtr. of Wm., 5th gen.), 231, 252; **Ferabee**, 252; **George** (son of Wm., 4th gen.), 251; **George** (heir of Capt. Wm.), 245; **Hampton**, 231, 252; **Henry**, 252; **Holly**, 252; **Jacob**, 249; **James**, 252; **Jesse**, 251; **John** (son of Nathaniel b. 1640–45), 246; **John** (son of Wm., 2d gen.), 249, 251, 253; **John** (son of Wm., 4th gen.), 251; **Joseph**, 250; **Judith**, 231, 236, 252; **Lucretia**, 246; **Lucy** (dtr. of Wm., 5th gen.), 231, 252; **Lucy** (wife of Wm.), *see* Smith, Lucy; **Lydia**, 250; **Martha**, 250; **Mary** (dtr. of Wm., 3d gen.), 250; **Mary** (dtr. of Wm., 4th gen.), 251; **Mary**, *see* Shaw, Mary); **Nancy (—)**, (2d wife of Wm., 4th gen.), 251; **(Capt.) Nathaniel**, 244, 245; **Nathaniel** (son of immigrant), 246, 249; **Nathaniel** (son of Wm., 2d gen.), 249; **Nathaniel** (son of Wm., 5th gen.), 231, 252; **Percy**,251; **Ptolemy**, 249; **Rachel**, 250; **Ransom**, 231, 236, 252; **Rebecca** (dtr. of Wm., 2d gen.), 249; **Rebecca** (dtr. of Wm., 3d gen.), 249, 250; **Robert**, 25; **Robert** (Weakley Co.), 189; **Sarah** (dtr. of Aaron), 252; **Sarah** (dtr. of Wm., 5th gen.), 231, 252; **Sarah** (m. — Coleman), 251; **Thomas** (Howlton, Sussex), 244; **Thomas the Immigrant** (1st gen.), 244–249, 252, 253; **Thomas** (son of Nathaniel b. ca. 1640–45), 246; **Thomas** (son of Wm., 2d gen.), 249; **(Capt.) William** (arr. Virg. 1608), 244, 245; **William** (2d gen.), 246, 249, 253; **William ("Will"), Jr.** (3d gen.), 244, 249, 250; **William** (4th gen.), 244, 250, 251; **William** (5th gen., m. Lucy Smith), 230–232, 236, 244, 252, 253; **William** (son of Aaron), 252; **William** (son of Nathaniel b. 1640–45), 246; **William** (son of Wm., 5th gen.), 231, 252; **Zachariah**, 251
POWERS, **Joseph**, 309
PRESLEY, **Annie (Ray)**, 105
PREWITT, **John**, 181
PRICE, **Alice**, 294; **James**, 22
PURVIS, **Ed S.**, 107; **John**, 140, 142, 144, 148
PYE, **John**, 13
PYLES, **Jacquelyn Ray**, 105

RADEJEFSKI, **Lucille**, 58
RAFFERTY, **Carl H.**, 194; **Clyde D.**, 194; **John F.**, 194
RAGSDALE, **Baxter**, 168, 174
RAMSEY, **John Fletcher**, 44
RAWLS, **Richard**, 149
RAY, **David**, 180; **Edmund Rogers**, 103; **Nell**, 86, 103–105, 111, 118, 122
REDDICK, **David**, 189; **D. H.**, 309; **James** (Gates Co.), 148, 149; **James**, (Weakley Co.), 309; **L. W.**, 309; **Madison**, 309; **Mills**, 139; **Washington**, 309
REDLEBUSH, **Samuel**, 250
REESE, **Julia**, 208
REEVES, **George**, 77; **George W.** (son of George), 77, 97; **Harriette**, 58; **William**, 266, 268
REYNOLDS, **Bessie**, 229
RIAL, **Martha**, 297
RICE, **Ann**, 17; **Jacob**, 17; **J. M.**, 60; **Nicholas**, 17, 18; **William**, 17
RICHARDSON, **Amanda (—)**, 89; **Hazel**, 85, 89, 116, 117, 122; **J. L.**, 83; **John Alexander**, 82, 85, 89, 93, 107, 110, 116, 117, 213; **Luella**, *see* Tugwell, Luella; **William L.**, 89
RICHIE, **James**, 309
RICHTON, **Rena**, 45
RIDDLE, **S. C.**, 119
RIDDLEHURST, **John**, 221, 222; **William**, 222
RITCHIE, **Susan**, 25
ROBERSON, **Chesta Mae**, 105; **Robert**, 179
ROBERTS, **James Abner, Jr.**, 133; **Porter**, 51; **William**, 168
ROBERTSON, **Elizabeth**, 280
ROBINSON, **James Nelson**, 181; **John**, 20; **Laurence**, 159; **Susan Nell**, 181
ROGERS, **Elizabeth** (m. John Lang), 148, 149; **Emma A.**, 315, 320; **Enos**, 148, 150; **J.**, 81; **John**, 42; **Jonathan**, 148–150; **(Dr.) Jubilee**, 189; **Philip**, 42, 148–150; **Presley C.**, 315, 320; **Robert**, 150; **Stephen**, 40, 149; **William**, 171
ROLLINS, **Albert Sidney**, 86, 102, 104; **Edna Ethel**, 129, 132, 133; **Elaine**, *see* Miller, Elaine Carol; **John Wesley**, 124; **Joseph Guy**, 128, 132; **Joseph Guy ("Joe"), Jr.**, xiv, 123, 128, 132, 133; **Joseph Guy, III**, 125, 129, 132, 133; **Sarah Finch**, *see* Maiden, Sarah Finch; **Sarah Finch "Sally"**, xiv, 129, 132, 133

RONE, **Kelly**, 52
RONEY, **Luther**, 195, 316; **Robert**, 195, 316; **Will**, 195, 316
ROQUEMORE, **Opal**, 113
ROTH, **BESSIE L.**, 100
RUST, **W. W.**, 312

SAFIAN, **Brian**, 208; **David**, 208; **Elizabeth Ann**, 208
SAMFORD, **James**, 158
SAMPSON, **Sonja**, 100
SANDERS, **B. H.**, 70; **Edward**, 158
SANGSTER, **John**, 71
SANGSTON, **J.**, 82
SATTERWHITE, **Lucy**, 239
SAULS, **Mary**, 281
SAUNDERS, **James**, 25
SAVAGE, **John**, 159
SAXONBERG, **Cyril Burton**, 100; **Diane Carla**, 100
SAYLOR, **Allen**, 298; **Cheryl Javarian**, 298; **Earney**, 298; **Jackie**, 298; **Jeanne**, 298; **Nita Hayes**, 298
SCARBOROUGH, **John**, 190
SCATES, **S. E.**, 312
SCHNABEL, **Col. J. A.**, 57
SCOTT, **J. A.**, 72
SCRIBNER, **Dorothy**, 175
SELF, **Jacob**, 278
SEVIER, **A. H.**, 75, 77
SHACKELFORD, **May Belle**, 53; **Richard**, 53
SHAW, **James**, 252; **John (Jimmie?)**, 230; **Mary**, 236, 252; **Mary ("Polly") E.**, 229, 230
SHEARIN, **Joseph**, 275; **Zachariah**, 280
SHELBY, **Isaac**, 186
SHELL, **Emma**, 194; **William**, 194; **Willie Dell**, 194
SHEPHERD, **B. A.**, 205; **Mary Alice**, 205
SHEPPARD, **William**, 235
SHERROD, **Thomas**, 168
SHIELDS, **Bradley Douglas**, 317; **Fletcher Douglas ("Doug"), Jr.**, 317; **June Leeann**, 298; **Katrina Luann**, 298; **Sally Roseann**, 298; **Sarah Jane**, 317; **Stephen**, 298
SHRIMP, **William**, 194
SHROOM, **Nicholas**, 305, 309
SIMS, **Mamie Augusta**, 44
SITZ, **Sherry Lynn**, 298
SKINNER, **Howard**, 60; **John**, 139
SMALLY, **Michael**, 224; **Mary**, 280; **William**, 246
SMART, **John**, 272; **Peter**, 278, 283
SMITH, **Arthur J.**, 58; **Barbara**, 230; **Beatrice**, 58; **Bertha Dee**, 306, 317; **Bur-nice**, 230; **Celia**, *see* Tugwell, Celia; **Earl F.**, 47; **Edward**, 281; **George**, 268; **Henry**, 159; **Isaiah**, 177; **Iva Comora**, 58; **John** (Granville Co.), 168, 176; **John** (James River), 245; **John** (Pitt Co.), 49; **John, Jr.** (Middlesex Co.), 20, 21; **John, Sr.**, 20; **Lucy** (m. William Powell, 5th gen.), 230–232, 236, 251–253; **Lula**,60; **Mary** (m. Zach. Powell), 251, 252; **Mary E.**, 57; **Moses**, 252; **Nancy**, 281; **Susan Elaine**, 47; **Thomas** (Granville Co.), 168, 170, 171, 174, 175; **Thomas** (Chowan Co.), 266; **Walter**, 230; **Wendy**, 54; **William** (Franklin Co.), 273; **William** (father of Lucy and Mary), 251; **William James Arthur**, 58
SMOOT, **Mina**, 230
SNOW, **Xanthus**, 285
SODAL, **Ingvar Edmund**, xiv, 133; **Sally**, *see* Rollins, Sarah Finch; **Silje Marit**, 133
SØDAL, **Ingebrigt**, 133
SODERBERG, **Karen Jeanne**, 99
SOHM, **Jane**, *see* Dean, Jane Yokley; **Jane D.**, 208; **Jennifer**, 208; **Jeffry**, 208; **John J.**, 208; **John J.** (b. 1941), 208; **John J., III**, 208; **Kathleen**, 208; **Sarah**, 208
SONNENBURG, **Gary Bruce**, 60; **Raymond Lee**, 60; **Raymond Lee, Jr.**,60
SOUTHERN, **John**, 20
SOVOIE, **R. Joseph**, 52
SPAN, **Franklin**,, 309; **James**, 309
SPARACINO, **Dominic**, 58; **Iris Dianne**, 58
SPEIGHT, **Francis**, 148; **Henry**, 148
SPELL, **Anna**, 43; **John**, 63
SPIVEY, **Francis**, 251; **Littleton**, 171; **Molly**, 171
SPRINGER, **Marshall Thad**, 329
STALLCUP, **J. R.**, 312
STAMPER, **John**, 16, 21, 31; **Powell**, 20; **Susie Ethel**, 53; **William H.**, 53
STANLEY, **Evelyn (—)** (wife of Howard), 55; **Howard**, 55; **Molly**, 55
STANSBURY, **Pattie**, 230
STEEL, **Dallas**, 194
STEPHENS, **Samuel**, 245
STEVENS, **Michael**, 208; **Paul**, 208; **Sarah**, 208
STEWART, **Maria**, 294
STITH, **Maj. Anderson**, 225
STONE, **Capt. John**, 279; **Dorothy Mildred**, 98; **Edward Braslin**, 98; **McCullar**, 182
STOREY, **Joshua**, 160
STRATTON, **Ethel**, 128, 132
STRAYHORN, **Calvin G.**, 240
STRICKLAND, **Bettie**, 48
STRICKLIN, **William**, 249
STROUD, **Clara Mae**, 58; **Sabra** (m. John Finch b. 1699), 164

STUBBLEFIELD, **Ramona Marie**, 51
STUCKEY, **Elizabeth**, 71; **James**, 71; **Noah**, 71; **Samuel**, 66, 69, 70; **William**, 66, 71
STURDIVANT, **Anna/Joanna**, 257, 261, 262, 264; **John**, 257
STURGEON, **George**, 53; **Helen**, *see* Tugwell, Helen
SUER, **James**, 159
SULLIVAN, **Ann**, 223; **Betty**, 130
SUMNER, **Edwin**, 39; **Jethro**, 139
SWAIM, **Andrew Jackson**, 296, 297, 310, 313, 318; **Avie**, 297; **Bonnie**, 298; **Buford**, 297; **Byron** (son of Samuel Houston), 297, 319; **Byron M.** (b. 1842), 297, 310; **Carlisle**, 298; **Clinton Atkins**, 298; **Don Cevera**, 299; **Edgar**, 297, 319; **Emily Cornelia**, 298; **Frances** (dtr. of Neville P.), 298; **Frances** (unidentified), 310, 312; **Grover Cleveland**, 298; **Guy**, 297; **Houston**, 296, 297, 310; **Ida**, 297; **Jack**, 298; **Jeanne**, 299; **Jeremiah W.**, 181, 197–200, 216, 217, 295, 296, 308–310, 312, 314, 318, 319; **Jodie**, 297; **Laura**, 297; **Lelia**, 297; **Lucile Melissa ("Lou")**, 181, 217, 298, 300; **Lundel**, 297; **Maggie** (—) (m. Don Cevera), 299; **Margaret**, 181; **Martha J.** (m. John Houston Finch), 193, 217, 298; **Mary Eliza**, 297, 310; **Matilda Caroline**, 297, 310; **Mayme**, 297, 319; **Moses D.**, 181, 189, 191, 197, 199, 312; **Neville** (dtr. of Neville P.), 298; **Neville P.**, 298; **Ollie**, 297; **Pansy**, 299; **Patrick**, 298; **Richard**, 298; **Sallie Willie**, 319; **Samuel Houston**, 297, 313, 314, 318; **Sarah E.**, 297, 319; **Stella**, 297, 319; **Thomas Hendricks ("Henry")**, 297, 310; **Thomas Hendricks, Jr.**, 298; **Tomesia**, 298; **Tommy**, 298; **William** (son of Samuel Houston), 297, 319; **William Green**, 296, 297, 310; **William Jeremiah**, 296
SWANSON, **Polly**, 24
SYMONS, **John**, 158

TALAMO, **Anna**, 115
TALIAFERRO, **F. N.**, 69, 70; **L.**, 71
TAMM, **Emil**, 95
TANNER, **Margaret**, 98
TARAS, **Joey Edna**, 208
TARRANT, **Mary** (wife of Thomas the immigrant), 13, 16–18
TAYLOR, **Caleb**, 197; **Edmund A.**, 73, 74; **Howell**, 73; **John (London)**, 244; **John** (Middlesex Co.), 24, 29; **Nan**, 229
TELFORD, **Clair Joyner**, 209; **James Monroe**, 209; **John Chamberlain**, 209; **John C., Jr.**, 209; **Margaret**, *see* Gannaway, Dorothy Margaret
TERRELL, **Jeptha**, 236, 241, 242; **John**, 179, 188–190, 309; **John** (son of Jeptha and Nancy), 241; **Laura A.**, 202, 203; **Mary**, 241; **Nancy**, *see* Hockaday, Nancy; **Nancy** (dtr. of Jeptha and Nancy), 241
THACKER, **Henry**, 16, 20, 22
THARRINGTON, **Thomas**, 279
THIBODEAUX, **Alice Louisa**, *see* Tugwell, Mrs. Hugh Olmand, 44
THIGPEN, **Freydis**, 45
THOMAS, **Dorsey C.**, 81; **Lizzie**, 55; **Margaret Elizabeth**, 328; **Micajah**, 197; **Robert S.**, 73; **R. S.**, 81
THOMASON, **J. G.**, 312; **Richard**, 175, 177; **John**, 281
THOMPSON, **Martha S.**, 180; **Patricia Elaine**, 317; **Ruby Finch**, 157; **William**, 225
THOMSON, **CatherineB, 223**
THORNTON, **Myles L.**, 297; **Susan L.**, 25
THREEWITS, **John**, 270
THREEWITS/THWEATT, **Peter**, 270
TOLER, **Mary**, 56; **Thomas**, 56
TOMPSON, **Mathew**, 159
TOMSON, **John**, 276
TONEY, **Roger**, 171
TONSTALL, **Richard**, 258
TOWLES, **Stokely**, 20
TRANTHAM, **Floyd**, 189
TRAYLOR, **David T.**, 74–78, 80; **Edward**, 75, 77; **Elizabeth (—)**, 77; **John A.**, 74–78, 80, 81; **Johnanna** (m. G. Reeves), 74–78, 80, 81, 98; **Nancy Peters**, *see* Tugwell, Nancy Peters; **Willie Kate**, 76, 78, 81
TRIGG, **Abraham**, 20
TRUSS, **Samuel**, 42; **Warren**, 42
TUCHFELD, **Sol**, 98
TUCKER, **Brenda**, 130, 131; **Raymond Mitchell, Jr.**, 130
TUGGLE, **Amplias**, 25; **Anne** (dtr. of Griffin), 24; **Benjamin** (b. 1745, son of John), 24, 48; **Benjamin** (b. 1750, son of Thomas III), 25, 48; **Catherine**, 24; **Caty**, 25; **Charles**, 23; **Ebenezer**, 25; **Elizabeth**, 23; **Elizabeth** (dtr. of Lodowick), 24; **Eunice**, 24; **Frances**, 23; **Frances** (dtr. of Henry IV), 24; **Frances** (dtr. of Thomas IV), 25; **George**, 24; **Griffin**, 24, 29; **Henry, III**, 23; **Henry** (son of Henry, III), 23; **Henry, IV**, 23; **Henry** (son of John), 23; **Henry** (son of Joseph), 24, 26–29; **James** (son of Henry, Jr.), 23; **James** (son of Henry, III), 23; **James** (son of John), 23; **Jane**, 23; **Jane** (dtr. of John), 23; **Jane** (dtr. of Thomas, III), 25; **John**, 23; **John, Jr.**, 23; **John** (son of Henry, Jr.), 23; **John** (son of Henry, IV), 24; **John** (son of Thomas, IV), 25; **Joseph** (son of Henry),

17–19, 21, 24, 26–29, 33, 42, 69; **Joseph** (son of John b. 1724), 23; **Joshua**, 23; **Lodowick**, 24, 36; **Martha**, 23; **Mary**, 23; **Mary** (dtr. of Henry, IV), 24; **Melger**, 23; **Mollie**, 23; **Nancy**, 24; **Nancy T.**, 25; **Nicholas** (son of Griffin), 24; **Nicholas** (son of John), 24; **Robert**, 24; **Sally**, 24; **Sarah**, 25; **Sarah** (dtr. of Thomas, IV), 25; **Savannah**, 24; **Seela**, 23; **Thomas**, 23; **Thomas** (son of Joseph), 24, 26, 27, 28, 29; **Thomas** (son of Lodowick), 24; **Thomas, IV**, 25; **Thomas Thornton**, 25, 69; **Tibitha**, 23; **Vivian S.**, 13, 28; **William** (son of Henry, III), 23; **William** (son of John), 23; **William** (son of Lodowick), 24

TUGWELL, **Abe Lester**, 48; **Addison Comadore ("Add")**, 44; **Albert Sidney**, 74, 78–82, 84–86, 88, 89, 92, 93, 102–105, 107, 109–111, 116–118, 122, 127, 203, 211, 213, 214; **Alfred Dawson**, 47; **Alfred Moore**, 48; **Alice** (dtr. of Thomas the immigrant), 13, 16–18; **Alice Louise**, 44; **Allen Andrew**, 52; **Amanda Jean (Bledsoe)**, 59; **Amberly Lacy**, 54; **Ana**, *see* Tugwell, Benanna Alice ("Ana"); **Andrea Ruth**, 59; **Andrew Evans**, 45; **Andrew Jackson**, 53; **Andrew Patrick**, 46; **Andrew Patrick, Jr.**, 46; **Angela Christina**, 101; **Angela Louise**, 47; **Ann** (dtr. of Henry), 17–19, 21, 25–28; **Ann** (son of Thomas the immigrant), 13, 16–18; **Ann Eliza** (dtr. of Levi), 48; **Annie E.**, 57; **Barbara Louise**, 60; **Ben** (son of John C.), 46; **Benanna Alice ("Ana")**, 78–81, 83–86, 88, 89, 102, 107, 109–113, 116–119, 121, 122, 127, 129, 203, 211, 213, 214; **Benanna (Finch)**, *see* Finch, Benanna Alice; **Benjamin** (son of Henry), 17–19, 21, 25–28, 48; **Benjamin** (son of James and Mary), 28, 33, 35, 39, 42, 43, 48, 49, 52, 53, 56, 62, 63, 65, 69, 72, 73, 149, 151–153; **Benjamin** (son of John L.), 43, 61, 62, 65, 68, 70, 72–74; **Benjamin** (son of Leonard), 49; **Benjamin Franklin** (son of Benjamin), 49, 53; **Benjamin Franklin** (son of Benj. S.), 44; **Benjamin S.** (son of Josph Lyon), 44, 328; **Benjamin Streeter**, 53; **Bennie D.** (b. 1891), 47; **Bernice Lenell**, 57; **Bethany Louise**, 59; **Beulah**, 59; **Billie Jean(—)** (m. David E.), 52; **Bonnie Audrey**, 57; **Bruce Neal**, 47; **Buck F.**, 48; **Carlene**, *see* Davidson, Annie Carlene; **Carlos**, 56; **Caroline (—)** (wife of James, Jr.), 56, 61, 68, 70, 72; **Caroline Sarah**, 47, 48; **Carolyn Aletha**, 51; **Carrie Delphia**, 48; **Carrie M.** 48; **Catherine**, 46; **Catherine Corrine** (m. — Randel), 60; **Celia (Smith)**, 43, 49, 52, 53, 56; **Charles E.**, 48; **Charles M.** 56; **Cheryl Marice**, 53; **Christopher Wayne**, 101; **Clara Eleanor**, 61; **Clara Josephine**, 59; **Clarence Bennett**, 47; **Claud, Jr.**, 51; **Claude** (son of John C.), 45; **Clayton Seth**, 59; **Claude** (son of John C.), 45; **Claud** (son of Lorenzo Dow), 50; **Cleveland**, 46; **Colleen Marie**, 52; **Craig**, 52; **Daniel**, 54; **David** (son of Benjamin), 49, 56; **David** (son of John L.), 61, 62, 68, 70, 72–74; **David Edward**, 52; **David Vernon**, 54; **David Vernon, Jr.**, 54; **Dawn Marie**, 54; **Debbie (—)** (m. Marvin Thomas, Jr.), 54; **Deborah Sue**, 55; **Derek Robert**, 47; **Donald Neil**, 51; **Dorothy Frances ("Dottie")**, 98; **Douglas Cameron**, 60; **Earnest Dow**, 52; **Edmond D. ("Edd")**, 46; **Edna Gertrude**, 78–81, 83–86, 88, 92, 102, 107, 109–111, 116–125, 127–130, 192, 203, 211, 213, 214; **(Dr.) Egbert**, 44, 45; **Eleanor**, 46; **Elizabeth** (dtr. of Henry), 17–19, 22; **Elizabeth (—)** (wife of Joseph, Jr.), 29, 31–33, 35, 36, 149, 151; **Elizabeth** (dtr. of William), 46; **Elizabeth Ann**, 55; **Elizabeth C.**, 56; **Elizabeth May** (m. — Skinner), 60; **Ellis**, 44; **Elton**, 46; **Emmet**, 46; **Ernest S.**, 46; **Eula** (dtr. of James Andrew), 59; **Eula** (m. Robert Bruce Tugwell), *see* Waddell, Eula; **Eva** (dtr. of Claud), 51; **Eva Mae** (dtr. of Lorenzo Dow), 52; **Evelyn Lucille**, 47; **F. Cleo**, 50; **Floy** (m. — Roberts), 45; **Floyd**, 48; **Floyd Calvin** (son of Lorenzo Dow), 52; **Floyd Calvin**, (son of Thomas Trigg), 50; **Frances** (dtr. of Henry), 17–19, 21, 23; **Frances** (dtr. of James, Jr.), 61, 72; **Frances Amanda** (dtr. of Robert Bruce), 28, 76, 95–97, 101, 327; **Frances Elizabeth**, 58; **Fred**, 45; **Freda Paula**, 60; **Frederick Franklin**, 60; **Gary Glynn**, 52; **George W.** (son of Joseph Lyon), 44, 45; **Gilbert Leon**, 58; **Gladys**, 50; **Goldie Jean**, 51; **Grace**, 44; **Grady Lee**, 58; **Gregory Wayne**, 54; **Harold Clayton**, 51; **Heather Ann**, 51; **Helen (Sturgeon)**, 28, 53; **Henry** (son of Thomas the immigrant), 13, 16–22, 26, 27, 48, 69; **Henry, Jr.**, 17–19, 21–23, 27; **Henry Haywood**, 61, 62, 72–75, 78, 79, 211; **Hester Jewell**, 60; **Howard Stanley**, 55; **Hugh Olmand**, 44; **Hughes Andrew**, 59; **James, Jr.** (son of James), 33, 35, 42, 44, 49, 56–58, 61–63, 65–73, 149, 151–153; **James** (son of Joseph, Jr.), 28, 29, 31–33, 35–37, 39, 40, 42–44, 46,48, 62, 63, 65, 136, 147–149, 151–153, 328; **James** (son of James Jared), 58; **James Andrew**, 57, 72; **James Arthur**, 55; **James Benjamin**, 53; **James Jared ("Jimmy")**, 44, 49, 56, 58, 327; **James Jared, Jr.**, 59; **James L.**, 46; **James S.** (son of John L.), 61, 62, 70–74, 77, 79, 92, 211;

James Thomas (son of Benjamin), 49, 53; **James W.** (son of Leonard), 49; **James W.** (son of Wm. H.), 56; **James Wesley** (son of Robert Bruce), 95–97, 100; **James Wesley ("Jamie"), Jr.**, 100; **James Wesley, III**, 101; **James Wesley, IV**, 94, 101; **Jami**, 99; **Jamilene**, 58; **Janet (—)** (m. Thomas Trigg, Jr.), 50; **Janice Susan**, 54; **Janie**, 50; **Jared**, 59; **Jaricka Kristina**, 59; **Jason Robert**, 52; **Jesse** (son of Benjamin), 49, 55; **Jessie Anna**, 60; **Jesse Lee**, 56; **Jessica Kay**, 52; **John** (son of Henry), 17–19, 22, 23, 27; **John** (son of Rufus), 76, 78–81, 84, 88, 91, 92, 203, 211, 213, 214; **John C.** (son of Joseph Lyon), 45; **John Gilbert**, 60; **John H.** (son of Levi), 48; **John L.** (son of James), 19, 25, 33, 35, 42, 43, 49, 56, 61–63, 65–77, 79–81, 94, 149, 151–153, 200, 203, 211, 323; **John L. Theophilus**, 61, 62, 70, 72–75, 77, 79, 211; **John Olmond**, 45; **John Richard** (son of John Gilbert), 60; **John Robert**, 41, 47; **John Robert, Jr.**, 47; **John Spencer**, 53; **John W.** (son of James, Jr.), 61, 72; **Jonathan Gray**, 47; **Joseph** (son of Henry, *see* Tuggle, Joseph (son of Henry); **Joseph, Jr.**, 24, 26–29, 31–33, 35–37, 42, 66, 149, 151; **Joseph Bullett**, 44; **Joseph Lloyd**, 46; **Joseph Lyon**, 42–45, 328; **Joseph W.** (8th child of Benjamin), 49, 56; **Joseph William** (6th child of Joseph Lyon), 44, 46; **Josephine**, 50; **Judith**, 17–19, 24; **Julia Margaret**, 98; **Justin**, 54; **Karen Ann**, 99; **Keith Allen**, 52; **Kenneth**, 50; **Larry Marvin**, 54; **Laura Lee**, 99; **Laura Nicole**, 52; **Leland Stanton**, 48; **Lelia ("Lea")**, 45; **Len**, 28, 29, 31, 33, 35, 151; **Lena**, 45; **Lena Mae** (dtr. of Thomas Trigg), 50; **Lenwood Richard**, 55; **Leonard** (son of Benjamin), 42, 49, 52, 72; **Letha**, 46; **Levi**, 43, 48; **Linda Lee**, 52; **Lisa Sharon**, 55; **Lizzie Anna**, 53; **Lizzie E.**, 48; **Lloyd Carl**, 50; **Lorenzo Dow**, 49, 51; **Lorenzo James** (son of Claud), 51; **Lorenzo James** (son of Lorenzo Dow), 51; **Lorenzo James, Jr.**, 49, 51; **Lorenzo James, III**, 52; **Lou**, 46; **Louise Elizabeth**, 59; **Louisa Jane** (m. William Little), 43, 52, 72; **Lovline**, 45; **Lucinda**, *see* Ball, Lucinda; **Lucretia**, 17–19, 21, 22; **Lucy**, 48; **Luella**, 76, 78–82, 85, 86, 88, 89, 92, 93, 102, 107–111, 116–118, 122, 127, 203, 211, 213, 214; **Mabel Marie**. 60; **Margaret**, 103–105, 108, 122; **Margaret Frances**, 54; **Marie**, 45; **Marla Gail**, 54; **Martha** (dtr. of Henry), 17–19, 23, 27; **Martha** (dtr. of Joseph Lloyd), 46; **Martha Ann**, 44; **Martha Jane**, 53; **Marvin Thomas**, 54; **Marvin Thomas, Jr.**, 54; **Marvin Thomas, III**, 54; **Mary** (dtr. of Henry), 17,–19, 22; **Mary** (dtr. of James, Jr.), 56, 72; **Mary** (dtr. of John C.), 46; **Mary** (dtr. of Joseph, Jr.; wife of Miles Parker), 28, 29, 31, 32, 33, 35, 36, 39, 72, 151; **Mary** (dtr. of Thomas the immigrant), 13, 16–18; **Mary (—)** (wife of Wm. b. 1796), 44, 46; **Mary Adaline**, 56; **Mary Amanda**, 49; **Mary *Ann E*liza Lafayette**, 61, 62, 70, 72–74, 76, 77, 79-81, 89, 211; **Mary Benanna**, 83, 95, 96, 99, 122, 210; **Mary ("Callie")**, 59; **Mary (—)**, (wife of Woodrow), 50; **Mary D.**, 48; **Mary Ellen** (m. — Clair), 52, **Mary Ellen** (m. — Morgan), 56; **Mary Ophelia**, 44, 328; **Matilda F. (—)**, 56; **Matthew Neal**, 56; **Mattie Frances**, 47; **Maudene**, 61; **Melton**, 48; **Merle**, 44; **Metz**, 44; **Michael Lee**, 99; **Monnie Myrtle**, 58; **Myrt Egbert** (son of Hugh Olmond), 45; **Myrt Egbert** (son of Wm. Thornton), 45; **Myrt Egbert ("Bert"), Jr.**, 45; **Nancy Ann**, 45; **Nancy Peters**, 61, 62, 72–81, 211; **Nannie Mae**, 55; **Nell**, *see* Ray, Nell; **Nell Ray** (dtr. of Albert), 103, 104, 106, 108, 122; **Nina Lynn**, 100; **Noel Calvin**, 51; **Noel Philip**, 49, 51; **Noel Philip, Jr.**, 51; **Oscar Buel**, 60; **Oscar Burton**, 60; **Opal (—)** (wife of Donald Neil), 51; **Ora Clyde**, 48; **Otis Lee**, 45; **Otis Lee, Jr.**, 45; **Patsy**, 51; **Paul Leo**, 52; **Paul Leo, Jr.**, 52; **Pearl M.**, 48; **Perlina**, 61, 72; **Peter**, 49; **Peyton**, 46; **Priscilla Jane**, 59; **Rachel**, 17–19, 24, 26–28; **Richard** (son of Hugh Olmand), 45; **Richard** (son of John), 45; **Richard Earl**, 54; **Richard Franklin**, 53; **Richard J.**, 48; **Richard Timothy**, 55; **Richard Vernon**, 54; **Rita**, 44; **Robert ("Bob")** (son of Levi), 47, 48; **Robert ("Robin")**, 43, 46, 48; **Robert** (son of John C.), 45; **Robert Andrew** (son of James, Jr.), 56, 57, 59; **Robert Andrew** (son of James Andrew), 57; **Robert Ansel**, 61; **Robert Bruce ("Bob")**, 74, 78–85, 88, 93–98, 101, 102, 107, 110, 116, 117, 122, 203, 210, 211, 213, 214; **Robert Bruce, II**, 98; **Robert Bruce, III**, 99; **Robert D.** (son of Wm. H.), 57; **Robert Dee**, 47; **Robert Donald ("Robbie")**, 47, 48; **Robert Franklin**, 59; **Robert Lynn**, 61; **Robert Rufus**, 61, 62, 72–89, 91, 92, 94, 95, 98, 102, 103, 107, 109, 110, 116–118, 120, 193, 200, 203, 211, 213, 214, 323; **Robert Wickliff**, 46; **Roberta Dean**, 57; **Rodell**, 44; **Ruby (—)** (wife of Woodrow), 50; **Rufus**, *see* Tugwell, Robert Rufus; **Samuel Marvin**, 58; **Sarah C.**, 61, 72; **Sarah E.**, 46; **Sarah Frances** (dtr. of Benjamin), 49, 56; **Sarah Frances** (dtr. of Thomas Trigg), 49, 50; **Sharon** (—) (m.

Kenneth), 50; **Shawn Dee**, 59; **Solmas (—)** (m. Harold C.), 51; **Stanley Lee**, 55; **Stella May**, 78–81, 83–86, 88, 89, 92, 102, 107–112, 116–118, 121, 127, 129, 203, 211, 213, 214; **Stephanie Jo**, 59; **Steven Thomas**, 54; **Sue**, 44; **Susan Virginia**, 56; **Tandi Elizabeth**, 45; **Thelburt**, 45; **Thomas** (immigrant), 13, 14, 16–19, 27, 31, 33, 35, 69; **Thomas, Jr.** (son of Thomas the immigrant), 13, 16–18; **Thomas, III** (son of Henry), 17–19, 24, 26–28, 69; **Thomas F.**, 61; **Thomas Franklin** (b. 1901), 58; **Thomas Trigg**, 50; **Thomas Trigg, Jr.**, 50; **Thomas Wayne**, 61; **Tiffany Ann**, 99; **Tina Marie**, 99; **Tollena**, 48; **Tonya**, 99; **Tracey Janine**, 51; **Vedonia**, 50; **Vivian**, 55; **W. C.**, 45; **W. L.** (son of Charles E.), 48; **Wallace**, 52; **Wanda Joann**, 49, 50; **Walter S.**, 48; **William** (son of Henry), 17–19, 21, 25–28; **William** (son of James), 33, 35, 39, 42, 43, 46, 62, 63, 149,151–153, 328; **William** (son of Joseph, Jr.), 28, 29, 31–33, 35, 151; **William** (son of Robert), 45; **William A.**, 59; **William Alan**, 54; **William Benjamin**, 53; **William David**, 47; **William Dudley ("Will D.")**, 95, 98; **William Dudley ("Bill"), Jr.**, 98; **William Dudley ("Tug"), III**, 98; **William H.**, 56, 72; **William J.**, 56; **William John**, 48; **William Lee ("Will")**, 78–82, 85–89, 92, 93, 102, 103, 107, 110, 116–118, 120, 203, 211, 213, 214; **William Oscar**, 57; **William Thomas**, 48; **William Thornton**, 44, 45; **William Thornton, Jr.**, 45; **Willis Richard**, 44; **Wilson Franklin**, 55; **Wilson Franklin, Jr.**, 55; **Woodrow**, 50; **Yancy L.**, 46

TUGWELL–NILAUSEN, **Ian Palle**, 53

TURNER, **Hazel Lee**, 328; **John Mitchell**, 328; **Martha**, 180, 182, 217, 262; **Stella**, 101

TYSON, **Maggie**, 48; **Moses**, 40; **Sherrod**, 43

UNDERWOOD, **David**, 208; **Donald**, 208; **Douglas**, 208; **George**, 208

URY, **Robert**, 309

VAN CLEVE, **Donald Clyde**, 50

VANN, **A. R.**, 240; **Harrison**, 33; **James**, 39; **John**, 33, 39; **William**, 36, 39

VAUGHN, **Deborah Elaine**, 61; **Eugene Herbert**, 61

VENABEL, **Lillian**, 98

VICARS, **Thomas**, 159

VINCENT, **Ellen**, 229; **Joseph**, 189

VINES, **Charles**, 42; **Samuel**, 40, 42, 43

VIVIEN, **John**, 20

VOGEL, **Coleen Cecelia**, 100

WADDELL, **Eula Lewis**, 82–85, 94, 95, 97, 98; **James W.**, 95

WADDLE, **J.**, 82

WADE, **Benjamin**, 168; **Bertha**, 58; **Betty Sue**, 58; **Earl**, 58

WAGNER, **W. W.**, 82, 83

WALKER, (1st name unkn) (m. Frances Hockaday), 230; **Dr. Allen**, 107; **James Addison**, 107–109, 112; **John** (Granville Co.), 175; **John** (Pitt Co.), 43; **William**, 158

WALLACE, **Caroline Cameron**, 209; **Charles Thomas, Jr.**, 209; **Charles Thomas, III**, 209; **John**, 40, 42, 63, 65

WALTERS, **Beulah**, 194; **James**, 194; **Mamie**, 194; **Rufus D.**, 240

WALTON, **Eva**, 98

WARD, **Elijah**, 309; **George**, 305, 309; **John**, 305, 309; **John, Jr.**, 309; **William**, 309

WARE, **Dr. John J.**, 81

WARNER, **Augustine**, 159

WARREN, **Allen**, 46; **Bray**, 148; **William**, 148

WASHINGTON, **George**, 164; **Martha (Dandridge)**, 164

WATERHOUSE, **William**, 13

WATERS, **Ethel**, 230

WATKINS, **John**, 249

WATSON, **Rachel**, 49

WEATHERLY, **Mary ("Polly")**, 296

WEATHERS, **E. H.**, 312; **James**, 191

WEBB, **John**, 140

WEEKES, **Francis**, 20; **James**, 20

WEIR, **John**, 158

WELDON, **A.**, 312

WESLEY, **John**, 176

WEST, **Patricia Ann Smith**, 55

WHATLEY, **James**, 170

WHITE, **J. A.**, 309; **John**, 309; **Joshua**, 309; **Mark**, 175; **Nettie Lou**, 50; **Thomas**, 171, 175

WHITLEY, **Ann**, 54; **Ashly**, 54; **Robert Wayne**, 54; **Teresa Karen**, 54

WHITTINGTON, **Mr.** (Charles City Co.), 258

WIATT, **Sir George**, 157

WILCOX, **William**, 221

WILKERSON, **Leland**, 60; **Nancy**, 60; **Ronald P.**, 60

WILKINS, **Allen**, 233

WILKINSON, **William**, 250

WILLEY, **Hilary**, 149

WILLIAMS, **Bridges**, 186; **Edward** (Pitt Co.), 42; **Elizabeth Jones H.**, 239; **G. L.**, 119; **James** (Pitt Co.), 42; **James**, 276; **John**, 16; **Marjorie Dene**, 100; **Mack**, 50; **Maggie V.**, 230; **Margaret A.**, 239; **Martha Susan**, 195, 306, 316, 318; **Obediah**, 13; **Reading**, 65; **Redding**, 40; **Robert**, 276; **Sarah (Jones)**, 280; **Thomas** (York Co.), 13;

Thomas (Granville Co.), 274, 277; **William**, 189
WILLIAMSON, **Benjamin**, 23; **Charlotte**, 43; **Henry**, 40, 42; **Martha**, 17; **Mary** (m. John Finch, Sr.), 166–168, 171, 173; **Robert**, 17, 20, 23
WILLINGHAM, **Isaac**, 189
WILLIS, **Thomas**, 13
WILSON, **Joshua**, 180; **Matilda**, 180
WILTON, **Thomas**, 16
WINSTON, **David**, 197; **John B.**, 239; **Thomas**, 186
WITHERSPOON, **Charlie**, 50
WOOD, **Elizabeth (Browne)**, 22; **William**, 20
WOODWARD, **Christopher**, 45
WOODY, **Robert**, 158; **Sarah**, 288
WOOTEN, **Henry**, 44; **Sarah**, 44
WORMLEY, **Christopher**, 160
WORMELEY, **Ralph**, 20
WORTHAM, **George**, 20
WYATT, **Sir Francis**, 157
WYCHE, **James**, 237

YARRINGTON, **John**, 31
YEARGIN, **Mary Anna**, 193
YOKLEY, **Dorothy Margaret**, 209; **Dorris**, 208; **Eleanor Ruth**, 210; **Isaac N.**, 207; **Kathleen**, 208; **Mary**, 210
YORK, **Thomas**, 171, 175, 176, 180
YOUNG, **Frances**, 272; **John**, 178

ZARECOR, **Frances J.**, 298

NOTES